An Amillennial Understanding of The Kingdom of God

by

Nicholas A Laurienzo
# Table of Contents

About the Author  [pg. 5]

Preface  [8]

Chapter 1  Differing Eschatological Views  [12]

Chapter 2  Organic Unity of the Old and New Testaments  [21]

Chapter 3  Election and Eschatology  [31]

Chapter 4  Organic Unity In The Vine - Body Of Christ - True Israel  [52]

Chapter 5  Historical Themes, Types, and Patterns From the Old Testament  [58]

Chapter 6  Jesus Christ: the goal, purpose, and fulfillment of “Old” History  [64]

Chapter 7  Christ Prefigured in the Flood Account Feature  [71]

Chapter 8  Christ Prefigured in Abrahamic Features  [79]

Chapter 9  Jesus Christ Recapitulates Jacob, Moses, Israel  [88]

Chapter 10  Jesus Is Our New Moses  [113]

Chapter 11  Jesus is Our New Temple  [118]

Chapter 12  Jesus Christ the Fulfillment of Law and Prophets  [121]

Chapter 13  The Kingdom Of God – Heaven And The Millennium  [127]

Chapter 14  The Central Theme From the Very Beginning Was the Cross  [138]

Chapter 15  Approaching Revelation  [150]

Chapter 16  1260 days, 42 months, or time, times and a half time  [171]

Chapter 17  The Lamb-Like Beast  [179]

Chapter 18  Church Fathers Strengthen The Beast  [190]

Chapter 19  Clergy-Laity Distinction  [202]
Chapter 20  Rise of Autocratic Ruling Bishops  [211]
Chapter 21  Sacrificial Priesthood  [220]
Chapter 22  Titles, Uniforms and Costumes  [225]
Chapter 23  Confession, Forgiveness of Sins, and Penance  [231]
Chapter 24  Constantinian Orthodoxy, Council of Nicaea 325 AD A Wicked Precedence Established - Let There Be Blood  [238]
Chapter 25  Brutality and Intolerance 300 AD to 1054 AD (East-West Schism)  [243]
Chapter 26  Islam: Another False Religion Arising From Christ/Gospel Rejecting Judaism  [254]
Chapter 27  1054 AD To The Reformation - The Beast Thirsts For More Blood  [258]
Chapter 28  Thomas Aquinas (1225-1274) Philosopher, Theologian, Doctor of the Latin Papal Church  [270]
Chapter 29  Inquisition And Blood - The Manifest Heart Of The Beastly False Religion  [287]
Chapter 30  The Reformation And Protestantism “The Good”, “The Bad” And “The Ugly”  [312]
Chapter 31  False Prophets – Charismatics – Reconstructionists –Dominionists  [335]
Chapter 32  False Prophet: J.I. Packer, Ecumenical Anglican Clergyman, Reconstructionist, Dominionist, and Tool of the Papacy  [349]
Chapter 33  False Prophet: John Piper, Purpose Driven Neo-Calvinist, Neo-Legalist, Synthesizing Trent Amyraldianism, Arminianism, and Calvinism  [354]
Chapter 34  False Prophets – Protestant – John MacArthur  [382]
Chapter 35  John Hagee: Anti-Christ preacher of an Anti-Christ Gospel Spearheading the Fifth Column Political “Pseudo-Christian Zionist” Propaganda Machine in the USA  [408]
Chapter 36  The Evolution of Futurism: Premillennialism, and Premillennial Dispensationalism  [426]
ABOUT THE AUTHOR

Personal Journey

Nicholas A. Laurienzo, born in 1951 in the Little Italy section of Cleveland, Ohio, was raised and indoctrinated in the Roman Catholic religion. He attended Holy Rosary Parochial School grades K thru 8, and then attended the all male Cathedral Latin High School grades 9 thru 12.

Nicholas lightly considered becoming a priest at one time while attending high school and visiting a local seminary in the Cleveland area. Nicholas also attended and participated in the Catholic spiritual retreat sessions held by the priests at his high school.

Nicholas is well read on Catholic doctrine, dogma, and the overall teachings of the Catholic Church, both pre and post Vatican II.

Nicholas received 5 of the 7 required sacraments his former religion demanded for the non-clerical Catholic:

The Sacrament of Baptism
The Sacrament of Holy Communion/Eucharist
The Sacrament of Reconciliation/Penance/Confession
The Sacrament of Confirmation
The Sacrament of Marriage

The Sacraments not received were the Sacrament of Holy Orders, and the Sacrament of The Anointing of The Sick.

Nicholas, since 1981, has taught that the sacraments were and are a waste of
time, are not Scriptural, and did **nothing** at all to effect his salvation.

After high school, Nicholas enlisted in the Ohio Army National Guard (1970) and served his full term of 6 years, receiving an honorable discharge.

In 1975 Nicholas married Elaine in the Roman Church and is still married to Elaine, having two sons and five grandchildren.

Nicholas, for the most part of his working career, was in sales and had his own business for around 12 years.

**Spiritual Journey**

With all the Catholic religious indoctrination Nicholas received, he will attest that he did not know the living Jesus of Scripture and the Gospel. It was not until 1981 that Nicholas was being irresistibly drawn by his Savior to seek the truth.

Nicholas started reading the Scriptures, searching for the answers, and by God's gracious mercy was given the gift of repentance and faith to believe in the Gospel of Jesus Christ, which is Salvation by Grace Alone, through Faith Alone, and by Christ's imputed righteousness alone.

It was a new life and a fresh start for Nicholas.

Being young in the faith, Nicholas had found that the Catholic religion was no longer necessary for his salvation, and in fact, Nicholas knew that the Catholic religion was a hindrance to his spiritual growth and an apostate religion.

Nicholas departed from the Catholic religion and viewed that religion as one of the many anti-Christ religions in this world on par with Talmudic Judaism, Islam, and apostate Protestantism. However, at this early stage of Nicholas' new life, he was not fully educated or fully aware of what non-Catholic Protestants and evangelicals taught.

After departing the Catholic Church, still falsely thinking that he must be an official member of a church group, attended various church groups and non-Catholic denominations.

Nicholas will testify that attending all these different groups early in his spiritual journey were nothing more than Christ's way of showing him the great apostasy that is prevalent in our day.

These groups were no better than the Catholic Church. ALL these groups taught salvation was conditioned and maintained through human self-performance.

Nicholas has had many conversations with Catholic Priests, non-Catholic so-
called Christian ministers of many different persuasions, Jews, and Muslims while attempting to share the true Gospel of Jesus Christ. However, Nicholas only found that these men were so fully in bondage to their systems that they were not willing to embrace truth for fear of economic or personal loss.

To Nicholas, it did not matter what slogan or name they attached to themselves, whether Arminian, Pentecostal, Charismatic, Presbyterian, Calvinist, Lutheran, Methodist, etc. If these groups denied Justification grounded in nothing other than Jesus Christ's imputed righteousness alone, than they all were false.

Even within said reformed circles, Nicholas found through reading and studying, that even these so-called reformed groups were no better than their Roman Catholic apostate mother, teaching many of the false Catholic doctrines.

In 1983 and 1984 Nicholas held a radio broadcast in Cleveland, Ohio entitled “No Compromise”. In these weekly broadcasts, Nicholas exposed the false doctrines of the Roman Catholic religion. Due to pressure placed upon the radio station from the Roman Catholic dioceses of Cleveland, Nicholas' radio broadcast was eventually terminated.

In 2006, Nicholas found through the Internet an interesting site called “Predestinarian Network”. This is a site that upheld the doctrines of Grace and the unvarnished truth of the Gospel. Nicholas is very grateful that the Predestinarian site exists and has shared there his writings, teachings, and dialogue.

Nicholas enjoys traveling the great outdoors with his wife Elaine, visiting and interacting with his grandchildren, seeing and rejoicing in God's creation, sharing the Gospel with truth seekers, and writing.

“I sincerely hope you enjoy reading this book and that Jesus Christ opens your mind to the truths contained within.” Nicholas
An Amillennial Understanding of the Kingdom of God

Nicholas A. Laurienzo

PREFACE

Many books have been written in this area of Christian theology called “Eschatology”. Especially in the last 45 years. Booksellers are overwhelmed in the sale of these books. This is good and well, for it shows an interest on the part of the buyer to learn. Hopefully, that is, of course. However there is also a down side to this: reluctance by some to honestly weigh the evidence and validity of the interpretations of the differing views to arrive at a personal and individual conviction.

Church members find this a more difficult task because of a natural bias they must adhere to in maintaining their specific church membership and teachings. But this is not an impossible task. For with God all things are possible. Once the truth and conviction of God permeates the conscience of a true believer, they are free to leave that specific church group to find others of like persuasion.

I personally have found that by reading different authors with differing views on the subject of Eschatology my quest was in fact a blessing to me. Not only initially to my abandoning of Dispensational Premillennialism many years ago, but toward a belief in Amillennialism. This quest and hunger for truth had enlightened me to the dangers of full-blown Preterism, and the shortcomings and faults of Pre- and Post- Millennial systems of thought and interpretation.

My purpose in writing these essays is to set forth the truths of the apostolic witness, and how this witness gives full glory to Jesus Christ as the fulfiller and fulfillment of all of Israel’s hopes as prophesied in the Old Testament Scriptures. The Evangel.

Many topics and concepts will be discussed and will undoubtedly clash with divergent views. But do these divergent views reflect what the Scriptures teach about Jesus Christ’s redemptive acts, the millennial age, and His second coming? We shall see. You are free to decide for yourselves.

It is argued that Amillenarians do not believe in any millennial age. Of course the term “A-Millennial could imply such a notion. But that is not correct at all. Non-Chiliast would be a better understanding. Amillenarians believe that the millennium was and is a present reality of Christ’s Heavenly reign from His first Advent, Resurrection and Ascension into Heaven as witnessed by the outpouring of the Holy Spirit on Pentecost, till His second coming to usher in the New Heaven and Earth. Not an anticipated future hope of an earthly 1,000-year rule on earth.
Upcoming we will raise some theological questions and provide answers concerning the presence of evil during the Millennial age. Is there a future Golden Age as promoted by some postmillennarians? Did Christ return in 70 A.D. as claimed by preterists? Do the Scriptures teach a future 1,000 literal year Millennium characterized by a reinstatement of “types and shadows”, a rebuilt Temple, the Levitical Priesthood, Temple Sacrifices, the blood physical Jews in the Land, etc. as claimed by Dispensational and Historical Premillennialists? Who are God’s chosen people?

These questions and many more will be discussed and answered.

We as believers in Jesus Christ must be aware of the consequences of our millennial views and how they, if false, are repudiating and/or confounding other foundational doctrines of the Christian faith.

For instance, “Justification and Eschatology”. How do they correlate? The Prophetic Scriptures are bound inseparably to the Evangelical. Any teaching of Eschatology that does not correlate God’s redemptive acts in Christ is useless.

The Evangel determines our view of Old Testament prophecies. Christ, the Messiah, is the central focus of the Old Testament hopes concerning Israel, and throughout time, even till the end of history.

We focus on Christ, not National Israel as dispensationalists and pre-mils do.

The religious scene today is preoccupied with things other than the Gospel, things such as subjective experiences, health, wealth and prosperity, and future earthly blessings in the form of earthly utopias.

The Evangel, the historic redemptive acts in Christ, must call into question all that we teach and preach including eschatology. Without Christ, “the awaited Messiah of Israel”, as the central theme and focus, all Christian attempts to understand Old Testament prophecies are as useless as Nostradamus and Edgar Cayce.

I’m not going to engage in cheap polemics but rather shine the light of truth on darkness.

To understand Old Testament prophecies we must understand Hebrew thought and how it was transmitted and conveyed through metaphoric language. This is extremely important in understanding Christ’s message and teachings along with the other New Testament writers.

Up until early in the 19th century, it has been generally accepted that the Christian church is the fulfillment of the kingdom prophecies. The glorious predictions of the prophets concerning Israel have or are to have their main
fulfillment in the Church. However I take this a bit further in clarifying that these fulfillments are for the “Ekklesia”, the living body of Christ, not the church in the general corporate or institutional sense of the word. For they have within them both elect and reprobate.

However, today there has been a radical departure from this view. For over a hundred years it has been widely accepted that Israel and the Church are quite distinct in that the Old Testament prophecies concerning Israel find their fulfillment in National Israel only and not the Ekklesia. National Israel is God’s earthly chosen people and the Ekklesia are a mystery people unknown to the prophets of old only to be first revealed by Paul the Apostle. It is also believed that these mystery people while on Earth have interrupted God’s fulfillment of His prophetic plan for National Israel. That is why it is necessary for this mystery church to leave this earth via the “Rapture” so God can get back to business in fulfilling the Kingdom prophecies and set up this Jewish age.

I can understand this line of reasoning from a Talmudic Jew, but not from theologians who claim to exalt Christ! This is preposterous! Are these the “re-discovered truths” as the pre-mil Dispensationalists claim??

This is deplorable and dangerous!

No one who has any knowledge of Jewish history from 70 A.D. to this present day can honestly deny the fact that the Talmudic Jew has been a world problem and anti-Christian force. But why? Is it because he has been “out of the land” promised to their fathers? Would getting them back to the land of Palestine solve this problem? Should Palestine be exclusively theirs? Will this fix the problem?

Will the rebuilding of the “Temple” in Jerusalem, with all its blood sacrifices solve this problem?

When they were “in the land”, they cried out “crucify Him”. When they were “in the land”, they stoned and killed the prophets. When they were “in the land”, they committed whoredom with surrounding nations. When they were “in the land”, they sacrificed their children to false gods. When they were “in the land”, they committed acts of homosexuality equal to that city of Sodom.

Should so-called Christians and world governments rally in support to aid and abet Talmudic/Zionist Israel in the ethnic cleansing of Palestine? Will this solve their and our problem?

Is this the solution to the Jewish question?

Rather we should find the real source of the Jewish problem from the Scriptures themselves. The real problem lies in the fact that they rejected and killed the Messiah promised to their race, and were “scattered among the nations” as a
punishment for their sin and treason. And that they still continue in unbelief and consider themselves a “peculiar and chosen” people whose ultimate destiny is to rule the earth under a messiah who is yet to come.

The solution for Jew and Gentile alike can only be found in the mercies and grace of the Gospel.

Does the Jew have a distinct and glorious future promised to him apart from Christ’s body?

Are Jews entitled to look for an “earthly kingdom” which is to be theirs?

Rather, is not their need that heavenly salvation which is to be found in Christ alone?

I have raised some serious questions. Questions relating to pre-mil misconceptions of Old Testament prophecies concerning National Israel.

Upcoming studies will be introduced sections at a time. This will be a long study due to the fact that there are many concepts to be understood.

Planning, researching, studying, typing, and most importantly praying will be time consuming. So please be patient.

I have no doubt that those who are seeking truth will be blessed. And so will I.
Chapter 1
Differing Eschatological Views

We can define Eschatology from two Greek words “eschatos” and “logos” meaning the study or doctrine of last things. However, eschatology is not confined to historical and world events that are future to us, nor confined to events of the past only. Eschatology also has personal dimensions concerning regeneration (eternal Spiritual life in the present), physical death, immortality, the intermediate state, the resurrection, the end of the age, the final judgment, and the eternal state.

In our current day religious scene, all too often “sensational” eschatology is focused on “the time of the rapture”, “the Nation of Israel”, “the great tribulation”, “a future millennial age”, and “the antichrist”. Rarely, when discussing eschatology with so-called Christians, will Christ be mentioned. If He is mentioned, it will only be in relation to Him sitting on some throne in the land of Palestine for a numerical thousand years.

The central and paramount issues of the Christ Event are just not there!

Within our existential realm, we as believers can only have conscious existence in the present. However, within this present existence we also maintain a conscious awareness of the past. We do not live in the past, but are aware of the past by understanding historical objective events. Likewise, we do not live in the future, but are aware of the future by understanding concrete objective Spiritual realities made known to us by the Gospel with all its benefits. Any brand of eschatology that does not include the “present” conscious state and awareness of Gospel realities made known to the believer in relation to Christ, His Kingdom, and historic acts of redemption, is seriously deficient.

Christ and His Kingdom are now a present reality made known to us by the Holy Spirit, just as Satan is a present reality revealed to us by the Holy Spirit. Neither Christ (Ultimate God) nor Satan (Ultimate Anti-Christ) is limited solely to past or future historical events.

Let’s look at different schools of eschatology. The below comparisons are taken from amillennialist Kim Riddlebarger and represent, in my opinion, a fair unbiased treatment and understanding of these differing views.
Dispensational Premillennialism

Overview:

1. Distinctive Features and Emphases:

a. Dispensationalists argue for the necessity of the literal interpretation of all of the prophetic portions of Scripture. Charles Ryrie makes this point very clearly:

“When the principles of literal interpretation both in regard to general and special hermeneutics are followed, the result is the premillennial system of doctrine... If one interprets literally, he arrives at the premillennial system.”

This means that all promises made to David and Abraham under the Old Covenant are to be literally fulfilled in the future millennial age.

b. Dispensationalists insist that God has two redemptive plans, one for National Israel, and one for Gentiles during the “church age”. This presupposition forms the basis for the dispensational hermeneutic. As John Walvoord states regarding the dispensational hermeneutic, "Pretribulationism distinguishes clearly between Israel and the church and their respective programs."

c. There is a “rapture” of believers when Jesus Christ secretly returns to earth before the seven-year tribulation period begins (the seventieth week of Daniel, cf. Daniel 9:24-27). Believers do not experience the persecution of the Anti-Christ who rises to prominence during this “tribulation period”. The Biblical data dealing with the time of tribulation is referring to unbelieving Israel, not the church. Therefore, church age, or the “age of grace”, is to be seen as that period of time in which God is dealing with Gentiles prior to the coming of the kingdom of God during the millennium.

d. The visible and physical second coming of Christ occurs after the great tribulation. Those who are converted to Christ during the tribulation, including Jews (the 144,000) who turn to Christ, go on into the millennium to re-populate the earth. Glorified believers rule with Christ during his future reign.

e. Jesus came to earth bringing with him an “offer” of the kingdom to the Jews, who rejected him. God then turned to dealing with the Gentiles - thus the church age is a parenthesis of sorts. The rapture is the next event to occur in Biblical prophecy. The signs of the end of the age (i.e., the birth of the nation of Israel, the revival of the Roman empire predicted in Daniel as seen through the emergence of the EEC [common market], the impending Russian-Arab invasion of Israel, etc.) all point to the immediacy of the secret return of Christ for his church. Antichrist is awaiting his revelation once the believing church is removed.
f. The millennium is marked by a return to Old Testament temple worship and sacrifice to commemorate the sacrifice of Christ. At the end of the millennium, the “great white throne” judgment occurs, and Satan and all unbelievers are cast into the lake of fire. There is the creation of a new heaven and earth.

Leading Proponents:

a. Dispensationalism was largely popularized through the Scofield Reference Bible, and is now represented, for example, by the notes in the Ryrie Study Bible. Hal Lindsey's book, The Late Great Planet Earth served to keep the movement in the mainstream of Evangelicalism in the late 60’s and early 70’s. The vast majority of the early Charismatic movement was dispensational in its orientation even though most dispensationalists emphasized that charismata ceased with the completion of the New Testament. As the Charismatic movement has matured and become more consistent in its own theology, dispensationalism has largely been jettisoned. Because of this, and because of the resurgence of questions of ethics (the dispensationalist cannot efficiently use his OT to answer ethical questions) dispensationalism is apparently on the decline.

b. Leading dispensational theologians include John Walvoord, Charles Ryrie, J. Dwight Pentecost, Norman Geisler and Charles Feinberg. Popular dispensational pastors and writers include Charles Swindoll, Dave Hunt, Jack Van Impe and Charles Stanley. Chuck Smith and the Calvary Chapel movement represent the Charismatic side of dispensationalism.

c. Dallas Theological Seminary is the leading dispensational institution. Other dispensational institutions include: Talbot Theological Seminary, the Master's College and Grace Theological Seminary.

Bibliography:


Historic Premillennialism

Overview:

1. Distinctive Features and Emphases:
a. While often popularly confused with “dispensational premillennialism” with but a mere disagreement as to the timing of the “rapture”, historic premillennialism is, in actuality, a completely different eschatological system, largely rejecting the whole dispensational understanding of redemptive history.

b. The basic features of historic premillennialism are as follows. When Jesus began his public ministry the kingdom of God was manifest through His ministry. Upon His ascension into heaven and the “Gift of the Spirit” at Pentecost, the kingdom is present through the Spirit, until the end of the age, which is marked by the return of Christ to the earth in judgment. During the period immediately preceding the return of Christ, there is great apostasy and tribulation.

C. After the return of Christ, there will be a period of 1000 years (the millennium) separating the “first” resurrection from the “second” resurrection. Satan will be bound, and the kingdom will consummated, that is, made visible during this period.

d. At the end of the millennial period, Satan will be loosed and there will be a massive rebellion (of “Gog and Magog”), immediately preceding the “second” resurrection or final judgment. After this, there will be the creation of a new Heaven and Earth.

Leading Proponents:

a. Without question, the best and most influential historic premillennialist was the late George Eldon Ladd of Fuller Theological Seminary. Through the work of Ladd, historic premillennialism gained scholarly respect and popularity among Evangelical and Reformed theologians. Other major historic premillennialists include the late Walter Martin, John Warwick Montgomery, J. Barton Payne, Henry Alford (the noted Greek scholar), and Theodore Zahn (the German NT specialist). The best examples of current historical premillennial work would be the many scholars of the Trinity Evangelical Divinity School (Evangelical Free).

b. Historic premillennialism draws its name from the fact that many of the early Church Fathers (i.e. Ireneaus [140-203], who was a disciple of Polycarp, who had been a disciple of the apostle John, Justin Martyr [100-165], and Papias [80-155]), apparently believed and taught that there would be a visible kingdom of God upon the earth after the return of Christ.

c. Several major Evangelical seminaries have some historic premillennial representation such as Fuller and Trinity. Surprisingly, a number of the faculty of Covenant Theological Seminary in St. Louis (a Reformed institution) held to a covenantal form of premillennialism - J.O. Buswell, J. Barton Payne and R. Laird Harris. However, all of these men have recently departed for glory, and the Reformed varieties of premillennialism are probably gone with them.
Bibliography:


**Postmillennialism**

Overview:

1. Distinctive Features and Emphases:

   a. Generally speaking, postmillennialists affirm that the millennium is a period of one thousand years of universal peace and righteousness in this world, which precedes the return of Jesus Christ to earth in judgment. Postmillennialists are divided as to whether or not the period of time is a literal one thousand years, and whether or not the millennial age begins abruptly or gradually. Some see the millennial age as entirely future; others argue that it may have already begun to gradually emerge. Postmillennialists also disagree as to the events that mark the beginning of the millennial age, such as the conversion of Israel (Romans 9-11), the binding of Satan (Revelation 20), and the defeat of Antichrist.

   b. Postmillennialism is in one sense the historic position of the church since the days of St. Augustine. Since all amillennial Christians (to be discussed below) are also technically postmillennial in their understanding of the millennium, (though self-consciously “postmillennial” Christians cannot be “amillennial” in any sense) and since the term “amillennialism” was not coined until after the beginning of the twentieth century, it was common for Protestant dogmaticians to speak of the contrast between “pre” and “post” millennialism, without distinguishing between “a” and “post” millennialism. Therefore, the difference between amillennial and postmillennial Christians centers upon the character and length of the millennial age. Postmillennialists see the millennial age as commencing at some point during the present age, and as a period in which the kingdom of God triumphs over the kingdoms of this world. Amillennial Christians see the millennial age as occupying the entire period of time between the first and second coming of Christ. Generally speaking, amillennial Christians see the
millennial age as one of both the triumph of the spiritual kingdom of God and the 
corresponding rise of evil in opposition.

c. According to postmillennialists, there will be universal preaching and 
acceptance of the Gospel, and a complete and total victory of the kingdom of 
God over the forces of Satan and unbelief. Postmillennialism is an optimistic 
eschatology of the victory of the grace of God in subduing evil in the world. 
During this period Satan will be effectually bound by the triumph of grace. Israel 
will be converted somewhere near the beginning of the millennial period. 
Postmillennialists do disagree however, about the nature and details of these 
events.

d. At the end of the millennial period, Satan will be released, and the period of 
great tribulation and the apostasy described in Revelation 20 occurs, culminating 
in Gog and Magog and the Battle of Armageddon. Christ then returns in 
judgment (the “great throne judgment”), the resurrection occurs, and there is the 
creation of a new heaven and earth.

Leading Proponents:

a. Postmillennialism was popular among American Evangelicals in the period of 
unprecedented technological growth between 1870 and 1915. World War I 
largely served to squash the tremendous optimism regarding the growth of 
technology and the related optimism about the future of man, which was carried 
over in church in the form of an optimistic eschatology. Many Reformed 
theologians of this period are generally considered postmillennial, including the 

b. Recently, postmillennialism has seen resurgence with the rise of Christian 
reconstructionism and theonomy. In addition, there is mass confusion generated 
by critics of postmillennialism, such as Dave Hunt and Hal Lindsey, who portray 
the movement as taking two quite different and confusing forms - that of 
“Theonomy”, and that of “Dominion Theology”. Thus many Evangelicals fail to 
see these two forms as distinct and divergent movements. Setting out the 
differences between the two forms then is helpful.

1). The “theonomic” form of postmillennialism was initially presented by J. 
Marcellus Kik, and reworked into a full-blown ethical system known as 
“theonomy” or “reconstructionism” by R. J. Rushdoony. The business of the 
church was to work to see a theocracy restored upon the earth by emphasizing 
the continuity of OT law (civil, ceremonial and moral) with the NT. Once 
established, this victorious church would be the divine vehicle from which the 
ever-advancing kingdom of God would bind Satan and subdue all evil in the 
world. The emphasis of theonomic postmillennialism is that it is God who 
exercises dominion through his church, establishing His law as the law of the 
land. Other theologians in the postmillennial theonomic movement are the late
Greg Bahnsen, Ray Sutton and Gary North. Popular writers include Gary DeMarr, Kenneth Gentry, and Peter J. Leithart.

2). The “dominion” form of postmillennialism (though not all “dominion” advocates are postmillennial) is exclusively Pentecostal. This form believes the charismatic revival (“Latter Rain”) is God's means of binding Satan and allowing the Spirit-lead church to reclaim material possessions and wealth, which had been surrendered to unbelief and the kingdom of Satan. Once the Church understands its role and potential for dominion, through the work of the Spirit, it will be able to establish the kingdom of God on earth in it fullness, thereby bringing in a millennial age. The emphasis here is that it is the believer who must learn to exercise dominion if he is to take part in the advancing kingdom. Bishop Earl Paulk, Paul Yongli Cho, and perhaps Kenneth Copeland, Kenneth Hagin and Pat Robertson.

d. The older form of postmillennialism, as practiced by Reformed theologians such as Hodge and Warfield, has little in common in emphasis with the modern theonomic approach to eschatology, which emphasizes the rise of a theocracy as the vehicle of dominion. The modern form raises serious questions about the Reformed understanding of the distinction between law and gospel. The result in many circles is a peculiar hybrid, (a tertium quid, if you will) with a propensity for making strange bedfellows.

Bibliography:


**Amillennialism**

Overview:

1. Distinctive Features and Emphases:

a. The “a” millennial (literally meaning “no” millennium) position is the eschatological view of historic Catholic, Lutheran and Reformed Christianity. It would be my educated guess that about two-thirds of the Christian family espouses an amillennial eschatology. The amillennial position is as well the position of the vast majority of Reformed and Lutheran theologians. The position portrayed in these lectures is the Reformed understanding of amillennialism,
which is better understood as “present” millennialism [or “realized” millennialism], since Reformed eschatology argues for a real, present, though “invisible” non-spatial millennium.

b. Amillennialists insist that the promises made to national Israel, David and Abraham in the OT are fulfilled by Christ and the Church during this age, which is the millennium - that is the entire period of time between the two advents of our Lord. The “thousand years” are therefore symbolic of the entire inter-advental age. Satan is bound by Christ's victory over him and the establishment of the kingdom of God via the preaching of the gospel, and Satan is no longer free to deceive the nations. The presence of Christ is reigning in heaven during this period with the martyrs who come out of the great tribulation. At the end of the millennial age, Christ returns in judgment of all men. The general resurrection occurs, final judgment takes place for all men and women, and a new Heaven and Earth are established.

C. In most forms of amillennialism, immediately before the return of Christ, Satan is unbound, there is a great apostasy and a time of unprecedented satanically inspired evil. This last Satanic gasp and subsequent rebellious activity is destroyed by our Lord at his return.

Leading Proponents:

a. Amillennialism has always been the majority position of the Christian family. It was first articulated by St. Augustine, and has been given a distinctive Reformed emphasis through the work of Geerhardus Vos (the “Biblical-Theological” approach). As the “dispensational” movement captured the hearts and minds of conservative American Evangelicals, amillennialism was equated with “liberalism” or Roman Catholicism. The supposed interpreting prophecy “spiritually” or “not-literally” has lead to the rejection of amillennialism by many. In addition, amillennialism suffered greatly from the failure of Reformed and Lutheran writers to defend the position against the likes of Dave Hunt, Chuck Missler and Hal Lindsey, who has labeled the position as “demonic and heretical” and the root of modern anti-Semitism.

b. Leading contemporary “amill” theologians would include popular writers such as J. I. Packer, Mike Horton, [the late] Calvin seminary professor, Anthony Hoekema, and RC Sproul (now Postmill partial Preterist Ed). In addition, all of the Reformers as well as the Reformed and Lutheran confessional traditions, as a whole, have been amillennial.

Bibliography:

The most important and useful amillennial work is the excellent book by Anthony A. Hoekema, The Bible and the Future (Grand Rapids: William B. Eerdmans, 1982). Also helpful are: Oswald T. Allis, Prophecy and the Church (Phillipsburg:
There is another view that I want to mention. There are some who either deliberately or naively have confused Realized Eschatology (the system as a whole) with Amillennialism in some manner.

**Realized Eschatology**

Realized Eschatology affirms that all prophecies regarding “the end times” were fulfilled in A.D.70 at the destruction of Jerusalem, including: The Second Coming of Christ, The Resurrection of the Dead, The Day of Judgment, The End of the World, etc. Furthermore, proponents of this doctrine affirm that Christ’s Kingdom/Church was not fully established on Pentecost. Instead, the kingdom was born in Acts 2, but did not come with “power” and fullness until Jerusalem was destroyed in A. D. 70. “The last days” never apply to the Christian age, but always to the closing period of the Jewish age (A.D. 30 - A.D. 70).
Chapter 2
Organic Unity of the Old and New Testaments

Back in the latter portion of the 1980's I was employed as a sales manager in the Institutional Food Business; hospitals, hotels, and restaurants. My primary function was to solicit new accounts and maintain them through my subordinates.

I can vividly recall two incidents. The first was when I visited a current customer who owned a Deli. The owner and his two sons who worked for him were thoroughly Jewish, “Yamaka” and all. I loved stopping there on occasion for lunch, because he sold the best corned beef sandwiches in the greater Cleveland, Ohio area. I love Jewish style corned beef sandwiches with a kosher pickle.

While I was sitting at the counter eating my lunch, one of his sons looked at my briefcase, which had a sticker I had placed on it that read, “Jesus Is Lord”. He gazed at that sticker a few times, then came behind the counter and asked me if I wanted my coffee cup refilled. I knew from his reaction to seeing that sticker he was going to say something about it.

He asked me, “Nick, what religion do you belong to?” I responded by saying, “I’m a true Jew from the seed of Abraham and a follower of Jesus, the Messiah of Israel.”

You had to be there to see the expression on his face when he heard that. He was not mad at all, at least not on the outside, he might have been inwardly, I could not tell. But rather, he had a perplexed look about himself. Due to many customers seated at the counter and tables, he did not enter into a long discussion with me, but briefly said, “How can you, being an Italian and Christian, claim to be a Jew?” End of discussion. But the whole time I was there, he was looking very strangely at me.

The second incident was with a neighbor of mine that lived across the street from me. He and his family belonged to a free will, fundamental, dispensational Baptist church. One day, while I was outdoors cutting the grass, he approached me, asking what church I belonged to. I responded by telling him, “I’m a true Jew from the seed of Abraham and a follower of Jesus the Messiah of Israel.” Again, like previously with the Jew, I received a strange and perplexed look from him. He said to me, “The Jews are God’s chosen people, and He has a specific plan for them.” There is more to that story.
Can anyone understand why these two individuals were perplexed and reacted strangely to my statement?

It's all a matter of identity.

The Jew and Christian alike are both in need of the following to maintain their distinct identity:

God (Trinity)
Miracles
A reigning King
Kingdom
Priesthood
Sacrifice
Election
Covenant
Law
Justification
Sanctification
Atonement
Temple
Circumcision
Faith
Sabbath
Feast Days
Prophet
City
Land

And most importantly, A JEWISH MESSIAH.

“For salvation is of the Jews.”

We will examine these points in light of fulfillment, one by one.

Primary Principle of Interpretation

There is one important principle that must be introduced at this point. That is: “The New Testament Gospel and Apostolic Kerygma Interprets The Old Testament Scriptures”.

This must be so.

John 16:5-15
5 “But now I go away to Him who sent Me, and none of you asks Me, ‘Where are You going?’
6 But because I have said these things to you, sorrow has filled your heart.
7 Nevertheless I tell you the truth. It is to your advantage that I go away; for if I do not go away, the Helper will not come to you; but if I depart, I will send Him to you.
8 And when He has come, He will convict the world of sin, and of righteousness, and of judgment:
9 of sin, because they do not believe in Me;
10 of righteousness, because I go to My Father and you see Me no more;
11 of judgment, because the ruler of this world is judged.
12 I still have many things to say to you, but you cannot bear them now.
13 However, when He, the Spirit of truth, has come, He will guide you into all truth; for He will not speak on His own authority, but whatever He hears He will speak; and He will tell you things to come.
14 He will glorify Me, for He will take of what is Mine and declare it to you.
15 All things that the Father has are Mine. Therefore I said that He will take of Mine and declare it to you.”

Jesus told His disciples that it was an advantage for them that He go away. If not, the Helper (Holy Spirit) would not come. Because Christ did depart, He sends the Helper.

The Helper bestows on the “ekklesia” the eyes needed to understand truth.

He will guide us into all truth.
He will tell us things to come.
He will glorify Christ.
He will declare to us what is Christ’s.

What belonged to the Father (Old Testament Kingdom), is now Christ’s (New Testament Kingdom), and has been declared to us; One Fulfilled Plan, One King, One Kingdom, One People, One Identity.

He. 1:8-9; Ps. 45:6-7

The Primary role of the Holy Spirit is to convict and to reveal Christ.

From this vantage point, the New Testament authors can give us an accurate interpretation of the Christ Event, and how Christ is the fulfillment of all that was prophesied in the Old.

Were the Apostles obtaining their teachings from a New Testament? Or were they teaching and interpreting from the Old Testament Scriptures and from Christ Himself?
We are forced to understand the Old Testament in the greater light of Christ and the Apostolic Kerygma.

The Old and New Testaments are not radically divorced from one another.

Jesus came to fulfill, not repudiate, nor interrupt, nor abrogate Old Testament Israel’s prophecies and historical identity concerning Israel.

The New Testament needs the Old, just as much as the Old needs the New.

The Old gives meaning and historical context to the vocabulary of the New. The New brings to light the fulfillment and understanding of the Old.

If the Old is to be so radically divorced and alienated from the New (as in pre-mill Dispensationalism), then Christ and His body of believers would have no real meaning or identity in this world.

This is the main problem with dispensational premillennialism, for it so radically divorces, better yet excludes the ekklesia from the hopes, identity, and promises of the Old. Is it any wonder they call Christ’s ekklesia a mystery unknown in the Old, and an interruption of the Old?

The Messiah of Israel is the living embodiment and fulfillment of all Israel’s hopes.

A rejection of the Messiah forfeits the right to be called a Jew, and alienates from the promises made to Israel.

An acceptance of the Messiah, by inheritance makes you a Jew in the truest sense, with all of Israel’s blessings and promises.

Likewise, the Historic Pre-Mills so radically isolate the “present” reality of Christ’s victory and reign by relegating His reign to a future expectation of a thousand years. The reestablishment of a people, (Talmudic Jews), who can only find their true identity in Christ. Not in some monarchical reestablishment of the Old Testament types and shadows: temple, priest, sacrifices, etc. They totally miss the message of the Old Testament hopes and aspirations of Israel as expressed by the prophets of Israel.

When the Jews rejected Christ the Messiah (“Crucify Him”, “We have no king but Caesar”), they were rejecting Moses, the prophets, and David (Psalms) for “they all spake concerning Him”. By rejecting Christ they in fact were rejecting the Father. Jesus said, “I and the Father are one.” Therefore they repudiated and forfeited their own historical identity as Jews. By an acceptance of Jesus Christ, both Jew and Gentile have become true Jews, true Israel, and share the blessings of covenant of true Israel.
If, then, the Jew has rejected The Father, Moses, the Prophets, and David, what heritage is remaining for them for a self-identification? None! Jew and Gentile alike must be Chosen in Christ before the foundation of the world. Christ and His people are the true Chosen People. They are Israel in the truest and ultimate sense.

Today we hear all this nonsense being spewed out that Jews still remain as God’s chosen people. That God has a wonderful plan for them in the land of Palestine for a thousand years.

Jesus and His disciples were men of the Old Testament. They conveyed their message using Old Testament terms. If we are to understand the New, we must know the Old. The Old is essential to the New Testament witness.

The New Testament witness always speaks of the Old in terms of fulfillment. Not replacement, nor repudiation, nor interruption. Jesus came to fulfill. (Mt. 5:17)

Christ and His Gospel is the only faith that finds its meaning and identity rooted in historical events.

The Gospel is not some sort of mythological ethereal principle or timeless ideal. Nor is it reduced to mystical subjective human experiences that would enhance one’s emotional psyche. Neither is it just a set of morals and ethical standards we should live by. But it is the power of God unto salvation.

It is sickening to listen to modern day presentations of Christ: health, wealth and prosperity, positive thinking, charismania, altruism, syncretism, existentialism, living an enhanced moral and spiritual life, social reform, etc. These so-called preachers and teachers all fail to present the Christ of history, the Christ of Israel.

God has predetermined and preordained all of history from eternity, nonetheless God’s purpose for the redemption and restoration of both man and creation are demonstrated throughout history. The revelation of Jesus Christ is derived from an historical setting/framework.

From the very beginning of history we see God’s interaction with mankind and the solution to man’s problem of sin. That solution is Jesus Christ.

Genesis 3:15 "And I will put enmity between you and the woman, and between your seed and her Seed; He shall bruise your head, and you shall bruise His heel."

Because of Adam’s need for righteousness, God predetermined redemption through the salvific work of Jesus Christ. The above passage is the first historical
reference that introduces the promise of Jesus Christ. It also introduces two distinct people (seeds): Elect and Reprobate.

The Apostles preached Christ from the Old Testament Scriptures. Those Scriptures were the “Bible” for Jesus and His Apostles.

Prior to Christ, the law, prophets, and Psalms pointed to a promised hope for Israel. With the Helper (Holy Spirit), the veil was removed and they (true Jews) saw that the Scripture existed for the sake of Jesus Christ.

Col. 1:16 “because in him were all things created, those in the heavens, and those upon the earth, those visible, and those invisible, whether thrones, whether lordships, whether principalities, whether authorities; all things through him, and for him, have been created,”

Every aspect of human and spiritual existence including evil has been created and subjected to Christ’s dominion and rule.

Jn. 5:45-46: “Do not think that I will accuse you unto the Father; there is one who is accusing you, Moses -- in whom ye have hoped; for if ye were believing Moses, ye would have been believing me, for he wrote concerning me;”

Our Lord said to the wicked reprobate religious leaders that Moses accuses them in their denial of Him. The religious leaders and their followers were blinded to their own purpose and calling.

True Jews see that the law and prophets testify to Christ. God in the Old Testament manifested His power and Glory through miraculous wonders. And likewise, Jesus Christ, true God and true Israel, has done the same.

Ac. 10:38-43: “Jesus who [is] from Nazareth -- how God did anoint him with the Holy Spirit and power; who went through, doing good, and healing all those oppressed by the devil, because God was with him; and we -- we are witnesses of all things that he did, both in the country of the Jews, and in Jerusalem, -- whom they did slay, having hanged upon a tree. This one God did raise up the third day, and gave him to become manifest, not to all the people, but to witnesses, to those having been chosen before by God -- to us who did eat with [him], and did drink with him,” after his rising out of the dead; and he commanded us to preach to the people, and to testify fully that it is he who hath been ordained by God judge of living and dead -- to this one do all the prophets testify, that through his name every one that is believing in him doth receive remission of sins.”

True Jews also see that God’s righteousness in the law and prophets point to Christ.
Romans 1:2: “which He announced before through His prophets in holy writing…”

Romans 3:21: “And now apart from law hath the righteousness of God been manifested, testified to by the law and the prophets…”

1 Co. 15:3-4: “3 for I delivered to you first, what also I did receive, that Christ died for our sins, according to the Writings, 4 and that he was buried, and that he hath risen on the third day, according to the Writings…”

The whole purpose of maintaining Israel’s realization and identity was to see their God in the personification of Jesus Christ. The Old Testament had provided the historical framework and setting to see God in Christ. The Elect saw Christ, and the rest were blinded.

Christ and the Apostles used the language of “that which was fulfilled”, and “according to the scriptures”. The dawn of a new day had come and the Kingdom was at hand. The King of Israel had accomplished His mission: “It is finished.” He conquered sin and death, and sits at the right hand of God.

There are three basic features of the Old Testament.

Historical in that it shows the mighty and epoch acts of God through creation, the flood, the destruction of Sodom, the plagues of Egypt, the Exodus, and the creation of the Hebrew nation. These actual real historical events bar any notion of a complete allegorical and mythical interpretation of history. These were real events with real people and a real God.

Legal in that it demonstrates the use of a Covenant arrangement between God and a people. It binds man to God and God to man. It has legal stipulations that must be met to incur blessings or, if breached, curses.

Commemorative in that it celebrates the mighty works of God in redemption. Israel’s worship is shown through Sabbaths, ceremonies, harvest festivals, feast days, and psalms. They show the mighty acts of God in the deliverance from bondage in Egypt (Ps. 66:1-6; 78; 105; 106).

All three of these basic features are fulfilled in Christ.

Why is it so important to stress unity between the Old and New Testaments, rather than oppose unity [as some do] and use terms of separation, interruption, or radical isolation? A “that was for them and this is for us” mentality?
It’s of paramount importance that we view God’s redemptive purposes for elect man and creation as one continual ontological and eschatological struggle between Light (God/Christ) and Darkness (anti-God/Christ), and how this struggle historically was recorded from Adam to Noah, Noah to Abraham, Abraham to Jacob/Israel, Moses to Christ (inauguration), and Christ to consummation.

Elect individuals (chosen in Christ) from eternity have found their identity historically in the periods they lived in, that were present to them.

**It’s all about identity. Who are we in Christ??!!**

Today those that profess Christ and call themselves Christian say, “I’m a Catholic, I’m a Baptist, I’m a Lutheran, I’m a Calvinist, I’m Pentecostal”, etc. etc. This is not technically wrong, for identity must be relative to something or someone. In theological matters, people identify with their doctrines or dogmas to give them distinctiveness. However, we the Elect of God in our present day must think of ourselves more concretely to understand the full magnitude and implications of the Christ Event, and how it affects our thinking in relation to Eschatology.

It’s pointless and useless to discuss Eschatology with Chiliasts, due to the fact that our (Amillennial) core premise and presupposition is different. That’s why I’m spending this time initially in defending the premise that Christ and His Ekklesia are the true and real Israel of the Scriptures. As opposed to Christ-rejecting blood Jews. If one understands this premise to be true, then all forms of chiliast eschatology are bankrupt and false. For they deal with a people who are not in view at all, in any way, shape, or form, in the prophetic plan of God.

The ontological and eschatological tension is between Christ's Kingdom (His “ekklesia”, not the Old Testament blood/Jewish Christ rejecters - they are no longer Israel in any sense of the word!), and Satan's kingdom.

If we are to engage in debate or study of Eschatology, we must first define and identify a people that have a prophetic future.

Does this make sense?

Some on this forum understand what I’m saying, but there is an audience out there that I know are silent and are viewing p-net. When I look at the viewers online, the numbers are there. Maybe they will engage in debate, or maybe not. Only God knows.
It's not about getting the “church” raptured so God can finish His plan for the Jews, for they are not Jews. We, the body of Christ, are the true Jews. We must understand this premise. Our struggles in this current age till its consummation lie with those who reject the Gospel of Justification.

This is the battle. This is the line of demarcation. Election and Justification in Christ is the paramount issue that faces the “ekklesia”. Those that reject the true pristine doctrine of an imputed righteousness justification, have rejected the Covenant of Israel. Justification and righteousness of a people was always the purpose and goal of redemption from Genesis to Christ! History is a redemptive history, aimed at a specific people. That people being the Elect from all the nations.

To discuss the millennium, Daniel, Revelation, the Mark of the beast, the anti-Christ, and the rapture, we first must identify a people.

From Pentecost to this present day, when Elect individuals have been regenerated unto life in Christ, members of the “ekklesia” enter into the Kingdom of True Israel with the Jewish Christ who is our King (Mt. 2:2; 21:5; Mk. 15:2; Lu. 23:3; Jn. 1:49). We are united and bound to Him by covenant (Mt. 26:28; Rom.11:27; 2 Cor. 3:6; 3:14). We are not divorced from Israel; we are Israel in the truest and ultimate reality (Gal. 6:16). We find our roots and heritage in Israel (Ro.11:1-28). We enter the realm and Kingdom of Israel (Mk. 1:15; Mt. 3:2; 10:7; Lu. 8:10; 11:20; Jn. 3:3) with all its distinguishing characteristics that made them of old a peculiar people among the nations.

We possess in the Jewish Messiah the same God as the men of old. **They rejected Him, and the Elect obtained Him.**

God (Trinity)
De. 6:4; Mk. 12:29; Jn. 1:1-5; 1 Jn. 5:7

Miracles
Ex. 3:20; 34:10; Jud. 6:13; Mt.11:21; Lu. 10:13; 19:37; Ac. 2:22

A Reigning King
2 S. 3:4; 5:12; Mt. 2:2; 21:5; Mk. 15:2; Lu. 23:3; Jn. 1:49; 1 Ti. 1:15; 6:15; Re. 17:14

Kingdom
Ps. 45:6; He. 1:8

Priesthood
Ge.14:18; Ex. 28:1; He. 2:17; 3:1; 4:14; 5:5-6, 10; 7:3, 17; 8:1; 10:21
Sacrifice
Ge. 31:54; Ex. 5:3; 12:27; 23:18; De. 12:27; Ep. 5:2; He. 9:26; 10:12

Election
Is. 42:1; 45:4; Ro. 8:33; Col. 3:12; 1 Pe. 1:2

This point (election) needs to be fully expounded because it is critical in understanding Paul in Romans 9 and 11. The Chiliasts, due to their insistence on a radical interruption of the "church", and a wrong people, force Paul to say and mean something quite different.
Chapter 3
Election and Eschatology

A correct understanding of the doctrine of election is vital and of paramount importance to our understanding of the redemptive purposes of God. The whole of God’s redemptive purpose in relation to man is aimed at a specific group of people: the “elect” of God from all ages, from Adam to Christ’s Second Advent (consummation) to destroy this present age and usher in the “New Heaven and Earth”.

The Old Testament Scriptures are not silent regarding the universal dimension and nature of God’s redemptive purposes for a specific people. The Chiliasm dispensationalists would have us think that only due to National (blood and ethnic) Israel’s rejection of the Messiah a plan B contingency (parenthesis) was then invented by God to offer salvation to a “mystery” people called Gentiles. They believe that this was an interruption of God’s plan for ethnic Israel, rather than a fulfillment of His purpose in Christ as the “old” Scriptures allude to.

The reprobate and unregenerate Jews in Christ’s day thought along those same faulty lines. They identified themselves as a chosen and unique people only in relation to “ethnicity”, “blood heritage”, and a “covenant”. But that covenant was a shadow of the real. The blood of bulls and goats could not remove one sin (He.10:4). In their pride, arrogance, and self-righteousness, they considered Samaritans, Gentiles, and those not of their blood and heritage “dogs”, “outcasts”, and “sinners”. They were blinded to the real purpose and reason for their calling.

The Old Testament reveals the universal dimension of salvation for an elect people, expressed in the promises made to Israel and fulfilled in Christ.

God uses an exclusive plan for National Israel for universal purposes.

The below Scriptures show a universal aspect of God’s purposes.

Ge. 12:1-3 “1 The LORD had said to Abram, ‘Go from your country, your people and your father’s household to the land I will show you. 2 I will make you (Abraham) into a great nation, and I will bless you (Abraham); I will make your name (Abraham) great, and you will be a blessing. 3 I will bless those who bless you (Abraham) and whoever curses you (Abraham) I will curse; and all peoples on earth will be blessed through you (Abraham).’”

The birth of the nation of Israel subsequently from Abraham’s loins cannot be
radically separated. National Israel can only find its true and real identity through Abraham. Two main identifiers were given to Abraham and his true seed. One being faith alone for righteousness, and two being circumcision.

We will further develop these two concepts. But let’s list more of Scripture depicting the universal character of God’s purposes and realm. The radical Chiliast makes the grave error of seeing two distinct plans for two distinct people, i.e. Ethnic Israel and the Ekklesia. But that is patently false.

Kingship of creation: Ps. 24:1; 47:2; 93:1; 95:3.

Kingship of the nations: Ps. 47:3; 99:2; Je. 10:7.

Kingship of Israel: Is. 6:5; 41:21; 44:6 (with a direct reference to Jesus, “First and Last”); 52:7 (alludes to Jesus Christ and His Salvation.)

Jesus Christ the King inherits the nations: Ps. 2:6-8; 72:1, 8-11, 17-19; 22:27-28; Zec. 9:9-10.

Is. 49:6 “he says: It is too small a thing for you to be my servant to restore the tribes of Jacob and bring back those of Israel I have kept. I will also make you a light for the Gentiles, that my salvation may reach to the ends of the earth.”

Also: Is. 60:1-3; 45:22; Mal. 1:11.

How in the world can ethnic national Israel apart from Christ be considered a light for the Gentiles? It can only come through Jesus the true light (John 1:1-9). Due to their rejection of Christ, they (ethnic Israel) are no light at all, and are without purpose.

Zechariah specifically prophesies Jesus Christ. Zec. 9:9-10: “9 Rejoice greatly, Daughter Zion Shout, Daughter Jerusalem See, your king comes to you, righteous and victorious, lowly and riding on a donkey, on a colt, the foal of a donkey. 10 I will take away the chariots from Ephraim and the warhorses from Jerusalem, and the battle bow will be broken. He will proclaim peace to the nations. His rule will extend from sea to sea and from the River to the ends of the earth.”

Their (blood Jews’) rejection of the Messiah did not frustrate God’s purposes. Man cannot stop the purpose of God. Christ’s rule/millennium was not postponed to some future age. If that is so, then this current “mystery” (as they claim) Gospel age is emptied of all its splendor, power, and glory! And that despite the fact that we are united to the Jewish Messiah Christ by virtue of the power of the Holy Spirit!

The elect reach their ultimate destiny through elect Abraham, elect Isaac, elect
Jacob, and ultimately and finally through his elect seed, Jesus (Ge. 12:1-3; 1 K 8:41-43; Is. 2:2-4; 60:1-3; Zec. 8:20-23).

When the Apostolic kerygma showed Jesus to be the true, real Israel and awaited Messiah, they assumed the universal scope of salvation written in the Old Testament to be exclusively through that nation and culminating in their awaited Messiah.

This bars any notion of a “many roads to God” theology. 1 Ti. 2:5: “For there is one God and one mediator between God and mankind, the man Christ Jesus.”

But the Chiliasts insist that God could still mediate his purpose toward a people (Talmudic, Zionist Israel) that in fact have rejected the Mediator/Christ.

As previously mentioned, God only relates to His people through the use of a covenant arrangement. Outside of Christ, there is no real and meaningful covenant of Grace. The blood ethnic Jews are outside of Christ by their rejection of Him, and have no relationship by virtue of union to God at all! Rejecting Christ was a rejection of the God of the Old Testament: Moses, Law, Prophets, and Psalms.

Let’s take a brief moment to look at some of the curses from God, through a law covenant, placed on ethnic Israel: De. 28:15-64. Please read the entire chapter.

“15 However, if you do not obey the LORD your God and do not carefully follow all his commands and decrees I am giving you today, all these curses will come on you and overtake you:”

(Mk. 11:21; Ga. 3:10; Mt. 27:25).

Not only did God place curses on these people in Old Testament history, Christ cursed the fig tree. And today, they are under the curse of the law.

Because they forsook God/Jesus, the Jews will forever have a Godless and anti-Christ Talmudic religion. But their heresies existed centuries before Christ came to them.

When in Deuteronomy 28:24 it refers to rain turning into dust and powder, this is metaphoric language that describes the dryness and barrenness of a life without the true water and rain of the Holy Spirit, which they blasphemed in Christ’s day. Christ is the living water.

Jn. 4:10-14 “10 Jesus answered her, ‘If you knew the gift of God and who it is that asks you for a drink, you would have asked him and he would have given you living water.’
“11 ‘Sir,’ the woman said, ‘you have nothing to draw with and the well is deep. Where can you get this living water? 12 Are you greater than our father Jacob, who gave us the well and drank from it himself, as did also his sons and his livestock?’

“13 Jesus answered, ‘Everyone who drinks this water will be thirsty again, 14 but whoever drinks the water I give them will never thirst. Indeed, the water I give them will become in them a spring of water welling up to eternal life.’”

The woman asked, “Are you greater than our father Jacob?” Of course Jesus is! Jesus is the true Israel. His water gives Eternal Life. Jacob’s (of old) water makes one thirst again. Jacob was only a type of Christ. All types are imperfect, but they do convey an important meaning.

Read the history of the destruction and sacking of Israel by Titus in 70 AD. It was devastating.

Because they were apostate for centuries prior to Christ, they were blinded, confused, and mad. That’s why they killed the Prince of Peace. Only madmen would attempt to overthrow God.

But our King rose victoriously from the grave and forever lives. They meant it for evil, but God meant it for good.

All one needs to do is study the history of the Jews from 70 AD to this present day to see the ultimate fulfillment of Deuteronomy 28. Hitler was not the only instrument God used to fulfill His will. God’s iron fist has always been against this stiff-necked people due to their rejection of Him (God/Christ), of the Old and New. The Persians, Medes, Babylonians, and Assyrians of the old. The Turks, the Muslims, the Papists, and most of Europe till the end of World War II. God does not take “covenant” lightly. There are awful ramifications for violation.

I thank God daily for His mercies and Grace as exhibited in the “Covenant of Grace” toward me.

Let’s revert back to: Ge. 12:1-3 “1 The LORD had said to Abram, ‘Go from your country, your people and your father’s household to the land I will show you. 2 I will make you (Abraham) into a great nation, and I will bless you (Abraham); I will make your name (Abraham) great, and you will be a blessing. 3 I will bless those who bless you (Abraham) and whoever curses you (Abraham) I will curse; and all peoples on earth will be blessed through you (Abraham).’”

As I stated earlier, two main identifiers were given to Abraham and his true seed. One being faith alone for righteousness, and two being circumcision.
Let's look at Jn. 1:9-13 “9 The true light that gives light to everyone was coming into the world. 10 He was in the world, and though the world was made through him, the world did not recognize him. 11 He came to that which was his own, but his own did not receive him. 12 Yet to all who did receive him, to those who believed in his name, he gave the right to become children of God— 13 children born not of natural descent, nor of human decision or a husband’s will, but born of God.”

John introduces some unique concepts here in this passage.

1. By faith, we become children of God. Mind you that John’s audience is primarily blood Israel.

2. He excludes any idea that natural blood (ethnic Israel) descent makes you a child of God.

3. Human will/decision have absolutely no part either.

4. It’s all of God.

Mt. 3:7-10 “7 But when he saw many of the Pharisees and Sadducees coming to where he was baptizing, he said to them: ‘You brood of vipers! Who warned you to flee from the coming wrath? 8 Produce fruit in keeping with repentance. 9 And do not think you can say to yourselves, “We have Abraham as our father.” I tell you that out of these stones God can raise up children for Abraham. 10 The ax is already at the root of the trees, and every tree that does not produce good fruit will be cut down and thrown into the fire.’”

A few points need to be considered here.

1. John the Baptist, under the inspiration of the Holy Spirit, already knew what he was up against. John was aware of Israel’s complete apostasy and called their religious leaders a “brood of vipers”. Snakes.

2. Also he said, “Who warned you to flee from the coming wrath?” That’s an odd statement from a person of Ethnic Israel, IF ALL ethnic ISRAEL were to be included in God’s redemptive plan. But it is not odd if only an elect few of blood Israel were in view.

3. He also said (I’ll paraphrase): “Don’t even consider for a moment you can claim Abraham as your father. Out of these dead stones God can raise up better children than you.”

4. The ax IS already at the root of the tree. Christ cursed the fig tree at the root! I have already written about this in another thread.
Jn. 8:39-40 “39 ‘Abraham is our father,’” they answered. ‘If you were Abraham’s children,’ said Jesus, ‘then you would do what Abraham did. 40 As it is, you are looking for a way to kill me, a man who has told you the truth that I heard from God. Abraham did not do such things.’”

Jesus flat out denies these wicked ones can claim the heritage of Abraham.

Jn. 8:44 “You are of your father the devil, and you want to do the desires of your father. He was a murderer from the beginning, and does not stand in the truth because there is no truth in him. Whenever he speaks a lie, he speaks from his own nature, for he is a liar and the father of lies.”

Jesus called these wicked ones the devil’s children. And they still are as of this day.

The promises of God for true Israel must be rooted in Abraham and his seed.

**Point 1: Circumcision**

Ge. 17 “1 When Abram was ninety-nine years old, the LORD appeared to him and said, ‘I am God Almighty; walk before me faithfully and be blameless. 2 Then I will make my covenant between me and you and will greatly increase your numbers.’

“3 Abram fell face down, and God said to him, 4 ‘As for me, this is my covenant with you: You will be the father of many nations. 5 No longer will you be called Abram; your name will be Abraham, for I have made you a father of many nations. 6 I will make you very fruitful; I will make nations of you, and kings will come from you. 7 I will establish my covenant as an everlasting covenant between me and you and your descendants after you for the generations to come, to be your God and the God of your descendants after you. 8 The whole land of Canaan, where you now reside as a foreigner, I will give as an everlasting possession to you and your descendants after you; and I will be their God.’ 9 Then God said to Abraham, ‘As for you, you must keep my covenant, you and your descendants after you for the generations to come. 10 This is my covenant with you and your descendants after you, the covenant you are to keep: Every male among you shall be circumcised. 11 You are to undergo circumcision, and it will be the sign of the covenant between me and you. 12 For the generations to come every male among you who is eight days old must be circumcised, including those born in your household or bought with money from a foreigner—those who are not your offspring. 13 Whether born in your household or bought with your money, they must be circumcised. My covenant in your flesh is to be an everlasting covenant. 14 Any uncircumcised male, who has not been circumcised in the flesh, will be cut off from his people; he has broken my covenant.’ 15 God also said to Abraham, ‘As for Sarai your wife, you are no longer to call her Sarai; her name will be Sarah. 16 I will bless her and will surely
give you a son by her. I will bless her so that she will be the mother of nations; kings of peoples will come from her.’

“17 Abraham fell face down; he laughed and said to himself, ‘Will a son be born to a man a hundred years old? Will Sarah bear a child at the age of ninety?’ 18 And Abraham said to God, ‘If only Ishmael might live under your blessing!’

“19 Then God said, ‘Yes, but your wife Sarah will bear you a son, and you will call him Isaac. I will establish my covenant with him as an everlasting covenant for his descendants after him. 20 And as for Ishmael, I have heard you: I will surely bless him; I will make him fruitful and will greatly increase his numbers. He will be the father of twelve rulers, and I will make him into a great nation. 21 But my covenant I will establish with Isaac, whom Sarah will bear to you by this time next year.’ 22 When he had finished speaking with Abraham, God went up from him.

“23 On that very day Abraham took his son Ishmael and all those born in his household or bought with his money, every male in his household, and circumcised them, as God told him. 24 Abraham was ninety-nine years old when he was circumcised, 25 and his son Ishmael was thirteen; 26 Abraham and his son Ishmael were both circumcised on that very day. 27 And every male in Abraham’s household, including those born in his household or bought from a foreigner, was circumcised with him.”

Let’s list some points here from the above text.

1. Abraham was to be a father of many nations.
2. Everlasting covenant.
3. Universal in scope.
4. Circumcision was to be in the flesh and a sign of the covenant, Ishmael included.
5. This sign was to be applied to Abraham, his descendants, and foreigners not of his flesh.
6. Sarah was to be the mother of nations through Isaac (son of the promise).
7. Isaac was to further this everlasting covenant through him.
8. Ishmael to be blessed.

The key to understanding this passage lies with two precepts: Faith (vs.1) and Promise (vs.16).

The reason it must be by faith and promise is that Sarai’s womb was dead. But we all know the story. “Abraham believed God and it was accounted to him for righteousness.”

What’s fascinating is that if this covenant was strictly a promise of a fleshly nature, and not a matter of heart, then Ishmael and Esau are to receive all the
blessings of an everlasting covenant. For they and their offspring were also circumcised in the flesh. God promised Ishmael an earthly blessing, and he later in his life received it. So it is when it comes to a matter of fleshly foreskin circumcision. This physical dimension only becomes a sign that points to the real circumcision as a matter of heart.

De. 10:16 “Circumcise your hearts, therefore, and do not be stiff-necked any longer.”

De. 30:6 “The LORD your God will circumcise your hearts and the hearts of your descendants, so that you may love him with all your heart and with all your soul, and live.”

Je. 4:4 “Circumcise yourselves to the LORD, circumcise your hearts, you men of Judah and people of Jerusalem, or my wrath will break out and burn like fire because of the evil you have done-- burn with no one to quench it.”

Je. 9:25 “The days are coming,” declares the LORD, “when I will punish all who are circumcised only in the flesh.”

So we can see one that it’s a heart matter, and two that God will punish all who only have a “fleshly” cutting and not that of the heart.

Now let’s move on to the Apostolic “kerygma”.

Ac. 15:1 “1 Certain people came down from Judea to Antioch and were teaching the believers: ‘Unless you are circumcised, according to the custom taught by Moses, you cannot be saved.’”

Can you see the problem? Read Jer. 9:25 again.

Ac. 15:5 “Then some of the believers who belonged to the party of the Pharisees stood up and said, ‘The Gentiles must be circumcised and required to obey the law of Moses.’”

Same problem.


17 Now you, if you call yourself a Jew; if you rely on the law and boast in God; 18 if you know his will and approve of what is superior because you are instructed by the law; 19 if you are convinced that you are a guide for the blind, a light for those who are in the dark, 20 an instructor of the foolish, a teacher of little children, because you have in the law the embodiment of knowledge and truth— 21 you, then, who teach others, do you not teach yourself? You who preach against stealing, do you steal? 22 You who say that people should not
commit adultery, do you commit adultery? You who abhor idols, do you rob temples? 23 You who boast in the law, do you dishonor God by breaking the law? 24 As it is written: “God’s name is blasphemed among the Gentiles because of you.”

25 Circumcision has value if you observe the law, but if you break the law, you have become as though you had not been circumcised. 26 So then, if those who are not circumcised keep the law’s requirements, will they not be regarded as though they were circumcised? 27 The one who is not circumcised physically and yet obeys the law will condemn you who, even though you have the written code and circumcision, are a lawbreaker.

28 A person is not a Jew who is one only outwardly, nor is circumcision merely outward and physical. 29 No, a person is a Jew who is one inwardly; and circumcision is circumcision of the heart, by the Spirit, not by the written code. Such a person’s praise is not from other people, but from God.

This one passage of scripture says it all. If a blood ethnic Jew does not keep every single law in the written code perfectly, and that from the heart, his fleshly “cut” is useless. On the other hand, if a Gentile (goyim) who is not “cut” of the flesh, by faith alone believes in the Messiah of Israel, then he is considered as circumcised in the heart. Paul says he is a true Jew.

Ro. 3:30 “since there is only one God, who will justify the circumcised (fleshly Jew) by faith and the uncircumcised (Goyim) through that same faith."

Justification is by faith alone. Then and only then is a person considered a true Jew.

Ro. 4:12 “And he is also the father of the circumcised who not only are circumcised but who also walk in the footsteps of the faith that our father Abraham had before he was circumcised."

Abraham was justified by faith alone before he was circumcised in the flesh.

Ga. 5:2-3 “2 Mark my words! I, Paul, tell you that if you let yourselves be circumcised, (flesh cut) Christ will be of no value to you at all. 3 Again I declare to every man who lets himself be circumcised (flesh cut) that he is obligated to obey the whole law.”

The bastard children Judaizers, were relentless in their attack against the Gospel of Grace. These bastards wanted to stumble these Galatian believers. But our brother Paul would have none of this.

Ga. 6:12-13 “12 Those who want to impress people by means of the flesh are trying to compel you to be circumcised (fleshly cut). The only reason they do this
is to avoid being persecuted for the cross of Christ. 13 Not even those who are circumcised (fleshly cut) keep the law, yet they want you to be circumcised that they may boast about your circumcision in the flesh.”

Col. 2:11 “In him you were also circumcised, in the putting off of the sinful nature, not with a circumcision done by the hands (fleshly cut) of men but with the circumcision (of the heart) done by Christ,”

Ga. 3:16 “The promises were spoken to Abraham and to his seed. The Scripture does not say ‘and to seeds’, meaning many people, but ‘and to your seed’, meaning one person, who is Christ.”

This rules out any notion of physical circumcision. It’s not to many seeds, but to Christ’s seed.

Ga. 3:29 “If you belong to Christ, then you are Abraham's seed, and heirs according to the promise.”

So concluding this one point of identification (circumcision), in our next study we will look at point two, Justification.

After point two, Justification, I'll move to Romans 9 and 11, and discuss more on Election.

Pre-suppositions must always be set in concrete first.

I can proudly say, “I'm a true Jew from the seed of Abraham, and follower of Jesus Christ the Jewish Messiah” by grace and faith alone. Thank you, Lord, for your mercies.

**Point 2: Justification**

The second point under consideration is Justification through faith alone. Like circumcision, this identifies the essence of a true Jew/Israelite: Through Abraham and his seed (Christ) only.

De. 25:1 “If there is a dispute between men and they go to court, and the judges decide their case, and they justify the righteous and condemn the wicked,”

This is true, and was fulfilled through the imputation of Christ’s Righteousness.

Is. 45:25 “In the LORD (Christ) all the offspring of Israel will be justified and will glory.”

The hopes of the true Israelites from old lie in their eager expectations of the coming Messiah.
But only in the Lord/Christ could they be justified. Outside of Christ they would be under the curse of the law covenant (De. 28).

Is. 53:11 “As a result of the anguish of His soul, He will see it and be satisfied; By His knowledge the Righteous One, My Servant, will justify the many, As He will bear their iniquities.”

The prophet Isaiah predicted and was very specific of Christ’s role as the One who would take away their sins.

Jn. 1:29 “The next day he saw Jesus coming to him and said, Behold, the Lamb of God who takes away the sin of the world.”

The true Jews understood Christ was the Messiah of Israel, for they believed on Him. The imposter Jews rejected Him.

Ac. 3:24-26 “24 Indeed, beginning with Samuel, all the prophets who have spoken have foretold these days. 25 And you are heirs of the prophets and of the covenant God made with your fathers. He said to Abraham, ‘Through your offspring all peoples on earth will be blessed.’ 26 When God raised up his servant, he sent him first to you to bless you by turning each of you from your wicked ways.”

Ro. 3:21-26 “21 But now apart from the law the righteousness of God has been made known, to which the Law and the Prophets testify. 22 This righteousness is given through faith in Jesus Christ to all who believe. There is no difference between Jew and Gentile, 23 for all have sinned and fall short of the glory of God, 24 and all are justified freely by his grace through the redemption that came by Christ Jesus. 25 God presented Christ as a sacrifice of atonement, through the shedding of his blood—to be received by faith. He did this to demonstrate his righteousness, because in his forbearance he had left the sins committed beforehand unpunished— 26 he did it to demonstrate his righteousness at the present time, so as to be just and the one who justifies those who have faith in Jesus.”

Ro. 4:5 “But to the one who does not work, but believes in Him who justifies the ungodly, his faith is credited as righteousness,“

Ro. 8:33 “Who will bring a charge against God’s elect? God is the one who justifies.”

Ro. 4:1-3 “1 What then shall we say that Abraham, our forefather according to the flesh, has found? 2 For if Abraham was justified by works, he has something to boast about, but not before God. 3 For what does the Scripture say? ABRAHAM BELIEVED GOD, AND IT WAS CREDITED TO HIM AS
RIGHTeousness.”

Also ref: Ga. 3:6-9; 3; He. 2:16; 6:13; 7:1; 11:8.

A brief summary

1. Our true Christian faith comes directly from the Old Testament Scriptures, fulfilled in Christ.
2. We possess the same God revealed in the Old: Jesus.
3. Christ is a King.
4. Christ has a kingdom.
5. He is our High Priest.
6. He is our Sacrifice.
7. Abraham and his seed (Christ) represent true Israel.
8. We possess by regeneration and faith alone the true Circumcision.
9. We are justified by Christ, through faith alone.
10. We believers in Christ are the TRUE AND REAL JEWS.
11. Blood ethnic Jews are not true Jews by virtue of their treason and murder of Christ and the elect prophets of old.
12. Christ-rejecting false Jews remain under the curse of the law covenant. Christ cursed them personally, and called them the devil’s children.
13. All of God’s promises, prophecies, and purposes written of old, relating to redemption and restoration of the earth, are for Christ’s true Israel people.
14. God relates to man only through a covenant arrangement.
15. The redemptive purposes of God were from the beginning, universal in nature, with Gentiles in view.
16. The promise given to Abraham and Sarah was to be established through “Isaac”, the Son of the Promise.
17. Through the work of the Holy Spirit, He magnifies and reveals Christ as the fulfillment of the old Scriptures. Jesus Christ is the ultimate Son of the Promise.
18. The “old” Scriptures show God’s purposes for redemption rooted in historical themes and events.

Amillennialists have been slandered and labeled as “allegorists”. This simply is not true.

Higher critics and liberals do not believe in a literal creation, a literal Adam and Eve, a literal flood, literal miracles, and so forth. They hold that the Old Testament is just a bunch of imaginary stories (allegories) that convey man’s need for a god/religion to alleviate and satisfy an inner guilty conscience.

Amillennialists, on the other hand, believe the old Scriptures to be real and actual history that point to Christ as the ultimate fulfillment. God shows and teaches His redemptive purposes through the “old” by utilizing historical types and shadows of Christ and His true elect seed. Nevertheless, it is still conveyed through historical events with historical people and a real, objective God.
I'm not a big proponent of making scriptural arguments from silence. However, if there ever were an area of Scripture that validates an argument from silence, Romans chapters 9, 10, and 11 would be it.

These three chapters deal primarily with national ethnic Israel’s status and their future. If Paul was going to teach the garbage and filth that the chiliasts (full futurists) and some others (full preterists) are teaching today concerning “blood national Israel”, it would be here. But Paul is dead silent. In fact it’s deafening.

Paul further develops the doctrine of Election as pertaining to Israel that he expounded in Romans 8. Understanding election is crucial to understanding Paul here.

Paul develops his theology in Romans 9, 10, and 11 right from Holy Spirit revelation of the “old” Scriptures fulfilled.

Romans 9

1 I speak the truth in Christ—I am not lying, my conscience confirms it in the Holy Spirit— 2 I have great sorrow and unceasing anguish in my heart. 3 For I could wish that I myself were cursed and cut off from Christ for the sake of my brothers, those of my own race, (Ethnic and national Israel) 4 the people of Israel. Theirs is the adoption as sons; theirs the divine glory, the covenants, the receiving of the law, the temple worship and the promises. 5 Theirs are the patriarchs, and from them is traced the human ancestry of Christ, who is God over all, forever praised Amen.

Paul does not dismiss the importance of National Israel, but magnifies the important role they played in bringing the promise of the Messiah to fruition and
fulfillment by 1) Genealogy, and 2) Mosaic administration.

6 It is not as though God’s word had failed. For not all (blood and ethnic only) who are descended from Israel are (true) Israel. 7 Nor because they are his descendants (blood) are they all Abraham’s (true) children. On the contrary, “It is through Isaac that your offspring will be reckoned.” 8 In other words, it is not the natural children (blood) who are God’s children, but it is the children of the promise who are regarded as Abraham’s offspring. (Through faith alone and true circumcision of the heart). 9 For this was how the promise was stated: “At the appointed time I will return, and Sarah will have a son.”

10 Not only that, but Rebekah’s children had one and the same father, our father Isaac (son of promise by faith alone). 11 Yet, before the twins were born or had done anything good or bad—in order that God’s purpose in election might stand: 12 not by works but by him who calls —she was told, “The older will serve the younger.” 13 Just as it is written: “Jacob I loved, but Esau I hated.”

14 What then shall we say? Is God unjust? Not at all 15 For he says to Moses,

“I will have mercy on whom I have mercy, and I will have compassion on whom I have compassion.”

16 It does not, therefore, depend on man’s desire or effort, (nor of the will of man Jn. 1:13) but on God’s mercy. 17 For the Scripture says to Pharaoh: “I raised you up for this very purpose, that I might display my power in you and that my name might be proclaimed in all the earth.”

God raises up and uses evil for His own purposes.

18 Therefore God has mercy on whom he wants to have mercy (the Elect), and he hardens whom he wants to harden (the reprobate).

God hardened and raised up National Israel so they (reprobate Israel) could reject and kill Christ. God purposed it all from eternity. Israel is primarily in view in this context, although all of reprobate humanity share in this reprobation.

19 One of you (blood Jew believers and non-believers were intermingled with Gentile believers in Rome at that time) will say to me: “Then why does God still blame us? For who resists his will?” (No excuse) 20 But who are you, O man, (blood Jew) to talk back to God? “Shall what is formed (reprobate blood Jew) say to him (God) who formed it, ‘Why did you make me like this?’” 21 Does not the potter (God) have the right to make out of the same lump of clay (Jew and Gentile) some pottery for noble purposes (election) and some for common use? (Reprobation)
Just as elect blood Jews and Gentiles identify with Abraham and Christ, and are considered true Jews/Israelites, and share the glories of the Messiah Jesus, the reprobate blood Jew and Gentile alike share and are both under curse of the law.

22 What if God, choosing to show his wrath and make his power known, bore with great patience the objects of his wrath (Reprobate Israel primarily in context, but in principle applies to reprobate Gentiles also) prepared for destruction? 23 What if he did this to make the riches of his glory (Christ) known to the objects of his mercy (elect Jew and Gentile), whom he prepared in advance (from eternity) for glory (elect Jew and Gentile) 24 even us (elect), whom he also called, not only from the (elect blood) Jews but also from the (elect) Gentiles? 25 As he says in Hosea:

“I will call them ‘my people’ who are not my people; and I will call her ‘my loved one’ who is not my loved one,”

26 and, “It will happen that in the very place where it was said to them, ‘You are not my people,’ they will be called ‘sons of the living God.’”

27 Isaiah cries out concerning Israel: “Though the number of the Israelites be like the sand by the sea, only the remnant will be saved. 28 For the Lord will carry out his sentence on earth with speed and finality.”

29 It is just as Isaiah said previously:

“Unless the Lord Almighty had left us descendants, we would have become like Sodom, we would have been like Gomorrah.”

Paul uses Isaiah’s statement concerning the historical event when Abraham (Ge. 18) pleaded with God not to destroy Sodom. Abraham said, “Will you sweep away the righteous with the wicked? What if there are fifty righteous people in the city? Will you really sweep it away and not spare the place for the sake of the fifty righteous people in it? Far be it from you to do such a thing, to kill the righteous with the wicked, treating the righteous and the wicked alike. Far be it from you, will not the Judge of all the earth do right?” God said he would not destroy the city if a righteous person could be found.

Eventually, after the numbers were whittled down, God said he would not destroy the city if ten righteous people were found in it. Once Abraham and Lot, with their families, departed from Sodom, God destroyed that wicked city.

Paul uses this event to parallel God’s endurance and patience with reprobate Israel. These stiff-necked reprobate people always insulted God with their
wickedness. But God spared them for the sake of the Elect/Righteous that dwelled among reprobate National Israel/Sodom. When Christ arrived, He assumed all that identified with true and Elect Israel, for Christ is the embodiment of all Righteousness. When Christ was brought outside the city of Jerusalem to be destroyed on the tree, it was in type of Christ leaving reprobate Sodom/Israel.

In His victory of the cross and resurrection from the dead, the true Temple, City, King, Kingdom has been inaugurated in Christ alone. Those found in Christ were the true Israel.

National Israel’s role in the redemptive purposes of God was completed. Their doom, like that of Sodom, was soon to come. Jesus warned them to flee the city, so He in His purposes could destroy Jerusalem/Sodom.

Henceforth the universal nature of God’s Kingdom and people (as taught in the “old”) can come to fulfillment worldwide.

Why else would Paul introduce the destruction of Sodom? Paul used Sodom as an example for the destruction of reprobate Jerusalem/Israel.

30 What then shall we say? That the Gentiles, who did not pursue righteousness, have obtained it, a righteousness that is by faith; 31 but (blood) Israel, who pursued a law of righteousness, has not attained it. 32 Why not? Because they pursued it not by faith (Abraham’s faith alone) but as if it were by works. They stumbled over the “stumbling stone.” 33 As it is written: “See, I lay in Zion a stone that causes men to stumble and a rock that makes them fall, and the one who trusts in him will never be put to shame.”

Romans 10

1 Brothers, my heart’s desire and prayer to God for the (blood) Israelites is that they may be saved (through Christ alone). 2 For I can testify about them that they are zealous for God, but their zeal is not based on knowledge (of the old Scriptures). 3 Since they did not know the righteousness that comes from God (through the old Scriptures Abraham/Christ) and sought to establish their own (heretical teachings of the Pharisees, Sadducees, and Scribes), they did not submit to God’s righteousness. 4 Christ is the end of the law so that there may be righteousness for everyone who believes (Elect Jew and Gentile).

5 Moses describes in this way the righteousness that is by the law: “The man who does these things will live by them.” 6 But the righteousness that is by faith (Abraham) says: “Do not say in your heart, ‘Who will ascend into heaven?’” (that is, to bring Christ down) 7 “or ‘Who will descend into the deep?’” (that is, to bring Christ up from the dead). 8 But what does it say? “The word is near you; it is in your mouth and in your heart,” that is, the word of faith we are proclaiming: 9
That if you confess with your mouth, “Jesus is Lord,” and believe in your heart that God raised him from the dead, you will be saved. 10 For it is with your heart (circumcision) that you believe and are justified, and it is with your mouth that you confess and are saved. 11 As the Scripture says, “Anyone who trusts in him will never be put to shame.” 12 For there is no difference between Jew and Gentile the same Lord is Lord of all and richly blesses all (blood Jew and Gentile) who call on him, 13 for, “Everyone who calls on the name of the Lord will be saved.”

14 How, then, can they call on the one they have not believed in? And how can they believe in the one of whom they have not heard? And how can they hear without someone preaching to them? 15 And how can they preach unless they are sent? As it is written, “How beautiful are the feet of those who bring good news.”

16 But not all the (blood) Israelites accepted the good news. For Isaiah says, “Lord, who has believed our message?” 17 Consequently, faith comes from hearing the message, and the message is heard through the word of Christ. 18 But I ask: Did they not hear? Of course they did: “Their voice has gone out into all the earth, their words to the ends of the world.”

It’s not that the blood Jews did not hear God’s message as stated in the “old” Scriptures, especially when Christ was present amongst them. They heard it all right, but not with spiritual ears. Christ repeatedly said, “He who has ears to hear, let him hear.” Christ was referring to spiritual ears. Paul explains this further in Romans 11:7 as to why they could not hear.

19 Again I ask: Did Israel not understand? First, Moses says, “I will make you envious by those who are not a nation (gentiles); I will make you angry by a nation that has no understanding.”

20 And Isaiah boldly says “I was found by those who did not seek me; I revealed myself to those who did not ask for me. 21 But concerning Israel he says, “All day long I have held out my hands to a disobedient and obstinate people.”

The reason why God still held out His hand to these people was for the sake of the Elect in Israel only.

Romans 11

1 I ask then: Did God reject his (blood) people? By no means. I am an Israelite myself, a descendant of Abraham, from the tribe of Benjamin. 2 God did not reject his (blood Jew) people, whom he foreknew. Don’t you know what the Scripture says in the passage about Elijah how he appealed to God against Israel: 3 “Lord, they have killed your prophets and torn down your altars; I am the only one left, and they are trying to kill me”? 4 And what was God’s answer to
him? “I have reserved for myself seven thousand (elect blood true Jews) who have not bowed the knee to Baal.” 5 So too, at the present time there is a remnant (elect true blood Jews) chosen by grace. 6 And if by grace, then it is no longer by works (curse of the law); if it were, grace would no longer be grace.

Whom He foreknew

Because most Chiliasts have been blinded to the understanding of Election and Predestination, they miss what foreknowledge means in this context.

Foreknowledge in this context is eternal. An eternal Christ and people God knew who were CHOSEN /ELECTED IN CHRIST.

Ro. 8:29-30 “For whom he did foreknow, he also did predestinate to be conformed to the image of his Son, that he might be the firstborn among many brethren. Moreover whom he did predestinate, them he also called: and whom he called, them he also justified: and whom he justified, them he also glorified.”

Ep. 1:4 “just as He (Christ) chose us in Him before the foundation of the world, that we would be holy and blameless before Him. In love…”

Mt. 12:18 “BEHOLD, MY SERVANT WHOM I HAVE CHOSEN; MY BELOVED IN WHOM MY SOUL IS WELL PLEASED; I WILL PUT MY SPIRIT UPON HIM, AND HE SHALL PROCLAIM JUSTICE TO THE GENTILES.”

Lu. 9:35 “Then a voice came out of the cloud, saying, This is My Son, My Chosen One; listen to Him.”

Ac. 10:41 “not to all the people, but to witnesses who were chosen beforehand by God, that is, to us who ate and drank with Him after He arose from the dead.”

Col. 3:12 “So, as those who have been chosen of God, holy and beloved, put on a heart of compassion, kindness, humility, gentleness and patience;”

2 Th. 2:13 “But we should always give thanks to God for you, brethren beloved by the Lord, because God has chosen you from the beginning for salvation through sanctification by the Spirit and faith in the truth.”

1 Pe. 2:9 “But you are A CHOSEN RACE, A royal PRIESTHOOD, A HOLY NATION, A PEOPLE FOR God's OWN POSSESSION, so that you may proclaim the excellencies of Him who has called you out of darkness into His marvelous light;”

Ep. 1:4 “just as He (Christ) chose us in Him before the foundation of the world, that we would be holy and blameless before Him. In love”
How in the world can a Christ-rejecting reprobate National Israel ever be considered a holy nation and still claim to be God’s chosen people?

That’s blasphemous!

7 What then? What (blood) Israel sought so earnestly it did not obtain, but the elect (Israelite) did. The others (reprobate) were hardened, 8 as it is written:

“God gave them a spirit of stupor, eyes so that they could not see and ears so that they could not hear, to this very day.”

9 And David says:

“May their table become a snare and a trap, a stumbling block and a retribution for them. 10 May their eyes be darkened so they cannot see, and their backs be bent forever.”

Just like Pharaoh was hardened by God to fulfill God’s purposes, so was reprobate Israel.

11 Again I ask: Did they stumble so as to fall beyond recovery? Not at all rather, because of their transgression, salvation has come to the Gentiles to make Israel envious. 12 But if their transgression means riches for the world, and their loss means riches for the Gentiles, how much greater riches will their fullness bring?”

Paul firmly establishes the role of National Israel. Their transgression didn’t destroy Israel in the sense that all its types were irrelevant. They (the types) have all been reinstated in terms of Christ’s fulfillment. True Israel is alive and well, and empowered by the Holy Spirit. God purposed National Israel’s reprobation for the betterment of the elect Gentiles, and to open a door to the Gentile world. Their loss was our gain. But the greater riches come from their fullness when elect Jews in Christ come to salvation.

13 I am talking to you Gentiles. Inasmuch as I am the apostle to the Gentiles, I make much of my ministry 14 in the hope that I may somehow arouse my own people to envy and save some of them. 15 For if their (blood Jew) rejection is the reconciliation of the (elect Gentile) world, what will their acceptance (of Christ) be but life from the dead? 16 If the part of the dough offered as firstfruits is holy, then the whole batch is holy; if the root is holy, so are the branches.

Jesus is the true bread dough. Jesus is the holy first fruits. Jesus is the holy vine; the elect in Christ are the holy branches. Jesus is the true life-giving Jacob’s well
If some of the branches have been broken off (Christ rejecting Jews), and you, though a wild olive shoot (believing Gentiles), have been grafted in among the others (believing blood Jews) and now share in the nourishing sap from the olive root (Jesus Christ), do not boast over those branches. If you do, consider this: You do not support the root (Jesus true Israel), but the root (Jesus) supports you. You will say then, “Branches were broken off so that I could be grafted in.” (Paul is warning them not to be arrogant.) Granted. But they (Christ rejecting Jews) were broken off (from True Israel Christ) because of unbelief, and you stand by faith. Do not be arrogant, but be afraid. For if God did not spare the natural branches (blood Jews), he will not spare you (Gentiles) either.” (If their faith is proven to be false, just like the blood Jews who rejected Christ. Paul’s warning here is similar to the parable of the “sower”, also in John 15:1-8, Jesus the True Vine.)

Mk. 4:13-20 “13 Then Jesus said to them, ‘Don’t you understand this parable? How then will you understand any parable? 14 The farmer sows the word. 15 Some people are like seed along the path, where the word is sown. As soon as they hear it, Satan comes and takes away the word that was sown in them. 16 Others, like seed sown on rocky places, hear the word and at once receive it with joy. 17 But since they have no root, they last only a short time. When trouble or persecution comes because of the word, they quickly fall away. 18 Still others, like seed sown among thorns, hear the word; 19 but the worries of this life, the deceitfulness of wealth and the desires for other things come in and choke the word, making it unfruitful. 20 Others, like seed sown on good soil, hear the word, accept it, and produce a crop—some thirty, some sixty, some a hundred times what was sown.’”

Verse 20 refers to the true Jews only. That is what I believe Paul is referring to when he mentions that the root supports you. The rest are imposters.

Jn. 15:1-8 “1 I am the true vine, and my Father is the gardener. 2 He cuts off every branch in me that bears no fruit, while every branch that does bear fruit he prunes so that it will be even more fruitful. 3 You are already clean because of the word I have spoken to you. 4 Remain in me, as I also remain in you. No branch can bear fruit by itself; it must remain in the vine. Neither can you bear fruit unless you remain in me. 5 I am the vine; you are the branches. If you remain in me and I in you, you will bear much fruit; apart from me you can do nothing. 6 If you do not remain in me, you are like a branch that is thrown away and withers; such branches are picked up, thrown into the fire and burned. 7 If you remain in me and my words remain in you, ask whatever you wish, and it will be done for you. 8 This is to my Father’s glory, that you bear much fruit, showing yourselves to be my disciples.” Jesus is the vine of true Israel.
22 Consider therefore the kindness and sternness of God: sternness to those who fell (blood Christ rejecting Jew), but kindness to you (Christ professing Gentile), provided that you continue in his kindness. (We already know that if a person falls away from Christ they were never saved to begin with. They were only imposters.) Otherwise, you also will be cut off (imposters). 23 And if they do not persist in unbelief (blood Jews who finally are regenerated unto faith), they will be grafted in, for God is able to graft them in again (to Christ true Vine/Israel). 24 After all, if you were cut out of an olive tree that is wild by nature, and contrary to nature were grafted into a cultivated olive tree, how much more readily will these, the natural branches, be grafted into their own olive tree.

Paul continues to emphasize that there is a remnant of blood Jews according to election that will be grafted into Christ.

25 I do not want you to be ignorant of this mystery, brothers, so that you may not be conceited: Israel (National) has experienced a hardening in part (elect blood Jews are not in view) until the full number of the (elect) Gentiles has come in. 26 And so (in this manner) all (elect Blood and Gentile true Jew) Israel will be saved, as it is written:

“The deliverer will come from Zion;
he will turn godlessness away from Jacob.
27 And this is my covenant with them
when I take away their sins.”

28 As far as the gospel is concerned, they (Christ rejecting blood Jews) are enemies on your account; but as far as election (Elect blood Jews to ultimately be saved) is concerned, they are loved on account of the patriarchs, 29 for God’s gifts and his call are irrevocable (by grace alone). 30 Just as you (gentile) who were at one time disobedient to God have now received mercy (through Christ) as a result of their (Christ rejecting blood Jews’) disobedience, 31 so they too have now become disobedient in order that they (elect blood Jew) too may now receive mercy as a result of God’s mercy to you. 32 For God has bound all men (blood Jew and Gentile) over to disobedience so that he may have mercy on them all (both elect blood Jew and Gentile). 33 Oh, the depth of the riches of the wisdom and knowledge of God

How unsearchable his judgments,
and his paths beyond tracing out
34 “Who has known the mind of the Lord?
Or who has been his counselor?”
35 “Who has ever given to God,
that God should repay him?”
36 For from him and through him and to him are all things.
To him be the glory forever Amen.
Ep. 4:1-4 “1 As a prisoner for the Lord, then, I urge you to live a life worthy of the calling you have received. 2 Be completely humble and gentle; be patient, bearing with one another in love. 3 Make every effort to keep the unity of the Spirit through the bond of peace. 4 There is one body and one Spirit, just as you were called to one hope when you were called; 5 one Lord, one faith, one baptism; 6 one God and Father of all, who is over all and through all and in all.”

Paul reinforces many concepts throughout his epistles. This concept of unity in the Body of Christ is corollary to the same concept of Romans 11 and also John 15:1-8. Paul makes painstaking efforts to break down this ethnic distinction between blood ethnic Jew and blood ethnic Gentile. Through Jesus Christ our Lord, the elect two are now become one. That the Elect from all ages find their true identity in Jesus Christ alone was always the intended goal from the very beginning of creation. One Body, One Holy Spirit, One Hope, One Lord, One Faith, One Baptism, One God and Father of all, who is over all and through all, and in all.

Paul is not a Chiliast who believes in two separate paths or plans for the salvation of ethnic Jews and ethnic Gentiles. The Scriptures everywhere from start to finish support this organic unity in Christ.


Ep. 2:19-22 “19 Consequently, you are no longer foreigners and strangers, but fellow citizens with God’s people and also members of his household, 20 built on the foundation of the apostles and prophets, with Christ Jesus himself as the chief cornerstone. 21 In him the whole building is joined together and rises to become a holy temple in the Lord. 22 And in him you too are being built together to become a dwelling in which God lives by his Spirit.”

Referring to Gentile believers in this context, Paul utilized a societal term “citizens” to demonstrate that elect Gentiles occupy the same household with the elect blood Jew in Christ. Built on the foundation of the Apostolic witness (Christ) along with Prophetic witness (to Christ) from the old.

Also in this passage Paul alludes to three important concepts/premises. He purposely ties these premises together to demonstrate a complete organic unity in the body of Christ.
1. Chief Cornerstone
2. Holy Temple
3. Holy Spirit.

Cornerstone

Is. 28:16 “Therefore thus says the Lord GOD, Behold, I am laying in Zion a stone, a tested stone, A costly cornerstone for the foundation, firmly placed. He who believes in it will not be disturbed.”

Zec. 10:1-4 “1 Ask the LORD for rain in the springtime; it is the LORD who sends the thunderstorms. He gives showers of rain to all people, and plants of the field to everyone. 2 The idols speak deceitfully, diviners see visions that lie; they tell dreams that are false, they give comfort in vain. Therefore the people wander like sheep oppressed for lack of a shepherd. 3 ‘My anger burns against the shepherds, and I will punish the leaders; for the LORD Almighty will care for his flock, the people of Judah, and make them like a proud horse in battle. 4 From Judah will come the cornerstone, from him the tent peg.’”

The prophets of Israel were God's mouthpiece to indict national Israel for their treason and wretched wickedness. Their shepherds/teachers were corrupt and taught pagan falsehoods. They led the people astray.

But there was hope for God's elect Jews whom he foreknew. Out of Judah will come a cornerstone, an anchor and true tent peg for their souls. That cornerstone is Jesus Christ.

Mt. 21:42, 44 “42 Jesus said to them, Have you never read in the Scriptures: 'The stone the builders rejected has become the capstone; the Lord has done this, and it is marvelous in our eyes.' 44 He who falls on this stone will be broken to pieces, but he on whom it falls will be crushed.

Ref. Ac. 4:11; Ro. 9:32; 1 Pe. 2:4, 6, 8.

The wicked Jews rejected Christ, the chief cornerstone. But the stone was still laid, despite their treason. Wicked Israel could not thwart or postpone the purposes of God.

JESUS IS THE TRUE AND LIVELY CORNERSTONE AND WAS FIRMLY ESTABLISHED/INAUGURATED THEN, NOW AND FOREVER.

Holy Temple

1 K. 5:5 “I intend, therefore, to build a temple for the Name of the LORD my God, as the LORD told my father David, when he said, ‘Your son whom I will put on the throne in your place will build the temple for my Name.’”
Is. 2:2 “In the last days the mountain of the LORD's temple will be established as chief among the mountains; it will be raised above the hills, and all nations will stream to it.”

Mi. 4:1 “In the last days the mountain of the LORD's temple will be established as chief among the mountains; it will be raised above the hills, and peoples will stream to it.”

Hab. 2:20 “But the LORD is in his holy temple; let all the earth be silent before him.”

Zec. 6:12-13 “12 Tell him this is what the LORD Almighty says: ‘Here is the man whose name is the Branch, and he will branch out from his place and build the temple of the LORD. 13 It is he who will build the temple of the LORD, and he will be clothed with majesty and will sit and rule on his throne. And he will be a priest on his throne. And there will be harmony between the two.’”

The men of old spoke of this glorious temple that was to be built. A light and beacon for all peoples of the earth. The temple in ethnic Israel was polluted with idols and wickedness.

Jesus Himself showed this when He entered the temple and overthrew the moneychangers (Mt. 21:12).

Mt. 12:6 “I tell you that one greater than the (physical) temple is here.”

Jn. 2:19-21 “19 Jesus answered them, ‘Destroy this temple, and I will raise it again in three days.’ 20 They replied, ‘It has taken forty-six years to build this temple, and you are going to raise it in three days?’ 21 But the temple he had spoken of was his body.”

The wicked Jews of Jesus' day thought like the Chiliasts of our day. Because they were blinded to spiritual realities, they could not see the Kingdom of God/Heaven. They were dead and carnal and could not think past their noses.

1 Co. 3:16 “Know ye not that ye are the temple of God, and that the Spirit of God dwelleth in you?”

Also Ref. 1 Co. 6:19; 2 Co. 6:16; Ep. 2:21.

JESUS THEN, NOW, AND FOREVER IS THE TRUE TEMPLE. WE IN HIM, BOTH JEW AND GENTILE, ARE LIVELY STONES.
Holy Spirit

In the Old as in the New, God indwelt the temple by His Spirit. The Temple was the place to meet God through a mediator. The Levitical priesthood served as a temporary function for the purpose of sacrifice and worship. But they were not perfect in their role, because they needed to sacrifice for their own sins also. They were only a “schoolmaster”, a “sign”, and a “type” of the One who was to come and fulfill all righteousness.

Christ now indwells His people through His own body/temple by the Holy Spirit/Helper.

1 Co. 3:16-17 “16 Know ye not that ye are the temple of God, and that the Spirit of God dwelleth in you? 17 If anyone destroys God’s temple, God will destroy that person; for God’s temple is sacred, and you together are that temple."

2 Co. 6:16 “What agreement is there between the temple of God and idols? For we are the temple of the living God. As God has said: ‘I will live with them and walk among them, and I will be their God, and they will be my people.’”

So, as earlier stated in Ephesians 2:19-22, Paul links these three Old Testament concepts into one glorious fulfillment in Christ. Thus uniting in “one” Jesus Christ, both Jew and Gentile. In Paul's theology there is not even a hint at separation or two distinct plans for two distinct peoples.

Jn. 4:19-26 “19 ‘Sir,’ the woman said, ‘I can see that you are a prophet. 20 Our ancestors worshiped on this mountain, but you Jews claim that the place where we must worship is in Jerusalem.’ 21 ‘Woman,’ Jesus replied, ‘believe me, a time is coming when you will worship the Father neither on this mountain nor in Jerusalem. 22 You Samaritans worship what you do not know; we worship what we do know, for salvation is from the Jews. 23 Yet a time is coming and has now come when the true worshipers will worship the Father in the Spirit and in truth, for they are the kind of worshipers the Father seeks. 24 God is spirit, and his worshipers must worship in the Spirit and in truth.’ 25 The woman said, ‘I know that Messiah (called Christ) is coming. When he comes, he will explain everything to us.’ 26 Then Jesus declared, ‘I, the one speaking to you—I am he.’”

We can learn a lot from this historical incident, when Christ met this Samaritan woman (who, by the way, the wicked Jews considered “dogs”) at the well.

The woman stated that our fathers worshiped on this mountain, but the Jews claimed that worship was to be in the Jerusalem temple. The woman was confused. But Jesus, the true and ultimate prophet/mouthpiece of God, said the time was “now” (not in a future 1,000 year re-building of a temple), that a true
worshiper of God would neither worship in “this mountain” nor in “Jerusalem”. This statement was made BEFORE the wicked Jews ultimately rejected Him.

The Chiliasts claim that only after the rejection of Christ a plan B for the Gentiles came into effect.

Jesus was stating that true worshipers of God worship in Spirit and Truth, and not in any geographical location. This is ultimate reality, now and forever. Then, to reinforce this truth, Christ said He is the Messiah! He is the true teacher.

Even today, due to the great apostasy that started during the lives of the Apostles, so-called Christians think, speak, and act just like the Jews and Samaritans of old.

They say, “let’s go to church to worship God.”

Due to the blatant heresies taught in most churches today, can they really say it is worship?

23 Yet a time is coming and has now come when the true worshipers will worship the Father in the Spirit and in truth, for they are the kind of worshipers the Father seeks. 24 God is spirit, and his worshipers must worship in the Spirit and in truth.

Where there is no truth, there is no worship!

Ga. 3:28 “There is neither Jew nor Gentile, neither slave nor free, nor is there male and female, for you are all one in Christ Jesus.”

Ep. 2:11-14 “11 Therefore, remember that formerly you who are Gentiles by birth and called ‘uncircumcised’ by those who call themselves ‘the circumcision’ (which is done in the body by human hands) 12 remember that at that time you were separate from Christ, excluded from citizenship in Israel and foreigners to the covenants of the promise, without hope and without God in the world. 13 But now in Christ Jesus you who once were far away have been brought near by the blood of Christ. 4 For he himself is our peace, who has made the two groups one and has destroyed the barrier, the dividing wall of hostility,”

Paul emphatically states that these two groups, Jews and Gentiles, are ONE IN CHRIST. Christ DESTROYED the wall and barrier. Any reinstatement of this WALL/BARRIER in some future age is not even hinted at. To Paul, destroy meant to destroy forever. Just like sin and death has been destroyed forever in Christ. Just like the geographical city of Jerusalem was in 70 AD destroyed forever.

The real and true “ekklesia” of God are one people forever united in Christ.
He. 12:22 “But you have come to Mount Zion, to the city of the living God, the heavenly Jerusalem. You have come to thousands upon thousands of angels in joyful assembly.”

This is the real and true Mount Zion, City of the living God, the Heavenly Jerusalem.

It is not in some Christ cursed land on earth anymore, where Talmudic Jews bang their stupid Christ rejecting heads on some stupid brick wall. There is nothing holy in that land anymore.

When Christ places a curse on something or someone, look out! He is God Almighty.

Re. 21:2 “I saw the Holy City, the new Jerusalem, coming down out of heaven from God, prepared as a bride beautifully dressed for her husband.”

**Christ the Husband – The Ekklesia the Bride**

Ep. 5:25-27 “25 Husbands, love your wives, just as Christ loved the ‘ekklesia’ and gave himself up for her 26 to make her holy, cleansing her by the washing with water through the word, 27 and to present her to himself as a radiant ‘ekklesia’, without stain or wrinkle or any other blemish, but holy and blameless.”

Jn. 3:29 “He who has the bride is the bridegroom; but the friend of the bridegroom, who stands and hears him, rejoices greatly because of the bridegroom’s voice. So this joy of mine has been made full.”

As Jesus our Lord said, “He who has ears to hear, let him hear.”
An Amillennial Understanding of the Kingdom of God

Nicholas A. Laurienzo

Chapter 5
Historical Themes, Types, and Patterns From the Old Testament

There is not one historical event recorded in the Old Testament that does not convey a purpose and meaning. The mighty acts of God portrayed throughout history from the very beginning are stamped with certain features and characteristics that reveal they are the work of a single author, that being God.

These themes are sometimes reoccurring (recapitulating). As history unfolds, God adds new dimensions and added themes/concepts to define His redemptive purposes toward an "elect" people. However, these themes and patterns are not strictly limited to the Redemption of the "elect", but also toward the Reprobation of a people created to be antithetical to God, His people, and all righteousness. Jesus Christ IS the embodiment and totality of all light, truth, and righteousness.

Understanding these themes, types, and patterns will give us great and helpful insight for our understanding of the "millennial" reign and Kingdom of God/Christ, the destruction of this temporal age, and the bursting forth of the glorious Heaven and Earth.

Let's take a brief look into these main historical themes/patterns. In upcoming essays, we can further define these themes in terms of fulfillment and relation to Christ and His elect people, as in contrast to Anti-Christ and his reprobate people. Just as Christ and the Apostles spoke in terms of fulfillment from these themes, prophecies, and types, so do we, His people.

Creation Features

Creation of darkness (Ge. 1:2; Je. 4:23).
Waters cover the earth (Ge. 1:2).
The Holy Spirit overshadowed the earth (Ge. 1:2).
Creation of light (Ge. 1:3).
Light and Darkness divided (Ge. 1:5).
The waters are divided (Ge. 1:6).
Dry land appears (Ge. 1:10).
Animals appear, including creeping things (serpent) (Ge. 1:24-25).
Adam made in God's image (Ge. 1:27).
Adam given dominion over creatures and earth (Ge. 1:28-29).
Be fruitful and multiply (Ge. 1:28).
Tree of Life (Ge. 2:9).
Commandment/Law/Covenant (Ge. 2:16-17).
Eve formed from Adam's side/rib (Ge. 2:21-24).
Nakedness (Ge. 2:25).
Rebellion (Ge. 3:6).
Guilt (Ge. 3:7).
Curses (Ge. 3:14-19).
Promise and distinction of two seeds (Ge. 3:15).
Grace (Ge. 3:21).
Sacrifice (blood) (Ge. 4:4).
Evil against Good (Ge. 4:8).

The above features recorded in the creation account were not primarily written for the sake of geographical or biological information, but rather for theological purposes. They demonstrate, through theological redemptive concepts, God's relation to Adam and consequently Adam's elect offspring. Also, these features demonstrate God's wrathful and judgmental purposes toward the reprobate seed, more fully seen through the flood event.

**Flood Features**

God's patience and endurance with the reprobate (Ge. 6:3).
Great wickedness of the reprobate (Ge. 6:5).
Promise to destroy the reprobate (Ge. 6:7).
Redemption by Grace; basis/ground for the elect (Ge. 6:8).
The "Ark", means of Salvation (Ge. 6:14-17).
Re-establishment promise of the covenant (Ge. 6:18).
Renewal of the earth (Ge. 6:19-21).
Perfect obedience insures salvation of the elect and the earth (Ge. 6:22).
Reprobate world in chaos (Ge. 7:11).
Waters cover the earth (Ge. 7:19-23).
Wind blows on the waters (Ge. 8:1).
Dry land appears (Ge. 8:13-14).
Sacrifice, Altar (blood) and promise (Ge. 8:20-22).
Noah given dominion over creatures and earth (Ge. 9:1-2).
Be fruitful and multiply (Ge. 9:7).
Re-establishment of the covenant (Ge. 9:8-10).
Sign established (Ge. 9:13).
Rise of evil; Babel (Ge. 11:1-9).

There are some essential features of the creation account repeated in the flood account. Through these reoccurring themes, we can start to develop clear patterns of God's dealings with both Elect and Reprobate mankind.

**Abrahamic Features**

Promise of a land (Ge. 12:1).
Altar Built (Ge. 12:7).
Abram goes to Egypt (Ge. 12:10).
Pharaoh struck with plagues (Ge. 12:17).
Abram leaves Egypt (Ge. 13:1).
Abram settles in land of Canaan. Lot separates from him into SODOM (Ge. 13:12).
Justification through faith alone (Ge. 15:6).
Abram's name changed to Abraham. Father of many nations promise (Ge. 17:5).
Everlasting covenant, Circumcision a sign, Land of Canaan, Everlasting possession (Ge. 17:1-14).
Promise of Isaac, Everlasting covenant to be established through Isaac (Ge. 17:19).
Outcry against SODOM (Ge. 18:20-21).
Angels arrive at SODOM (Ge. 19:1).
Angels strike the reprobate with blindness (Ge. 19:11).
Abraham, Lot, with families, depart from SODOM (Ge. 19:12-21).
SODOM destroyed (Ge. 19:27-29).
Isaac born (Ge. 21:1).
God tests Abraham's faith (Ge. 22:1-7).
Promise of Redeemer Christ (Ge. 22:8).

As the history of man further unfolds, God introduces more characters, along with adding new concepts/themes. Through a more distinct line of people, the Messiah must come, with Abraham being a very important path. New theological concepts have been added to enhance the drama of redemption. We can also see themes that recapitulate: “Alter”, “Sign”, “Rise of Evil”, “Covenant”, etc.

**Jacob, Moses, and Israel Features**

The birthing of the Hebrew nation event continues in recapitulating the redemptive themes and types listed previously. However, the “dark” reprobate side recapitulates also to maintain the constant tension between “Elect” and “Reprobate”, “Light” and “Darkness”, “Good and Evil”.

Jacob born (Ge. 25:26).
Jacob receives birthright from Esau (Ge. 25:33).
Jacob receives the blessing of the firstborn from Isaac (Ge. 27:27-29).
Jacob's name changed to Israel (Ge. 32:28; 35:10).
Jacob sees God face to face (Ge. 32:30).
Jacob lives in Canaan (Ge. 37:1).
Joseph sold and brought to Egypt (Ge. 37:28).
Jacob/Israel goes to Egypt (Ge. 46:6).
Joseph states God's promise to bring them back to Canaan (Ge. 50:24; also ref. Ex. 6:8).
Israel under the bondage of Egypt (Ex. 1:6-14).
Moses the deliverer hid from the wrath of the king (Ex. 1:22; 2:6).
Israel is called God's firstborn (Ex. 4:22-23).
Moses pleads with Pharaoh to let his people go (Ex. 5:1-2).
God promises Moses deliverance (Ex. 6:1-8).
The Plagues; Pharaoh hardened (Ex. 7-11).
Plague on firstborn announced (Ex. 11:4-8).
Passover (blood) instituted for the salvation of Israel (Ex. 12).
Waters of the Red Sea divided, Dry land appears (Ex. 14:21-22; ref. Is. 51:9-11; 63:11-14).

To this point we can already see some main themes reoccur from previous history. Look back on previous features to see the similarity. God also adds new themes that are peculiar to this Nation of Israel.

God to this point has been taking redemptive history to a predetermined goal. That goal is Jesus Christ our Lord: The Christ Event.

Israel is brought to the wilderness and tested for forty years.

De. 8:2-3 "2 Remember how the LORD your God led you all the way in the wilderness these forty years, to humble and test you in order to know what was in your heart, whether or not you would keep his commands. 3 He humbled you, causing you to hunger and then feeding you with manna, which neither you nor your ancestors had known, to teach you that man does not live on bread alone but on every word that comes from the mouth of the LORD."

Wilderness Features

Manna (Ex. 16:4).
Water from the Rock (Ex. 17:1-7).
Moses meets God at Mt. Sinai (Ex.19-20).
The Law Covenant more fully explained and developed (Ex. 20-22).
Sabbath and Festivals (Ex. 23).
Covenant and blood sacrifice (Ex. 24).
Offerings, The Ark, Table, Lampstand (Ex. 25).
Tabernacle (Ex. 26).
Altar, Courtyard, Oil for Lampstand (Ex. 26).
Priestly Garments, Ephod, Breastpiece (Ex. 27).
Consecration of Priests (Ex. 28).
Incense Altar, Atonement Money, Washing Basin, Anointing Oil, Incense (Ex. 29).
Sabbath (Ex. 31).
Reprobates rebel, Golden Calf (Ex. 32).
Moses revisits God on Sinai (Ex. 34).
Sabbath regulations, Materials for Tabernacle (Ex. 35).
Construction of Tabernacle (Ex. 36).
Ark, Table, Lampstand, Alter of Incense (Ex. 37).
Altar, Basins, Courtyard, Materials (Ex. 38).  
Garments, Ephod, Breastpiece, Moses inspects Tabernacle (Ex. 39).  
Temple set up, God indwells the Tabernacle (Ex. 40).  
Curses for disobedience (De. 28).

The book of Leviticus further develops these Sacrificial, Ceremonial, and Moral Laws. The Levitical Priesthood is given specific functions. Tithing was instituted strictly for the support of the Levitical Priesthood.

**Brief Summary**

Israel was told to possess the land and subdue it, which is reminiscent of Adam and Noah.

God enters into a covenant with Israel, which is reminiscent of Adam, Noah, Abraham, and Isaac.

The Manna in the desert is reminiscent of the Tree of Life in Eden.

The Serpent that bit the people of Israel is reminiscent of the Serpent in the Garden.

Israel's testing in the wilderness is reminiscent of Adam's testing in the Garden.

Israel's bondage and captivity in Egypt is reminiscent of Adam's captivity in the Garden and Abraham's troubles in Egypt.

Israel's rescue through the Red Sea is reminiscent of Noah's rescue from the flood.

God, through the nation of Israel, further introduces redemptive themes. These reoccurring patterns come to full “light” in the Christ event.

The main themes portray captivity and restoration. When Israel finally entered the Promised Land under Joshua, these patterns continued to develop with added dimensions.

**Israel In The Promised Land Features**

The “Ark” and the “Priests” to lead the way into Canaan (Jos. 3:1-3).  
Circumcision and Passover celebration (Jos. 5:2-12).  
Wicked Kings defeated (Jos. 12).  
Division of land for the tribes of Israel (Jos. 13-21).  
Israel battles remaining Canaanites (Jud. 1).  
Judges over Israel established (Jud. 3:9).
King Saul confirmed as King (1 S. 11:14-15).
David anointed as King (2 S. 2:2-4).
David conquers Jerusalem (2 S. 5:6-7).
“ARK” brought to Jerusalem (2 S. 6:1-5).
David appoints Solomon King (1 K. 1:29).
Building of the Temple (1 K. 6).
Ark brought to the Temple (1 K. 8:1-20).
Israel's Kingdom divided (1 K. 11).
Due to Israel's wickedness, they fell to the King of Babylon; The temple destroyed; Carried away into captivity (2 K. 25:1-21).

Brief Summary

Due to Israel's wickedness, mainly from the northern kings of Israel, the curses of Deuteronomy 28 were upon them. Their pride, arrogance, and fellowship with the pagan nations subdued them. They practiced the ways of the heathens, and worshiped false gods. Murder, lust, envy, greed, homosexuality, and all manner of wickedness were found in her (Israel’s) bosom. God punished them and removed His protective hand from them.

For the sake of the “elect” only, God endured with these wicked reprobate people until the “DAWN” of a new era was to arrive. Jesus Christ, the true King David and Redeemer of Israel, was the hope that the elect prophets and people were longing for to end their bondage.

Again, there will be another deliverance from Babylon, which again is reminiscent of the bondage in Egypt.

The Prophets predict these and many coming deliverances: Eze. 20:33-37; Ho. 2:14-15; cf. Is. 4:5; 10:24-27; 11:11, 12, 16; 40:3-5; 41:17,18; 42:16; 43:16-19; 44:27; 48:20-21; 51:9-11; Je. 51:36; Eze. 16; Mi. 7:15-17.

In Isaiah 40, the prophet of God not only speaks in terms of deliverance, but also speaks in terms of restoration of the earth (Is. 66). These Scriptures can only be seen and understood as though they are referring to Christ, and not limited to just ethnic Israel, for they are broader in scope.

The prophets, in their writings, use language that recapitulates past events and themes to show redemption and renewal. God restoring His creation and providing deliverance for His “elect” people. All these patterns, themes, and types point to an ultimate and final Deliverer.

The dry and dead bones of the Nation of Israel will again find restoration and deliverance. But this deliverance and restoration will take on a Glorious feature. Christ, the Son of God Himself, will be the deliverer of “elect” Israel. Re:Ezekiel 37.
An Amillennial Understanding of the Kingdom of God

Nicholas A. Laurienzo

Chapter 6
Jesus Christ: the Goal, Purpose, and Fulfillment of “Old” History

The redemptive themes in “old” history finally reach their zenith when Jesus Christ enters the history of mankind. In the greater “light” of His death, resurrection, and Holy Spirit, the veil has now been removed.

The great and epochal historical types/themes have reached their fulfillment in the “One” who was promised from old.

As I’ve stated previously, typology is not allegory. These historical events were real events.

We are safe and sure from Jesus Christ and the Apostolic “kerygma” that what was spoken has now been revealed to His Body.

The Apostolic witness to Christ, the promised Messiah of True Israel, was born and chiseled out from the old Scriptures.

The “Diamond” in the rough of the “old”, now shines brightly.

Christ the Meaning and Recapitulation of Creation

Is. 65:17  “See, I will create new heavens and a new earth. The former things will not be remembered, nor will they come to mind.”

Jesus Christ is the central figure, author, and creator of the New World to come, and of this present world.

John opens his letter showing Christ as the God of all creation.

Jn. 1:1-5 “1 In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. 2 He was with God in the beginning. 3 Through him all things were made; without him nothing was made that has been made. 4 In him was life, and that life was the light of all mankind. 5 The light shines in the darkness, and the darkness has not overcome it.”

The same “Word” which spoke the world into existence has become incarnate in Christ.

Lu. 1:35 “The angel answered, ‘The Holy Spirit will come on you, and the power
of the Most High will overshadow you. So the holy one to be born will be called the Son of God.”

As the Holy Spirit hovered over the waters in the creation account, the same Holy Spirit hovered over Mary, to bring forth true and sinless elect humanity.

Ep. 4:24 “and to put on the new man, which, according to God, was created in righteousness and kindness of the truth.”

We, the “elect” of God in Christ, have a “new man” created in righteousness.

Col. 3:10 “and having put on the new, which is renewed in regard to knowledge, after the image of Him who did create him;”

We NOW, through the new birth/regeneration are restored and created in the image of Christ.

Christ is the true and real “ADAM” (Ro. 5:12-19; 1 Co. 15:45).

Paul states in Romans 5:14 that Adam was a “type”, “tupos”, of Him to come. God predestining the natural ADAM and his elect seed to be saved by the true and real spiritual ADAM.

As the real ADAM, Christ is the Express Image of God (2 Co. 4:4; Col. 1:15; He. 1:3; cf. Ge. 1:27).

Where elect Adam of old was deficient, Christ the True ADAM was perfect. Christ is everything that God created elect man to be: A man that God was pleased with (Mt. 3:17).

Christ, the true Adam, has a perfect relationship to the Father God. He is the perfect obedient servant (Mk. 10:45; Ac. 10:38; Ph. 2:5-7), and exercises dominion over the created order (He. 2:6-9).

Christ, the true and real Adam, is the man of Daniel 7:13-14 and Matthew 28:18 who exercises dominion and rule.

In the gospel accounts, we see many times where Christ ruled over the wind and waves of the sea. He ruled over the fish of the sea. He ruled over the “colt”. He ruled over death, disease, and demons. No doubt about it. This Adam is the true Adam of creation. Adam of Old was only a type, a shadow, a figure. Adam of old was never intended to succeed.

The Adam of old was created “naked”, with sinful impulses, and with need of “clothing” Righteousness. The real and true Adam/Christ, was Righteousness incarnate. This real and true Adam clothes all His elect with His robe of
Righteousness.

John Calvin was quite incorrect when he wrote the following in his Institutes:

(bolding added)

Quote: “Therefore, God has provided the soul of man with intellect, by which he might discern good from evil, just from unjust, and might know what to follow or to shun, reason going before with her lamp; whence philosophers, in reference to her directing power, have called her to hegemonikon. To this he has joined will, to which choice belongs. Man excelled in these noble endowments in his primitive condition, when reason, intelligence, prudence, and judgement, not only sufficed for the government of his earthly life, but also enabled him to rise up to God and eternal happiness. Thereafter choice was added to direct the appetites, and temper all the organic motions; the will being thus perfectly submissive to the authority of reason.

“In this upright state, man possessed freedom of will, by which, if he chose, he was able to obtain eternal life. It were here unseasonable to introduce the question concerning the secret predestination of God, because we are not considering what might or might not happen, but what the nature of man truly was. Adam, therefore, might have stood if he chose, since it was only by his own will that he fell; but it was because his will was pliable in either directions and he had not received constancy to persevere, that he so easily fell. Still he had a free choice of good and evil; and not only so, but in the mind and will there was the highest rectitude, and all the organic parts were duly framed to obedience, until man corrupted its good properties, and destroyed himself.” Institutes Book 1, chapter 15, section 8. Free Choice and Adam’s Responsibility.

There is no such thing as free will/choice. Never was, and never will be. All “will” is subjected to God's will. Mankind is and never was free from God. Nor are the elements of the earth and heavens.

It is an awful admission on Calvin’s part to think that the typical Adam had “Free Will Choice”. As compared to the Real and True Adam (Christ) who was subjected in every way to the Fathers will.

Jn. 4:34 “Jesus said to them, My food is to do the will of Him who sent Me and to accomplish His work.”

Jn. 5:30 “I can do nothing on My own initiative. As I hear, I judge; and My judgment is just, because I do not seek My own will, but the will of Him who sent Me.”

Jn. 6:38 “For I have come down from heaven, not to do My own will, but the will
Typical Adam in no way was created to obtain eternal life from his own personal “choice”. He was naked to begin with and never desired the “TREE OF LIFE” in the garden. He and Eve desired the forbidden tree. Thus revealing their true created nature.

This again demonstrates the “plan B” mentality, the idea that God's original design for Adam failed due to Adam's phantom free choice. Now God must react to this failure, and come up with a plan B contingency to rescue him.

There is no “plan B”. Man can never frustrate God's original plan and purpose. Not Adam of old, and not the Nation of Israel due to their rejection of Christ.

Paul parallels the “ekklesia” with Eve (2 Co. 11:2-3). As Eve came from Adam’s rib, and the two shall become one flesh, we the elect bride of Christ/Adam are born from His pierced side on the cross. We are one flesh and spirit united in Him, our husband. We are to be devoted to Christ, our true “Adam”, just as Eve was to be devoted to her husband.

Jesus recapitulates creation and Adam of old. He accomplishes all that Adam of old could not accomplish, and restores all that Adam of old destroyed.

This real and True Adam is the true “covenant” keeper that brings us Justification and life eternal.

Our True Adam is the “TREE OF LIFE” (Re. 2:7; 22:2).

Mk. 16:15 “And He said to them, Go into all the world and preach the gospel to all creation.”

As Adam of old was told to be fruitful and multiply, we the elect proclaim the Gospel to the nations. God will cause us to be fruitful and multiply by bringing the sheep into the fold of His real EDEN.

Lu. 4:18 “THE SPIRIT OF THE LORD IS UPON ME, BECAUSE HE ANOINTED ME TO PREACH THE GOSPEL TO THE POOR. HE HAS SENT ME TO PROCLAIM RELEASE TO THE CAPTIVES, AND RECOVERY OF SIGHT TO THE BLIND, TO SET FREE THOSE WHO ARE OPPRESSED,”

The curse on Eden of old is now removed. In Christ we are set free.

As Adam of old experienced guilt, our guilty conscience has now been cleansed by the obedience and sacrifice of the real and true ADAM.

He. 9:14 “How much more, then, will the blood of Christ, who through the eternal
Spirit offered himself unblemished to God, cleanse our consciences from acts that lead to death, so that we may serve the living God.”

**Jesus Christ is the True Light of Creation**

Ge. 1: 3-5 “3 And God said, ‘Let there be light,’ and there was light. 4 God saw that the light was good, and he separated the light from the darkness. 5 God called the light ‘day,’ and the darkness he called ‘night.’ And there was evening, and there was morning the first day.”

From the very beginning God teaches us that “Light” and “Darkness” are to be separated.

Here we can get a good grasp on how future generations of God's elect people understood this division of light and darkness from the creation account.

Is. 9:1-2 “1 Nevertheless, there will be no more gloom for those who were in distress. In the past he humbled the land of Zebulun and the land of Naphtali, but in the future he will honor Galilee of the nations, by the Way of the Sea, beyond the Jordan. 2 The people walking in darkness have seen a great light; on those living in the land of deep darkness a light has dawned.”

Isaiah the Prophet of God foretold of an era to come when a “great light” would come. Israel was in deep darkness due to their false teachers and wickedness, which led them astray.

Mt. 4:12-17 “12 When Jesus heard that John had been put in prison, he withdrew to Galilee. 13 Leaving Nazareth, he went and lived in Capernaum, which was by the lake in the area of Zebulun and Naphtali, 14 to fulfill what was said through the prophet Isaiah: 15 ‘Land of Zebulun and land of Naphtali, the Way of the Sea, beyond the Jordan, Galilee of the Gentiles 16 the people living in darkness have seen a great light; on those living in the land of deep darkness a light has dawned.’ 17 From that time on Jesus began to preach, ‘Repent, for the kingdom of heaven has come near.”

Jesus was the “Light” and His Kingdom was to be a Kingdom of Light. His elect people are to be a “light” to the world.

Mt. 5:14 “You are the light of the world. A city set on a hill cannot be hidden.”

Jn. 1:5 “The Light shines in the darkness, and the darkness did not comprehend it.”

Reprobate mankind will never see or comprehend light.

Lu. 2:32 “A LIGHT OF REVELATION TO THE GENTILES, And the glory of Your

Jesus is the light for the elect Gentiles.

Ac. 26:18 “to open their eyes so that they may turn from darkness to light and from the dominion of Satan to God, that they may receive forgiveness of sins and an inheritance among those who have been sanctified by faith in Me.”

Light refers to the dominion of God. Darkness refers to the dominion of Satan.

2 Co. 4:6 “For God, who said, ‘Light shall shine out of darkness,’ is the One who has shone in our hearts to give the Light of the knowledge of the glory of God in the face of Christ.”

Paul uses the themes of creation to show Christ is the recapitulation of creation.

2 Co. 6:14 “Do not be bound together with unbelievers; for what partnership have righteousness and lawlessness, or what fellowship has light with darkness?”

Paul is not an “ecumenist”, nor a “syncretist”. Paul equates fellowship in terms of light and darkness. We, the elect of God, should have no fellowship with those who deny the imputation of Christ’s righteousness, or believe in sacramental superstition, or any of the other godless false teachings of modern day “so-called” Christian expression.

Much, much later in this study these issues will be addressed in the “Millennium” section.

1 Th. 5:5 “for you are all sons of light and sons of day. We are not of night nor of darkness.”

Paul again pulls this theme right out of the creation account.

1 Jn. 1:5 “This is the message we have heard from Him and announce to you, that God is Light, and in Him there is no darkness at all.”

This should teach us something. Since before the creation of all things, there was no “darkness”.

Darkness and Evil cannot come into existence on their own. God must create this realm called darkness and evil. The creation account shows darkness to have been created beforehand. Before light was created.

Re. 21:24 “The nations will walk by its light, and the kings of the earth will bring their glory into it.”
Re. 22:5 “And there will no longer be any night; and they will not have need of the light of a lamp nor the light of the sun, because the Lord God will illumine them; and they will reign forever and ever.”

How glorious.
An Amillennial Understanding of the Kingdom of God

Nicholas A. Laurienzo

Chapter 7
Christ Prefigured in the Flood Account Feature

There are some remarkable themes in the flood account that have a direct bearing on Christ, His people, the destruction of the reprobate, and the destruction of this present world at Christ's second Advent.

We will take a look at some of the main themes.

Ge. 5:29  "Now he called his name Noah, saying, 'This one will give us rest from our work and from the toil of our hands arising from the ground which the LORD has cursed.'"

Mt. 11:25-30  "25 At that time Jesus said, 'I praise you, Father, Lord of heaven and earth, because you have hidden these things from the wise and learned, and revealed them to little children. 26 Yes, Father, for this is what you were pleased to do. 27 All things have been committed to me by my Father. No one knows the Son except the Father, and no one knows the Father except the Son and those to whom the Son chooses to reveal him. 28 Come to me, all you who are weary and burdened, and I will give you rest. 29 Take my yoke upon you and learn from me, for I am gentle and humble in heart, and you will find rest for your souls. 30 For my yoke is easy and my burden is light."

The curse placed on the earth, Adam, and Eve, was a curse of hard labor, toil, pain, suffering, and death in this present existence. However, the real pain and anguish of our lives is due to SIN. The prophets of old spoke of a future and final rest for our souls in the coming of the Messiah.

Is. 14:3  "And it will be in the day when the LORD gives you rest from your pain and turmoil and harsh service in which you have been enslaved."

Eze. 34:15  "'I will feed My flock and I will lead them to rest,' declares the Lord GOD."

Jesus is the fulfillment of this "old" redemptive theme of "rest" for our soul. In Him we have perfect rest. The consequences of sin have been destroyed in Christ. Death was destroyed. We, through the new birth, are once again resurrected to spiritual life. We are alive in Christ and are in union with the Holy Spirit and the Father. Through Christ's Resurrection, we too, will have a resurrection of this mortal body. Noah only being a type, a shadow of salvation for the remnant elect.

Ge. 6:3  "And the LORD said, My spirit shall not always strive with man, for that
he also is flesh: yet his days shall be an hundred and twenty years.”

For the sake and redemption of the “elect” then, now, and to His second Advent, God continues to show, through reoccurring events, that the “elect” must be safely on board the Ark before God destroys this current wicked world.

In no way can God's forestalling the destruction of this current world, with its reprobates, be construed as an act of benevolence or Grace toward them. It is only for the sake of the “elect” that God holds off His impending destruction.

We will see this same concept of forestalling with Abraham and Lot in SODOM'S destruction, in National Israel's final destruction, and ultimately, in the destruction of this current world.

As long as there is an Elect remnant on this earth that still have not come to regeneration and faith in Christ, God's patience with the wicked will remain.

All the “wheat” must be gathered into the barn. All the “sheep” must be gathered into the fold.

Each of these episodes in history show an “elect” people being saved from God's destruction.

In the days of Noah, there were only “eight” that were saved, as compared to the total population of the earth at that time. That is a very, very small remnant of mankind (ref. 1 Pe. 3:20; 2 Pe. 2:5).

In Abraham's day there was Lot, his wife, and his two daughters whom the two angels grabbed by their hands to lead them out (Ge. 19:16).

What's interesting is that Lot did not want to flee to the mountains as he was directed to do, but rather wanted to flee to a small city in the plains near SODOM and GOMORRAH; a city that God wanted to destroy also. God granted Lot's request and spared that city. The city was ZOAR (Ge. 19:21-22).

Again in Jerusalem, the center of Israel, as long as there was an elect remnant of ethnic Jews to be saved in Christ, God withheld His destruction until 70 AD. This tells us the Jewish age is over.

All the remnant of Elect Israel, from Jacob to 70 AD (which was only a small remnant), has been grafted into the true vine, Christ. They are safe in the ARK.

And now, in this Gospel age, as long as there is a remnant of Gentile elect to be saved, the destruction of this world cannot come.

So the same theme remains constant. As long as there is an elect remnant
occupying a city, or, in the case of Noah and us, this current world, God withholds destruction.

This small remnant theme is constantly reinforced through the Scriptures. This poses great difficulties for some Postmillennialists. This will be more fully developed as we move forward in later sections of this study.

He. 11:7 “By faith Noah, being warned by God about things not yet seen, in reverence prepared an ark for the salvation of his household, by which he condemned the world, and became an heir of the righteousness which is according to faith.”

Just like Abraham who was to follow him. By faith alone, Noah was justified.

Ge. 6:18-19 “18 But I will establish my covenant with you, and you will enter the ark, you and your sons and your wife and your sons’ wives with you. 19 You are to bring into the ark two of all living creatures, male and female, to keep them alive with you.”

The “ark” introduced in the flood account points to the “ark of the Covenant” in Israel.

Ex. 25:10 “They shall construct an ark of acacia wood two and a half cubits long, and one and a half cubits wide, and one and a half cubits high.”

As the “Ark” in Noah’s day was constructed from wood, so too is the “Ark of the Covenant” to be constructed of wood. However, the greater significance and purpose of the “ark” was to show covenant and salvation. Our Lord’s death on the wooden tree/cross sealed the covenant in blood. We will further develop this theme of the “ARK of the Covenant” in the Jacob/Israel section.

This all was fulfilled in Jesus Christ. Christ being our “Ark of the Covenant” of safety.

We also see in the flood features, obedience on Noah’s part to build the “Ark” in the face of oppression, corruption, and violence (Ge. 6:22; 6).

But our King and Savior Jesus, the true Noah, far exceeded the “type” and was obedient unto death.

Ph. 2:8 “Being found in appearance as a man, He humbled Himself by becoming obedient to the point of death, even death on a cross.”

Christ's obedience was the fulfillment and perfect establishment of the “ark” forever. We who are in Christ are safely in the true "Ark".
Re. 11:19 “And the temple of God which is in heaven was opened; and the ark of His covenant appeared in His temple, and there were flashes of lightning and sounds and peals of thunder and an earthquake and a great hailstorm.”

Christ is the Holy Temple; He is the Ark of the Covenant. He sits at the right Hand of God in power and authority. We, the “elect” of God, are also seated in heavenly places by virtue of our union with Him by the Holy Spirit.

Ep. 1:20 “which He brought about in Christ, when He raised Him from the dead and seated Him at His right hand in the heavenly places,”

Ep. 2:6 “and raised us up with Him, and seated us with Him in the heavenly places in Christ Jesus,”

The wind that blew on the waters in Genesis 8:1 is likened to the Holy Spirit who affects our lives.

Jn. 3:8 “The wind blows where it wishes and you hear the sound of it, but do not know where it comes from and where it is going; so is everyone who is born of the Spirit.”

Jesus our Lord referred to some of the themes of Noah’s day.

Mt. 24:37-38 “37 As it was in the days of Noah, so it will be at the coming of the Son of Man. 38 For in the days before the flood, people were eating and drinking, marrying and giving in marriage, up to the day Noah entered the ark.”

Lu. 17:26-27 “26 And just as it happened in the days of Noah, so it will be also in the days of the Son of Man: 27 they were eating, they were drinking, they were marrying, they were being given in marriage, until the day that Noah entered the ark, and the flood came and destroyed them all.”

The reprobates of Noah’s day continued in the ordinary functions of life being blinded by God. The construction of the “Ark” was meaningless to them who lived near Noah. A task so huge in proportion could not have escaped their eyes. They had no care whatsoever of their impending doom. They probably laughed and scoffed at Noah. Their fate was already sealed. They were destroyed.

Likewise, in the days of Christ, the reprobate Jews laughed, mocked and ridiculed Jesus. They too were blinded to their impending destruction.

Jesus spoke many parables to them concerning the Kingdom, and how it was to be taken from them. His true people understood the warnings Christ spoke about. When the elect fled the city of Jerusalem, the city was destroyed.

We will discuss more in depth later, when we cover The Olivet Discourse.
The flood of Noah's day was universal, worldwide. It was not limited to just one city. Christ only referenced Noah to show the attitude of the reprobate. Noah's flood with its universal scope cannot be limited to just the destruction of Israel, for it depicts the destruction of the entire world at Christ's second Advent.

The Apostle Peter used the flood account to describe another feature of the flood.

1 Pe. 3:18-22 “18 For Christ also suffered once for sins, the righteous for the unrighteous, to bring you to God. He was put to death in the body but made alive in the Spirit. 19 After being made alive, he went and made proclamation to the imprisoned spirits 20 to those who were disobedient long ago when God waited patiently in the days of Noah while the ark was being built. In it only a few people, eight in all, were saved through water, 21 and this water symbolizes baptism that now saves you also, not the removal of dirt from the body but the pledge of a clear conscience toward God. It saves you by the resurrection of Jesus Christ, 22 who has gone into heaven and is at God’s right hand with angels, authorities and powers in submission to him.”

Peter opens his Epistle, “Peter, an apostle of Jesus Christ, To God’s elect, exiles scattered throughout the provinces of Pontus, Galatia, Cappadocia, Asia and Bithynia, 2 who have been chosen according to the foreknowledge of God the Father, through the sanctifying work of the Spirit, to be obedient to Jesus Christ and sprinkled with his blood:”

Peter uses another theme/concept from the flood account for a teaching different in purpose than Christ used from the flood.

Peter uses the water of the flood as a symbol of baptism. Not of literal water, which removed dirt from the body, but rather the water that symbolizes a clear conscience: a conscience that was resurrected with Jesus Christ.

Tit. 3:5 “Not by works of righteousness which we have done, but according to his mercy he saved us, by the washing of regeneration, and renewing of the Holy Ghost.”

2 Pe. 2:1-9 “1 But there were also false prophets among the people, just as there will be false teachers among you. They will secretly introduce destructive heresies, even denying the sovereign Lord who bought them bringing swift destruction on themselves. 2 Many will follow their depraved conduct and will bring the way of truth into disrepute. 3 In their greed these teachers will exploit you with fabricated stories. Their condemnation has long been hanging over them, and their destruction has not been sleeping. 4 For if God did not spare angels when they sinned, but sent them to hell, putting them in chains of darkness to be held for judgment; 5 if he did not spare the ancient world when he
brought the flood on its ungodly people, but protected Noah, a preacher of righteousness, and seven others; 6 if he condemned the cities of Sodom and Gomorrah by burning them to ashes, and made them an example of what is going to happen to the ungodly; 7 and if he rescued Lot, a righteous man, who was distressed by the depraved conduct of the lawless 8 (for that righteous man, living among them day after day, was tormented in his righteous soul by the lawless deeds he saw and heard) 9 if this is so, then the Lord knows how to rescue the godly from trials and to hold the unrighteous for punishment on the day of judgment.”

Peter here not only uses the flood account, but also adds in the SODOM account in relation to reprobate false teachers, prophets, and angels. He ties this in with rescuing the Godly elect, from impending judgment/destruction.

We can continue to see how Christ and the Apostles used these historic redemptive themes to magnify Christ, His Kingdom, His Reign, and His People.

Before we get started on our next segment, “Christ prefigured in Abrahamic Features”, I would like to point out that the Amillennial method of hermeneutic, in my opinion, best reflects the hermeneutics of Christ and the New Testament writers. It is consistent with Hebraic thought patterns, and also consistent with the communication methods utilized by peoples who lived in the ancient world.

The peoples of the ancient world communicated concepts and ideas through the use of “symbols”, “metaphors”, “figures of speech”, and “parabolic language”. We can see this through the archeological findings of Egyptian hieroglyphics. The “pictures” of snakes, animals, humans, birds, the sun, moon, fire, etc. were all arranged in a pattern to communicate historical events, concepts, themes, and sometimes bizarre mythical prophecies.

Since the “old” Scriptures take us back to the very start of creation, we also can see a similar method of communication prevalent within the Scriptures themselves. The thought patterns were conveyed through types, pictures, figures of speech, and metaphorical language.

There are several Greek words in the New Testament that support this method of communicating ideas, patterns, concepts, and themes.

1. **tupos**
2. **skia**
3. **hupodeigma**
4. **parabole**
5. **antitupon**

As previously discussed in Romans 5:14, Paul uses the term “**tupos**” in relation to Adam and Christ; Adam being a type, a pattern, of Him to come.
Col. 2:16-17 “16 Therefore do not let anyone judge you by what you eat or drink, or with regard to a religious festival, a New Moon celebration or a Sabbath day. 17 These are a shadow (skia) of the things that were to come; the reality, however, is found in Christ” (cf. He. 8:5; 10:1).

Referring to the Mosaic administration, these elements have found their fulfillment in Christ. The shadow points to the fulfillment. Once the shadow is fulfilled, the shadow is no longer functional.

Due to the great Apostasy that started during the lives of the Apostles, and will continue to Christ's second Advent, the counterfeit Christian church has resurrected the shadows and negated the real in Christ. Sabbatarianism, whether Saturday, or Sunday, is a negation of Christ. Even the holy days and seasons the pseudo Christian church have invented, are nothing more than a Judaizing of the Christian church.

He. 8:5 “They serve at a sanctuary that is a copy (hupodeigma) and shadow of what is in heaven. This is why Moses was warned when he was about to build the tabernacle: ‘See to it that you make everything according to the pattern shown you on the mountain’” (cf. He 9:23).

In reference to the High Priest, sacrifices, and the Sanctuary, the writer of Hebrews shows that these functions of the Mosaic administration were only a copy, a shadow of the real.

It's disgusting to hear so-called Christians refer to their church building as a sanctuary. Or to use the terms Clergy and Laity. Jesus Christ our High Priest is the reality of the real heavenly sanctuary.

He. 9:8-9 “8 The Holy Ghost signifying this, that the way into the holies was not yet made manifest, whilst the former tabernacle was yet standing. 9 Which is a parable (parabole) of the time present: according to which gifts and sacrifices are offered, which can not, as to the conscience, make him perfect that serveth, only in meats and in drinks,”

Here the writer of Hebrews shows us that the “temple” was only a parable. It had no efficacious power at all to regenerate the sinful conscience of man. Through the regenerating power of the Holy Ghost in Christ, our conscience has been renewed. We have entered the Holy of Holies.

The Jerusalem temple must come down. And it did in 70 AD. Forever to remain destroyed. It no longer serves a function or purpose. Shadow must always give way to the Real.

He. 11:17-19 “17 By faith Abraham, when he was tried, offered Isaac: and he
that had received the promises, offered up his only begotten son; 18 (To whom it was said: In Isaac shall thy seed be called.) 19 Accounting that God is able to raise up even from the dead. Whereupon also he received him for a parable (parabole).

The author of Hebrews correlates this event with Jesus Christ. Abraham is the father who was willing to offer up his only begotten son. And likewise, Abraham believed that God would raise him from the dead. What a glorious historical parable it is!

He. 9:24 “For Christ is not entered into the holy places made with hands, which are the figures (antitupon) of the true; but into heaven itself, now to appear in the presence of God for us”

Antitupon is a figure, a pattern of the true. It's not the real. The real is only to be found in Christ.

1 Pe. 3:21 “The like figure (antitupon) whereunto even baptism doth also now save us (not the putting away of the filth of the flesh, but the answer of a good conscience toward God,) by the resurrection of Jesus Christ:”

Peter tells us that literal water baptism was only a like figure of the real Baptism of the Holy Spirit.

Mt 1:11 “I indeed baptize you with water unto repentance. But he that cometh after me is mightier than I, whose shoes I am not worthy to bear: he shall baptize you with the Holy Ghost, and with fire:”

The Baptist also said, “I must decrease, but He must increase.” There is no salvific efficacy in the “drip”, “dunk”, or “drowning”.

The Gospel, Jesus Christ, Holy Spirit, and the Apostolic witness are the “Light” that reveals, explains, and fulfills all of the “Old”:

1. Typical Institutions
2. Typical Actions
3. Typical Events
4. Typical Things
5. Typical Offices
6. Typical Places
Chapter 8
Christ Prefigured in Abrahamic Features

In the previous sections, some themes pertaining to Abrahamic period were already discussed.

We will briefly mention a few again in this section.

One thing to point out is that Abram was not a Jew/Israelite in the physical sense. He was called out of Ur of the Chaldees, which was a pagan nation. He was given a promise from God to inherit the land of Canaan. Another promise to be the father of many nations. The ultimate promise of course, was that the Messiah/Seed would also come through him.

In this Abrahamic period, there are three main promises:

6. Land Promise
7. Great Nation Promise
8. Seed Promise

It is very important that we understand these three promises correctly in light of the theme and teaching of Justification through Faith Alone, Grace Alone, in Christ Alone. The above three promises cannot be divorced from Faith, Grace, and Christ. They cannot be divorced from one another in such a way that ultimate fulfillment can still be attained without faith in Christ. We will address the land issue in the next segment.

It is not as though Grace and Justification were non-existent prior to Abraham, but rather through this Abrahamic period God develops these concepts in greater length through the person of Abram and the promises made to him.

Abraham was always considered by the Jews/Israelites to be their father, and the figurehead of Israel. We have previously discussed that the reprobate Jews were chastised by Christ and the Baptist for claiming Abraham as their father. Although they came from his blood lineage, they did not possess the Spiritual lineage that truly identifies one with Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob.

We also have discussed the “Circumcision” aspect of Abraham. When Paul refers to a true Jew as being one who is circumcised of the heart and not the flesh, Paul is telling us that a true Jacobite/Israelite must continue to be rooted in Abraham their father. Faith Alone and Grace Alone are the main themes that truly identify a people with Abraham and his “seed”.

79
Ga. 3:16 “Now the promises were spoken to Abraham and to his seed. He does not say, ‘And to seeds,’ as referring to many, but rather to one, ‘And to your seed,’ that is, Christ.”

Ga. 3:19 “Why the Law then? It was added because of transgressions, having been ordained through angels by the agency of a mediator, until the seed would come to whom the promise had been made.”

Ga. 3:29 “If you belong to Christ, then you are Abraham’s seed, and heirs according to the promise.”

Paul tells us that the promises made to Abraham were not only given to Christ, but also were to be fulfilled in Christ and given to the elect. Paul also tells us the purpose of “Law/Moses”. It was added and to be administered through Moses/Israel the mediator, till the fulfiller/seed would come.

The “Law” was a Schoolmaster

Ga. 3:24-25 “24 Wherefore the law was our schoolmaster to bring us unto Christ, that we might be justified by faith. 25 But after that faith is come, we are no longer under a schoolmaster.”

Here again Paul explains the temporary nature and purpose of National Israel. Once Christ had come, those elect that are Justified in Christ are no longer under the Mosaic administration.

2 Co. 1:20 “For all the promises of God (Old Testament) are in him (Christ), It is; therefore also by him (Christ), amen to God, unto our glory.”

This is more of the same line of reasoning from Paul. Paul sees that what pertained to the Abrahamic promises/covenant were to be grounded and realized in and through Jesus Christ. Not National Israel in some numerical, future, 1,000-year period, but rather in True Israel: Jesus Christ and His elect peculiar people.

Ac. 3:25 “It is you who are the sons of the prophets and of the covenant which God made with your fathers, saying to Abraham, ‘AND IN YOUR SEED (Christ) ALL THE FAMILIES OF THE EARTH SHALL BE BLESSED.’”

Same theme. Christ is the seed. The promises find their ground and realization in and through Christ. Through the true seed of Israel, all the nations will be blessed. All those in Christ, both Jew and Gentile, share in the promises made to Abraham.

Ro. 4:13 “For the promise, that he should be the heir of the world, was not to Abraham, or to his seed, through the law, but through the righteousness of
Ro. 4:16 “Therefore it is of faith, that it might be by grace; to the end the promise might be sure to all the seed; not to that only which is of the law, but to that also which is of the faith of Abraham; who is the father of us all,”

Paul further identifies Abraham's true seed as those who are of Faith alone and Grace alone. The promises are for the elect.

**Brief Summary:**

All the promises made to Abraham were to be fulfilled and realized in Christ.

If we belong to Christ, we are Abraham’s legitimate seed, and heirs to the promises made to Abraham.

Abraham's true seed was universal.

Faith alone and Grace alone are the characteristics of the true seed.

Those Jews who are seeking righteousness through the law, are not Abraham's seed at all! Therefore, they do not receive the ultimate promises given to Abraham.

**The Problem**

Jn. 3:3 “In reply Jesus declared, ‘I tell you the truth, no one can see the kingdom of God unless he is born again.’”

It is not due to rejecting Christ that the Kingdom was postponed, but rather the Kingdom was present amongst them. They just could not see it. God has purposely blinded them!

1 Co. 2:11 “For what man knoweth the things of a man, save the spirit of man which is in him? Even so the things of God knoweth no man, but the Spirit of God.”

1 Co. 2:14 “Now the natural man receiveth not the things of the Spirit of God: for they are foolishness unto him; and he cannot know them, because they are spiritually judged.”

The problem with reprobate Israel was that they were blinded to the truth and reality of the covenant. Through its fulfillment, and faith alone, they then could truly identify themselves to “Abraham/Grace/Christ”, “Isaac/Grace/Christ”, and “Jacob/Israel/Grace/Christ”.

faith.”
Their hopes were carnal hopes of a Kingdom: a carnal reestablishment of David’s throne. A carnal restoration of the land. A carnal Kingdom in which they would be free from Roman rule and oppression. A carnal Kingdom where they could continue to be wicked and self-righteous. A carnal Kingdom where they would consider themselves better than everyone else and still claim a chosen people status. A Kingdom where their false blind guides could continue in their deception of the masses.

They could not see:

“For the kingdom of God is not meat and drink; but righteousness, and peace, and joy in the Holy Ghost” (Ro. 14:17).

The Kingdom will be fully discussed in later segments.

They could not see that ethnic Israel with all its Mosaic administration, including the land, was only a shadow, a figure, type, copy, and parable of the real to be revealed through the Messiah who came down from Heaven.

There is recorded in the Old Testament 21 references to the phrase “Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob.”

This trio of identity was to remain intact for a purpose. Not only for genealogical purposes to ultimately render the blood Jewish Messiah, but also for theological purposes: a continuation and full revelatory fulfillment of the Law Covenant by the Messiah Jesus Christ.

Abraham represents Grace and Justification
Isaac represents the Promise/Christ
Jacob/Israel represents a peculiar chosen people: the Israel of God, with its King, Kingdom, Priests, Sacrifices, Land, Temple, etc.

However, these three typical persons have found their fulfillment in Jesus Christ. The full expression and realization of these types can only be seen through regeneration and faith alone, in Christ alone.

Moses is introduced as the Deliverer and LAW GIVER. Moses is a very important theme in God’s redemptive purposes, for “One” must come to fulfill the LAW.

As mentioned earlier, “Grace” existed before Abram; likewise “Law” also existed before Moses.

The concepts/themes of Grace and Law are more fully developed through these two typical persons.

These themes are introduced by God to exhibit Grace and Mercy to the Elect,
and Law/Curse/Wrath to the reprobate.

We have previously discussed “SODOM” and the remnant theme of elect to be saved.

Let us continue on this theme just a bit more.

Mt 10:5-15 “5 These twelve Jesus sent out with the following instructions: ‘Do not go among the Gentiles or enter any town of the Samaritans. 6 Go rather to the lost sheep of Israel. 7 As you go, proclaim this message: “The kingdom of heaven has come near.” 8 Heal the sick, raise the dead, cleanse those who have leprosy, drive out demons. Freely you have received; freely give. 9 Do not get any gold or silver or copper to take with you in your belts 10 no bag for the journey or extra shirt or sandals or a staff, for the worker is worth his keep. 11 Whatever town or village you enter, search there for some worthy person and stay at their house until you leave. 12 As you enter the home, give it your greeting. 13 If the home is deserving, let your peace rest on it; if it is not, let your peace return to you. 14 If anyone will not welcome you or listen to your words, leave that home or town and shake the dust off your feet. 15 Truly I tell you, it will be more bearable for Sodom and Gomorrah on the day of judgment than for that town.’”

Our Lord compares Sodom and Gomorrah to the towns in Israel that reject His message. Jesus said their destruction would be worse! Why? Because they had Moses/Law, the Prophets, and Psalms. In addition to that, they had miraculous wonders in their past history, and now presently amongst them.

There is no doubt. Their rejection of Christ did not postpone anything, but rather sealed their destruction for good.

Mt. 11:23-24 “23 And thou, Capernaum, which art exalted unto heaven, shalt be brought down to hell: for if the mighty works, which have been done in thee, had been done in Sodom, it would have remained until this day. 24 But I say unto you, That it shall be more tolerable for the land of Sodom in the day of judgment, than for thee.”

Again, Christ compares their rejection of Him to the destruction of Sodom. How can anyone with a sober conscience twist this language to mean Jesus will once again find favor with these wicked people and reinstate National Talmudic Zionist Israel?

The Chiliast, or anyone else, cannot make the claim that “God restored them in the past many times” as if this sets up a precedence for another reinstatement for 1,000 years.

National Israel was given a purpose. Until that purpose was completed at an
appointed, preordained time, God endured with these stiff-necked reprobates. Many times in the old Scriptures, God desired to cut them off but endured with them so as to bring about the Messiah through their blood lineage. Christ the King was born. Christ fulfilled the promises made to the fathers. Christ fulfilled Moses. Christ announced and inaugurated His Kingdom. National Israel hated and rejected Him and His Kingdom. They crucified Him. Christ rose from the dead and saved His people from their sins. Christ ascended to the right hand of power and authority, baptized us in the Holy Ghost, and sealed us to the day of the redemption of our bodies. Destroyed Israel/Sodom, and will destroy this present realm and usher in the REAL TRUE EDEN. THE REAL HEAVEN AND EARTH WHERE RIGHTEOUSNESS DWELLS. That was the plan from the beginning! It was the plan from Eternity! Christ redeemed His elect and saved His people from their sins. No more shadows/types.

Ge. 22:7-8 "7 And Isaac spake unto Abraham his father, and said, My father: and he said, Here am I, my son. And he said, Behold the fire and the wood: but where is the lamb for a burnt offering? 8 And Abraham said, My son, God will provide himself a lamb for a burnt offering: so they went both of them together."

Jn. 1:29 “The next day John seeth Jesus coming unto him, and saith, Behold the Lamb of God, which taketh away the sin of the world.”

Jn. 1:36 “And looking upon Jesus as he walked, he saith, Behold the Lamb of God!”

The Jews who were elect and chosen knew how to interpret the “old” Scriptures. They understood Abraham’s statement. The reprobate Jews rejected Abraham’s lamb.

Ge. 14:18 “And Melchizedek king of Salem brought forth bread and wine: and he was the priest of the most high God.”

Ps. 110:4 “The LORD hath sworn, and will not repent, Thou art a priest for ever after the order of Melchizedek.”

Jesus is our bread and wine

He. 6:13-20 “13 When God made his promise to Abraham, since there was no one greater for him to swear by, he swore by himself, 14 saying, ‘I will surely bless you and give you many descendants.’ 15 And so after waiting patiently, Abraham received what was promised.

“16 People swear by someone greater than themselves, and the oath confirms what is said and puts an end to all argument. 17 Because God wanted to make the unchanging nature of his purpose very clear to the heirs of what was
promised, he confirmed it with an oath. 18 God did this so that, by two unchangeable things in which it is impossible for God to lie, we who have fled to take hold of the hope set before us may be greatly encouraged. 19 We have this hope as an anchor for the soul, firm and secure. It enters the inner sanctuary behind the curtain, 20 where our forerunner, Jesus, has entered on our behalf. He has become a high priest forever, in the order of Melchizedek.”

The writer of Hebrews fully identifies Jesus Christ with Melchizedek in relation to the Promises made to Abraham and his seed. As stated earlier, God deals with a people through the use of a covenant arrangement. Where there is a covenant, there must also be a blood sacrifice. Where there is a blood sacrifice, there must also be a priest. A priest much greater than those of the Levites/Israelites.

This is another area that the reprobate Jews totally rejected. They so radically divorced themselves from their Abrahamic identity thus restricting themselves solely to Moses and the Law. They were under the false notion that they could be righteous through adherence to the law. Very similar to our modern day performance-based, Judaized, false Christianity.

He. 7:1-2 “1 This Melchizedek was king of Salem and priest of God Most High. He met Abraham returning from the defeat of the kings and blessed him, 2 and Abraham gave him a tenth of everything. First, the name Melchizedek means ‘king of righteousness’; then also, ‘king of Salem’ means ‘king of peace’.”

The reprobate Jews did not want this King of Righteousness and Peace. Jesus is the true King of Jeru-Salem.

He. 7:10-11 “10 because when Melchizedek met Abraham, Levi was still in the body of his ancestor. 11 If perfection could have been attained through the Levitical priesthood and indeed the law given to the people established that priesthood why was there still need for another priest to come, one in the order of Melchizedek, not in the order of Aaron?”

Here’s another problem with the reprobate Jews. The Jews thought that Aaron/Levi was a better method to obtain righteousness. These wicked ones were so self-centered they thought God revolved around them only. The writer tells us that perfection could not come through Levi in the order of Aaron. Perfection must come through Abraham’s high priest, not Aaron’s.

He. 10:12-17 “12 For when the priesthood is changed, the law must be changed also. 13 He of whom these things are said belonged to a different tribe, and no one from that tribe has ever served at the altar. 14 For it is clear that our Lord descended from Judah, and in regard to that tribe Moses said nothing about priests. 15 And what we have said is even more clear if another priest like Melchizedek appears, 16 one who has become a priest not on
the basis of a regulation as to his ancestry but on the basis of the power of an indestructible life. 17 For it is declared:

‘You are a priest forever, in the order of Melchizedek.’”

The writer is explaining that the Levitical system was instituted by genealogy, law, and regulation. But Christ's priesthood was grounded from the power of an indestructible life, an eternal nature and characteristic.

He. 7:18-28 “18 The former regulation is set aside because it was weak and useless 19 (for the law made nothing perfect), and a better hope is introduced, by which we draw near to God.”

How in the world can a useless and weak thing that could never make one perfect ever be reinstated by God in some mythical 1,000 year establishment? That line of reasoning is insane. It was set aside. It was dis-annulled, which means to put away and make obsolete.

Chiliasm is anti-Christ for it is in need of a reestablishment of the weak and beggarly elements. If Christ is perfection (He surely is), why should they desire the imperfect? Their faulty hermeneutic places them in an extremely untenable position.

“20 And it was not without an oath! Others became priests without any oath, 21 but he (Christ) became a priest with an oath when God said to him:

“The Lord has sworn and will not change his mind: ‘You are a priest forever.’”

“22 Because of this oath, Jesus has become the guarantor of a better covenant.”

The Levitical Priesthood was created from law. Since Christ fulfilled the law, the Levitical priesthood and everything associated with that priesthood has ended. Tithing included.

How awesome and majestic! God the Father Himself swore an oath that Jesus Christ is our Priest forever and eternally. Jesus guarantees the true and better covenant.

And some say, “Christ and His people are an interruption of God's plan”, “a mystery people” not mentioned at all in the “old” Scriptures, Christ and His elect people were only established as a “plan B” reaction to Israel’s rejection. How awful a theology that is. How Christ dishonoring that is.
Why don't we, the elect in Christ, just all get out of the way and stop claiming we are God's chosen people? This way, God can get back to the business of re-establishing a useless temple, worthless blood sacrifices, a useless Levitical priesthood, a useless piece of land, and a useless law that can only bring a curse on those who can never fulfill it. And most importantly re-establish a Christ rejecting, Christ-killing, Christ-hating Talmudic people who do not even follow Moses anymore, who were not following Abraham and Moses in the days of Christ. A people that for millenniums is not even remotely close to the faithful Israelites of the Old Testament.

A reprobate people and a current nation that is thoroughly given over to an occult religion. A reprobate people that stoned and killed their own prophets, sent to them from God himself. A reprobate people that killed the ultimate prophet of God, Jesus Christ Himself.

Dumb and blind so-called Christian leaders with their “sheeple” followers say that these reprobates are “God's chosen people”. The “apple of God's eye”. How blind! How awful! How repugnant to Christ that is!

“23 Now there have been many of those priests, since death prevented them from continuing in office; 24 but because Jesus lives forever, he has a permanent priesthood. 25 Therefore he is able to save completely those who come to God through him, because he always lives to intercede for them. 26 Such a high priest truly meets our need one who is holy, blameless, pure, set apart from sinners, exalted above the heavens. 27 Unlike the other high priests, he does not need to offer sacrifices day after day, first for his own sins, and then for the sins of the people. He sacrificed for their sins once for all when he offered himself. 28 For the law appoints as high priests men in all their weakness; but the oath, which came after the law, appointed the Son, who has been made perfect forever.”

There is not one shred of evidence from the New Testament writers indicating a reestablishment of National Israel. The writers spoke in terms of fulfillment rather than in terms of postponement and interruption.

In the next segment, we will address the “Promised Land” issue. Also we will continue to show Christ as the fulfillment of the themes in Jacob/Israel and the Mosaic Administration.
An Amillennial Understanding of the Kingdom of God

Nicholas A. Laurienzo

Chapter 9
Jesus Christ Recapitulates Jacob, Moses, Israel

Ro. 9:10-13 “10 Not only that, but Rebekah’s children were conceived at the same time by our father Isaac. 11 Yet, before the twins were born or had done anything good or bad in order that God’s purpose in election might stand: 12 not by works but by him who calls she was told, ‘The older will serve the younger.’ 13 Just as it is written: ‘Jacob I loved, but Esau I hated.’”

As mentioned earlier in this essay, to have a correct understanding of Eschatology, one must also have a correct understanding of Election.

Election, like Grace and Justification, cannot be divorced from our understanding of Eschatology.

If one does indeed divorce Eschatology from Election, Grace, and Justification, the logical result will be to interpret Old Testament prophecies concerning Jacob/Israel as being fulfilled in the wrong people. This is the heresy of Pre-mil eschatology.

“It is not the children by physical descent who are God’s children” (Ro. 9:8).

Ro. 9:8 “That is, they which are the children of the flesh, these are not the children of God: but the children of the promise are counted for the seed.”

Paul is a great teacher and polemicist. He is arguing the case that a child of God must be grounded in promise and election. Blood ancestry does not count.

The reprobate Jews and Israelites could not understand this. The pre-mils miss this also in stating that God plans to reinstate these children of the flesh.

Even as our Lord Jesus Christ was a child of the flesh (physical descent) through the Virgin Mary, He was also the ultimate ELECT CHILD OF PROMISE.

Speaking of Jesus Christ:

1 Pe. 2:6 “Wherefore also it is contained in the scripture, Behold, I lay in Sion a chief corner stone, elect, precious: and he that believeth on him shall not be confounded” (cf. Is. 28:16).

Is. 42:1 “Behold my servant, whom I uphold; mine elect, in whom my soul delighteth; I have put my spirit upon him: he shall bring forth judgment to the
Gentiles."

To further demonstrate the heresy of those who still promulgate the idea that God’s promises for National Israel are still unfulfilled, we will examine Paul’s treatment of reprobate Israel in Galatians.

Ga. 4:21-31 “21 Tell me, you who want to be under the law, are you not aware of what the law says? 22 For it is written that Abraham had two sons, one by the slave woman (Hagar) and the other by the free woman (Sarah). 23 His son by the slave woman (Ishmael) was born according to the flesh, but his son by the free woman (Isaac) was born as the result of a divine promise. 24 These things are being taken figuratively: The women represent two covenants. One covenant is from Mount Sinai (Moses and the Law) and bears children who are to be slaves: This is Hagar. 25 Now Hagar stands for Mount Sinai in Arabia and corresponds to the present city of Jerusalem, because she is in slavery with her children. 26 But the Jerusalem that is above is free, and she is our mother. 27 For it is written: ‘Be glad, barren woman, you who never bore a child; shout for joy and cry aloud, you who were never in labor; because more are the children of the desolate woman than of her who has a husband.’

28 Now you, brothers and sisters, (elect Jew and Gentile) like Isaac, are children of promise. 29 At that time the son born according to the flesh persecuted the son born by the power of the Spirit. It is the same now. 30 But what does Scripture say? ‘Get rid of the slave woman and her son, for the slave woman’s son will never share in the inheritance with the free woman’s son.’ 31 Therefore, brothers and sisters, we are not children of the slave woman, but of the free woman.” (Also ref. Is. 54:1; Ge. 21:10).

This one passage from Galatians is enough to overthrow all of Premillennialism, and also those who hold to a future restoration of reprobate Israel. But why do they persist? Because God blinded them! Just like he blinded reprobate Israel to Jesus the Messiah.

Paul makes a painstaking effort to be absolutely clear on this matter. Paul equates the Law covenant of Mt. Sinai to the bondwoman Hagar. Those who continue in this law covenant are slaves. He also equates this law covenant with children who are born of the flesh. He also states that present (to him) Jerusalem is in bondage. Then he says:

“Get rid of the slave woman and her son, for the slave woman’s son will never share in the inheritance with the free woman’s son.”
We, the elect of God, both Jew and Gentile, are born of promise. Born of the free woman. The real, true and ultimate Jerusalem is a land that we possess NOW, by faith alone!

How in the world can anyone even dare to claim God would reinstate National Israel and fulfill an inheritance that does not belong to her when He told Paul to get rid of her????

Paul shows Jacob as a child of promise/elect. Promise and Election are inseparable.

Paul also wants everyone to know that election is not based on merit or demerit. God loves one (Jacob) and hates the other (Esau). The older Esau will serve the younger Jacob. Although they were conceived at the same time, Esau came forth from the womb of his mother first, and was entitled to the birthright and blessings of the firstborn.

Here’s where it gets even more interesting. This brings us to Jacob.

The name Jacob means “he who supplants”, “the one who supplants”, “he grasps the heel”, which is a Hebrew idiom meaning “he takes advantage of” or “he deceives”.

Ge. 27:30-36 “30 After Isaac finished blessing him, and Jacob had scarcely left his father’s presence, his brother Esau came in from hunting. 31 He too prepared some tasty food and brought it to his father. Then he said to him, ‘My father, please sit up and eat some of my game, so that you may give me your blessing.’ 32 His father Isaac asked him, ‘Who are you?’ ‘I am your son’, he answered, ‘your firstborn, Esau.’ 33 Isaac trembled violently and said, ‘Who was it, then, that hunted game and brought it to me? I ate it just before you came and I blessed him and indeed he will be blessed!’ 34 When Esau heard his father’s words, he burst out with a loud and bitter cry and said to his father, ‘Bless me too, my father!’ 35 But he said, ‘Your brother came deceitfully and took your blessing.’ 36 Esau said, ‘Isn’t he rightly named Jacob? This is the second time he has taken advantage of me: He took my birthright, and now he’s taken my blessing!’”

We can understand why Paul said “Yet, before the twins were born or had done anything good or bad in order that God’s purpose in election might stand: not by works but by him who calls.”

Jacob received the blessing and status of “the firstborn” and all the promises that correspond with the firstborn son. Surely this blessing was not obtained by Jacob’s merits. He was a deceiver. His brother was angry with him and threatened to kill him, “The days of mourning for my father are near; then I will kill
my brother Jacob” (Ge. 27:41).

Jacob was then told by his father and mother to go to Paddan Aram.

Ge. 28:10-19 “10 Jacob left Beersheba and set out for Harran. 11 When he reached a certain place, he stopped for the night because the sun had set. Taking one of the stones there, he put it under his head and lay down to sleep. 12 He had a dream in which he saw a stairway resting on the earth, with its top reaching to heaven, and the angels of God were ascending and descending on it. 13 There above it stood the LORD, and he said: ‘I am the LORD, the God of your father Abraham and the God of Isaac. I will give you and your descendants the land on which you are lying. 14 Your descendants will be like the dust of the earth, and you will spread out to the west and to the east, to the north and to the south. All peoples on earth will be blessed through you and your offspring. 15 I am with you and will watch over you wherever you go, and I will bring you back to this land. I will not leave you until I have done what I have promised you.’”

At this juncture we must interrupt to discuss the land issue promised to Jacob. In upcoming segments we will return to Jacob's life for there is more in this passage that has a direct bearing on Jesus Christ.

There are two types of covenants mentioned in the Scriptures: Law and Grace.

When two parties enter into a covenant arrangement one party (the offerer) promises to perform or act. In this case, God made promises to Jacob. However, there are stipulations that must be met by the one who receives the promises (the offeree). To maintain possession of the promises, the “offeree” agrees to abide by the conditions set forth. Deuteronomy 28 and all of the Mosaic administration are the conditions that must be met in order for the “offeree” to maintain the promises of the “offerer”. The covenant states that either blessing or cursing would be dependent on the performance of the “offeree”, Israel.

This we call the LAW covenant of Israel.

The GRACE covenant is similar, in that the “offerer” promises to perform or act (in this context the promises made to the offeree, elect Jacob). However, the stipulations set forth that the “offeree” is required to meet in obtaining the promises, are met and performed by the “Offerer”. Not the “offeree”.

The “offeree” receives all the blessings and promises of the covenant the same as if the “offeree” had met them on his own behalf.

The elect were eternally ordained to be under the Grace covenant. All reprobate mankind, including National Israel were ordained to be under a Law Covenant.
Did God hold up His end of the agreement pertaining to the Land?

Jos 21:43-45 “43 So the LORD gave Israel all the land he had sworn to give their ancestors, and they took possession of it and settled there. 44 The LORD gave them rest on every side, just as he had sworn to their ancestors. Not one of their enemies withstood them; the LORD gave all their enemies into their hands. 45 Not one of all the LORD’s good promises to Israel failed; every one was fulfilled.”

God gave the land.  
They possessed the land.  
They lived in the land.  
All came to pass that was promised.

Jos. 23:14 “Now I am about to go the way of all the earth. You know with all your heart and soul that not one of all the good promises the LORD your God gave you has failed. Every promise has been fulfilled; not one has failed.”

Cities of refuge and all the land fulfilled (Nu. 35:9-15; De. 19:7-9; Jos. 20:7-9; Ne. 9:8; 23:25).

Ps: 105:43-45 “43 He brought out his people with rejoicing, his chosen ones with shouts of joy; 44 he gave them the lands of the nations, and they fell heir to what others had toiled for 45 that they might keep his precepts and observe his laws. Praise the LORD.”

For sure God fulfilled His part of the covenant. Below we will see that these blessings God gave them were to be lost for breech of covenant on their part.

Jos. 23:15-16 “15 Therefore it shall come to pass, that as all the good things have come upon you which the Lord your God promised you, so the Lord will bring upon you all harmful things, until He has destroyed you from this good land which the Lord your God has given you. 16 When you have transgressed the covenant of the Lord your God, which He commanded you, and have gone and served other gods, and bowed down to them, then the anger of the Lord will burn against you, and you shall perish quickly from the good land which He has given you” (ref. De. 4:25-27; 28:15-68; 30:1-10).

Now the question arises, was this physical and geographical land to be forever and everlasting?

Absolutely not.

Even if the pre-mils insist that it was an everlasting possession for the physical descendants of Jacob, after their 1,000-year millennium, would not this physical dimension cease according to their scheme? So even they must admit that it
cannot be an everlasting possession in the physical sense.

The physical land was only a type, a picture, of the real land of Canaan. A land flowing with milk and honey. The real and heavenly land is eternal and everlasting. So when the Scriptures talk about the land in an everlasting sense, it always refers to the Eternal. The type, which is temporal, must give way to the real, which is Eternal, once established.

In our next segment, we will discuss the realization of the Land of Canaan procured for us by our King Jesus Christ.

When any discussion of the “Land” arises, we must not think in terms of just a geographical piece of real estate.

The “land”, as described in the Old Testament, incorporates certain aspects and characteristics that are farther-reaching than just raw earth.

The land depicts redemptive principles. Let’s explore just a few of these principles.

Ge. 13:15-16 “15 for all the land which thou seest, to thee will I give it, and to thy seed for ever. 16 And I will make thy seed as the dust of the earth: So that if a man can number the dust of the earth, then may thy seed also be numbered.”

We have previously established who that “seed” is: Jesus Christ. Not National Israel.

So when speaking about an everlasting covenant regarding the land, we must not forget that the everlasting aspect needs to be interpreted in light of the New Testament. Jesus Christ was the promised seed (descendant). Anything “everlasting” must be associated with Him.

The Land Produces Milk and Honey

As mentioned earlier, the writers of the Scripture used metaphoric language to communicate concepts. “Milk” and “honey” are metaphors. Since milk and honey are foods, how does the land resemble food?

Eze. 36:11 “And I will multiply upon you man and beast; and they shall increase and bring fruit: and I will settle you after your old estates, and will do better unto you than at your beginnings: and ye shall know that I am the Lord.”

During their return from exile, the Israelites were given this prophecy from Ezekiel, where God said their future existence would be better than their beginnings. Is Modern day Zionist Israel better off than their beginnings? NO!
Were they better off when Jesus was present among them? NO!

Were they better in 70 AD? NO!

But are elect Jews and Gentiles better off? Absolutely Yes!

Because, “For all the promises of God (including land) in him are yea, and in him Amen, unto the glory of God by us” (2 Co. 1:20).

“O taste and see that the Lord is good: Blessed is the man that trusteth in him” (Ps. 34:8).

Jn. 6:53-58 “53 Then Jesus said unto them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Except ye eat the flesh of the Son of man, and drink his blood, ye have no life in you. 54 Whoso eateth my flesh, and drinketh my blood, hath eternal life; and I will raise him up at the last day. 55 For my flesh is meat indeed, and my blood is drink indeed. 56 He that eateth my flesh, and drinketh my blood, dwelleth in me, and I in him. 57 As the living Father hath sent me, and I live by the Father: so he that eateth me, even he shall live by me. 58 This is that bread which came down from heaven: not as your fathers did eat manna, and are dead: he that eateth of this bread shall live for ever.”

This true land produces food for “Eternal Life”. Christ is our food! Christ is our life giving Manna.

Christ is the flesh and blood that nourishes us through regeneration and faith alone.

Is. 28:9-10 “9 Whom shall he teach knowledge? And whom shall he make to understand doctrine? Them that are weaned from the milk, And drawn from the breasts. 10 For precept must be upon precept, precept upon precept; Line upon line, line upon line; Here a little, and there a little:”

Milk refers to the elementary truths of God’s word.

1 Co. 3:2 “I gave you milk, not solid food, for you were not yet ready for it. Indeed, you are still not ready.”

He. 5:12-13 “12 In fact, though by this time you ought to be teachers, you need someone to teach you the elementary truths of God’s word all over again. You need milk, not solid food! 13 Anyone who lives on milk, being still an infant, is not acquainted with the teaching about righteousness.” (Ref. 1 Pe. 2:2).

Ps. 119:103 “How sweet are thy words unto my taste! Yea, sweeter than honey to my mouth!”
The Word of God is depicted as honey (ref Pr. 16:24).

The Land Produces Grain and New Wine

Ne. 10:39 “The people of Israel, including the Levites, are to bring their contributions of grain, new wine and oil to the storerooms where the articles for the sanctuary are kept and where the ministering priests, the gatekeepers and the singers stay. ‘We will not neglect the house of our God.’”

Ne. 13:12 “All Judah brought the tithes of grain, new wine and oil into the storerooms.”

Lu. 5:37-38 “37 And no one pours new wine into old wineskins. If he does, the new wine will burst the skins, the wine will run out and the wineskins will be ruined. 38 No, new wine must be poured into new wineskins.”

Mk.14:23-24 “23 And having taken the chalice (wine), giving thanks, he gave it to them. And they all drank of it. 24 And he said to them: This is my blood of the new testament, which shall be shed for many.”

Jesus is our new wine. The wine of Grace cannot be poured into the old wineskins of Law.

Mt. 26:26 “While they were eating, Jesus took bread, gave thanks and broke it, and gave it to his disciples, saying, ‘Take and eat; this is my body.’”

Jn. 6:31-35 “31 Our fathers did eat manna in the desert, as it is written: He gave them bread from heaven to eat. 32 Then Jesus said to them: Amen, amen I say to you; Moses gave you not bread from heaven, but my Father giveth you the true bread from heaven. 33 For the bread of God is that which cometh down from heaven, and giveth life to the world. 34 They said therefore unto him: Lord, give us always this bread. 35 And Jesus said to them: I am the bread of life: he that cometh to me shall not hunger: and he that believeth in me shall never thirst.”

Jesus is the grain/bread.

The Land Produces Rest

Is. 28:12 “To whom he said, This is the rest wherewith ye may cause the weary to rest; And this is the refreshing: yet they would not hear.”

In context, this is referring to understanding the Word of God.

He. 4:8 “For if Joshua had given them rest, God would not have spoken later
Although the Israelites possessed all the land God promised to Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob after their forty year wandering in the desert, the writer of Hebrews states that their temporal rest was not the true rest. The “another day” is Christ.

Mt. 11:28-29 “28 Come to me, all you who are weary and burdened, and I will give you rest. 29 Take my yoke upon you and learn from me, for I am gentle and humble in heart, and you will find rest for your souls.”

He. 4:3 “Now we who have believed enter that rest, just as God has said, ‘So I declared on oath in my anger, “They shall never enter my rest.”’ And yet his work has been finished since the creation of the world.”

The true meaning of the land of Canaan that was promised to Abraham and His seed is a land that represents the revelations of God intended for the saints. Possessing the Promised Land requires faith. Not wars in the Middle East, Ethnic cleansing, and the rest of the wickedness the Jewish state of Israel has caused today.

He. 11:16 “But now they desire a better, that is to say, a heavenly country. Therefore God is not ashamed to be called their God; for he hath prepared for them a city.”

The elect believers in the Old Covenant were not seeking a permanent land here on earth. They were looking for a heavenly city, which is above.

Jn. 18:36 “Jesus answered: My kingdom is not of this world. If my kingdom were of this world, my servants would certainly strive that I should not be delivered to the Jews: but now my kingdom is not from hence.”

Jesus declared that his kingdom was not of this world. This would also include the physical land over in the Middle East, including modern day Israel. The New Testament fulfillment regarding the promise to Abraham and his seed now includes the whole world.

The Land and the Kingdom are universal in Christ, in the realm of the Holy Spirit.

Do not be duped by those who try to teach that there are two distinct peoples of God on Earth, namely “National Israel” and the “Mystery Church”. There has always been one people of God: the elect from all ages.

He. 12:22-23 “22 But you are come to mount Sion, and to the city of the living God, the heavenly Jerusalem, and to the company of many thousands of angels, 23 And to the church of the firstborn, who are written in the heavens, and to God the judge of all, and to the spirits of the just made perfect,”
Returning to Jacob’s life, Jacob was told by his father and mother to go to Paddan Aram.

Ge. 28:10-19 “10 Jacob left Beersheba and set out for Harran. 11 When he reached a certain place, he stopped for the night because the sun had set. Taking one of the stones there, he put it under his head and lay down to sleep. 12 He had a dream in which he saw a stairway resting on the earth, with its top reaching to heaven, and the angels of God were ascending and descending on it. 13 There above it stood the LORD, and he said: ‘I am the LORD, the God of your father Abraham and the God of Isaac. I will give you and your descendants the land on which you are lying. 14 Your descendants will be like the dust of the earth, and you will spread out to the west and to the east, to the north and to the south. All peoples on earth will be blessed through you and your offspring. 15 I am with you and will watch over you wherever you go, and I will bring you back to this land. I will not leave you until I have done what I have promised you.’ 16 When Jacob awoke from his sleep, he thought, ‘Surely the LORD is in this place, and I was not aware of it.’ 17 He was afraid and said, ‘How awesome is this place! This is none other than the house of God; this is the gate of heaven.’ 18 Early the next morning Jacob took the stone he had placed under his head and set it up as a pillar and poured oil on top of it. 19 He called that place Bethel, though the city used to be called Luz.”

This event in Jacob’s life is very significant. In his dream, Jacob saw a stairway that connected earth and heaven. Also the angels of God were ascending and descending from heaven to earth.

Most importantly, from the top of the staircase, stood the Lord and the Lord spoke with him. Jacob responded to this event by saying “This is none other than the house of God; this is the gate of heaven.”

The name Bethel, “Beyth-El”, means House of God. Also in this context the house of God was to represent a “gate”, a door so to speak, between earth and the spiritual realm. An access point where God and man can meet.

Let’s see how Jesus our Lord alluded to this event.

Jn. 1:45-47 “45 Philip findeth Nathanael, and saith unto him, We have found him, of whom Moses in the law, and the prophets, did write, Jesus of Nazareth, the son of Joseph. 46 And Nathanael said unto him, Can there any good thing come out of Nazareth? Philip saith unto him, Come and see. 47 Jesus saw Nathanael coming to him, and saith of him, Behold an Israelite indeed, in whom is no guile!”

Jn. 1:48-51 “48 Nathanael saith unto him, Whence knowest thou me? Jesus answered and said unto him, Before that Philip called thee, when thou wast
under the fig tree, I saw thee. 49 Nathanael answered and saith unto him, Rabbi, thou art the Son of God; thou art the King of Israel. 50 Jesus answered and said unto him, Because I said unto thee, I saw thee under the fig tree, believest thou? thou shalt see greater things than these. 51 And he saith unto him, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Hereafter ye shall see heaven open, and the angels of God ascending and descending upon the Son of man.”

Jesus alluded to Jacob's experience by stating to Nathaniel that He was this gate. Jesus is the door where God and man can meet together. The angels of God ascend and descend upon the Son of Man.

The true significance of the Promised Land was fulfilled in Jesus Christ. The Promised Land typified and pointed to a land (person) that can unite man with God.

Jesus said: “Truly, truly, I say to you, he who does not enter by the door into the fold of the sheep, but climbs up some other way, he is a thief and a robber. But he who enters by the door is a shepherd of the sheep” (Jn. 10:1-2).

“So Jesus said to them again, 'Truly, truly, I say to you, I am the door of the sheep. I am the door; if anyone enters through Me, he will be saved, and will go in and out and find pasture’ (Jn. 10:7; 9; cf. Ac. 14:27; Mt. 7:13-14; Lu.13:24-25).

The Old Testament landmark locations (altars, temple, pillars, stones, etc.), typified places where God met and spoke with His people.

The physical land of Israel no longer serves a purpose. Christ is our land, our door and gate to the Father. Jesus and His elect people in Him ascend and descend to the heavens (rf. Jn. 6:62; 20:17; 1 Th. 4:16).

We are seated with Him at the right hand of the Father. We are thoroughly united to Christ in every way. When Christ returns at the end of this age, those saints that have died bodily will descend with Him to meet and join us together with Him.

What is a Jew/Israelite in whom there is no guile?

When looking back to the individuals who comprised Old Testament Israel, the Scriptures show us that there were those who were faithful to God, as opposed to those who were unfaithful. The central theme in Scriptural revelation is Jesus Christ and the redemption of His elect people.

Those Israelites of old, who were truly awaiting the promised “One” foretold through the Scriptures, were considered faithful. These are the ones considered true Jews.
The elect faithful of old were characterized as people in whom *no guile* was found. Jesus knows the heart of His people.

Guile conveys the meaning of: deceit, subtlety, wily, crafty, alluring, enticing, entrapping, decoy. Jacob was a man with such characteristics until God changed him.

The Jews/Israelites in Christ’s day that truly followed and loved Jesus were considered to be *without guile*.

Jesus said to Nathaniel, “Behold an Israelite indeed, in whom is *no guile!*”

Both Philip and Nathaniel were hoping for the Messiah. “We have found him, of whom Moses in the law, and the prophets, did write,”

The Apostle Peter, exhorting believers to live Godly lives, uses Isaiah to show Christ as an example for them.

1 Pe. 2:22 “Who did no sin, *neither was guile* found in his mouth.”

Is. 53:9 “And they made his grave with the wicked, and with a rich man in his death; although he had done no violence, *neither was any deceit* in his mouth.”

Isaiah 53 beautifully foretells of Christ in this chapter.

Re. 14:5 “And in their mouth *was found no guile*, for they are *without fault* before the throne of God.”

John said the 144,000 virgins on Mount Zion are *without guile*.

The Apostle Paul characterizes the regenerated elect as those with a circumcised heart, as previously discussed.

So again, when referring to a specific people that have a specific redemptive prophetic future, we can only see this as meaning the Elect of God, both Jew and Gentile. The Scriptures indicate that these people are the “Ekklesia” of God.

**Jacob’s name changed to Israel**

Names have meaning. Why was Jacob’s name changed to Israel?

As mentioned earlier, Esau was wroth against his brother Jacob for stealing his birthright through fraudulent means. Jacob feared his brother. However, Jacob himself became the victim of fraud later in his life.

Jacob agreed to work for his Uncle Laban seven years to acquire Rachel,
Laban’s daughter, in matrimony.

When Jacob fulfilled his seven years, Laban deceived Jacob and gave him Leah (Ge. 29:18-25).

Laban also changed Jacob’s wages ten times. However, through Laban, God blessed Jacob with wealth and prosperity. Jacob served Laban twenty years. Fourteen years for Rachel and Leah, and six years for the cattle (Ge. 31:38-41).

Jacob, through this life experience, was being humbled by God to produce repentance in his life. Jacob now considered himself unworthy.

Ge. 32:9-12 “9 And Jacob said, O God of my father Abraham, and God of my father Isaac, the Lord which saidst unto me, Return unto thy country, and to thy kindred, and I will deal well with thee: 10 I am not worthy of the least of all the mercies, and of all the truth, which thou hast shewed unto thy servant; for with my staff I passed over this Jordan; and now I am become two bands. 11 Deliver me, I pray thee, from the hand of my brother, from the hand of Esau: for I fear him, lest he will come and smite me, and the mother with the children. 12 And thou saidst, I will surely do thee good, and make thy seed as the sand of the sea, which cannot be numbered for multitude.”

It is interesting to note that at this time Jacob, in his prayer to God, mentioned the promise God made to him. Jacob was holding God to his promise in seeking protection from his brother, Esau. Jacob had sent much of his wealth to Esau for Esau was determined to get revenge. Jacob desired to make peace with his brother.

Ge. 32:24-30 “24 And Jacob was left alone; and there wrestled a man with him until the breaking of the day. 25 And when he saw that he prevailed not against him, he touched the hollow of his thigh; and the hollow of Jacob’s thigh was out of joint, as he wrestled with him. 26 And he said, Let me go, for the day breaketh. And he said, I will not let thee go, except thou bless me. 27 And he said unto him, What is thy name? And he said, Jacob. 28 And he said, Thy name shall be called no more Jacob, but Israel: for as a prince hast thou power with God and with men, and hast prevailed. 29 And Jacob asked him, and said, Tell me, I pray thee, thy name. And he said, Wherefore is it that thou dost ask after my name? And he blessed him there. 30 And Jacob called the name of the place Peniel: for I have seen God face to face, and my life is preserved.”

What blessing was Jacob seeking? He had already accumulated wealth as a result of his service to Laban.

I suggest that his struggle represents a man who now understands and lays hold of the principle of faith alone. By faith Jacob now is clinging to the promises of
God made to him. This is the very essence of faith. Faith does not doubt or give up, but clings and lays hold of the promises of God.

As Jacob held on to his brother’s heel in the womb (a picture) to secure the birthright from Esau, Jacob now holds on to the “man”/“God” who I consider to be a theophany.

Faith does not let go of God. Faith prevails. By faith we the elect prevail over men and devils. And likewise by faith we prevail with God. Through Jesus Christ our sin no longer alienates us from God. We have direct access to “Abba” Father through Christ. As Christ through His death and resurrection prevailed with the Father, we too prevail in and with Christ.

Like Jacob who had seen God face to face and his life was spared, we too through Christ have seen God face to face. When we see Jesus, we see the Father and live!

The dislocating of the joint represents the idea that Jacob, his elect offspring, and we in Christ are not to depend on our human abilities and strength to achieve accomplishments in this life, but rather through faith alone we depend on the divine mercies of God to bring about His ordained purpose for our life.

Ge. 33:3-4 “3 And he passed over before them, and bowed himself to the ground seven times, until he came near to his brother. 4 And Esau ran to meet him, and embraced him, and fell on his neck, and kissed him: and they wept.”

Ge. 33:9-11 “9 And Esau said, I have enough, my brother; keep that thou hast unto thyself. 10 And Jacob said, Nay, I pray thee, if now I have found grace in thy sight, then receive my present at my hand: for therefore I have seen thy face, as though I had seen the face of God, and thou wast pleased with me. 11 Take, I pray thee, my blessing that is brought to thee; because God hath dealt graciously with me, and because I have enough. And he urged him, and he took it.”

God always answers prayers that are according to His will. He answered Jacob’s prayers. Esau was humbled by God to spare Jacob. Esau ran to meet Jacob, embraced his brother and they wept together.

Jacob, now seeing the providential hand of God, which worked in his brother Esau, equates Esau's forgiveness with God's Grace toward him. Seeing Esau's face was to Jacob seeing the face of God, in terms of God's providential hand in this matter.

Israel means: “Prince with God, and power with God.”

Toward the end of Jacob's life his own sons deceived him when Joseph was sold
into slavery. In his old age, Jacob described his life as characterized by evil (Ge. 47:9).

Jacob had come full circle. God’s Grace transformed him into a man of faith. He not only repented of the wickedness found in himself, but had seen the evil in his family and the world around him.

**Jesus Christ and His people are the true Israel of God.**

There is an “Israel according to the flesh”, and there is “the Israel of God”, which are born from above. The latter are new creations in Christ.

Ga. 6:15-16  “15 For neither is circumcision anything, nor uncircumcision, but a new creature. 16 And as many as shall walk by this rule, peace be upon them, and mercy, and upon the **Israel of God**.”

We the elect are a new creature. We the elect are the true Israel.

2 Co. 5:17  “Therefore if any man be in Christ, he is a new creature (Israel): old things are passed away; behold, all things are become new.”

Is. 49:3  “and he said unto me, Thou art my servant; Israel, in whom I will be glorified.”

We shall apply this to Jesus Christ the Messiah according to the true import of the name. Jesus the “Prince”, who has power with God, who wrestled on behalf of man, and who prevails for His elect. Also Christ, not national Israel, perfectly glorified the Father. Jesus Christ, not Jacob, is the ideal man who represents Israel.

The destruction in 70 AD was the elimination of the self-righteous system of Law to which the reprobate Jews had fallen prey. Christ’s death, burial and resurrection, as prophesied, firmly established Him as the King of kings and the Lord of Lords who RULES AS GOD! When we elect (Jew, Samaritan, and Gentile), are “born from above”, we become a member of Jesus’ body and thereby a member of the true Israel of God.

When looking back at the previous historical events as outlined in earlier segments, we see that these redemptive themes are oscillating.

The themes of Captivity and Restoration from Eden to Christ are irrefutable.

There is no other faith in this world other than the true Christian faith that records and displays a God who divinely and providentially arranges history in such a way as to manifest His divine sovereignty, presence, and authority.
Old Testament history is a history of redemption/salvation aimed at a specific people. This redemption reaches its zenith in the Redeemer and Savior, Jesus Christ. The whole of history was purposely arranged to point to Jesus Christ.

These historical events are types, shadows, and pictures of the true heavenly and spiritual reality to be found in Christ alone.

To say, as some do, that the prophets of old were foretelling only of a day when Israel would again regain their earthly monarchy, devoid and apart from the spiritual (Christ) element that was revealed and rejected by them, is patently false.

The prophets spoke of a day when the Messiah would come to save His people from their sin and bondage.

Mt. 1:21-23 “21 ‘She will give birth to a son, and you are to give him the name Jesus, because he will save his people from their sins.’ 22 All this took place to fulfill what the Lord had said through the prophet: 23 ‘The virgin will conceive and give birth to a son, and they will call him Immanuel’ which means ‘God with us’” (rf. Is. 7:14).

Matthew records Jesus as the fulfillment of Isaiah, but also sees this fulfillment as including salvation from sin.

The context of this passage in Isaiah deals with kings: King Ahaz of Judah and king Pekah of Israel. Rezin, the king of Syria, aligned with Pekah in attempting to overthrow Ahaz, thus enabling them to install a wicked king.

“Because Syria, Ephraim, and the son of Remaliah, have purposed evil against thee, saying, Let us go up against Judah, and vex it, and let us make a breach therein for us, and set up a king in the midst of it, even the son of Tabeel;” (Is. 7:5-6).

Due to the previous wickedness of Israel earlier in their history, the kingdom was split. Israel and Judah possessed their own kings.

The kings of Judah, from the line of David, for the most part were considered faithful to God, while the wicked kings of Israel were aligned and practiced the ways of the pagan heathens, a people that God forbade them to align with and practice in their ways. This division and civil war amongst the chosen people of God was not good, but necessary to fulfill all righteousness.

Then Isaiah said:

“7 thus saith the Lord Jehovah, It shall not stand, neither shall it come to pass. 8 For the head of Syria is Damascus, and the head of Damascus is Rezin;
and within threescore and five years shall Ephraim be broken in pieces, so that it shall not be a people: 9 and the head of Ephraim is Samaria, and the head of Samaria is Remaliah's son (Pekah). If ye will not believe, surely ye shall not be established. 10 And Jehovah spake again unto Ahaz, saying, 11 Ask thee a sign of Jehovah thy God; ask it either in the depth, or in the height above. 12 But Ahaz said, I will not ask, neither will I tempt Jehovah. 13 And he said, Hear ye now, O house of David: Is it a small thing for you to weary men, that ye will weary my God also? 14 Therefore the Lord himself will give you a sign: behold, a virgin shall conceive, and bear a son, and shall call his name Immanuel. 15 Butter and honey shall he eat, when he knoweth to refuse the evil, and choose the good. 16 For before the child shall know to refuse the evil, and choose the good, the land whose two kings thou abhorrest shall be forsaken.”

God said that Judah would not be overrun by wicked Israel. They shall not install a wicked king in Judah, for out of Judah was Christ the King to come.

However, Ahaz did not live long enough to see the completion of these prophecies. The sign was “Immanuel” Himself: God with us in Jesus Christ the true King of Israel, who was to come and restore to Israel a true Kingdom. A kingdom that was forsaken has now been restored in and through Jesus Christ.

God indeed fulfilled this promise to Ahaz.

When Christ entered Jerusalem, ALL of Israel was thoroughly corrupt. They totally forsook Moses, except for a small remnant of elect believers within Israel. In Christ, all the sins of elect Israel have been washed away. Israel has been cleansed of all her wickedness, rebellion, and civil wars.

Such restorative prophetic visions not only include the nation of Israel, but the land of Canaan, the city of Jerusalem, the throne of David, and the temple in Jerusalem.

Israel's Babylonian captivity was some five centuries before the coming of Jesus Christ. Their temple was destroyed, their priesthood was in bondage, and their land was overrun by pagans.

Prophetic expectations related to Israel's future spoke of an undoing of the calamity that had befallen them.

Jesus and the New Testament writers spoke in terms of fulfillment and restoration of these prophetic expectations.

1 Pe. 1:10-12 “10 Concerning this salvation, the prophets, who spoke of the grace that was to come to you, searched intently and with the greatest care, 11 trying to find out the time and circumstances to which the Spirit of Christ in
them was pointing when he predicted the sufferings of the Messiah and the glories that would follow. 12 It was revealed to them that they were not serving themselves but you, when they spoke of the things that have now been told you by those who have preached the gospel to you by the Holy Spirit sent from heaven. Even angels long to look into these things."

The Spirit of Christ was in the prophets to speak of things concerning salvation and restoration.

Peter says that these things are now told (fulfilled) to the believers.

Lu. 2:8-14 “8 And there were shepherds living out in the fields nearby, keeping watch over their flocks at night. 9 An angel of the Lord appeared to them, and the glory of the Lord shone around them, and they were terrified. 10 But the angel said to them, ‘Do not be afraid. I bring you good news that will cause great joy for all the people. 11 Today in the town of David a Savior has been born to you; he is the Messiah, the Lord. 12 This will be a sign to you: You will find a baby wrapped in cloths and lying in a manger.’ 13 Suddenly a great company of the heavenly host appeared with the angel, praising God and saying, 14 ‘Glory to God in the highest heaven, and on earth peace to those on whom his favor rests.’”

Luke sees in the birth of Christ a fulfillment of Is. 9:6:

“For unto us a child is born, unto us a son is given; and the government shall be upon his shoulder: and his name shall be called Wonderful, Counselor, Mighty God, Everlasting Father, Prince of Peace.”

Mi. 5:2 “But you, Bethlehem Ephrathah, though you are small among the clans of Judah, out of you will come for me one who will be ruler over Israel, whose origins are from of old, from ancient times.”

Micah says that Jesus will be a ruler over Israel. Jesus claimed to be a King. And He was: then, now and forever. How can some not see Jesus and His people as the restored prophetic true Israel? Haven’t they been blinded by God?

The Old Testament is a promise of restoration to be fulfilled in Christ.

Is. 41:8-9 “8 But thou, Israel, my servant, Jacob whom I have chosen, the seed of Abraham my friend, 9 thou whom I have taken hold of from the ends of the earth, and called from the corners thereof, and said unto thee, Thou art my servant, I have chosen thee and not cast thee away;”

Same promise again reiterated in Is. 42:1-7:

“1 Behold, my servant, whom I uphold; my chosen, in whom my soul
delighteth: I have put my Spirit upon him; he will bring forth justice to the Gentiles. 2 He will not cry, nor lift up his voice, nor cause it to be heard in the street. 3 A bruised reed will he not break, and a dimly burning wick will he not quench: he will bring forth justice in truth. 4 He will not fail nor be discouraged, till he have set justice in the earth; and the isles shall wait for his law. 5 Thus saith God Jehovah, he that created the heavens, and stretched them forth; he that spread abroad the earth and that which cometh out of it; he that giveth breath unto the people upon it, and spirit to them that walk therein: 6 I, Jehovah, have called thee in righteousness, and will hold thy hand, and will keep thee, and give thee for a covenant of the people, for a light of the Gentiles; 7 to open the blind eyes, to bring out the prisoners from the dungeon, and them that sit in darkness out of the prison-house” (cf. Is. 44:1-2; 45:4).

Now, is this servant of the Lord that Isaiah is referring to the Nation of Israel, or Jesus Christ the Messiah of Israel?

The Chiliasts insist that these passages refer to the Nation of Israel due to their blindness.

How do the New Testament writers interpret these messianic prophecies regarding the servant of the Lord?

Mt. 12:15-21 “15 But Jesus knowing it, retired from thence: and many followed him, and he healed them all.16 And he charged them that they should not make him known. 17 That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Isaias the prophet, saying: 18 Behold my servant whom I have chosen, my beloved in whom my soul hath been well pleased. I will put my spirit upon him, and he shall shew judgment to the Gentiles. 19 He shall not contend, nor cry out, neither shall any man hear his voice in the streets. 20 The bruised reed he shall not break: and smoking flax he shall not extinguish: till he send forth judgment unto victory. 21 And in his name the Gentiles shall hope.”

Matthew writes that Jesus is the fulfillment. Jesus is the servant!

And again:

Mt. 8:17 “That it might be fulfilled, which was spoken by the prophet Isaias, saying: He took our infirmities, and bore our diseases” (Ref. Is. 53:4).

Jesus cast out demons and healed the sick. He bore and healed our sin sick souls.

Lu. 1:54-55 “54 He hath received Israel his servant, being mindful of his mercy. 55 As he spoke to our fathers, to Abraham and to his seed forever.”

Israel is Jesus Christ. Mary spoke of Christ. Mary understood who the “seed”
Lu. 1:67-80 “67 And Zachary his father was filled with the Holy Ghost; and he prophesied, saying: 68 Blessed be the Lord God of Israel; because he hath visited and wrought the redemption of his people: 69 And hath raised up an horn of salvation to us, in the house of David his servant: 70 As he spoke by the mouth of his holy prophets, who are from the beginning: 71 Salvation from our enemies, and from the hand of all that hate us: 72 To perform mercy to our fathers, and to remember his holy testament, 73 The oath, which he swore to Abraham our father, that he would grant to us, 74 That being delivered from the hand of our enemies, we may serve him without fear, 75 In holiness and justice before him, all our days. 76 And thou, child, shalt be called the prophet of the Highest: for thou shalt go before the face of the Lord to prepare his ways: 77 To give knowledge of salvation to his people, unto the remission of their sins 78 Through the bowels of the mercy of our God, in which the Orient from on high hath visited us: 79 To enlighten them that sit in darkness, and in the shadow of death: to direct our feet into the way of peace. 80 And the child grew, and was strengthened in spirit; and was in the deserts until the day of his manifestation to Israel.”

Does our brother Zachary sound like a “chiliast” interpreting the Holy Prophets?

The elect Jews were awaiting the true salvation and restoration of Israel of which the prophets spoke: a spiritual restoration and reconciliation.

Ac. 8:34-35 “34 And the eunuch answering Philip, said: I beseech thee, of whom doth the prophet speak this? Of himself, or of some other man? 35 Then Philip, opening his mouth, and beginning at this scripture, preached unto him Jesus.”

Is. 53:7-8 “7 He was offered because it was his own will, and he opened not his mouth: he shall be led as a sheep to the slaughter, and shall be dumb as a lamb before his shearer, and he shall not open his mouth. 8 He was taken away from distress, and from judgment: who shall declare his generation? Because he is cut off out of the land of the living: for the wickedness of my people have I struck him.”

The New Testament Apostolic witness shows Jesus Christ as the fulfillment of Israel's hope.

Moses had said that God would raise up a prophet like himself (De. 18:15). In Acts 3:22 Peter tells his mainly Jewish audience that Jesus Christ is that ultimate prophet.

Ac. 3:23-24 “23 And it shall be, that every soul which will not hear that prophet (Jesus), shall be destroyed from among the people. 24 And all the prophets,
from Samuel and afterwards, who have spoken, have told of these days.”

Does our brother Peter sound like a Chiliast? “These days” were the days present to them, not days in some mythical and concocted 1,000-year period way off in the distant future, and not any 1,000-literal-year period in history to speak of. For sure the reprobates were destroyed for rejecting God's ultimate prophet, Jesus.

As stated earlier, Israel’s rejection of Christ did not postpone anything. God indeed fulfilled His promise of restoration in and through Jesus Christ.

The elect Israelites were eagerly awaiting this King and Savior Messiah (Lu. 3:15).

The Apostles and writers of the New Testament show Christ recapitulating historic patterns of the “Old”.

**Matthew presents a replay of Israel's Exodus from Egypt.**

Jesus is presented as Mary and God's firstborn. Jacob was a type only (Mt. 1:25; cf. Col. 1:15).

Jesus is brought up out of Egypt, like Israel under Moses.

Mt. 2:15 “where he stayed until the death of Herod. And so was fulfilled what the Lord had said through the prophet: ‘Out of Egypt I called my son.’”

Ho. 11:1 “When Israel was a child, I loved him, and out of Egypt I called my son.”

Matthew clearly refers to this Hosea 11:1 text as being fulfilled in Jesus Christ who is the true and real Jacob/Israel.

Matthew takes a passage from Hosea, which clearly refers to Israel. He does this to prove to his largely Jewish audience that Jesus Christ is the servant of the Lord, foretold throughout the Old Testament, especially in Isaiah.

Jesus passes through the waters/Baptism (Mt. 3:14-15).

Jesus is led into the wilderness and tested forty days and nights like Israel's testing in the desert for forty years. Jesus, resisting Satan three times, quotes from the Scriptures relevant to Israel under Moses (De. 8:3; Ps. 91:11-12; De. 6:16).

Jesus is presented as the true Israel who entered the Heavenly Canaan at His
ascension into Heaven with His delivered people. Through faith alone we possess the heavenly Zion/Jerusalem.

Jesus and His people are the real and true Israel of covenant history.

Jesus passed over the same ground as old Israel. Where old Israel murmured against God, broke His covenant, and failed miserably, Jesus Christ the true Israel trusted God and kept the covenant for His elect people. Jesus accomplished what old typical Israel should have done, and reversed the curses for His elect people.

Continuing with Jesus Christ as the fulfillment of Israel's prophetic hopes, the inspired writers of the New Testament show Jesus as the covenant keeper. Not only did our Lord restore the blessings of the Covenant, but He also took upon Himself the curses of the covenant on behalf of His elect people.

Israel's breech of the Covenant exposed them to the curses. These curses may seem extremely harsh, however “sin” is an affront to a covenantal God. Sin impugns the majesty of God. Sin minimizes the seriousness of an all Holy and Righteous God.

The prophets of God spoke against Israel in terms of these curses for treason, wickedness, rebellion, and disobedience.

De. 28:48 “therefore in hunger and thirst, in nakedness and dire poverty, you will serve the enemies the LORD sends against you. He will put an iron yoke on your neck until he has destroyed you.”

Is. 65:13 “Therefore this is what the Sovereign LORD says: ‘My servants will eat, but you will go hungry; my servants will drink, but you will go thirsty; my servants will rejoice, but you will be put to shame.’”

Is. 5:6 “I will make it a wasteland, neither pruned nor cultivated, and briers and thorns will grow there. I will command the clouds not to rain on it.”

Zep.1:15 “That day will be a day of wrath, a day of distress and anguish, a day of trouble and ruin, a day of darkness and gloom, a day of clouds and blackness.”

De. 28:31 “Your ox will be slaughtered before your eyes, but you will eat none of it. Your donkey will be forcibly taken from you and will not be returned. Your sheep will be given to your enemies, and no one will rescue them.”

Je. 19:8 “I will devastate this city and make it an object of horror and scorn; all who pass by will be appalled and will scoff because of all its wounds.”
Is. 13:10 “The stars of heaven and their constellations will not show their light. The rising sun will be darkened and the moon will not give its light.”

Am. 5:18-20 “18 Woe to you who long for the day of the LORD! Why do you long for the day of the LORD? **That day will be darkness, not light.** 19 It will be as though a man fled from a lion only to meet a bear, as though he entered his house and rested his hand on the wall only to have a snake bite him. 20 **Will not the day of the LORD be darkness, not light** pitch-dark, without a ray of brightness?”

Is. 13:13 “Therefore **I will make the heavens tremble; and the earth will shake from its place at the wrath of the LORD Almighty, in the day of his burning anger.**”

Ex. 12:15 “For seven days you are to eat bread made without yeast. On the first day remove the yeast from your houses, for whoever eats anything with yeast in it from the first day through the seventh **must be cut off from Israel**” (Rf. verse 19 also).

Ex. 31:14 “Observe the Sabbath, because it is holy to you. Anyone who desecrates it is to be put to death; those who do any work on that day **must be cut off from their people.**”

Le. 7:25 “Anyone who eats the fat of an animal from which a food offering may be presented to the LORD **must be cut off from their people.**”

Da. 9:26 “And after threescore and two weeks **shall Messiah be cut off, but not for himself:** and the people of the prince that shall come shall destroy the city and the sanctuary; and the end thereof shall be with a flood, and unto the end of the war desolations are determined.”

Je. 44:8 “Why arouse my anger with what your hands have made, burning incense to other gods in Egypt, where you have come to live? **You will destroy yourselves and make yourselves a curse and an object of reproach among all the nations on earth.**”

De. 21:23 ‘**you must not leave the body hanging on the pole overnight. Be sure to bury it that same day, because anyone who is hung on a pole is under God’s curse.** You must not desecrate the land the LORD your God is giving you as an inheritance.”

De. 28:23 “And **thy heaven that is over thy head shall be brass,** and the earth that is under thee shall be iron.”

Is. 10:3 “What will you do on the day of reckoning, when disaster comes from afar? To whom will you run for help? Where will you leave your riches?”
The above Scriptures denote the horrible consequences for rebellion and breech of God’s covenant.

**There is:**

- Hunger and thirst
- Desolation
- Poverty
- Scorn and ridicule of passers-by
- Darkness
- Earthquakes
- Being cut-off
- Death by hanging on a tree
- A brass heaven
- Abandonment and no help, when crying out for help

To save the “elect”, Jesus Christ must fulfill the stipulations of the Sinaitic Covenant. Christ must also take on Himself the curses.

**Jesus is the Israel who keeps the Covenant on behalf of His people.**

Jesus hungered and thirsted. He cried out on the cross “I thirst” (Mt. 4:2; 21:18; Jn. 19:28).

Jesus was poor and had nowhere to lay his head (Mt. 8:20).

Jesus was mocked, ridiculed, put to shame, and spat on (Mk. 15:19; 31).

Jesus was deserted by His friends when He was taken captive (Mt. 26:69-75).

Jesus Hung on a tree/cross as a cursed man (Ga. 3:13).

Jesus was cut-off (Is. 53:8).

> “By oppression and judgment he was taken away; and as for his generation, who among them considered that he was cut off out of the land of the living for the transgression of my people to whom the stroke was due?” (Is. 53:8).

Da. 9:26 “And after the sixty-two weeks **Messiah shall be cut off, but not for Himself;**”

As Jesus our Lord hung on the cross the heavens became as brass and the light no longer shined on Him.

Jesus cried out for help and received none (Mk. 15:34; crf. Ps. 22:1).

Mk. 15:34 “And at the ninth hour Jesus cried out with a loud voice, saying, ‘Eloi, Eloi, lama sabachthani?’ which is translated, ‘My God, My God, why have You forsaken Me?’”
Matthew records the cosmic scope of the curses.

Mt. 27:45 “Now from the sixth hour until the ninth hour there was darkness over all the land.”

Mt. 27:51 “Then, behold, the veil of the temple was torn in two from top to bottom; and the earth quaked, and the rocks were split,”

Jesus was abandoned and made desolate by the Father to vindicate his elect people, and to impute the righteousness of the Law to his people. We stand Justified before our Covenant God.

This Jesus did to restore the blessings of the Covenant that was spoken of old by the prophets. For his “elect” people, and the elect only, Jesus was cursed.

His resurrection was our resurrection from spiritual death to spiritual life. Now we await our bodily resurrection at His coming to restore the whole of this earthly creation in righteousness.

True Israel was restored and is alive and well. Christ and His elect people are the true Jews/Israelites. The shadow of old National Israel is gone forever. The sign that points to the city is no longer needed. We have arrived in the city of King Jesus, to be forever and ever with Him. By faith we dwell in the city.

Amen.
Chapter 10
Jesus Is Our New Moses

In our previous segment the writers of the New Testament showed Jesus as the Covenant Keeper. Jesus is the Israel that was faithful to God.

The writers also show Jesus as the New Moses.

Ac. 3:17-23 “17 “Now, fellow Israelites, I know that you acted in ignorance, as did your leaders. 18 But this is how God fulfilled what he had foretold through all the prophets, saying that his Messiah would suffer. 19 Repent, then, and turn to God, so that your sins may be wiped out, that times of refreshing may come from the Lord, 20 and that he may send the Messiah, who has been appointed for you even Jesus. 21 Heaven must receive him until the time comes for God to restore everything, as he promised long ago through his holy prophets. 22 For Moses said, ‘The Lord your God will raise up for you a prophet like me from among your own people; you must listen to everything he tells you. 23 Anyone who does not listen to him will be completely cut off from their people’” (cf. Ac. 7:37).

Moses, in Deuteronomy 18:15, declared God would raise up a prophet like himself, and Jesus fulfilled those words. Peter, speaking to his fellow Israelites, said “you must listen to everything he tells you.” To Peter, there were no other options for National Israel. It was either listen to Him (Christ=Moses), or be cut-off. 70 AD was the final act by God against this wicked nation. The last vestige of identity was completely destroyed when their God forsaken Temple was destroyed, along with their wicked city (Sodom).

Just as many a Hebrew was destroyed by God in the wilderness under Moses for rebellion, rejecting the ultimate Moses, Jesus, sealed their doom forever.

Jesus, like Moses, was hid from the wrath of the King.

Ex. 4:19 “Now the LORD had said to Moses in Midian, ‘Go back to Egypt, for all those who wanted to kill you are dead.’”

Mt. 2:20 “and said, ‘Get up, take the child and his mother and go to the land of Israel, for those who were trying to take the child’s life are dead.’”

Jesus, like Moses, was rejected and about to be stoned.

Jn. 10:31-33 “31 Again his Jewish opponents picked up stones to stone him,
32 but Jesus said to them, 'I have shown you many good works from the Father. For which of these do you stone me?' 33 'We are not stoning you for any good work,' they replied, 'but for blasphemy, because you, a mere man, claim to be God'' (rf. Jn. 11:8; Ac. 7:27; Ex. 17:4; Nu. 14:10).

Jesus, like Moses, has a close communion with God. However, Jesus' communion is greater.

Jn. 1:17-18 “17 For the law was given through Moses; grace and truth came through Jesus Christ. 18 No one has ever seen God, but the one and only Son, who is himself God and is in closest relationship with the Father, has made him known” (cf. Ex. 33:20).

Jesus' Sermon on the Mount is reminiscent of Moses the Lawgiver on the mount (Mt. 5; cf. Ex. 19).

Jesus, like Moses, appointed seventy elders (Lu. 10:1; cf. Nu. 11:16).

Jesus, like Moses, fasted forty days before the start of His preaching (Mt. 4:2; cf. Ex. 34:28).

Jesus, like Moses on the mount when seeing God, His face shined as the sun (Mt. 17:2; cf. Ex. 34:29-35).

Jesus, like Moses, fed the multitudes in the desert (Jn. 6; cf. Ex. 16:15).

What is very important to notice is that after Jesus performed the miracle of the loaves and fishes He told them: “27 Labour not for the meat which perisheth, but for that which endureth unto life everlasting, which the Son of man will give you. For him hath God, the Father, sealed” (Jn. 6:27).

Then the people said: “28 They said therefore unto him: What shall we do, that we may work the works of God? 29 Jesus answered, and said to them: This is the work of God, that you believe in him whom he hath sent. 30 They said therefore to him: What sign therefore dost thou shew, that we may see, and may believe thee? What dost thou work? 31 Our fathers did eat manna in the desert, as it is written: He gave them bread from heaven to eat” (Jn. 6:28-31).

Can you imagine that? These people just had seen the miracle of the loaves and fishes. Now they are seeking a sign!???

“32 Then Jesus said to them: Amen, amen I say to you; Moses gave you not bread from heaven, but my Father giveth you the true bread from heaven. 33 For the bread of God is that which cometh down from heaven, and giveth life to the world. 34 They said therefore unto him: Lord, give us always this bread. 35 And Jesus said to them: I am the bread of life: he that cometh to me shall not
hunger: and he that believeth in me shall never thirst. 36 But I said unto you, that you also have seen me, and you believe not. 37 All that the Father giveth to me shall come to me; and him that cometh to me, I will not cast out. 38 Because I came down from heaven, not to do my own will, but the will of him that sent me. 39 Now this is the will of the Father who sent me: that of all that he hath given me, I should lose nothing; but should raise it up again in the last day. 40 And this is the will of my Father that sent me: that every one who seeth the Son, and believeth in him, may have life everlasting, and I will raise him up in the last day. 41 The Jews therefore murmured at him, because he had said: I am the living bread which came down from heaven” (Jn. 6:32-41).

The wicked reprobates in Moses day had seen many miracles from God. They murmured against Moses just like these wicked ones are murmuring against Christ. This correlation with Moses in the face of these people proves that the witnessing of miracles in and of themselves will not produce faith, period.

Today we have the Pentecostals and Charismatics. Wicked as they are, they too seek signs and wonders. They have no Gospel. Their whole focus is based on the “Expect a Miracle” mentality.

All of that mumbo-jumbo will not save them or produce faith. They are “free will” advocates and mainly “premillennialists”. Can you see how God gave them over to strong delusion?

Jesus, like Moses, gave the people water from the smitten rock.

Jn. 7:37-39 “37 Now on the last day, the great day of the feast, Jesus stood and cried, saying, If any man thirst, let him come unto me and drink. 38 He that believeth on me, as the scripture hath said, from within him shall flow rivers of living water. 39 But this spake he of the Spirit, which they that believed on him were to receive: for the Spirit was not yet given; because Jesus was not yet glorified” (cf. Ex. 17:6; Nu. 20:11; 1 Co. 10:4).

The great day of the feast was the “Feast of Tabernacles”. As mentioned in John 6, this feast was commemorative of their wilderness wanderings. Jesus wanted to make it clear that He is the water of Life.

Jesus is The Light of the World even during the days of Moses.

Jn. 8:12 “Again therefore Jesus spake unto them, saying, I am the light of the world: he that followeth me shall not walk in the darkness, but shall have the light of life.”

Jesus made this statement on the morning of the last day of the “Feast of Tabernacles”. Jewish days start in the evening and conclude the following evening.
Another feature of Israel's wandering in the desert was the pillar of “fire” which gave them light and guidance. As Moses led his people, Jesus gives us His light to guide us so we “shall not walk in darkness.”

Jesus is lifted up like the serpent was lifted up in the wilderness.

Jn. 3:14-15 “14 And as **Moses** lifted up the serpent in the wilderness, even **so must the Son of man be lifted up** 15 that whosoever believeth may in him have eternal life.”

Nu. 21:8-9 “8 And Jehovah said unto Moses, Make thee a fiery serpent, and set it upon a standard: **and it shall come to pass, that every one that is bitten, when he seeth it, shall live.** 9 And Moses made a serpent of brass, and set it upon the standard: and it came to pass, **that if a serpent had bitten any man, when he looked unto the serpent of brass, he lived.**”

Jesus, speaking with Nicodemus, told him that He must be lifted up. Nicodemus understood the import of Christ's statement, for he knew Moses' serpent would heal those in the wilderness who were bitten by serpents and looked upon it. Nicodemus knew exactly what Jesus was alluding to.

Jesus not only recapitulates Moses, but also far supersedes Moses. The writers of the New Testament use these historical events as their framework to present Jesus. Jesus, to them and to us who are among God's regenerate elect, is seen as the fulfillment.

They not only contrasted the types and antitypes, but also showed Christ as far superior to Moses.

Jn. 1:17 “For the law was given through **Moses; grace and truth came through Jesus Christ.**”

Jn. 5:39 “Ye search the scriptures, because ye think that in them ye have eternal life; and these are they which bear witness of me.”

Any view of Scripture that does not center on Jesus Christ as the fulfillment of Moses, Law, Prophets, and Psalms, is Anti-Christ. The religious leaders thought because they were the guardians of the Torah they possessed eternal life through adherence. However, they were blinded. The Scriptures pointed to the Messiah whom they rejected.

The reprobate Jews of Jesus’ day not only enshrined the “Torah that is written” (“Torah Shebichtav”), but also codified “Torah that is Oral” (“Torah Shebe'al Peh”). They are just like the Papists who hold to an oral tradition equal in authority to the Scriptures.
Evangelicals, Orthodox, and Reformed Protestants have evolved a similar mentality. Their creeds, confessions, dogmas, etc., have been taught in such a way by the clergy/minister that if one disagrees he is considered an outcast or heretic.

Our Moses-Jesus is the one who guides His people through the desert of this life and, through regeneration and faith, takes them to the Promised Land.

Our Moses-Jesus is the one who gives us Eternal water from the rock.

Our Moses-Jesus is the Light that guides us through the darkness of the wilderness.

Our Moses-Jesus lifted Himself willingly to the Cross/Pole that His people could be healed eternally from the snakebite of sin.

Our Moses-Jesus gave of Grace and Truth.

Our Moses-Jesus gave His elect the True Manna from heaven. Himself.

Our Moses-Jesus was rejected, and we His people will be rejected for the truth we bear.

Our Moses-Jesus is in complete communion with the Father, and we His elect have like communion through Jesus.

*Our Moses-Jesus had seen the Father face to face. We who see Jesus also see the Father.*
Jesus is Our New Temple

Jesus Christ is the fulfillment and embodiment of the Levitical priesthood. The Temple and Priesthood were ceremonial functions that pointed to Jesus Christ.

Since Levi came from Aaron, Jesus is the New Aaron. As Jesus superseded Moses, Jesus supersedes Aaron. Jesus is the priest after the better order of Melchizedek (He. 7).

Jesus' glory exceeds the glory of the former temple.

Hag. 2:9 “The latter glory of this house shall be greater than the former, saith Jehovah of hosts; and in this place will I give peace, saith Jehovah of hosts.”

Jn. 1:14 “And the Word became flesh, and dwelt among us (and we beheld his glory, glory as of the only begotten from the Father), full of grace and truth.”

Jesus is the Ultimate and True Restored Temple.

Jn. 2:19-21 “19 Jesus answered and said unto them, Destroy this temple, and in three days I will raise it up. 20 The Jews therefore said, Forty and six years was this temple in building, and wilt thou raise it up in three days? 21 But he spake of the temple of his body.”

Da. 8:14 “And he said unto me, Unto two thousand and three hundred days; then shall the sanctuary be cleansed.”

Zec. 6:13 “Even he shall build the temple of the LORD; and he shall bear the glory, and shall sit and rule upon his throne; and he shall be a priest upon his throne: and the counsel of peace shall be between them both.”

The imagery of the Temple is corollary to the imagery of the Tabernacle. The writers of the New Testament show Jesus and His people as this true Temple. God the Spirit indwells the Temple/Tabernacle. Therefore this true Temple/Tabernacle is eternal and can never be destroyed.

The elements that constructed the old temples and tabernacles (canvas, wood, bricks, mortar, etc.) are elements that are temporal. However, the elements that are used in construction of this eternal Temple/Tabernacle are elements fashioned by God Himself. Therefore they are Eternal and can never be
destroyed.

1 Co. 3:16 “Know ye not that ye are the temple of God, and that the Spirit of God dwelleth in you?” (rf. 1 Co. 6:19; Ep. 2:21).

Ac. 15:16 “After this I will return, and will build again the tabernacle of David, which is fallen down; and I will build again the ruins thereof, and I will set it up” (cf. Am. 9:11-12).

Is Amos’ prophecy fulfilled in Jesus Christ, or must this be fulfilled in some mythical future 1,000-year reestablishment of reprobate National Israel?

He. 8:2 “and who serves (Jesus Christ) in the sanctuary, the true tabernacle set up by the Lord, not by man.”

He. 8:5 “They serve at a sanctuary that is a copy and shadow of what is in heaven. This is why Moses was warned when he was about to build the tabernacle....”

He. 9:8 “The Holy Spirit was showing by this that the way into the Most Holy Place had not yet been disclosed as long as the first tabernacle was still standing.”

He. 9:11 “When Christ came as high priest of the good things that are already here, he went through the greater and more perfect tabernacle that is not man-made, that is to say, not a part of this creation.”

How much clearer and assertive language can these inspired writers employ to communicate the truth, than that the Temple/Tabernacle of “old” was only a shadow? That Jesus Christ and His people constitute the True Temple/Tabernacle.

It would have to be by God’s direct hardening and blinding of people (“chiliasts”, modern day Israel, Papists and those in unity with the Papists) to not see that what constituted ALL that pertained to Moses and National Israel was only a shadow. This shadow Israel was totally fulfilled in the person of Jesus Christ.

He. 2:17 “For this reason he (Jesus Christ) had to be made like his brothers in every way, in order that he might become a merciful and faithful high priest in service to God, and that he might make atonement for the sins of the people” (Rf. He. 4:14-15; 5:6, 10; 6:20).

He. 7:11 “If perfection could have been attained through the Levitical priesthood (for on the basis of it the law was given to the people), why was there still need for another priest (Jesus Christ) to come, one in the order of Melchizedek, not in the order of Aaron?”
He. 7:16 “one (Jesus Christ) who has become a priest not on the basis of a regulation as to his ancestry but on the basis of the power of an indestructible life” (Rf. He. 7:17, 21, 26; 8:1).

In short, Jesus Christ is the true and ultimate High Priest. Jesus Christ is the true and ultimate Temple.

Mt. 27:51 “At that moment the curtain of the temple was torn in two from top to bottom. The earth shook and the rocks split” (cf. Mk. 15:38; Lu. 23:45).

What a momentous event! The curtain that separated the outer portion of the Temple from the Holy of Holies typified the place where God's presence was made known. This curtain was torn from top to bottom signifying that through Jesus Christ our High Priest, we the Elect have access to the Father.

He. 6:19 “We have this hope as an anchor for the soul, firm and secure. It enters the inner sanctuary behind the curtain,”

He. 9:3 “Behind the second curtain was a room called the Most Holy Place.”

He. 10:20 “by a new and living way opened for us through the curtain, that is, his body,”

We the elect do not need a minister, a priest, a clergyman, men who are called “divines”, or anyone else to stand as an in-between or mediator for us. Through Jesus Christ and the Holy Spirit alone we have direct access to the Father.

In later segments we will discuss the great apostasy that started during the lives of our brothers the Apostles that will continue to the end of history when Christ returns for us.
An Amillennial Understanding of the Kingdom of God

Chapter 12
Jesus Christ the Fulfillment of Law and Prophets

Mt. 5:17-18 “17 Do not think that I have come to abolish the Law or the Prophets; I have not come to abolish them but to fulfill them. 18 For truly I tell you, until heaven and earth disappear, not the smallest letter, not the least stroke of a pen, will by any means disappear from the Law until everything is accomplished.”

When discussion arises pertaining to the Law and Prophets, the inspired writers of the New Testament show that both elements reach their goal and perfection in Jesus Christ.

Any form of re-establishment of these Old Testament types and shadows would be a direct negation of Jesus Christ’s accomplishments and thus be an attempt by Satan working through his false ministers to impugn Christ.

Ac. 13:32-33 “32 We tell you the good news: What God promised our ancestors 33 he has fulfilled for us, their children, by raising up Jesus. As it is written in the second Psalm: ‘You are my son; today I have become your father.’”

In Acts chapter 13 Paul preached Christ out of the Old Testament to the Jews and Gentile proselytes in the synagogue in Pisidian Antioch.

Starting with verse 16, Paul gives a brief summary of events experienced by Israel. In verses 32-33, Paul states that Jesus is the fulfillment of ALL Israel’s hopes and promises (cf. 2 Co. 1:20).

The question of hermeneutics is not whether it is “literalistically” or “spiritually”, rather, we are going to follow the lead of the Apostolic writers and interpret the Scriptures Christologically and by the Gospel.

It is not plausible enough to acknowledge that some promises were fulfilled in Christ and the rest are still awaiting a future fulfillment.

Either Jesus’ death and resurrection fulfilled every “jot and tittle” of God’s purpose for Israel, or He fulfilled none of it. If the latter is the case, then Jesus is not God’s Messiah of Israel. He then is not our Messiah either.

As stated previously, Jesus is the new Israel of God. He is the Israel predetermined and preordained by God to represent His elect people. Jesus is
the Israel that God raised from the dead and Glorified at His own right hand.

God fulfilled His promises to Israel way beyond what the types could perform. Far beyond what even the Saints of “old” could ever imagine.

In Christ's death “it was finished”. Christ fulfilled all of Israel's obligations to God. In Christ's resurrection the covenant was sealed.

Christ's glorification is the elect's glorification. Through the promise and blessing of the Holy Spirit, we the elect are sealed and incorporated into Him. We become the Israel of God. All that Christ was given is given to us through inheritance. By the Holy Spirit through faith alone we await the visible manifestation of these things when Christ shall appear (rf. Ga. 3:27-29; 6:16; Da. 7:13, 14, 27; Ro. 8:32; Ep. 1:3; Ga. 5:5; Col. 3:4).

What can we conclude from those who take Old Testament prophecies and skip over Christ and the apostolic witness to claim and require a “carnal” fulfillment in some nation now called Israel (who are not the Biblical Israel)?

These false prophets promulgate a virulent heresy. A heresy that is contrary to the whole Spirit of the Gospel Testament.

When speaking of the Law, the inspired writers do not compartmentalize the Law. The Law is both “moral” and “ceremonial”. In fact, all aspects of the LAW were fulfilled in Christ.

Ro. 10:4 “Christ is the culmination of the law so that there may be righteousness for everyone who believes” (cf. Ga. 3:19-24).

Moral Law

The Ten Commandments provide an outline for the Mosaic administration. Under Moses, these Ten Commandments were amplified by additional statutes that applied to the historical and cultural situation of Israel, which made them a “peculiar” people amongst the heathen.

The law kept them aware of sin. It also, through an elaborate legal code, was designed to prevent these people from reverting to Paganism. The goal, of course, pointed to Christ.

When the glorious Gospel broke forth, the elect covenant people came of age (Ga. 4:1-6).

The multitude of cultic laws of Old Israel is no longer needed. The Gospel transcends sectarian Judaism. The Gospel is universal.
New Testament ethics are no less demanding than the Old. Although Christ fulfilled the law, Christ will also meet the demands of the moral precepts. The new birth gives us a new heart: a heart desiring and willing to love and serve Christ. The precepts of Moses could not perform this regeneration/heart transplant.

In Christ’s Sermon on the Mount, Jesus radicalized the demands of Law. However, the good news to the believer is that the Holy Spirit clothed in the Gospel now administers these demands of Jesus. The righteous demands of the Law are now written on the heart. They are of the Spirit and not of the letter (2 Co. 3).

We the regenerate elect have been set free!

Today we have sectarian so-called Christian denominations and groups who resurrect all sorts of bondage. This bondage comes in various forms and under different church regulations. Hair length, skirt length, no make-up, some make-up, types of clothes to wear, mandatory church attendance, no alcohol consumption, no smoking, no musical instruments, only pipe organs allowed, women must cover their heads, etc., etc. These pious leaders strain at the gnat and swallow the camel. They invent a hybrid form of cultic Judaism.

Ceremonial Law

Like all other historical types previously discussed, the ceremonial and ritualistic laws have also found their fulfillment in Jesus Christ. These ritualistic laws prefigured Christ and how He would become Israel's righteousness and take away their sin.

The tabernacle as previously examined was a type of Christ. No part of the Law, whether Sabbaths, circumcision, feast days, tithing, etc., could pass away till all was fulfilled in and through the Christ Event.

Since the priesthood laws have been fulfilled, all that pertained to this priesthood also has been fulfilled in Christ.

The Passover ceremony, Feast of Tabernacles, Jubilee celebration, red heifer offerings, peace offerings, sin offerings, Day of Atonement sacrifices, and all the other functions of the priesthood with its High Priest have been fulfilled in Jesus Christ.

The main focus written by the inspired writers in the Gospels was to show that the Exodus Passover was fulfilled in the death and resurrection of our Lord Jesus Christ.

Leviticus 16 (please read) gives us the details of the high priestly function on the
Day of Atonement.

As Aaron was to be clothed with “linen” garments, so too was our High Priest Jesus to be clothed in “linen” (Mt. 27:59; Mk. 15:46; Lu. 23:53; Jn. 19:41).

On Calvary Jesus Christ is the high priest, the mercy seat, and the sacrifice all in one. The darkness on Calvary from the sixth to the ninth hour was absence from light. Like Aaron, Jesus was making the atonement hidden beyond the sight of men. There are many other similarities that can be applied to Jesus from Leviticus 16.

On the morning of the resurrection, John and Peter ran to the empty tomb only to find the “linen” garments laid aside. Our High Priest finished the Atonement sacrifice once and for all (Jn. 20:5-8).

These allusions to Leviticus 16 in the synoptic Gospels are made into a clearer doctrine in the letter to the Hebrews. The High Priestly function is fulfilled in Jesus Christ.

These types and features of Leviticus 16 are recapitulated in Jesus Christ (rf. He. 1:3; 2:17; 9:12; 9:26).

The word “atonement” in the NIV is “hilasterion”. It is the same word utilized in Hebrews 9:5, Romans 3:25, 1 John 2:2, and 1 John 4:20.

The New Testament Kerygma teaches us that the cross on Calvary fulfilled the High Priestly role and the sprinkling of blood on the Mercy seat on the Day of Atonement.

Daniel’s prophecy of Christ uses key expressions from Leviticus 16 and applies their fulfillment to the Christ Event (Da. 9:24).

Tithing, a function of law to support the Levitical Priesthood is now done away with. Giving is now the answer of a renewed conscience.

Sabbath observance was a function of Law. Now we who rest in Christ's finished work have entered that eternal Sabbath day of rest (He. 4).

Ceremonial Feast and Holy Days are fulfilled in Christ (Ga. 4:8-11).

Summary

All of the Law and Prophets find their fulfillment in the death and resurrection of Jesus Christ.

All of the demands of the moral law, with all the types of the ceremonial law,
have been fulfilled in the death and resurrection of Jesus Christ.

Calvary is the zenith, the pinnacle of history, where all the Old Testament promises of restoration have been accomplished.

The historical Christ Event was God's answer to His promises made through the "Old" inspired writers. Promises made to the elect of God.

Jesus is our great Passover.
Jesus is our Day of Atonement.
Jesus is our Mercy Seat.
Jesus is our Year of Jubilee.
Jesus is our New Creation.
Jesus is our True Adam.
Jesus is the “seed” of Abraham.
Jesus is the Real and True Israel.
Jesus is our Deliverer Moses.
Jesus is our ARK, which saves us from the wrath of God.
Jesus is our Exodus from sin and death.
Jesus is the Temple/Tabernacle that was restored from desolation.
Jesus is our Manna from Heaven.
Jesus is our Promised Land.
Jesus is our Covenant Keeper.
Jesus is our King of Israel.
Jesus is our spotless Lamb.
Jesus/Holy Spirit is our life giving Water.
Jesus is our High Priest.
Jesus is our Sabbath Rest.

All of the Scriptures were inspired and written for the sake of Jesus Christ. God planned one great saving act from eternity (Ro. 16:25).

Calvary was preeminent in the mind of God. Calvary existed in the mind of God before the Creation, the Flood, the Exodus, and the giving of the Law.

Before God acted, there was Christ our Eternal Mediator. He was the Lamb slain from the foundation of the world (Jn. 1:1-4; Re. 13:8).

Jesus is before all things, and in Jesus all things are held together (Col. 1:17).

Calvary was predestined (Ac. 2:23; Ep. 3:11). All of history, including SIN, was purposed to reveal Christ. Christ was not a reaction to the sin in Eden. The sin in Eden was a reaction to Christ. Christ is the eternal Preeminent One, not man or Eden.

Christ's work endures forever.
Ec. 3:14 “I know that everything God does will endure forever; nothing can be added to it and nothing taken from it. God does it so that people will fear him.”

Calvary is the event of all events: the “Old” points to Calvary, the “New” looks back to Calvary.

Christ's death gives meaning to the framework of the “Old”.

*For in him all things were created: things in heaven and on earth, visible and invisible, whether thrones or powers or rulers or authorities; all things have been created through him and for him. He is before all things, and in him all things hold together (Col. 1:16-17).*

This concludes this portion under the heading of Organic Unity of the Old and New Testament.

After all that was written to this point, can some truly say that Jesus Christ and his elect “ekklesia” were an interruption of God's prophetic plan for Israel?

In our next segment, we will discuss the Kingdom of God.
Chapter 13
The Kingdom Of God – Heaven And The Millennium

In our previous segments we have seen how Jesus Christ, the Apostles, and the New Testament writers interpreted Scriptures. They spoke in terms of fulfillment. That which pertained to Israel's restoration was fulfilled in Jesus Christ.

Continuing to maintain a sharp distinction or antithesis between National Israel and the Ekklesia is groundless. The Premillennial concept of “parenthesis” is the inevitable result of insisting that Israel always means National Israel. Premillennialists believe that Old Testament prophecies must be fulfilled literally to National Israel, and the Ekklesia/Church is a mystery first revealed to the Apostle Paul. The Church thus becomes an interruption to the reestablishment of the historical Throne/Kingdom of David. When the Mystery Church is removed from the earth, only then can God continue in the reestablishment of the Davidic throne.

This line of reasoning is one of the distinguishing characteristics of dispensational, Pre-mill eschatology.

As shown previously, Christ and His Ekklesia are the fulfillment of Old Testament prophecies. This then renders Premillennialism bankrupt. Their whole schema of Eschatology collapses. The Church/Ekklesia can no longer be considered a parenthetical group of people but are the true Israel of God. A true Israel that must endure on this earth in the face of oppression, hatred, and apostasy till the day that Jesus Christ returns.

Since this study deals with A-millennialism, we should take a closer look at the word millennium itself.

The word millennium does not appear anywhere in the Scriptures. However this would not be a valid argument to employ. The word Trinity does not appear in the Scriptures either, but the Trinity is derived from Scriptural assertions that correlate and show the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit as being God. The literal 1,000-year millennium however, cannot be derived from Scriptural assertions or inferences, for they are not there.

The Greek New Testament word for “thousand” is chilia.

The millennium according to Chiliasts is to be found in Revelation 20. Nevertheless, the importance of this passage of Scripture is not the length of years, but rather other features and characteristics of this period of time.
In a letter so full of symbolism and metaphors, the 1,000-year period stated cannot be taken literally.

**Some key features of this period are:**

The reign of Christ with His Saints (cf. Ps. 110:2; 1 Co. 15:25).

The binding of Satan to deceive the Gentiles no more.

The first resurrection.

The loosing of Satan at the end of the 1,000 years.

The destruction of Satan, the beast, and the false prophet.

The ultimate and final Judgment.

The sentence carried out to those who were not found in the Book of Life.

**The Gospel of Jesus Christ determines how one views this passage.**

The Amillennial view holds that the Gospel Age, the age between the First and Second Advent of Christ, is the view of this passage. An age where Christ governs His spiritual kingdom of elect believers. We reign with Christ through His victory over Satan and sin on Calvary. He is sitting at the right hand of God with all power and authority by His resurrection and ascension into heaven (1 Jn. 5:4-5). The Ekklesia (the elect only) today in Christ's Kingdom are in the Millennium. The age of the Church/Ekklesia is the Millennium. The millennium is not a future physical kingdom under the rule of Jesus on earth in temporal Jerusalem, as Chiliasts contend.

Jesus Christ rules and reigns from the Jerusalem that is from above (Ga. 4:26). From the heavenly "Mount Zion". "But ye are come unto mount Zion, and unto the city of the living God, the heavenly Jerusalem, and to innumerable hosts of angels" (He. 12:22).

From this real and true Jerusalem Christ sits as Zechariah's priest upon the throne (Zec. 6:12-13).

Christ is David's Melchizedek (Ps. 110:1-3). As our King and High Priest, Jesus ministers in the heavenly sanctuary, the true tabernacle that the Lord pitched, and not man (He. 8:1-2).

The Chiliasts contend that this period is still future. A period that is established after Christ returns for His Church. A period of restoring the Davidic Kingdom to
National Israel.

How can we define “Kingdom”? 

The concept of Kingdom must be expressed as understood by the ancient Hebraic/Jews.

Malkuth #4438 is a term that denotes “kingship”, “kingly rule”, “reign”, “empire”, “sovereignty”, and “dominion”.

It is God's eschatological rule. It is the government of God. It is the Kingdom of “Light”.

Primarily, it is a “spiritual” kingdom.

Jn. 18:36 “Jesus said, ‘My kingdom is not of this world (material realm). If it were, my servants would fight to prevent my arrest by the Jewish leaders. But now my kingdom is from another place.’”

This does not mean the kingdom cannot exist among His elect people who are still present on this earth, but rather that the Davidic/Jesus Kingdom co-exists among men. It co-exists with this physical world (Lu. 17:21). This kingdom is not bordered by time and geographical limitations and bears characteristics of the eternal state.

1 Co. 15:50 “I declare to you, brothers and sisters, that flesh and blood cannot inherit the kingdom of God, nor does the perishable inherit the imperishable.”

Paul's above statement does not mean we the elect, while in our fleshly perishable bodies, cannot partake in this kingdom through regeneration and faith alone, but rather that the perishable cannot inherit the imperishable.

Let's look briefly into full Preterism.

The context of this verse applies to Paul's explanation of the nature of the resurrected body.

1 Co. 15:35-49: “35 But someone will ask, ‘How are the dead raised? With what kind of body will they come?’ 36 How foolish! What you sow does not come to life unless it dies. 37 When you sow, you do not plant the body that will be, but just a seed, perhaps of wheat or of something else. 38 But God gives it a body as he has determined, and to each kind of seed he gives its own body. 39 Not all flesh is the same: People have one kind of flesh, animals have another, birds another and fish another. 40 There are also heavenly bodies and there are earthly bodies; but the splendor of the heavenly bodies is one kind, and the splendor of the earthly bodies is another. 41 The sun has one kind of splendor,
the moon another and the stars another; and star differs from star in splendor. 42 So will it be with the resurrection of the dead. The body that is sown is perishable, it is raised imperishable; 43 it is sown in dishonor, it is raised in glory; it is sown in weakness, it is raised in power; 44 it is sown a natural body, it is raised a spiritual body. If there is a natural body, there is also a spiritual body. 45 So it is written: ‘The first man Adam became a living being’; the last Adam, a life-giving spirit. 46 The spiritual did not come first, but the natural, and after that the spiritual. 47 The first man was of the dust of the earth; the second man is of heaven. 48 As was the earthly man, so are those who are of the earth; and as is the heavenly man, so also are those who are of heaven. 49 And just as we have borne the image of the earthly man, so shall we bear the image of the heavenly man.”

Paul's above wording cannot be explained away by some who teach that the resurrected body is purely ethereal/spirit, as in Preterism. It is true that Christ, our last Adam, is a life giving spirit, however to conclude that this life giving spirit (Jesus) does not possess a spiritual body with substance is heresy.

Paul states that not all flesh is the same, and then goes on to describe heavenly bodies in contrast to earthly bodies. Nonetheless both are still considered bodies with substance. The spiritual body is a glorified body. This is the body that inherits and enters the eternal state at Christ's second coming.

Jesus Christ made absolutely sure that this would be understood correctly.

Lu. 24:39 “Look at my hands and my feet. It is I myself! Touch me and see; a ghost does not have flesh and bones, as you see I have.”

To maintain that Christ's parousia occurred in 70 AD nullifies the nature and essence of the resurrected and glorified body. This is as serious a heresy as denying Christ's divinity and Christ's work of Justification by an imputed righteousness.

Just like Hymenaeus and Philetus, this gangrene was spread during the great apostasy and continues to this very day (2 Ti. 2:17-18).

1 Co. 6:14 “By his power God raised the Lord from the dead, and he will raise us also.”

We the elect will inhabit the same glorified body as Jesus Christ. This has not taken place yet.

Ph. 3:20-21 “20 But our citizenship is in heaven. And we eagerly await a Savior from there, the Lord Jesus Christ, 21 who, by the power that enables him to bring everything under his control, will transform our lowly bodies (perishable) so that they will be like his glorious body (imperishable).”
The major problem with Preterism and Futurism, is that they cannot see the Scriptural distinctions of the already this age (inauguration), and the not yet age to come (consummation).

Preterism and Chiliast futurism are not viable eschatological options for the elect believer. We will discuss more on the resurrection as pertaining to the problem it poses to Chiliasts in upcoming segments.

Ro. 14:17 “For the kingdom of God is not a matter of eating and drinking, but of righteousness, peace and joy in the Holy Spirit,”

Paul is not saying we cannot eat or drink in this earthly realm, but teaches us that Christ's kingdom consists of more than such earthly needs. To see and enter this kingdom one must be regenerated (Jn. 3:3).

Indeed, we spiritually eat and drink with Christ in His Kingdom.

Mt. 26:26-29 “26 And as they were eating, Jesus took bread, and blessed, and brake it; and he gave to the disciples, and said, Take, eat; this is my body. 27 And he took a cup, and gave thanks, and gave to them, saying, Drink ye all of it; 28 for this is my blood of the covenant, which is poured out for many unto remission of sins. 29 But I say unto you, I shall not drink henceforth of this fruit of the vine, until that day when I drink it new with you in my Father’s kingdom.”

Lu. 22:14-16 “14 When the hour came, Jesus and his apostles reclined at the table. 15 And he said to them, ‘I have eagerly desired to eat this Passover with you before I suffer. 16 For I tell you, I will not eat it again until it finds fulfillment in the kingdom of God.’”

As previously discussed, Jesus Christ is the fulfillment of the Exodus Passover. Through faith alone we who believe on Christ are eating and drinking Him. This is the true communion spoken of in the Scriptures. We have fellowship with Christ in His Kingdom (Ac. 2:42).

As elect believers we, through regeneration (new birth), have already entered Christ's Kingdom of God. It is a spiritual Kingdom we enter within the framework of this physical and present earthly dimension that will also continue into eternity.

Heaven is God's Kingdom also. Saints who are beyond this life dwell in this Kingdom. They are triumphant. We saints on earth are considered militant. For we still war against Satan (Ep. 6:12).

There is no Scriptural warrant for making a distinction between the Kingdom of Heaven and the Kingdom of God. Matthew uses kingdom of heaven, whereas
other Gospel writers use kingdom of God. They are one and the same and both belong to God's eternal and spiritual domain.

The Kingdom is ours today (Lu. 22:29; He. 12:28; Ph. 3:20; 1 Pe. 2:9).

What is the greater reality: physical or Spiritual?

Jn. 20:29 “Jesus saith unto him, Thomas, because thou hast seen me, thou hast believed: blessed are they that have not seen, and yet have believed.”

The spiritual realities seen through the eyes of faith are more blessed than any physical dimension possible seen on this earth. As we see Christ through faith alone, we see His Kingdom through faith alone.

The most durable part of any elect human is his spirit, for it is everlasting and will be without end. Incorporeality does not negate actuality.

Spirituality far exceeds the bounds of the physical dimension. We cannot physically touch love, but love is the most significant aspect in the Elect's life. The love God has shown toward us, and the love we have toward Him. Likewise, the non-material realm of the Kingdom of God is by far greater than any earthly Kingdom that would be constrained and limited through a physical manifestation.

The King rules over His kingdom through the very hearts of His subjects by the power and authority of God via the Holy Spirit, not in some earthly political form of government.

When Jesus Christ was starting His public ministry the Baptist cried out, “And saying, ‘Repent ye: for the kingdom of heaven is at hand’” (Mt. 3:2).

Jesus said: “From that time Jesus began to preach, and to say, Repent: for the kingdom of heaven is at hand” (Mt. 4:17).

Mk. 1:14-15 “14 Now after that John was put in prison, Jesus came into Galilee, preaching the gospel of the kingdom of God, 15 And saying, The time is fulfilled, and the kingdom of God is at hand: repent ye, and believe the gospel.”

Repentance, the Gospel, the Kingdom, and the Millennium are inseparable. This is the good news of this spiritual Kingdom. The time is fulfilled. The restoration of typical Israel with all its types, figures, and shadows are wrapped up in the glorious person and work of Jesus Christ.

Lu. 1:33 “And he shall reign over the house of Jacob for ever; and of his kingdom there shall be no end.”
Jn. 18:36 “Jesus answered, **My kingdom is not of this world**: if my kingdom were of this world, then would my servants fight, that I should not be delivered to the Jews: but now is my kingdom not from hence.”

How glorious! Unlike political kingdoms of men, which God raises up and throws down, His Kingdom is without end. God's kingdom was not born from some earthly political or religious coup d'état, but rather was established from Heaven. God's soldiers are guardians and proclaimers of the Gospel of Grace.

Jesus preached this Gospel of the kingdom at nearly every turn in His ministry while on earth.

This message of the Kingdom was a matter of great urgency to Christ. He would not have stressed so urgent a message if this kingdom were to be postponed and assigned to some mythical future 1,000-year period. By preaching the Kingdom was at hand, Jesus was preaching salvation. They are one and the same. The Kingdom was glad tidings.

Today, as back then, apostate/reprobate Christians/Jews crave a physical kingdom/utopia, while the elect are currently enjoying their status as citizens of this universal and timeless empire; an empire that God provided.

As discussed previously, the very nature and essence of God's Kingdom was envisioned to be Spiritual.

This Kingdom, announced by the Baptist and Jesus, was to be prepared by repentance. “Repent ye” was the Kingdom's introduction. These words give us the true understanding of entrance into this Kingdom. It is an entrance and realization that can only be experienced through Divine regeneration/causality.

The elect Israelites were anticipating this true Spiritual Kingdom.

Jesus, giving His Sermon on the Mount, was teaching many other characteristics of this Kingdom. Childlikeness, forgiveness, humility, poverty, meekness and unselfishness were some of the virtues of this Kingdom. These are virtues that the depraved nature of elect man does not inherently possess. The “New Birth” must create these virtues in the heart; henceforth the “New Man” is birthed (2 Co. 5:17; Ep. 2:15; 4:24).

Jesus claimed to be a King, but refused the efforts of the reprobate Jews to make Him a king that would involve a conflict with the Roman rulers. That's why Jesus declared to Pilate that His Kingdom was not of this world. The reprobate Jewish misconception of the reestablishment of the Davidic Kingdom was their problem. Likewise, it is also the Chiliasm's problem.

This claiming of Kingship, and refusing of kingship by our Lord, should be ample
proof that the Kingdom Christ was referring to in the Scriptures was not a political and earthly Kingdom, but rather a Spiritual Kingdom.

The Gospel (good news) of Jesus Christ and the Davidic Kingdom of Jesus Christ/God are inseparable. Since the Gospel is universal, the Kingdom is then universal and cannot be confined to just a parcel of land in the Middle East, let alone a Kingdom that will not exist until some unknown future period of a numerical 1,000 years.

Our Lord’s announcement pertaining to the restoration and fulfillment of this Kingdom was presently being fulfilled in His own words.

Lu. 4:16-21 “16 He went to Nazareth, where he had been brought up, and on the Sabbath day he went into the synagogue, as was his custom. He stood up to read, 17 and the scroll of the prophet Isaiah was handed to him. Unrolling it, he found the place where it is written: 18 ‘The Spirit of the Lord is on me, because he has anointed me to proclaim good news to the poor. He has sent me to proclaim freedom for the prisoners and recovery of sight for the blind, to set the oppressed free, 19 to proclaim the year of the Lord’s favor.’ 20 Then he rolled up the scroll, gave it back to the attendant and sat down. The eyes of everyone in the synagogue were fastened on him. 21 He began by saying to them, ‘Today this scripture is fulfilled in your hearing.’”

The passage read by our Lord was taken from Isaiah 61. The context of Isaiah 61 deals primarily with the restoration of Israel. Before we look at Isaiah 61, let’s continue here in Luke.

Lu. 4:24-29 “24 ‘Truly I tell you,’ he continued, ‘no prophet is accepted in his hometown. 25 I assure you that there were many widows in Israel in Elijah’s time, when the sky was shut for three and a half years and there was a severe famine throughout the land. 26 Yet Elijah was not sent to any of them, but to a widow in Zarephath in the region of Sidon. 27 And there were many in Israel with leprosy in the time of Elisha the prophet, yet not one of them was cleansed only Naaman the Syrian.’ 28 All the people in the synagogue were furious when they heard this. 29 They got up, drove him out of the town, and took him to the brow of the hill on which the town was built, in order to throw him off the cliff. 30 But he walked right through the crowd and went on his way.”

Like the Prophets of Old, Jesus, the ultimate Prophet, was also to be rejected by the reprobate Jews. However, what is very interesting in this passage is that Jesus alluded to the time of Elijah the Prophet. Jesus uses this historical period to illustrate the Gospel age, when National Israel will be cut off from God’s healing and restoration, an age that will be a blessing to the Gentile nations.

The sky was shut for three and a half years (this period will be discussed more
closely in upcoming segments), and there was a severe famine in the land. During this period Elijah was not sent to help Israel, but rather to Sidon. Many in Israel were suffering with leprosy. When Jesus said to these wicked reprobate Jews, “not one of them was cleansed only Naaman the Syrian,” they became furious.

Jesus was paralleling His calling and mission to that of Elijah. Naaman was not a Jew, but received cleansing.

Jesus was sent to the lost sheep of the house of Israel. Not all National Israel. The sheep are the elect.

The Jews full well knew what Jesus was alluding to. Their nationalistic pride and arrogance blinded them to the universal aspect of the Davidic/Gospel Kingdom. They wanted to kill this Elijah/Jesus. They understood the inference pertaining to the famine in the land and the leprosy.

During that three and a half year period, God shut Israel off from any blessings and provided a blessing for a non-Jew.

Let us see again why the Jews hated Jesus’ reference to Isaiah 61.

Is. 61:1 “The Spirit of the Sovereign LORD is on me, because the LORD has anointed me to proclaim good news to the poor…”

Fulfilled through the Gospel (Mt. 5:3; Ac. 4:27).

“…He has sent me to bind up the brokenhearted, to proclaim freedom for the captives and release from darkness for the prisoners.”

Fulfilled through the Gospel (Jn. 8:32, 36; Ro. 6:18; 8:2; 1 Co. 7:22; Ga. 4:31; 5:1; Jn. 12:46; Mt. 4:16; Ac. 26:18; Ep. 5:8; Col. 1:13; 1 Th. 5:5; 1 Pe. 2:9).

Is. 61:2 “to proclaim the year of the LORD’s favor and the day of vengeance of our God, to comfort all who mourn.”

Fulfilled through the Gospel (Mt. 5:4; Lu. 1:25; 2:14; 2 Co. 6:2; Lu. 21:22; Ro. 12:19; He. 10:30).

Is. 61:3 “and provide for those who grieve in Zion to bestow on them a crown of beauty instead of ashes, the oil of joy instead of mourning, and a garment of praise instead of a spirit of despair. They will be called oaks of righteousness, a planting of the LORD for the display of his splendor.”

Fulfilled through the Gospel (2 Ti. 4:8; 1 Pe. 5:4; Re. 2:10; 3:11; Lu. 1:14; 2:10; Jn. 15:11; 16:24; 17:13; Ac. 13:52; Ro. 5:11; 14:17; Ga. 5:22; 1 Th. 1:6; 1 Pe. 135
Is. 61:4 “They will rebuild the ancient ruins and restore the places long devastated; they will renew the ruined cities that have been devastated for generations.”

Fulfilled through the Gospel (Ac. 15:14-17; Jn. 2:19; Ga. 4:26; He. 12:22; Re. 3:12; 21:2).

Is. 61:5 “Strangers will shepherd your flocks; foreigners will work your fields and vineyards.”

Fulfilled through the Gospel. The reality and incorporation of elect Gentiles into True Israel is sufficient grounds for this fulfillment. Gentiles were considered strangers and foreigners. But now, through the Gospel, those called to be teachers, pastors and leaders are shepherds to God's flock. The world has become the field and the vineyard (1 Pe. 1:1; Mt. 13:38).

Is. 61:6 “And you will be called priests of the LORD, you will be named ministers of our God. You will feed on the wealth of nations, and in their riches you will boast.”

Fulfilled through the Gospel. The phraseology of feeding on the wealth of the nations and boasting in their riches is metaphoric. The wealth and riches of the Gentiles refers to the elect Gentiles to be saved through the proclamation of the Gospel (Re. 1:6; Ac. 11:18; 2 Co. 9:2).

Is. 61:7 “Instead of your shame you will receive a double portion, and instead of disgrace you will rejoice in your inheritance. And so you will inherit a double portion in your land, and everlasting joy will be yours.”

Again this was fulfilled through the Gospel. The land aspect previously discussed is the land flowing with Salvation and Peace. Christ is our Land. Christ is our everlasting Joy. Christ is our Inheritance (1 Pe. 1:8).

Is. 61:8 “For I, the LORD, love justice; I hate robbery and wrongdoing. In my faithfulness I will reward my people and make an everlasting covenant with them.”

Fulfilled through the Gospel (He. 12:24). The Covenant of Grace finds its full expression and manifestation in and through Jesus Christ. There is no other Covenant to be awaited. This Covenant of the Kingdom is everlasting.

Is. 61:9 “Their descendants will be known among the nations and their offspring among the peoples. All who see them will acknowledge that they are a people
the LORD has blessed.”

Fulfilled through the Gospel. The nations refer to the elect Gentiles (Ga. 3:29; Mt. 12:18, 21; Lu. 2:32; Jn. 7:35; Ac. 9:15; 11:1, 18; 13:47; 14:27; 15:14, 17, 19; 18:6; 26:20, 23; Ro. 9:24; 15:9, 12; 1 Co. 12:13; Ga. 3:14; Ep. 3:6; Col. 1:27).

Is. 61:10 “I delight greatly in the LORD; my soul rejoices in my God. For he has clothed me with garments of salvation and arrayed me in a robe of his righteousness, as a bridegroom adorns his head like a priest, and as a bride adorns herself with her jewels.”

Fulfilled through the Gospel. We the elect are covered with Christ's robe of Righteousness (Lu. 15:22). Christ our High Priest is the bridegroom, and we His bride. We rejoice in Christ our Savior (Ro. 15:10; Ph. 4:4).

Is. 61:11 “For as the soil makes the sprout come up and a garden causes seeds to grow, so the Sovereign LORD will make righteousness and praise spring up before all nations.”

Fulfilled through the Gospel (Ro. 16:26).

Jesus, by quoting Isaiah 61, clearly inferred that He is the promised Messiah and King of the Jews; a King with the authority to redeem and deliver.

The Messianic passages of the “Old” Scriptures emphasize different aspects of the Messiah:

9. Conquering King and Deliverer.
10. Suffering Servant who would secure redemption for Israel.

Both of these aspects refer to Jesus Christ. The reprobate Jews did not want this suffering servant. During the days of Christ, the Jews were weary of their foreign oppressor (Rome). They had not experienced political freedom for centuries. After Babylonian rule, the Greeks, then Rome oppressed them. They longed for a Conquering King. However, their political and spiritual bondage was a result of SIN. They were under the curses of Deuteronomy 28. Their soul was barren and dry, and their spirit thirsted. Their rejection of Christ sealed their destruction forever.
Jesus, from the outset of His public ministry, opposed the idea that He had come to restore an earthly and National Kingdom.

After His resurrection, Jesus declared that His suffering was taught by Moses and the prophets. Jesus, not National Israel, is the suffering servant of the Scriptures.

Lu. 24:18-26 “18 One of them, named Cleopas, asked him, ‘Are you the only one visiting Jerusalem who does not know the things that have happened there in these days?’ 19 ‘What things?’ he asked. ‘About Jesus of Nazareth,’ they replied. ‘He was a prophet, powerful in word and deed before God and all the people. 20 The chief priests and our rulers handed him over to be sentenced to death, and they crucified him; 21 but we had hoped that he was the one who was going to redeem Israel. And what is more, it is the third day since all this took place. 22 In addition, some of our women amazed us. They went to the tomb early this morning 23 but didn’t find his body. They came and told us that they had seen a vision of angels, who said he was alive. 24 Then some of our companions went to the tomb and found it just as the women had said, but they did not see Jesus.’ 25 He said to them, ‘How foolish you are, and how slow to believe all that the prophets have spoken! 26 Did not the Messiah have to suffer these things and then enter his glory?’” (cf. Lu. 18:31).

Jesus, during His earthly ministry, stated many times that He was to suffer according to the Scriptures. Even after His resurrection some did not fully comprehend this truth. Cleopas and the others were such an example. However, Jesus said they were foolish and slow to believe. This He said to dispel any false notions of an earthly reestablishment of Davidic Israel.
The Baptist announced Jesus as “Lamb of God that taketh away the sin of the world” (Jn. 1:29-30). John alludes to Isaiah 53, which is couched in the language of the Passover and Altar of Sacrifice.

Jesus stated to Nicodemus “that He must be lifted up” as Moses’ serpent in the wilderness was lifted up (Jn. 3:14).

The necessity of the Cross was ever present in the mind of Jesus from the beginning of His ministry. Both Jesus and the Baptist declared this definitely and emphatically. The Cross, the restored Davidic Kingdom, and the Millennium are inseparable (Mt. 3:2; Mk. 1:15; Lu. 4:43).

A careful reading of the first four chapters of John's Gospel should eliminate any devilish notion that Jesus and the Baptist were announcing an earthly and distinctively Jewish Kingdom.

**Daniel's 70 Weeks: Da. 9:24-27**

The importance of this prophecy of the Seventy Weeks in Dispensational Premillennial teaching can hardly be exaggerated. It is one of the pillars of their entire eschatological system.

It is appealed to as proof that the entire Gospel age is a parenthesis in God's prophetic program discovered between verses 26 and 27.

All sorts of nonsense are derived from their false conclusions. They derive from these passages:

11. The secret rapture of the Saints.
12. A future seven-year tribulation period for Israel.
13. The Anti-Christ signs a peace treaty/covenant with the then restored nation of Israel.
14. In the middle of the 70th week, Anti-Christ commits the abomination of desolation.
15. National Israel experiences a cruel tribulation at the hands of the Anti-Christ.
16. Christ returns again (a third time), this time with all His Saints including those who were raptured (the second time).
17. Christ then sets up His literal numerical 1,000 year earthly Millennium.

This supposed gap occurs between the 69th and 70th week of the prophecy. They strongly admit that their understanding of this gap is the “key” to all chronological understanding of New Testament Prophecy. They also admit that this “key” unlocks the interpretive grid in understanding the Olivet Discourse, and the greater portions of the book of Revelation, which they consider to be a chronological order of events.
The problem with Chiliasts is that they interpret the “New Testament” by an overly literalistic view of the “Old Testament”. They read and interpret the “New” in light of the “Old”, instead of vice versa. This prevents them from seeing Daniel 9:24-27 as the great Messianic Prophecy it is. A prophecy fulfilled and inaugurated in the life and ministry of Jesus Christ.

If we dismiss and take away their interpretation of Daniel 9:24-27, then all of Dispensational Premillennialism collapses. Period!

Let's look at the text.

Da. 9:24-27:

24 *Seventy weeks* are determined upon thy people and upon thy holy city, to finish the transgression, and to make an end of sins, and to make reconciliation for iniquity, and to bring in everlasting righteousness, and to seal up the vision and prophecy, and to anoint the most Holy.

25 Know therefore and understand, that from the going forth of the commandment to restore and to build Jerusalem unto the Messiah the Prince shall be seven weeks, and threescore and two weeks: the street shall be built again, and the wall, even in troublous times.

26 And after threescore and two weeks shall Messiah be cut off, but not for himself: and the people of the prince that shall come shall destroy the city and the sanctuary; and the end thereof shall be with a flood, and unto the end of the war desolations are determined.

27 And he shall confirm the covenant with many for one week: and in the midst of the week he shall cause the sacrifice and the oblation to cease, and for the overspreading of abominations he shall make it desolate, even until the consummation, and that determined shall be poured upon the desolate.

First we must set the historical context of this passage. Israel was held captive for 70 years under the King of Babylon and the temple destroyed. Daniel prayed for the restoration of Jerusalem including the temple (Da. 9:1-19). Daniel alluded to Jeremiah's prophecy (Je. 25:11-14), which stated that Israel was to serve the King of Babylon for 70 years. Then Babylon would fall and become desolate.

In verses 20-27 of Daniel, the Angel Gabriel answered Daniel's prayer. The prophecy of Jeremiah was just about to expire, and the promise of restoration was about to be started.

Daniel's prayer anticipates God's faithfulness to His elect covenant people. “4 I prayed to the LORD my God and confessed: ‘Lord, the great and awesome
God, who keeps his covenant of love with those who love him and keep his commandments, vs.4.

Daniel invoked God's covenant mercies (cf. Jn. 15:10; 1 Jn. 2:3; 3:22; 5:2-3). The Apostle John also identifies the true elect Covenant people of God with almost identical wording as Daniel.

An interesting point is also revealed through Daniel's prayer: the usage of “YHWH”, which is the Hebrew covenant name of God, and “adonay” the characteristic of the dominant party of the covenant. This prayer is a covenant petition. Daniel also states how Israel repeatedly broke the terms of the covenant, and now is dependent on God's mercies. Henceforth, the concept of “covenant restoration” is the foundation of Daniel's prayer, also of Gabriel's answer to that prayer.

Another feature of this covenant petition, and God's answer, is seen again in Mosaic imagery. The meanings of the “sevens” are found in the sabbatical patterns listed in the book of Leviticus 25:1-4:

1 And the LORD spake unto Moses in mount Sinai, saying, 2 Speak unto the children of Israel, and say unto them, When ye come into the land which I give you, then shall the land keep a sabbath unto the LORD. 3 Six years thou shalt sow thy field, and six years thou shalt prune thy vineyard, and gather in the fruit thereof; 4 But in the seventh year shall be a sabbath of rest unto the land, a sabbath for the LORD: thou shalt neither sow thy field, nor prune thy vineyard.

Leviticus 25:8-12: Jubilee in the 50th year:

“8 And thou shalt number seven sabbaths of years unto thee, seven times seven years; and the space of the seven sabbaths of years shall be unto thee forty and nine years. 9 Then shalt thou cause the trumpet of the jubilee to sound on the tenth day of the seventh month, in the day of atonement shall ye make the trumpet sound throughout all your land. 10 And ye shall hallow the fiftieth year, and proclaim liberty throughout all the land unto all the inhabitants thereof: it shall be a jubilee unto you; and ye shall return every man unto his possession, and ye shall return every man unto his family. 11 A jubilee shall that fiftieth year be unto you: ye shall not sow, neither reap that which groweth of itself in it, nor gather the grapes in it of thy vine undressed. 12 For it is the jubilee; it shall be holy unto you: ye shall eat the increase thereof out of the field.”

The above Sabbatical patterns are the view of Gabriel's answer to Daniel's prayer.

Let's break down this 490-year period.
“And thou shalt number seven sabbaths of years unto thee, seven times seven years;”

Timetable of Prophecy:

Seven sevens = 49 years
Sixty-two sevens = 434 years
One seven = 7 years
Total
Seventy sevens = 490 years

Outline and Goal of the Prophecy:

7. To finish transgression.
8. To make an end to sin.
9. To make reconciliation for iniquity.
10. To bring in everlasting righteousness.
11. To seal up vision and prophecy.
12. To anoint the Most Holy.

Sub Outline of verses:

The Messiah’s earthly advent and its purpose (24)
The beginning point of the prophetical 70 weeks (25a)
The initial phase of the prophecy—the rebuilding of Jerusalem (25b)
The Messiah’s death (26a)
Jerusalem and the temple to be destroyed because of the Jewish rejection of the Messiah (26 b)
The Messiah’s covenant replaces the former covenant (27a)
The full end of the Jewish system (27b)

This covenantal context of Daniel reveals the primary purpose of Christ’s mission to Earth. First, the Messiah would deal with the problem of human sin. He would “finish transgression”, make an “end of sins”, and effect “reconciliation for iniquity”. This is the theme that is recorded throughout the New Testament (Mt. 1:21; 20:28; 26:28; 1 Co. 15:3; 2 Co. 5:21; Ga. 1:4; Ep. 1:7; Col. 1:20; 1 Pe. 2:24; Re. 1:5).

These are but a few of the passages that are written in the New Testament. The advent of Christ did not put an “end” to sin in the sense that wickedness was totally eradicated from the Earth (as it will be in the New Heaven and Earth at Christ’s second advent), rather, the work of the Savior provided an atonement that would effectively and permanently wash away for His elect the sin predicament. This is one of the themes of the book of Hebrews. Jesus’ death was a “once-for-all” event (He. 9:26). Jesus will never have to return to this earth
to repeat Calvary. The Prophet Isaiah in chapter 53 also uses similar language to show Christ's work of atoning for sin. Isaiah is frequently quoted by the New Testament authors in conjunction with Christ's first advent.

Since the thrust of Daniel 9:24 is similar to that of Isaiah 53, Daniel 9:24-27 is more in harmony with Christ's first advent rather than with His second coming as alleged by Chiliasm.

The usage of the phrase “everlasting righteousness” by Daniel should make it clear that this is a direct reference to the Gospel age. This is the elect's Justification (Ro. 3:21-26; 1:16-17).

“To seal up the vision and prophecy”, or literally, to “seal up vision and prophet”. (YLT) The use of the metaphor “to seal” is derived from the ancient custom of attaching a seal to a document to show that it was genuine (1 K. 21:8; Je. 32:10, 11; cf. Jo. 6:27; 1 Co. 9:2).

Christ “sealed” Old Testament prophecy by fulfilling what was written of Him, just as we who are regenerated by the Holy Spirit are “sealed”. It is a finished reality. An absolute guarantee!

“Anoint the most Holy”. This reference is to Jesus Christ. Gabriel announced to Mary: “The HOLY thing that shall be born of thee shall be called the Son of God” (Lu. 1:35).

Peter referred to him as “the HOLY ONE” (Ac. 3:14).

John referred to him as “the HOLY ONE” (1 Jo. 2:20).

Even demons had to recognize him as “The HOLY ONE of God” (Mk. 1:24).

David spoke concerning Christ: “neither wilt thou suffer thine HOLY ONE to see corruption” (Ac. 2:27).

In Revelation 3:7 he is called “HOLY” and the heavenly creatures rest not from saying: “HOLY, HOLY, HOLY” before this one “which was, and is, and is to come” (Re. 4:8).

In Daniel 9:25, we are given the first two segments: 7 weeks and 62 weeks.

The first 7 weeks (49 years) were allotted for the reconstruction of the temple. Although the temple was built in 46 years, it still was within the time frame of the first 7 (49 years) (Jn. 2:20).

“The street shall be built again, and the wall, even in troublous times.”
This rebuilding of the walls and the temple did not sit well with Israel's enemies. Israel's enemies attempted to stall this rebuilding and even started to tear it down. Read Ezra 4:7-23 and Nehemiah 1:3.

The second segment of 62 weeks (434 years) added to the first era of 49 years gives us 483 years (69 weeks) till Messiah the Prince.

There are many differences of opinion when calculating the starting point of this 490-year prophecy. This may be good discussion in the future, but for now I'll use 457 B.C. (Ezr. 7:6-7).

Starting from 457 B.C., and counting forward 483 years (49 plus 434), would bring us to 26 A.D., the approximate time of the baptism of Christ and the start of His public ministry (Mt. 3:13). Also this would put Jesus at around thirty years old. (Lu. 3:23). The differences between the Jewish and Roman calendars should be considered.

Daniel 9:26 “And after threescore and two weeks shall Messiah be cut off, but not for himself: and the people of the prince that shall come shall destroy the city and the sanctuary; and the end thereof shall be with a flood, and unto the end of the war desolations are determined.”

The remaining segment is 1 week (7 years). We are told in Daniel that after the 62-week segment Messiah will be cut off. Since the 62-week segment is after the 7-week segment, the total is 69 weeks. So Messiah must be cut off in the 70th week.

The dispensationalist theory contends that Jesus was cut off in the latter portion of the 69th week to make room for a supposed gap between the 69th and 70th week. However the writer states AFTER this 62-week segment Messiah shall be cut off. Not DURING.

We have already discussed in previous segments what it means to be cut-off. Jesus was indeed cut-off at the Cross.

Da. 9:26 “but not for himself…” I strongly feel that the King James Version does not fully convey the thrust of the original wording. Below are some alternatives:

“and the city and the holy place are not his,” (YLT)
“and will have nothing” (NIV)
“and shall have nothing” (ASV)
“and left with nothing” (CEV)
“and shall have nothing” (ESV)
“and have nothing,” (NASB)
“and the people that shall deny him shall not be his.” (DRA)
The crucifixion of Jesus Christ was the line of demarcation that separated reprobate Israel from God's covenant promises once and for all. The wicked city, the (Ichabod) holy place, and the reprobate people of National Israel are not His. There is nothing of national and ethnic Israel that belongs to Him, for He did not come to die for reprobate Israel.

Da. 9:26 “… and the people of the prince that shall come shall destroy the city and the sanctuary; and the end thereof shall be with a flood, and unto the end of the war desolations are determined.”

The consequences of Christ's death, burial, and resurrection put an end to the Mosaic schoolmaster. The whole of Moses was fulfilled in Christ. Due to Israel's rejection of Christ, desolations are determined.

The book of Daniel records the prophecy of the Roman invasion of Jerusalem and the destruction of the temple/sanctuary. History records, during the procuratorship of Florus (A.D. 66), the Jews revolted against the Roman government. This plunged the reprobate Jews into several years of bloody war with Rome. The “prince” who led the Roman forces was Titus, son and successor of the renowned Vespasian. This prince is not the same prince as the Anointed One, Christ, of verse 25. The prince of verse 26 comes after the Anointed One has been cut off.

During this holocaust, the city of Jerusalem was burned (Mt. 22:7) and the sanctuary/temple was demolished. Jesus told the Jews of His day that the temple would be left desolate (Mt. 24:2).

Da. 9:27 “And he shall make a firm covenant with many for one week: and in the midst of the week he shall cause the sacrifice and the oblation to cease; and upon the wing of abominations shall come one that maketh desolate; and even unto the full end, and that determined, shall wrath be poured out upon the desolate.”

There are basically two understandings of Daniel's 70th week: the “fulfilled” understanding, and the “futurist” understanding. We shall see which is more credible.

According to the Chiliast futurists, the “he” in verse 27 is the Antichrist. The “fulfilled” advocates believe the “he” is Jesus Christ.

Since the whole of Daniel 9:24-27 deals with covenant restoration, how in the world does Satan have any authority to make this covenant, or any covenant?

Daniel 9:4 “And I prayed unto the LORD my God, and made my confession, and said, O Lord, the great and dreadful God, keeping the covenant and mercy to
Daniel's prayer is the context of this covenant. Gabriel's answer is the one (Christ) who restores that covenant.

Since there is no gap between the 69th and 70th week, Dispensationalists must insert one. This failure to acknowledge the obvious covenantal context of the covenant maker (Christ) of verse 27, forces them to confuse Christ with the Anti-Christ. This is the ultimate blasphemy of interpretive errors.

This error stems from a previous error already made by them in verse 24. They fail to see that the whole of the 490 years deals with restoration initiated with the work of Jesus Christ.

“And he (Jesus) shall make a firm covenant with many for one week.”

This one-week period (70th week) cannot in my understanding be shortened by Christ's death in the middle of that week. The covenant was made firm for the entire period.

There are differing views even among Amillennialists pertaining to this last portion of 3.5 years. We will discuss this in upcoming segments. However, the firm covenant is the full corn covenant Gospel of Jesus Christ. It is the historical manifestation of Justification for all His elect people (Mt. 26:28; He. 9:14-15).

Da. 9:27 “… and in the midst of the week he shall cause the sacrifice and the oblation to cease;”

Christ's death in the middle of the 70th week fulfilled all the Old Testament types of the Mosaic administration (He. 9; 10:18, 26).

After Christ's death, the Jews continued their sacrifices, but God did not recognize these. These sacrifices were abominations, and cannot be seen as sacrifices in the true Scriptural sense of the word, for the death of Christ provided the perfect, ultimate, and final sacrifice for sins forever.

Da. 9:27 “… and for the overspreading of abominations he shall make it desolate, even until the consummation, and that determined shall be poured upon the desolate.”

This statement reinforces the previous statement made in verse 26 “and the people of the prince that shall come shall destroy the city (Jerusalem) and the sanctuary (Temple); and the end thereof shall be with a flood, and unto the end of the war desolations are determined.”

Due to reprobate Israel's rejection of Christ, the Promised Messiah of Israel foretold throughout the “Old” Scriptures, National Israel's judgment was sealed.
The guilty verdict was reached. National and ethnic Israel was sentenced to a desolation that would continue until Christ's Second Advent (consummation).

The word desolation connotes several understandings:

To devastate.
To make destitute.
To destroy.
To make waste.
To ruin.

These are but a few implications of desolation. Throughout the Old Testament history of National Israel, God warned them that disobedience and breach of the Law covenant would result in such desolation (rf. Le. 26:1-32; 2 K. 22:17-19; 2 Chr. 30:7; Is. 10:3). These are but a few Scriptures that deal with National Israel.

In previous segments, we have discussed that throughout the Old Testament history of National Israel, before Christ arrived, there was this historical "oscillating" between captivity (desolation) and restoration.

God endured with reprobate Israel only for the sake of the elect within Israel, to ultimately bring Christ (the ultimate elect one) through the ranks of Israel to fulfill the covenant. Once Christ arrived and finished the transgression through His life, death, burial, and resurrection, National Israel's purpose was fulfilled. This oscillating now ceases. Israel is restored in Christ permanently. Those in Christ, both (elect) Jew and Gentile, are considered true and real Israel.

“And he (Jesus) shall make a firm covenant with many for one week”
“And he (Jesus) shall confirm the covenant with many for one week” (KJV)

The verb “gabar”, #1396 Strong, is translated “confirm”, “firm”. It conveys the idea of “making strong”, “prevailing to enforce”, “exceed”, “be great”, “be mighty”, and “be stronger”. This is exactly what Christ did for His people on Calvary. He not only fulfilled the old and weak covenant of Law adherence which could not save a flea or remit one sin, but now enforced the exceeding covenant of Grace which already existed. Christ's death was not a “de novo” covenant. It is the covenant that prevails. It is a great, mighty and everlasting Covenant. The Grace covenant was with Christ's elect people from the beginning.

The question naturally arises, if Christ was cut-off in “the midst” of that final week (70th), why does the text state that the Lord would make a covenant with many for “one week”? In other words, what is the significance of the full 70 weeks (490 years)?

The prophecy of Daniel was to encompass a 490-year period for the restoration of Israel and to bring in everlasting righteousness. This period constitutes ten
Jubilee eras with the emphasis falling on the final and ultimate Jubilee. More on this later.

In the 70th week, the covenant was made firm (forever established) with the Elect for one week. However, in the middle of that 70th week, Christ was cut-off. This is the Atonement.

This Atonement in the middle of the 70th week did not shorten the 70th week, but was necessary to fully establish that week, so the remaining 3.5 years now takes on a greater significance, since this period is post Calvary. We cannot dismiss this 3.5-year period.

There are different views pertaining to this 3.5-year period of time within non-chiliast eschatology.

Below are listed some different conclusions.

1. **The 3.5 years have been made irrelevant due to Christ's death.** Some base this theory on the fact Christ was cut off in the middle of the week, thus making the remainder of that week irrelevant.

2. **The 3.5 years expired with the conversion of Cornelius.** The time for the special exclusive blessing upon Daniel's people (literal blood ethnic Jews) had drawn to a close.

3. **The 3.5 years expired with the conversion of Paul.**

4. **The 3.5 years expired with the stoning of Steven.**

5. **The 3.5 years is the period from the Cross to Christ's second coming and is symbolic of that entire age.** This conclusion is what I believe to be the best view.

Let's consider the text again.

Da. 9:24 “Seventy weeks (490 years) are determined upon thy people and upon thy holy city, to finish the transgression, and to make an end of sins, and to make reconciliation for iniquity, and to bring in everlasting righteousness, and to seal up the vision and prophecy, and to anoint the most Holy.”

Let's consider the 5 above conclusions.

**Conclusion 1.** This 490-year period cannot, in my estimation, be reduced by 3.5 years, for the final 3.5 years is post Calvary, with the inclusion of the Baptism of the Holy Spirit, which is the greatest and most blessed period in the history of the
This prophecy therefore cannot be limited to just “thy people”, Ethnic Israel. All of God’s redemptive activity was always grounded in Christ, pre and post Calvary. From eternity it was purposed solely for the elect: “thy people” both Jew and Gentile. Calvary (in the midst of the week) eliminated the distinction between Ethnic Jew and Gentile (Ep. 2:1-15).

Point one restricts the blessings of the prophecy to ethnic Israel only, and terminates them in the 490th year. Not good!

Conclusion 2. A similar dilemma, for this understanding tries to end this alleged strictly ethnic Jew 3.5 year period of the 70th week with the conversion of the Gentile Cornelius (Ac. 10). Even if (and that's a big if), Cornelius was converted exactly 3.5 years after “the midst of the week” (Calvary), would this finalize and complete the 490 years? If one answers yes to this, he creates a huge theological problem: he would infer that there are two distinct classes of Christians. A Jewish Christian, and a Gentile Christian. A Jewish Christian who was blessed in the covenant that was made firm for one week (70th), and a Gentile Christian who is beyond the scope of the 70th week. This also is not good.

Conclusions 3 and 4. These hold the same premise as points 1 and 2, only using different ethnic Jewish persons to arrive at a terminus point of the alleged strictly ethnic Jew prophecy of Daniel 9:24-27.

Keep in mind that Daniel's prophecy emphasizes two consequences of the Christ event, summarized in Blessings and Desolation. These consequences cannot be restricted nor terminated at the end of the 490th year if one assumes this period as historically completed. Where would that leave us, the Elect, in this present day?

This post Calvary 3.5 year period must then be considered the age representing Spiritual and True Israel. It is also the 1,000-year millennium of Revelation 20. The same inter-Advental period expressed from two different perspectives.

*Thy people, thy holy city, finish the transgression, make an end of sins, reconciliation for iniquity* and *everlasting righteousness*, are realized and enjoyed by God’s elect people, both Jew and Gentile, who are considered True Jews. We the elect, true Israel, “Ekklesia”, now complete the latter 3.5 years. **Seventy weeks (490 years) are determined upon thy (elect) people.**

The Apostolic witness to the Gospel also explains this three and one half years in the book of Revelation. In our next segment we look at this.
How one approaches and interprets the book of Revelation is dependent on a priori considerations.

The Gospel of Jesus Christ from His first advent, with its resultant consequences, must be our anchor, key, and guide to the understanding of all past (from first advent fulfillment) to future second advent (consummation) of Eschatology.

Both full Preterism and Chiliast Futurism focus on the Ethnic Nation of Israel as their anchor, key, and ground for the understanding of Revelation. The former sees Revelation as fulfilled with the events of 70 AD, and the latter see the events from Revelation 4 through Revelation 20 as entirely future, starting with the alleged secret rapture of the Saints in Revelation 4, which to this day has not occurred.

Both of these extreme views eliminate the “present tense” struggle between the Kingdom of Christ and the anti-Christ, anti-Ekklesia forces of evil that exist between Christ's first and second advents.

Understanding the symbolic and metaphoric language employed in apocalyptic passages of Scripture is not an easy task. However, they can be conceptually understood to a high degree appealing to the “Old” Scriptures. This conceptual understanding is helpful in aiding and comforting the Elect throughout their historical existence on this earth. It is our compass.

If we understand the concepts and forces of evil as portrayed by the symbols that represent them, then no matter what inter-advental period of history Christ's elect people live in, we can be warned and made aware of who our enemy is.

Since Christ and His elect people are the True Israel of God, the book of Revelation deals with True Israel's tension, conflict, and struggles with the ungodly forces of evil, both political and religious.

In our previous segment we discussed the post-Calvary 3.5 years of Daniel's 70th week. Even within non-chiliast views, there are differences. My understanding (fully within the amillennialism inter-advental outline) is not representative of all amillennialism, but a great portion of it. There are different schools of amillennial thought.

Some of these schools get entangled with trying to “date set” future and past
periods of inter-advental eschatological history. Harold Camping, 7th Day Adventists, and even some historicist interpreters have taken the 1260 days as literal years as opposed to symbolic years. Whatever the case, the main conclusion we should all derive from an apocalyptic book like Revelation is to clearly identify two distinct Kingdoms. Christ's and the Anti-Christ's. Elect and reprobate. We should also learn how these antithetical Kingdoms and people conflict with one another during their earthly existence before Christ returns.

Let's look at passages in the New Testament that bring into view this 3.5-year period. These periods are recorded as:

42 months - The Holy City trodden down (Re. 11:2).

1,260 days - Two witnesses prophesy (Re. 11:3).

1,260 days - The woman is fed in the wilderness (Re. 12:6).

Times, and times, and a half time - The beast continues to make war with the Saints and overcome them (Re. 13:5-7).

Times, and times, and a half time - The fourth beast is the fourth kingdom. The Saints are given into his hand (Da. 7:23-25).

Re. 11:1-2 “1 And there was given me a reed like unto a rod: and one said, Rise, and measure the temple of God, and the altar, and them that worship therein. 2 And the court which is without the temple leave without, and measure it not; for it hath been given unto the nations (Gentiles): and the holy city shall they tread under foot forty and two months.”

In the original writings there were no chapters and verses. So the context of Revelation 11 continues from Revelation 10. However, Revelation 11 is an interlude. It pauses to add additional descriptive information that is vital to a greater understanding of prophetic people, places, and events. There are several of these interludes in Revelation. Revelation 17 and 18 are further examples.

In the above vision of John, he was given a reed/rod to measure the temple of God, and the altar, and them that worship therein.

This cannot be referring to the literal typical physical temple, altar, and people of Jerusalem. For they have already been cursed and have been made useless. Christ cursed the fig tree. This measuring is for the temple (sanctuary) representing the spiritual and true temple, God's dwelling place or habitation among men (1Co. 3:16-17; 2 Co. 6:16; Ep. 2:21; 1 Ti. 3:15). The temple was to be measured, but the outside court was to be left out. The temple (Christ's Ekklesia) would receive divine protection, while the outer court (the wicked
reprobate Jew and Gentile) would not.

The symbolism and imagery of measuring is drawn from another vision in Ezekiel (Eze. 40; 42:20; 43:10-11; 22:26).

This measuring was to make a separation between the holy and the common, just as in Revelation. A radical separation is made between the Elect and the Reprobate.

There is another measuring in the book of Zechariah 2:1-5. This measuring was designed to show that God would preserve and protect His suffering people. As in Revelation, God will protect His elect suffering Church.

In verse 11:2, John states “holy city”. He uses a similar term in Revelation 20:9: “beloved city”. No doubt the same city (cf He. 12:22; Ga. 4:26).

Re. 11:2 “And the court which is without the temple leave without, and measure it not; for it hath been given unto the nations (Gentiles): and the holy city shall they tread under foot forty and two months.”

Re. 20:9 “And they (reprobate) went out over the breadth of the earth, and compassed the camp of the saints about, and the beloved city. And fire came down from God out of heaven, and devoured them.”

The period of persecution for God’s elect Saints would last forty-two months, symbolic of the inter-advental period, the same length of time for the events of Revelation 11:3, 12:6-14, and 13:5. This is the same amount of time that Daniel’s fourth kingdom (Roman) would persecute the saints (Da. 7:21-27). Antiochus IV Epiphanes being a prototype of the inter-advental Roman persecution of the Israel of God. Just as the literal unholy city of Jerusalem, then and now, is to be “trodden down of the Gentiles, until the times of the Gentiles be fulfilled” (Lu. 21:24), John’s “holy city” also will be trampled under foot (persecuted) only for a limited time. Terminating with Christ’s second and final advent. The following Scriptures show that the events of Revelation 11:2-3, 12:6, 13:5-7, and Daniel 7:13-15 are all referring to the same inter-advental time period. The millennium.

The Two Witnesses

Within amillennialism there are different identities attributed to these two witnesses, and pretty much all of these identifications have merit. Since the Apostle John does not specifically name these two witnesses, but rather gives us symbolic language to help identify these witnesses, again we must draw upon the Old Testament for help.

Re. 11:3-4 “3 And I will give power unto my two witnesses, and they shall prophesy a thousand two hundred and threescore days, clothed in sackcloth. 4

152
These are the two olive trees and the two candlesticks, standing before the God of the earth."

The imagery of the two olive trees and the two candlesticks are to be found in Zechariah's vision (Zec. 4:2-3). Zechariah asked the angel for the identity of the two olive trees. The angel answered in 4:14: "Then said he, 'These are the two anointed ones, who stand by the Lord of the whole earth.'" They are witnesses and prophets of God. Zerubbabel the governor (Zec. 4:6-7), and Joshua the priest (Zec. 3:1).

The context of Zechariah was to call God's people to repentance (Zec. 1:3). Just like the ancient predecessors, the two witnesses in Revelation 11 are clothed in sackcloth. Sackcloth was a garment depicting mourning and contrition (2 S. 3:31; Je. 4:8; Mt. 11:21). It was the usual garb of prophets (2 K. 1:8; Is. 20:2; Zec. 13:4).

Also in Zechariah we see the two olive trees stand beside the lampstand. The Apostle John uses the lampstand as a symbol of the Church (Re. 1:20).

Many have arrived at different conclusions about the identity of these two witnesses. Some ideas are:

- Law and Prophets
- Peter and Paul
- Moses and Elijah
- Old Testament Saints and New Testament Saints
- The New Testament Prophets and the Saints

The above are but a few. However, the significance and purpose of the above mentioned should be our focus.

Revelation 11:18, I believe, gives us the answer to who these “two” witnesses are: “Thy servants the prophets, and to the saints and them that fear Thy name.”

The representatives of Christ's ekklesia, to my understanding, are the two witnesses, with the “two” being used as a symbolic number. We have the pillars (Apostles) and the whole of the Ekklesia (Prophets). Are we not all preachers, prophets, and witnesses to the Gospel (1 Co. 12:28; Ep. 4:11)? We are also anointed with the Holy Spirit. Through our testimony and proclamation of the Gospel, the divine light of God/Christ is made evident to the world (Mt. 5:15-16). We are the candlesticks. We the elect are clothed in sackcloth, depicting that we are prophesying through a time of affliction or persecution. And this we will do till Christ returns. No devil shall stop us from proclaiming the true Gospel. Our mission will be completed when Christ brings the last elect person to regeneration.
We will prophesy (11:3), and our testimony (11:7) will continue till the end, the last trumpet.

Our testimony/witness is the testimony of Jesus Christ and the Gospel (Re. 1:2, 9; 6:9; 11:7; 12:11, 17; 19:10; 20:4).

In Jesus Christ, the law and prophets are fulfilled.
In Jesus Christ, the offices of Moses and Elijah are fulfilled.
In Jesus Christ, Old and New Testament Saints are sealed in Christ.
Jesus Christ is the foundation of the Apostles and the entire elect Church.

The witness of the Elect Church is also modeled after Moses and the Prophets.

Re. 11:5-6 “5 and if any one may will to injure them, fire doth proceed out of their mouth, and doth devour their enemies, and if any one may will to injure them, thus it behoveth him to be killed. 6 These have authority to shut the heaven, that it may not rain rain in the days of their prophecy, and authority they have over the waters to turn them to blood, and to smite the land with every plague, as often as they may will.”

How can we apply the above metaphoric language to the testimony and witness of the elect Church?

Je. 5:14 (YLT) “Therefore, thus said Jehovah, God of Hosts, Because of your speaking this word, Lo, I am making My words in thy mouth become fire, And this people wood, and it hath devoured them.”

The preaching and proclamation of the Gospel, the Word of God, are as a fire that consumes the reprobate (1 Co. 1:18; Lu. 12:49; Ac. 2:3; He. 1:7; Re. 9:18). The reprobate hate the truth. The Gospel is a rock of offense to those that are perishing. God designed the reprobate to be wood.

Another allusion is made to Elijah (2 K. 1:11-12), wherein Elijah called fire down from heaven. Both Jeremiah and Elijah brought destruction upon their enemies by the Word of God they uttered.

Elijah had power to shut the sky that no rain would fall.

Moses had power over the waters to turn them into blood, and smite the earth with plagues.

John the Baptist was not literal Elijah, but was the embodiment of Elijah, a great prophet (Mt. 11:14; 17:10-13).

Jesus Christ is the ultimate Prophet. We in Him, and Him in us by the power and authority of the Holy Spirit, carry on the mission of Jesus Christ as prophets and
priests.

“These have authority to shut the heaven, that it may not rain rain in the days of their prophecy, and authority they have over the waters to turn them to blood, and to smite the land with every plague, as often as they may will.”

The “ekklesia” of God have this very power/authority, for we possess the “keys” to the Kingdom of Heaven, given to us by Christ Himself (Re. 1:18; Mt. 16:19).

In Elijah’s day, when he shut up the heavens (no rain) for three and a half years upon the nation of Israel, there was a famine in the land. Likewise, the elect church shuts off the blessing (rain) of the Gospel to the reprobate world. Those reprobates in ecumenical and syncretistic unity with the anti-Christ/Ekklesia forces of evil will be forever darkened and hardened by the absence of the testimony of Christ's witnesses.

As in Moses’ day, when he turned the waters into blood and smote the wicked land with plagues, we the elect church are so empowered to smite the peoples of this earth with the truth of Jesus Christ and the Gospel. Christ and His Gospel are bad tidings upon reprobate mankind. The waters and the land encompass the whole of this earth. Here shall no one escape the truth and judgment of God, as proclaimed by His witnesses.

Re. 11:7 “And when they shall have finished their testimony, the beast that ascendeth out of the bottomless pit shall make war against them, and shall overcome them and kill them.”

Re. 20:7 “And when the thousand years are expired, Satan shall be loosed out of his prison,”

These two verses I understand to be parallel within historical time: future to us, and before the seventh and final trump of our Lord’s return. Satan and reprobate mankind will have their “little season” of unbridled wickedness. They will think they have defeated Christ and his people/witnesses, but their ultimate fate is ever so near to them. They are thoroughly blinded and deceived.

Let’s continue looking a little more into this “little season” by showing the parallel of Revelation 11 and Revelation 20 to bring into focus the future intensified tribulation of our brothers and sisters in Christ.

Re. 20:8 “and shall (Satan’s forces) go out to deceive the nations to the four quarters of the earth Gog and Magog to gather them together for battle, the number of whom is as the sand of the sea.”
This little season commences when Christ's witnesses finish their testimony. The Gospel is shut off to the nations. All the wheat (elect) have been gathered into Christ. The binding of Satan earlier in Revelation 20 was the result of Christ. The Gospel was to go forth unto the Gentile nations to bring in the harvest of God's elect souls worldwide. It is the free course of the Gospel proclamation that binds Satan. Now that the witnesses (Ekklesia) have finished their testimony, Satan is loosed in a sense (although divinely controlled by God) to thoroughly deceive the world once again. The Light is now shut off. Darkness will prevail for a short period.

Re. 20:9a “And they went out over the breadth of the earth, and compassed the camp of the saints about, and the beloved city.”

All of the anti-Christ forces are politically and religiously united to hate “one” common enemy: Jesus Christ and His elect people. They are not united in the sense that there will exist a complete and perfect political/religious oneness or utopia. The clay between their toes prohibits this. However they unite in cause to war against Christ and His elect people. This wicked alignment is similar, though not exclusive, to Catholics, Protestants, and Evangelicals who ecumenically unite together to thwart the true Gospel of Imputed Righteousness. It will continue this way till the end. The Unites States during WWII were allied with wicked Soviet Russia to war against a common enemy: Germany and her allies. The hatred of Christ and the gospel will unite all reprobate men in this “little season”.

Re. 11:8 “And their dead bodies shall lie in the street of the great city, which spiritually is called Sodom and Egypt, where also our Lord was crucified.”

Jerusalem, at the time of Christ's death, was governed by Rome. It was a Roman province. Sodom depicts filthy ungodliness. Egypt depicts bondage. Both religious and political entities were united and involved in the death of Christ. Israel and Rome both portray the characteristics of filthy ungodliness and bondage. When the Jews proclaimed, “we have no king but Caesar”, they exposed their wicked heart. The world toward the end will be identical, and is called Sodom and Egypt. The allusion to our Lord is recapitulated in similar events of this little season.

Re. 11:9 “And they of the people and kindreds, and tongues and nations shall see their dead bodies three days and a half, and shall not suffer their dead bodies to be put in graves.”

The symbolic and metaphoric language in this three days and a half (little season) depicts their utter disgust and hatred of Christ and his people. In real life, to not bury a human corpse is to expose that corpse to all manner of rot and decay, putting it to a public shame. It also shows utter contempt and lack of respect to humanity in general. These reprobates purposely made a spectacle of these dead bodies worldwide. Due to Christ and His ekklesia stopping the
influence of the Gospel, the reprobate anti-Christ world assumes they have defeated (killed) True Christianity. They impugn, mock, and slander all that is holy and righteous.

Re. 11:10 “And they that dwell upon the earth shall rejoice over them and make merry, and shall send gifts one to another, because these two prophets tormented them that dwelt on the earth.”

This reveals the pompous, self-righteous, and arrogant attitude that the world possesses. They are so joyously overwhelmed by their supposed victory over Christ and the Gospel that they rejoice with one another. There is a sort of temporary false peace about them, because the truth that burned and tormented them has now ceased.

Re. 11:11 “But after three days and a half, the Spirit of life from God entered into them, and they stood upon their feet; and great fear fell upon them that saw them.”

How wonderful!! At the end of this “little season of Satan”, God resurrects the elect Saints in the face and presence of the enemy. Similar to when the wicked Jews thought they had killed and defeated Jesus Christ, our Lord was resurrected from the dead. The Jews sought to dismiss the resurrection as a hoax. But God had His elect witnesses all the time, proclaiming the Gospel with signs and wonders in the face of the reprobate Jewish leaders.

Re. 11:12 “And they heard a great voice from Heaven, saying unto them, ‘Come up hither!’ And they ascended up to Heaven in a cloud, and their enemies beheld them.”

This to me indicates that the Resurrection of the righteous and the wicked are not simultaneous events; close, but not simultaneous. We can rejoice in the fact that our enemies, who hate Christ, the true Gospel, and His elect bride, will witness our Glory.

Re. 11:13 “And that same hour there was a great earthquake, and a tenth part of the city fell; and in the earthquake were slain seven thousand men, and the remnant were seized with fear, and gave glory to the God of Heaven.”

This resurrection naturally will have a profound effect on the reprobate. More destruction. The remnant seized with fear give glory to God, not because they love him, but rather because they are compelled to. “Every knee shall bow and tongue confess that Jesus Christ is Lord.”

Re. 11:14 “The second woe is past; and behold, the third woe cometh quickly.”

The second woe references the previous event, and should not be distanced
from the third woe, which immediately follows. The woes are there to introduce an order of events. This is similar to the eternal decrees of God: they have a logical order, but emanate from a timeless eternity.

Re. 11:15 “And the seventh angel sounded, and there were great voices in Heaven, saying, ‘The kingdoms of this world are become the kingdoms of our Lord and of His Christ, and He shall reign for ever and ever!’”

After the seventh angel blows the trump, it's over. Christ conquers this world and ushers in the new order, and will reign forever and ever.

Re. 11:16 “And the four and twenty elders, who sat before God on their seats, fell upon their faces and worshiped God,”

The party begins. It will be the greatest worship service one could ever imagine and experience.

Re. 11:17 “saying, ‘We give Thee thanks, O Lord God Almighty, who art, and wast, and art to come, because Thou hast taken to Thee Thy great power, and hast reigned.’”

Re. 11:18 “And the nations were angry; and Thy wrath is come, and the time of the dead, that they should be judged, and that Thou shouldest give reward unto Thy servants the prophets, and to the saints and them that fear Thy name, small and great, and shouldest destroy them that destroy the earth.”

While we the elect will forever worship and enjoy this New Order with our Lord Jesus Christ and his angels, the reprobate nations will gnash their teeth against the Almighty. Their wrath is come. They shall be destroyed.

Re. 11:19 “And the temple of God was opened in Heaven; and there was seen in His temple the ark of His testament, and there were lightnings and voices, and thunderings and an earthquake, and great hail.”

Re. 20:9b “And fire came down from God out of heaven, and devoured them.”

We, by faith, worship in the city of Jerusalem, which is above. But at the end, this city and temple will be manifested. Christ, who is the temple and ark, will breathe the fire of His Word upon reprobate mankind.

Re. 20:10 “And the devil who had deceived them was cast into the lake of fire and brimstone, where the beast and the false prophet are; and they shall be tormented day and night for ever and ever.”

Re. 20:11 “And I saw a great white throne and Him that sat on it, from whose face the earth and the heaven fled away, and there was found no place for
Revelation 11 and 20 can be thought of along the lines of the four Gospels. The same events recorded, but seen from different angles.

Re. 12:6 “And the woman fled into the wilderness, where she hath a place prepared of God, that there they may nourish her a thousand two hundred and threescore days.”

Above, John mentions again the symbolic 1260 days, the latter portion of Daniel's 70th week. This scene starts with verse one and gives us more symbolism to identify one of the forces that war with the anti-Christ during the inter-advental (millennium) period.

Re. 12:1-2 “1 And a great sign (mega semeion) was seen in heaven: a woman arrayed with the sun, and the moon under her feet, and upon her head a crown of twelve stars; 2 and she was with child; and she crieth out, travailing in birth, and in pain to be delivered.”

The Greek word for sign is “semeion” #4592. The KJV in some cases has used the English word “wonder”. Depending on the context, it can mean a sign, miracle, indication, mark, token.

This great woman is described in celestial images. As discussed earlier in previous segments, the New Testament writers appeal to the “Old” Scriptures not only to interpret the Christ event, but also to derive their understanding of the eschatological forces that were present among them from the Old Testament types, shadows, and symbolisms.

The woman is Israel. The imagery is to be found in Genesis 37:9-11:

“9 And he (Joseph) dreamed yet another dream, and told it to his brethren, and said, Behold, I have dreamed yet a dream: and, behold, the sun and the moon and eleven stars made obeisance to me. 10 And he told it to his father, and to his brethren; and his father rebuked him, and said unto him, What is this dream that thou hast dreamed? Shall I and thy mother and thy brethren indeed come to bow down ourselves to thee to the earth? 11 And his brethren envied him; but his father kept the saying in mind.”

In the above:

The sun represents Jacob.
The moon represents Joseph’s mother, Rachel.
The eleven stars represent the sons of Israel who bow to Joseph.
Joseph is the twelfth star.
The woman Israel in John’s vision was with child. The child is Jesus Christ. The travailing and pain was due to Roman political oppression and spiritual bondage enforced by the reprobate Jewish religious leaders’ false teachings. There was both political and religious oppression experienced by God’s elect people prior to Christ’s first advent. Then, of course, the personal dimension of sin bondage.

Another allusion (pain and travail) is made to Genesis 3:15-16:

“15 and I will put enmity between thee and the woman, and between thy seed and her seed: he shall bruise thy head, and thou shalt bruise his heel. 16 Unto the woman he said, I will greatly multiply thy pain and thy conception; in pain thou shalt bring forth children; and thy desire shall be to thy husband, and he shall rule over thee.”

The woman’s seed is Jesus Christ. The elect children of Eve desire Christ the husband to rule over them. Another allusion is made to Isaiah 66:7-14:

“7 Before she travailed, she brought forth; before her pain came, she was delivered of a man-child. 8 Who hath heard such a thing? who hath seen such things? Shall a land be born in one day? shall a nation be brought forth at once? for as soon as Zion travailed, she brought forth her children. 9 Shall I bring to the birth, and not cause to bring forth? saith Jehovah: shall I that cause to bring forth shut the womb? saith thy God. 10 Rejoice ye with Jerusalem, and be glad for her, all ye that love her: rejoice for joy with her, all ye that mourn over her; 11 that ye may suck and be satisfied with the breasts of her consolations; that ye may milk out, and be delighted with the abundance of her glory. 12 For thus saith Jehovah, Behold, I will extend peace to her like a river, and the glory of the nations like an overflowing stream: and ye shall suck thereof; ye shall be borne upon the side, and shall be dandled upon the knees. 13 As one whom his mother comforteth, so will I comfort you; and ye shall be comforted in Jerusalem. 14 And ye shall see it, and your heart shall rejoice, and your bones shall flourish like the tender grass: and the hand of Jehovah shall be known toward his servants; and he will have indignation against his enemies.”

This was fulfilled in the Christ event.

“Women” in the Scriptures are often a symbol depicting false religion or identified with a faithful people (cf. Re. 2:20; 17:2; 19:7-8).

Jerusalem and/or Zion are often depicted in the “Old” as a woman/bride (cf. Is. 54:1-6; Je. 3:20; Eze.16:8-14; Ho. 2:19-20).

The cultish, pagan, and pseudo-Christian Papacy claim “the Queen of Heaven” Mary, is the woman standing on the crescent moon with the twelve stars around her head. Pagan Roman Catholic art and medallions with this pagan “queen of heaven” have been sold by the millions to the ignorant and unsuspecting. Mary is
the queen and mother of Pagan Romanism. This is Satanic delusion at best.

Mary Baker Eddy, founder of the Church of Christ, Scientist, or better known as “Christian Scientists”, claims she is the woman with the twelve stars. More utter blindness.

http://www.endtime.org/library/articles/crown.html

The Israel of God, both elect Jew and elect Gentile, are the one true body of Christ. They are the faithful woman commencing from Calvary, enduring throughout the millennium, and will eternally be blessed in their glorification at Christ's second advent. Hence, the New Heaven and Earth.

Re. 12:3 “And there was seen another sign in heaven: and behold, a great red dragon, having seven heads and ten horns, and upon his heads seven diadems.”

In this vision/sign, we are presented with Christ's archenemy, The Red Dragon. Dragon or dragons in the “Old” were associated with the “adversaries” of God (cf. Ps. 74:13-14; Jb. 26:12-13; Ps. 89:11).

The seven diadems are symbolic of the dragon's given (by God) authority over the kingdoms of this reprobate world. This dragon thinks he has royal authority over Christ and His people, but is under a strong delusion (cf. Re. 19:12), where Christ is shown wearing many diadems. Seven is a symbolic number depicting fullness. There is only one Holy Spirit, however the Scriptures make reference to “the seven spirits of God”, see Revelation 5:6.

The dragon is also depicted symbolically to suggest his fierce power and murderous nature. This is the Roman Empire, full of evil.

We see another similar description in Revelation 13:1, and this parallels with Daniel's fourth beast, The Roman Empire (Da. 7:7-8). In Daniel chapter 2:40-45 we are given the role that this Roman beast will have, not only during the inter-advental period, but from its genesis to Christ's first advent also.

I'll summarize from Daniel Chapter 2:

40 And the fourth kingdom shall be strong as iron, forasmuch as iron breaketh in pieces and subdueth all things; and as iron that crusheth all these, shall it break in pieces and crush.

This kingdom has been pre-ordained by God to war against all of mankind even against the ekklesia of God.

41 And whereas thou sawest the feet and toes, part of potters' clay, and part of iron, it shall be a divided kingdom; but there shall be in it of the strength of the
42 And as the toes of the feet were part of iron, and part of clay, so the kingdom shall be partly strong, and partly broken.

43 And whereas thou sawest the iron mixed with miry clay, they shall mingle themselves with the seed of men; but they shall not cleave one to another, even as iron doth not mingle with clay.

This Roman and final kingdom shall never fully unite and subdue the world both politically and religiously. Many attempts have been made throughout history, and even to this very day attempts are being made to consolidate world powers both politically and religiously. There will only be a superficial and false unity between Rome and her supposed allies, who are both political and religious entities. The anti-Christ kingdom will be divided and will fall at Christ's second advent (Mt. 12:25-26; Mk. 3:24-25; Lu.11:17-18).

44 And in the days of those kings shall the God of heaven set up a kingdom which shall never be destroyed, nor shall the sovereignty thereof be left to another people; but it shall break in pieces and consume all these kingdoms, and it shall stand for ever.

The Christ event forever established the Kingdom of God and His Christ. We the elect are not waiting for this Kingdom to be established. It was inaugurated at Christ's first advent. Rome, the Papacy and her wicked allies shall never destroy our glorious Kingdom. Our Kingdom will consume all of the wicked anti-Christ kingdoms of this earth. Our Kingdom will stand forever.

To say, as some do, that Christ postponed the Kingdom is utter nonsense!

45 Forasmuch as thou sawest that a stone was cut out of the mountain without hands, and that it brake in pieces the iron, the brass, the clay, the silver, and the gold; the great God hath made known to the king what shall come to pass hereafter: and the dream is certain, and the interpretation thereof sure.

Christ is the stone and great Rock of the Scriptures. Christ is the temple made without hands (Mk. 14:58; He. 9:11, 24). We, His people (true Israel), have the true and real circumcision made without hands (Col. 2:11). Jesus Christ will destroy all of the reprobate kingdoms of this world. Including the reprobate so-called Christianity of our day.

Re. 12:4 “And his tail draweth the third part of the stars of heaven, and did cast them to the earth: and the dragon standeth before the woman that is about to be delivered, that when she is delivered he may devour her child.”

The wicked spiritual forces of Satan (the red dragon) and his earthly
representatives (Rome) sought out to kill Jesus Christ. The initial attempt was made by Herod to kill the child Jesus (Mt. 2:16-18). However the attempts of Satan and all his agents (reprobate Israel) would continue (Jn. 8:59).

Jesus was finally brought to His crucifixion. Rome and her reprobate allies, the Jews, thought they gained a victory. But it was our victory. It was Christ's victory over death. His resurrection was our resurrection to victory and defeat over Satan and his forces. The verdict is declared. We win!

Re. 12:5 “And she was delivered of a son, a man child, who is to rule all the nations with a rod of iron: and her child was caught up unto God, and unto his throne.”

Jesus Christ the King (man child) rules this earth with his rod of Iron. The iron and clay of Rome is no match for Christ's rod of Iron. He will smash His enemies with His rod. Jesus Christ's ascension into Heaven (caught up unto God, and unto his throne) seats him at the right hand of God with all power and authority (Mk. 12:36; 14:62; 16:19; Ac. 2:25, 33-34; 7:56; Ro. 8:34; Ep.1:20; Col. 3:1; He. 1:3, 13; 8:1; 10:12; 12:2; 1Pe. 3:22).

To suggest that Christ would leave His heavenly glory and seat at the right hand of God to come to this cursed earth in the reestablishment of an earthly throne is ludicrous. What is even more ludicrous is that Jesus would reestablish the types and shadows (weak and beggarly elements) of the Mosaic administration that were already fulfilled and done away with. What greater place is there to rule from? Heavenly and pure Jerusalem at the right hand of the Father, in all glory and majesty, with its heavenly hosts, or earthly Jerusalem surrounded by Talmudic, Kabbalah, reprobate Jews, Orthodox and Papist pseudo-Christians, and Muslims?

Christ will surely come again. Not to save face from a failed attempt to establish His Kingdom on His first advent by establishing a kingdom on earth, but to destroy this realm, and usher in the heavenly Zion/Jerusalem. A kingdom that already was established (Re. 21:1-5).

Re. 12:6 “And the woman fled into the wilderness, where she hath a place prepared of God, that there they may nourish her a thousand two hundred and threescore days.”

This verse is after the ascension of Christ. The Woman (the Ekklesia, the Israel of God) now is depicted as being in the wilderness. As previously mentioned from Revelation 11:2, we the elect, spiritually by faith alone, dwell in the inner court, the Holy of Holies, with our Lord Jesus Christ.

The wilderness allusion is identified with typical Old Testament Israel. Egypt was bondage. The Israelites, being delivered by Moses, fled to the wilderness, and
then eventually entered the Promised Land.

Likewise, we the elect through Jesus Christ our Deliverer have been delivered from the bondage of sin. Although by faith alone we enjoy the Promised Land (Christ and heavenly Jerusalem) spiritually, we still exist bodily on this earth. This earthly existence is not our home. We are pilgrims, foreigners, and strangers on this earth. Our true citizenship is in Heaven with our Lord.

Christ’s Second Advent will eventually consummate the Kingdom/Promised Land in the New Order.

During this inter-advental period of a thousand two hundred and threescore days, we are nourished with Christ the living Manna. We drink from that spiritual Rock (Christ). We are guided through the wilderness by the light and illumination of the Holy Spirit. We have the cloud by day, and the fire by night, and are guided by the truth of the Gospel.

Re.12:7 “And there was war in heaven: Michael and his angels going forth to war with the dragon; and the dragon warred and his angels;

8 And they prevailed not, neither was their place found any more in heaven.

9 And the great dragon was cast down, the old serpent, he that is called the Devil and Satan, the deceiver of the whole world; he was cast down to the earth, and his angels were cast down with him.

10 And I heard a great voice in heaven, saying, Now is come the salvation, and the power, and the kingdom of our God, and the authority of his Christ: for the accuser of our brethren is cast down, who accuseth them before our God day and night.”

The cross of Jesus Christ is the major victory over the forces of evil and darkness. Christ the man-child, now seated on His throne (vs. 5), defeats and rules over the dragon and his messengers with a rod of iron. Consequently, Christ’s messengers, both angelic hosts and us His elect messengers, will experience confrontation with all of the reprobate forces of evil and darkness till the consummation. Christ’s second advent.

The devil historically was judicially defeated by Christ, and will continue his onslaught against Christ and His elect. This war is in the realm of the spirit (Ep. 6:12). It is a war that takes place in the mind/heart of God’s elect (Ps. 13:2). It is our battle/calling to uphold and advance the truth (of Christ) and dismiss the errors (of Satan). Armed with the truth of Jesus Christ and the Gospel, we shall never be defeated and enslaved to sin and guilt (Jn. 8:32; Ep. 1:13). We the elect have the Armour of God (Ep. 6:10-18). Never to be spiritually enslaved by the evil reprobates (Lu. 12:4).
The accuser of the brethren is forever cast down, meaning he is powerless to gain the loyalty of Christ's elect, nor snatch them away from Christ. They prevailed not. Satan and his messengers, both reprobate angelic spirits and reprobate mankind, are only given power and authority in the realm of spiritual deception. A great spiritual deception that may cause us to stumble for a time, but not ultimately fall away. For Christ is able to keep us from falling. Although evil ones have risen to gain political and religious control throughout the ages, they cannot defeat and destroy the body of Christ and His testimony.

The Gospel makes the accuser of our brethren, void. Jesus Christ was accused of many things by the devil and his servants, the reprobate Jews (Mt. 27:12; 12:17; Mk. 3:2; 15:3-4; Lu. 6:7; 23:2; 23:14; Jn. 8:6). We, Christ's servants, shall fare no better. We also have been and will continue to be accused by the devil and his servants. Paul was always accused by the reprobates (Ac. 19:40; 22:30; 23:28; 23:29; 25:16; 26:2; 26:7).

Satan's main attack and accusation against the Body of Christ (ekklesia) is rooted in law obedience. From the cross of Christ till the consummation of the ages, the pure and undefiled Gospel of Justification (imputation) through Grace alone, Faith alone, and Christ alone, will always be under attack by the reprobates. They hate our freedom in Christ, and want to deceive us by different and subtle forms of law adherence, whether by introducing some Old Testament laws, or inventing some New Testament laws. Either way, law adherence can be an effective weapon of Satan to foist guilt upon the “free”.

The catch phrases used by the devil are: “you need to do this to be justified”, “you need to do this to maintain your salvation”, and “you need to do this to prove you are justified.” These are all rooted in law adherence to one degree or another.

Now is come the salvation, and the power, and the kingdom of our God, and the authority of his Christ. We overcome in Jesus Christ. Salvation, the power, the kingdom, and authority are NOW! It was “now” at the cross, and it is “now” presently. It is the ever-present tense NOW (cf. Ro. 5:9; 6:22; 7:6; 8:1; 1 Co. 12:27; 15:20; 2 Co. 6:2; Ga. 3:25; Ep. 2:13; 3:10; 5:8; Col. 1:22, 26; 1 Th. 3:8; 2 Ti. 1:10; 1 Pe. 2:25).

The direct reference to Michael and his angels must be briefly addressed here. Within reformed Christianity there is no unanimous consent as to the identity of Michael. Michael is a name attributed to this being/personage alluded to in the book of Daniel. Hebrew names do have meaning. (Miyka’el) #4317 Strong’s meaning, “whom or he is surely God”, “he who is like God”, is taken from three root words.

Miy, meaning whom or he, kiy, meaning surely or assuredly, and ‘el, meaning
God.

Michael is introduced by John as a personage or being that was readily known and understood by those Hebrew/Jews contemporaneous of his day. So there was no need of John to qualify this person/being. To understand the role of Michael we must appeal to the Old Testament in the book of Daniel.

I'm sure that many even on this forum have personal convictions about the identity of Michael. The identity of Michael within reformed theology is understood and broken down into two main camps:

**Camp one:** The Michael of Daniel 10:13, 21; 12:1; Jude 1:9; and Revelation 12:7 are referring to the second person of the Trinity. A theophany of the “Word” of God. Jesus Christ being the Chief Messenger and protector of His elect people Israel, not a created angelic spirit being, as promoted by the Jehovah’s Witnesses and others who deny the divinity of the “Word”.

To argue against this view, one must not employ the typical arguments used against Jehovah’s Witnesses. For camp one does not deny the deity of the “Word”.

**Camp two:** The Michael of Daniel is a created angelic spirit being, and is the arch/chief and angel/messenger. Not a theophany of Christ.

How one identifies Michael is a matter of personal conscience and conviction derived from the Scriptures.

I do not discount an individual as being my brother in Christ who holds that the letter of James should be a part of the canon. And likewise, I do not discount an individual as being my brother in Christ who holds to the view that Michael is a created angelic being. This should be vice versa also with me.

As long as we agree that Jesus Christ, the “Word” of God, is eternally divine in essence, and that good works have absolutely no role as a basis and ground in rendering the verdict of Justification, we are united in Christ.

Prior to Christ bringing me to regeneration and faith (salvation), I held the Roman Catholic position of Michael. Michael, I was taught in parochial schools, was the most powerful created angelic being. And for quite some time after my conversion, I still maintained that view.

It was only in the past five or six years that I seriously inquired into this subject. I learned that Calvin, Gill, Turretin, Spurgeon, Matthew Henry, and other men in reformed circles held to the “theophany” view of Michael. After further study, I believe the “theophany” view to be more tenable.
Below are a few websites that deal with the issue of Michael as a “theophony” of Christ. In no way do I endorse all areas of theology that these men may hold to, but on this subject I would agree.

http://www.mountainretreatorg.net/bible/michael.html

http://www.sdanet.org/atissue/books/qod/q08.htm


http://www.creation-science-prophecy.com/michael.htm

http://www.biblelight.net/michael.htm

Re. 12:11 “And they overcame him because of the blood of the Lamb, and because of the word of their testimony; and they loved not their life even unto death.”

There is only one way to overcome Satan and the reprobate, illustrated by the testimony of the Gospel. The Gospel is the testimony of Christ crucified (1 Co. 2:2; 15:1-4). The sinless and spotless Lamb of God who takes away the sin of the elect, both Jew and Gentile. It is the testimony of our Justification.

For to me to live is Christ, and to die is gain (Ph. 1:21).

There will always be martyrs in God’s Kingdom. Christ said, “And be not afraid of them that kill the body, but are not able to kill the soul: but rather fear him who is able to destroy both soul and body in hell” (Mt. 10:28).

Re. 12:12 “Therefore rejoice, O heavens, and ye that dwell in them. Woe for the earth and for the sea: because the devil is gone down unto you, having great wrath, knowing that he hath but a short time.”

We the elect of God dwell in the heavens spiritually by faith. We rejoice with the angelic hosts that surround God’s throne. Satan has been overthrown, but not destroyed. The earth dwellers are depicted as the reprobates who are barred access to the blessings of God. They are barred access to the Tree of Life with all its blessings. The devil's wrath is God's wrath upon all reprobate mankind. Satan is an agent and tool of God used to bring deception, misery, and suffering to reprobate mankind worldwide, “earth and sea”. The concept of a “common Grace” or common favor upon reprobate mankind is another deception granted to Satan and his false ministers/messengers to be used as a tool to anesthetize the reprobate, and a lame attempt to diminish God's ultimate love for His elect people, which can never be diminished in any way.
Re. 12:13 “And when the dragon saw that he was cast down to the earth, he persecuted the woman that brought forth the man child.”

Satan’s (the adversary’s) defeat by Christ will, till the consummation, bring an ever-present persecution of Christ’s people who are the faithful woman/bride. Elect Israel brought about the man-child, and we are that body of Elect Israel. Christ is true and ultimate Israel.

“Who shall lay anything to the charge of God’s elect? It is God that justifieth;” (Ro. 8:33).

Satan can never induce a sin/guilt complex on God’s elect people, although that is his main weapon of persecution. The Jews, the Papacy, the apostate reformed, and the evangelicals who now deny the imputation of Christ’s righteousness are in league with Satan to lay charges against God’s elect.

Satan is able to attack us saints on this earth, and even bring some to martyrdom. This he will do in an attempt to compel us to deny Christ and the true Gospel, but these attempts will be fruitless, for the Holy Spirit of God in that hour will strengthen us. He will not leave us nor forsake us. Christ will uphold us till the end.

Re. 12:14 “And there were given to the woman the two wings of the great eagle, that she might fly into the wilderness unto her place, where she is nourished for a time, and times, and half a time, from the face of the serpent.”

As mentioned earlier in our previous segment, this wilderness is depicted as our refuge of safety where we are nourished and protected by Christ. We dwell in the inner court (heavenly temple), where the reprobate forces of evil have no access. It is our heavenly Zion of safety while yet on this earth (wilderness). We are hid from the face of the serpent, meaning that Christ our King and Warrior stands up in the face of Satan on our behalf. We are hid in Christ, and therefore are eternally secure and safe. This safety remains during the inter-advental time, times, and half a time.

The two wings of the great eagle are symbolic of Christ. It is Christ the ultimate elect one who carries and flies us into the safety of the wilderness. This is symbolic language taken from the Old Testament to show God’s care for His elect people. The wilderness experience of Moses’ day was a type or parallel of the ekklesia’s wilderness experience during this inter-advental period. The consummation will usher in the Promised Land. A land we currently realize and enjoy in the Spirit through faith alone.

I have heard all kinds of crazy ideas that these two wings are a jet airplane, or some sort of spacecraft. How ludicrous! Scripture interprets Scripture.
“Ye have seen what I did unto the Egyptians, and how I bare you on eagles’ wings, and brought you unto myself” (Ex. 19:4; cf. De. 32:11; Ru. 2:12).

No jet airplanes in the days of Moses.

Re. 12:15 “And the serpent cast out of his mouth after the woman water as a river, that he might cause her to be carried away by the stream.”

Out of his mouth. It is the words of Satan and his false ministers. It is falsehoods in every arena of his given authority to deceive mankind. Armed with lies and false doctrines he attempts to deceive and flood God’s people with all manners of false doctrine and teaching, hoping to carry us away from the truth of Christ.

Re. 12:16 “And the earth helped the woman, and the earth opened her mouth and swallowed up the river which the dragon cast out of his mouth.”

The earth helped the woman. How does the earth help God's elect? The earth and the sea represent the dwelling of reprobate mankind. Satan, being cast down to earth, has been given control over the minds of reprobate mankind. We, the elect woman, spiritually dwell in Heavenly Jerusalem. The earth (reprobate) swallows the river of Satan's lies and false teachings. This they do, and eventually are being prepared for the ultimate and final eschatological war against the saints who hold the testimony of Jesus Christ (Re. 20:7-9).

Re. 12:17 “And the dragon waxed wroth with the woman, and went away to make war with the rest of her seed, that keep the commandments of God, and hold the testimony of Jesus:”

Satan, the dragon from the beginning of this vision, was angry with the woman (elect Israel) who brought forth Christ (the man-child). His failed attempt to kill Christ (through Herod) brought defeat upon Satan by the cross. Also, Satan lost the ensuing battle (with Michael and his angels). In his pride and arrogance he continues to war against God's elect, only to find that Christ protects His people in the wilderness. Satan, not yet convinced of his defeat (for he is deceived himself), continues in his attempt to deceive God's elect through the teaching of falsehoods and lies (rivers and streams of false doctrine). But the only ones listening to him are the vessels fitted for destruction. He fails again to deceive God's elect. Now Satan is waxed wroth against God's elect people and continues to war with the rest of God's elect that are still alive and have not been martyred.

As previously mentioned, Satan has been given only two weapons in his warfare against Christ's ekklesia. One, the outright murder and killing of God's elect (martyrdom), and two, the ability to try to deceive Christ's people. However, these weapons prove ineffectual, for neither of them will separate us from the love of God.
Ro. 8:35 “Who shall separate us from the love of Christ? shall tribulation, or anguish, or persecution, or famine, or nakedness, or peril, or sword? 36 Even as it is written, For thy sake we are killed all the day long; We were accounted as sheep for the slaughter. 37 Nay, in all these things we are more than conquerors through him that loved us. 38 For I am persuaded, that neither death, nor life, nor angels, nor principalities, nor things present, nor things to come, nor powers, 39 nor height, nor depth, nor any other creature, shall be able to separate us from the love of God, which is in Christ Jesus our Lord.”
Chapter 16
1260 days, 42 months, or time, times and a half time

In this segment we will discuss the final two mentions of this inter-advental symbolic period of 1260 days, 42 months, or time, times and a half time. This period of history is also the “millennium”, also symbolized by a thousand years.

Before we get started, let's briefly recap the previous segments that relate to the inter-advental period.

42 months - The Holy City trodden down (Re. 11:2).

The Holy City is heavenly Jerusalem, wherein the elect through faith alone dwell with Jesus Christ the reigning King along with the heavenly hosts. The reprobate have no access to our city and never will. Therefore, they hate Christ, His people, and the Gospel, and continue to wage war against our city, Christ, and His body of elect believers.

1,260 days - Two witnesses prophesy (Re. 11:3).

The corporate witness of the “ekklesia” proclaims the true and everlasting Gospel of Jesus Christ in which they will be persecuted, martyred, and hated for their testimony. Martyrdom (physical death) of the Saints is just one result of the hatred toward Christ and His people. Another aspect of “killing” is the heart hatred against the elect's witness of Christ and the true Gospel (Mt. 10:22; 24:9; Lu. 6:22; 19:14; 21:17; Jn. 7:7; 15:18; 15:25; 17:14; 1 Jn. 3:13).

Jesus said, “But I say unto you, That whosoever looketh on a woman to lust after her hath committed adultery with her already in his heart” (Mt. 5:28).

The actual physical act of adultery is but a consequence of an adulterous heart. Jesus said to look upon a woman with “lust” is the equivalent sin of an actual physical relationship. Likewise, to hate the Saints and their witness of the “true” Gospel of Grace alone is the equivalent of murder. Gospel and Christ haters (both non-Christian and pseudo-Christian) murder us all day long from their heart (Ro. 8:36). The reprobate are, and forever will be, murderers (Mt. 15:19, Lu. 6:45; Jn. 12:40).

1 Jn. 3:15 “Whosoever hateth his brother is a murderer: and ye know that no murderer hath eternal life abiding in him.”

1,260 days - The woman is fed in the wilderness (Re. 12:6).
The elect Body of Christ, depicted as the woman/bride, are “in the wilderness” while living on this earth. Our true home and citizenship is within heavenly Zion. Christ nourishes and feeds us during this existence on earth with the truth of the Gospel and Gospel doctrine. Jesus is our “Manna” in the wilderness. We enjoy and are guided through the wilderness of this life through the life-giving (resurrection) power of the Holy Spirit, which is the living water that issues from the “Rock”, Jesus (Jn. 4:10-14; 1 Co. 10:4).

This brings us to Revelation chapter 13 and Daniel 7:23-25.

Times, and times, and a half time - The beast continues to make war with the Saints and overcome them (Re. 13:5-7).

Times, and times, and a half time - The fourth beast is the fourth kingdom. The Saints are given into his hand (Da. 7:23-25).

Chapter 13 is a continuation from chapter 12, where the Dragon (Satan), cast down to earth after being defeated by Christ's victory on Calvary, continues to wage war against the Saints. John the Apostle sees, through spiritual revelation, that Satan the dragon is represented in the world by two beasts that are directly associated with Daniel's fourth beast, Rome. The two beasts derive their power from the dragon, Satan.

The two beasts are in essence representatives of Satan. Reprobate mankind is given control of socio-political and religious institutions as a weapon and means to persecute the Saints. The first beast is political and pagan in nature; the second beast is a pseudo-Christian entity that will assimilate the political, pagan, religious, and humanistic philosophies of the first beast.

Re. 13:1 ‘and he stood upon the sand of the sea. And I saw a beast coming up out of the sea, having ten horns, and seven heads, and on his horns ten diadems, and upon his heads names of blasphemy.’

Some versions of the Bible have “and he stood upon the sand of the sea” as verse 18 of chapter 12. It reads: “18 Then the dragon took his stand on the shore beside the sea” (NLT), “And he stood on the gravel of the sea” (WYC), “And he stood on the sand of the sea” (ESV). There are other translations that record this statement in 12:18, and I would concur. Satan was cast down to earth (Re. 12:9, 13), so naturally the symbolism of standing on the “sand” shows this earthly presence and better fits the context of chapter 12, rather than an opening statement in chapter 13 where some say John is standing on the sand of the sea.

“I saw a beast…” This first beast John sees is a direct allusion to Daniel 7:23-25, wherein Daniel the fourth beast represents Imperial and Pagan Rome.
Da. 7:25 “And he shall speak words against the Most High, and shall wear out the saints of the Most High; and he shall think to change the times and the law; and they shall be given into his hand until a time and times and half a time.”

This Romish beast will forever dwell with us till the consummation, Christ’s second advent.

John was instructed in Revelation 1:19 to, “Write therefore the things which thou sawest, and the things which are, and the things which shall come to pass hereafter;”

Imperial Rome was the dominant corrupt political empire present in John’s day. In John’s vision the identity of this persecuting power, Rome, was given for the encouragement and understanding of the suffering saints of John’s day. This identification is also meant for every elect soul throughout the successive periods of history.

Roman influences, philosophies, and ideologies are with us today in many aspects. Below are listed but a few:

Culture, Art, Politics, Pagan Religion, Architecture, Athletics, Homosexuality, Sodomy, Gluttony, Man-worship, Self-deification, Gratification of the flesh, Superstitions, Icons, Ensigns, Statues, etc., etc.

History documents that Roman influences were worldwide. More or less in different parts of the world, however the corrupt pagan influence and ideals of Rome (Daniel’s fourth beast) will be carried on and intensified culminating in the final eschatological battle just before Christ returns.

“... out of the sea...” The sea and the earth in this chapter are expressions depicting the world, the multitudes of reprobate mankind, in chaos. They will forever be in chaos due to the fact that “there is no peace, saith my God, to the wicked” (Is. 57:20-21). This expression (from the sea, out of the sea) is found numerous times in the Old Testament. Daniel 7:3 is just one expression: “And four great beasts came up from the sea, diverse one from another.”

“... having ten horns, and seven heads, and on his horns ten diadems.” This Roman beast, as alluded to from Daniel, now is shown to have “ten diadems” on his ten horns, whereas in Daniel the beast had not yet been given the diadems on his horns due to the fact that during Daniel’s day Rome was not yet the dominant political entity. Crowns or diadems are symbols of regal power and authority, generally worn by kings, emperors, queens, and monarchs. Spiritually speaking, this ungodly political beast is given authority by God to rule over mankind, also to war against and persecute the saints. Jesus Christ is also shown to wear many diadems signifying His ultimate royal and regal authority. Jesus is our King. He is the King of kings. Jesus is NOW ruling over all the kings
of this earth to bring about His sovereign preordained plan.

Re. 19:12 “And his eyes [are] a flame of fire, and upon his head [are] many diadems; and he hath a name written which no one knoweth but he himself.”

The Dragon and his two representative beasts are instruments in Christ's hand to punish and deceive reprobate mankind, while simultaneously bringing glory to God through the persecution of the Saints. Either way, God receives glory through the elect and reprobate.

“... upon his heads names of blasphemy.” This whole power was blasphemous in its claims and haughty pretensions. The word blasphemy seems to be used in the sense that titles and attributes that were claimed by Roman emperors can only belong to God. “Divine” or “Divinity” was ascribed to some attributes of this power that properly belong to God alone. This whole power thus assumed was in derogation of the attributes of God.

Re. 13:2 “And the beast which I saw was like unto a leopard, and his feet were as the feet of a bear, and his mouth as the mouth of a lion: and the dragon gave him his power, and his throne, and great authority.”

This Roman political beast is a composition of the previous beasts/empires recorded in Daniel. This beast absorbed and assimilated into its bosom all of the foul, pagan, and anti-God elements of the previous beasts. This Roman beast is in a continuous state of evolution to further its satanic political goals. Satan the dragon empowers this beast. The source of this evil authority is derived directly from Satan, though ultimately appointed and caused by God.

We have seen that in Revelation 12:3 the Dragon wears seven crowns upon his seven heads symbolizing his given authority. Likewise, the dragon's political beast now wears ten diadems/crowns on his ten horns.

The leopard, bear, and lion again are allusions to Daniel, something John's audience is familiar with: Medo-Persia, Babylon, and Greece/Macedonian empires.

This composite beast is not one solitary man, but rather a political entity comprised of reprobates; vessels of dishonor that are thoroughly anti-Christ/Gospel and, in essence, pagan in heart.

There is no solitary, ominous human person in the Scriptures known as “The Antichrist”. Satan is the ultimate anti-Christ, and all reprobates are anti-Christ plural. We will further develop this in upcoming segments under the heading “Antichrist”.

The seven heads of the Dragon are the symbols of seven great world empires:
Egypt, Assyria, Babylon, Medo-Persia, Greece, and Rome. The seven heads are symbols of universal dominion, and the horns are types of power. The horns also represent the multiple kingdoms that succeed the wounding of one of its heads.

Not wanting to get overly technical by attempting to identify each successive horn at this point, I'd rather just state that this beast is mainly political and satanically inspired.

Re. 13:3 “And I saw one of his heads as though it had been smitten/slain unto death; and his death-stroke was healed: and the whole earth wondered after the beast;”

Whence was this death-stroke inflicted on the beast? The Cross of Jesus Christ, of course. Jesus, through His death, burial, resurrection, and ascension to the right hand of the Father, fully established His reigning Kingdom. Imperial Rome, along with its then allied reprobate Israel, colluded to destroy Christ and His kingdom. In their failed attempt, Christ was victorious over the forces of evil and darkness, and forever destroyed the principalities, powers, bondage and spiritual control over Christ's elect subjects. Also, Satan and his representative political beast are now bound that they cannot have full sway over the minds of the elect dwelling throughout the Gentile nations (Re. 20:3; cf. Da. 2:44-45). Christ's victory also conquered death by and through the Gospel. This Gospel is now free to be proclaimed throughout the whole world to gather the wheat/elect into the barn.

“... death-stroke was healed...” In what sense was this Romish beast healed? We know that the consequences of Christ's victory on Calvary cannot be reversed. So to make proper sense of this wording we understand the Amillennial principle of the “already age” and the “not yet/age to come” distinction. Or in other words, “the two-age model.”

A couple of points must be mentioned. One is the distinction between the actual guilty verdict rendered on this beast by Christ (this age, the already), and two, the actual sentence being carried out by Christ at His second coming (the age to come). This is similar in principle to our Salvation and Kingdom. Through Jesus Christ the verdict is rendered. We are justified, sanctified, and glorified. We walk by faith and not sight (this age). At Christ's second coming the actual kingdom of God will be fully realized/manifested (the age to come). Likewise, Satan and his people will be forever destroyed in the age to come as a result of the Cross.

In the eyes of the reprobate world that hate Christ and His Kingdom, the continued existence of Imperial Rome through successive kings/emperors would have seemed to suggest to them that Christ was not victorious over the beast. Even the reprobate Jews would have thought that way. The reprobate Jews were longing for a political and powerful messiah/king that would overthrow their Roman oppressors. When Jesus claimed to be the King and Messiah of Israel,
they rejected the Kingdom of God/Heaven that Christ represented. Rome even mocked and spat upon Christ. Their rejection of the Kingdom was necessary to inaugurate and establish Christ’s Kingdom. So the continuing existence of Rome through its successors was in a sense a healing. Also remember, that the book/letter of Revelation was to aid and encourage the elect persecuted saints in their understanding of these beasts that are in unity with the dragon. The beast’s authority was indeed curtailed, but not broken in historical actuality. However, in principle it was broken, and Satan defeated. This would suggest to the Saints that persecution and martyrdom were in no way a defeat by the dragon and the beast, but their ultimate victory over Satan and the beast through faith.

“… the whole earth wondered after the beast;”
“… Everyone on earth marveled at this beast,”

The word used here, “thaumazo”, properly means to be astonished, to be amazed. The continued growth, pomp, and ceremony of this Roman beast caused reprobate mankind to be amazed and marvel after this beast. For this beast was in essence like unto them. It represented all that was intrinsically evil in man.

This beast received and inspired such a universal reverence it could fittingly be called adoration and worship. There can be no doubt. The application is to that secular Roman power which eventually would sustain the Papacy and vice versa. This homage and man worship was as wide and extensive as the boundaries of the Roman Empire had ever been and continues to be. Ultimately, the “whole earth.”

Re. 13:4 “and they worshipped the dragon, because he gave his authority unto the beast; and they worshipped the beast, saying, Who is like unto the beast? And who is able to war with him?”

Worship of the beast is, in essence, worship of Satan. Reprobate mankind is blinded and oblivious to this spiritual truth. The beast’s authority is derived from Satan. Man in his arrogant and crass pride is so intertwined and interwoven with this beast that they claim this beast to be all powerful, invincible. Who can war against this beast? Said as if Christ is but a puny, little, and insignificant person. As though He were a person who claimed to be a King and does not currently reign over the heavens and earth. These are words from the mouth of an unregenerate heart.

Unregenerate mankind, deluded with the idea that “might is right”, thus attribute to the Roman beast omnipotence, an attribute belonging only to God. Roman policy was to impress the public mind with the belief that their power was invincible. Nothing was able to resist that absolute despotism. Only by death or in hiding, was one to escape this beast’s evil grip.
Re. 13:5 “and there was given to him a mouth speaking great things and blasphemies; and there was given to him authority to continue forty and two months.”

The beast is given. In other words, was ordained by God to be an anti-Christ force of evil. These blasphemies initially impressed “upon his heads the name of blasphemy” (Re. 13:1), are now spoken through his mouth against the King of Kings. Rome’s deification of man, emperor, and false pagan gods are his blasphemy. This authority is given to the Roman beast for the whole of the inter-advental period.

Re. 13:6 “And he opened his mouth for blasphemies against God, to blaspheme his name, and his tabernacle, even them that dwell in the heaven.”

“… blaspheme his name.” By the beast's (Rome’s) own arrogant claims, by his given authority, he sets aside the Divine authority of Christ and His Kingdom. And by the impious declarations in derogation of the Divine claims.

“… his tabernacle.” Greek “skene”, meaning tent or tent habituation. This word is commonly applied to the sacred tent or tabernacle among the Hebrews during their wilderness experience. Also where the ark was kept, which was the seat of Hebrew/Jewish worship before the building of the temple. The meaning is that there would be a course of conduct and vile action by the Roman beast against the true church/ekklesia, the dwelling place of God, Christ, and the Holy Spirit on the earth, which is regarded as blasphemy. Again the hatred, persecution and martyrdom of the Saints is a direct assault against Christ, therefore a blasphemy against His own body.

“… them that dwell in the heaven.” These are the true worshipers: the elect of God, the members of the true church/ekklesia represented as dwelling in this Holy Tabernacle. Our God, our citizenship, our King, our brothers and sisters in Christ, and all the holy created angelic order dwell in Heavenly Zion.

Re. 13:7 “And it was given unto him to make war with the saints, and to overcome them: and there was given to him authority over every tribe and people and tongue and nation.”

The beast again is given authority by Satan (ultimately from God) to war against the saints and to overcome them. Not spiritually, for that cannot be, but to kill them and/or make their earthly existence troublesome. If there was ever a false hope promulgated in the arena of so-called Christianity, it is the false hope that the saints will not experience tribulation by the hands of the anti-Christ forces of evil. John the Apostle was not giving out any false hopes to his brothers and sisters in Christ. I could just envision John Hagee and the rest of the chiliasts telling the saints of that day that they were “not appointed unto wrath” and will be “raptured” before the ant-Christ forces of evil can harm them. Try telling that lie to
the saints who were tortured, thrown to the lions, beheaded, maimed, limbs torn asunder, and every other form of wicked and cruel treatment our brothers in the past ages have experienced at the hands of anti-Christ powers. The beast is also given authority over all mankind. And the reprobate will be deceived by the beast.

Re. 13:8 “And all that dwell on the earth shall worship him, every one whose name hath not been written from the foundation of the world in the book of life of the Lamb that hath been slain.”

It is the reprobate, spiritually speaking, who dwell on the earth. It is they who will worship the universal beastly kingdom. It is they whose names are not written in the Lamb’s Book of Life from the foundation of the world. It is they who were ordained form all eternity to be vessels molded and fitted for destruction. It is they who are our enemy.

Re. 13:9 “If any man hath an ear, let him hear.”

Only the elect will hear this truth.

Re. 13:10 “If any man is for captivity, into captivity he goeth: if any man shall kill with the sword, with the sword must he be killed. Here is the patience and the faith of the saints.”

John, our loving brother in Christ, gives us more encouragement. The dragon and his political beast will be repaid for their brutality against God’s saints in exact manner as exhibited.

Ro. 12:19 “Dearly beloved, avenge not yourselves, but rather give place unto wrath: for it is written, Vengeance is mine; I will repay, saith the Lord.”

Is. 63:4 “For the day of vengeance is in mine heart, and the year of my redeemed is come.”

Mt. 26:52 “Then saith Jesus to him, ‘Turn back thy sword to its place; for all who did take the sword, by the sword shall perish.’”

Je. 15:2 “And it shall come to pass, if they say unto thee, Whither shall we go forth? then thou shalt tell them, Thus saith the LORD; Such as are for death, to death; and such as are for the sword, to the sword; and such as are for the famine, to the famine; and such as are for the captivity, to the captivity.”

Re. 19:15 “And out of his (Jesus Christ’s) mouth goeth a sharp sword, that with it he should smite the nations: and he shall rule them with a rod of iron: and he treadeth the winepress of the fierceness and wrath of Almighty God.”

In our next segment, we will discuss the next beast: The lamb-like beast.
An Amillennial Understanding of the Kingdom of God

Nicholas A. Laurienzo

Chapter 17
The Lamb-Like Beast

Re. 13:11 “And I saw another beast coming up out of the earth; and he had two horns like unto a lamb, and he spake as a dragon.”

It is fitting that this beast should come up out of the earth. For they (reprobate pseudo-Christian mankind) have drunk deep and swallowed the “water as a river” that issued from Satan's mouth. The earth that helped the woman (elect bride of Christ), Revelation 12:15-16. These wicked ones not only tasted this poisonous water, but also drank deep and swallowed it. They drank the water of lies, falsehoods, pagan ungodly philosophies, and the sum total of all man-conceived religion that is anti-Christ/God and anti-Gospel. Their false doctrines quenched their thirst, their impious self-will, and their self-righteous pride. The water of lies and false doctrines that gives rise to the formation of the pseudo-Christian “like unto a lamb” institution of counterfeit and apostatized Christianity. Their unified main trait is the hellish doctrine of a Justification by and through MERITORIOUS GOOD WORKS, and a complete denial and hatred of the imputation of Christ's Righteousness as the sole and only ground of the elect's Justification.

This beast is also called “The False Prophet”.

Re. 16:13 “And I saw three unclean spirits by the manner of frogs go out of the mouth of the dragon (Satan), and of the mouth of the beast (Satan's sociopolitical establishments), and of the mouth of the false prophet (Satan's pseudo-Christian empire.)

Re. 19:20 “And the beast was caught, and with her the false prophet, that
made signs before her; in which he deceived them that took the character of the beast [that took the mark of the beast], and that worshipped the image of it. These two were sent quick into the pool of fire, burning with brimstone.”

Re. 20:10 “And the devil, that deceived them, was sent into the pool of fire and brimstone, where both the beast and false prophets shall be tormented day and night, into worlds of worlds. Amen.”

“...spake as a dragon.”

This false Christian beast speaks as Satan their father speaks. It is the institution of false Christian religion that is prostituted for evil motives and ends. It is religion that rejects the absolute Sovereignty of God the Father, God the Son Jesus Christ, and God the Holy Spirit. It is religion that rejects the Grace of God that was exhibited/manifested in and through the Son Jesus Christ for the complete and absolute Justification of His chosen elect people. It is religion that rejects the sole imputation of Christ's righteousness as the only ground of justification. It is religion, in essence, that like their father the Dragon refuses to submit to the absolute sovereignty of God in and through all things. It is religion that denies the person and work of our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ, by cleverly substituting the works of the false clergy through its ordinances and laity participation. Hence promoting the idea that the whole of God's salvific plan was to be efficaciously administered on and through the works of the clergy/church. It is the Religion of reprobate professing Christian mankind in denial of Grace alone, faith alone, in Christ alone.

This beast, also empowered by Satan, is employed to support, aid and abet the corrupt, despotic, political and civil first satanic beast. The ultimate goal of both these beasts is to cause them that dwell on earth (the reprobate) to, in an indirect and subtle manner, worship Satan (Re. 13:8).

The Origin and Conception of the “False Prophet”

The false prophet is not one solitary man, nor one false Christian sect, group, or denomination, but rather the collective body and witness of all false Christian expression. With its chief and most supreme, powerful, foul, satanic head of the body (false prophet) being the Papacy. The history of the corrupt Papacy is irrefutable. There is absolutely no Scriptural support that can be appealed to in the defense of this powerful and wicked beast. The collective bodies of this false prophet are allied directly and externally in full ecumenical communion with the Papacy, or allied indirectly and internally with her spiritually, that is, sharing and agreeing to similar foul and reprehensible doctrines of devils. Nonetheless, the false prophet is given authority by God to deceive reprobate mankind, simultaneously acting to stumble, persecute, and kill off the Elect body of Christ.

As with all false prophets, Jesus Christ is only a name and person they claim to
worship, follow, and adore. But in their dead black heart, Jesus’ name is only used as a pretense, the bait on the hook to gather into their folds unsuspecting and desperate souls. Through lies, distortion, guilt and manipulation these deceivers attempt to rule over their flock and feed them doctrines of devils. For they hate the true Christ of God, His true elect people, and His true Gospel.

The Papacy did not fall out of the sky to the earth in one day. It was conceived from the abyss of hell, and then further evolved from the very heart of reprobate and religious mankind. Its conception and embryonic stage was during the period and life of the Apostles.

As Jesus Christ was conceived in the womb of His virgin mother, Mary by the Holy Spirit to arise to be King, Messiah, and Saviour of true elect Israel, the beast (false prophet) should also arise to establish the great antithesis of all that pertaineth to Christ, righteousness, and His people.

Jesus, Peter and John call them false prophets.

Mt. 7:15 “Beware of false prophets, which come to you in sheep’s (lamb like) clothing, but inwardly they are ravening wolves” (cf. Mt. 24:11, 24; Mk.13:22).

Our Lord Jesus Christ warned His people of false Christian messengers who were to come in His name. Jesus said they are ravening wolves. Peter calls them false teachers also.

2 Pe. 2:1 “But there were false prophets also among the people, even as there shall be false teachers among you, who privily shall bring in damnable heresies, even denying the Lord that bought them, and bring upon themselves swift destruction.”

1 Jn. 4:1 “Beloved, believe not every spirit, but try the spirits whether they are of God: because many false prophets are gone out into the world.”

Our brother Paul also spoke against these false messengers. Their goal was to present a “false Christ", another Jesus, and a false Gospel. A “Jesus" that is a misrepresentation and substitute for the True and Holy One.

2 Co. 11:4 “For if he that cometh preacheth another Jesus, whom we did not preach, or if ye receive a different spirit, which ye did not receive, or a different gospel, which ye did not accept, ye do well to bear with him” (cf. Ga. 1:6-7).

Paul states they are false apostles.

2 Co. 11:13-15 “13 For such men are false apostles, deceitful workers, fashioning themselves into apostles of Christ. 14 And no marvel; for even Satan fashioneth himself into an angel of light. 15 It is no great thing
therefore if his ministers also fashion themselves as ministers of righteousness, whose end shall be according to their works.”

_Pseudapostolos #5570 Strongs:_ The root pseuda or pseudos meaning “pretender”, “untrue”, “erroneous”, “deceitful”, “false teacher”.

Like their father Satan, who was created by God as an angel/spirit of darkness and attempts to deceive the world that he was and is an angel of Light, his false ministers also deceivingly present themselves as ministers of righteousness. In reality they preach and teach justification by meritorious good works. Justifiably, their own false gospel of “works” will be their judge. They will be damned forever “according to their works.”

Paul calls them false brethren.

_Ga. 2:4 “And that because of false brethren unawares brought in, who came in privily to spy out our liberty which we have in Christ Jesus, that they might bring us into bondage.”_

These false brethren spoken about by Paul in Galatia were of the sect of James. Henceforth a heretical letter arose written under that name. They were Judaisers. Their goal was to bring the Gentile believers under the yoke of Moses as a means to justification. These false brethren hated Paul, and distorted his message of Justification through faith alone without all works.

_Ja. 2:21 “Was not Abraham our father justified by works…. 24 Ye see that by works a man is justified, and not only by faith.”_

Paul was forever troubled and hated by these false brethren (rf. 2 Co. 11:26).

False prophets are thoroughly corrupt.

_1 Ti. 6:3-5 “3 If any man teacheth a different doctrine, and consenteth not to sound words, even the words of our Lord Jesus Christ, and to the doctrine which is according to godliness; 4 he is puffed up, knowing nothing, but doting about questionings and disputes of words, whereof cometh envy, strife, railings, evil surmisings, 5 wranglings of men corrupted in mind and bereft of the truth, supposing that godliness is a way of gain.”_

_2 Ti. 3:1-8 “1 But know this, that in the last days grievous times shall come. 2 For men shall be lovers of self, lovers of money, boastful, haughty, railers, disobedient to parents, unthankful, unholy, 3 without natural affection, implacable, slanderers, without self-control, fierce, no lovers of good, 4 traitors, headstrong, puffed up, lovers of pleasure rather than lovers of God; 5 holding a form of godliness, but having denied the power therefore. From these also turn away. 6 For of these are they that creep into houses, and take captive silly
women laden with sins, led away by divers lusts, 7 ever learning, and never able to come to the knowledge of the truth. 8 And even as Jannes and Jambres withstood Moses, so do these also withstand the truth. Men corrupted in mind, reprobate concerning the faith.”

Early Manifestations and Infancy of the False Prophets

This section is provided to present a brief historical background to show the developmental stages of early false Christianity to the rise of the Papacy.

The early manifestation of false prophets originated with so-called Jewish converts to the Messiah Jesus. The two notable movements within Judaism, among others, were the Ebionites and the Nazarenes.

The Ebionites

The Ebionites were merely orthodox Jewish false Christians of Palestine who continued to observe the Mosaic Law (Torah). Some sects within Ebionism were those who observed the Mosaic Law for themselves, but did not require strict adherence from the Gentile converts to Christ. And there were those also who held that Gentile adherence of the Torah was necessary for Justification before God.

The Ebionites clung to the observance of the Jewish Torah Law. They regarded Paul the Apostle as an apostate from the Jewish Torah keeping Christian community. Some Ebionites accept, but others reject the virginal birth of Christ, though all reject His pre-existence and His Divinity.

The general philosophy and characteristics of the Ebionites were a brand of Gnosticism. Man is saved by subjective knowledge (gnosis). Subjectivism. Also, believing in Jesus the master teacher, and being water baptized (John's Baptism) unto remission of sins. In this manner he receives knowledge and strength to faithfully observe all the precepts of Torah Law.

Their overall system is a synthesis of Pantheism, Persian Dualism, Judaism, and corrupted Christianity all fused together.

They also believed in the supremacy of James over the Jerusalem Church.

The Nazarenes

This early group of followers became know as the Notzerim. Also Notzrim, or Nozrim, which means Nazarenes. They were followers of Jesus from Nazareth.

They were of the sect of James/Yaakov the brother of Jesus/Yehoshua. They were Torah observant Jews. The differentiating characteristics from their fellow
ethnic Jew brethren of that time, was their belief that the messiah had already come and was still alive. They expected Jesus/Yehoshua to complete His task and return within their generation (Mt. 24:34).

The early Gentile churches, under the influence of Pauline doctrine, considered the Nazarenes to be heretics and Judaisers. Likewise, the Nazarene sects had a rather poor view of Paul.

Their hatred of Paul (primarily his teaching of Justification through faith alone apart from Torah observance) is recorded in anti-Paul writings. Here is a sample:

“They declare that he was a Greek... He went up to Jerusalem, they say, and when he had spent some time there, he was seized with a passion to marry the daughter of the priest. For this reason he became a proselyte [through the Saducee movement, hence his working for the Temple police] and was circumcised. Then, when he failed to get the girl, he flew into a rage and wrote against circumcision, and against the Sabbath and the Law” (Epiphanius, Panarion, 30.16-9).

One can read for oneself that this is pure slander against Paul. There is no question the early Jewish followers of Christ, under the leadership of James, who were Ebionites, Nazarenes, or Elchesaites, maintained their distinctive Jewish Torah keeping roots. Also they, for the most part, were anti-Pauline.

References to the Nazarenes and their beliefs can be found in the writings of Justin Martyr, Epiphanius, Jerome, Irenaeus, Hippolytus and Origen.

The Nazarenes, (also the Ebionites), were initially viewed by the Pharisees as sects within Judaism due to their Torah observance. They were partially tolerated (Ac. 5:34-39). But not so with Paul. All Torah bound Jews, whether Jesus following or Jesus rejecting, treated Paul as one who started a new religion and fell outside the scope of the Torah adhering Jews.

Nazarenes continued to exist until about 400 CE (some historians say later) after they were thoroughly dispersed after the final Jewish revolt under Bar Kokhba. All the while maintaining that Jesus had never abrogated Jewish law adherence, and that Paul was a deceiver who had perverted the message of Jesus.

http://www.jewishvirtuallibrary.org/jsource/Judaism/revolt1.html

http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Bar_Kokhba_revolt

The rise and formation of false prophets from the Gentile Eastern Orthodox and the false prophets of the Gentile West churches pretty much extinguished the influences of the Nazarene Torah observing sects. However, much of their Judaising tendencies had firmly taken root. Both Gentile East and West adopted
and developed a hybrid and heretical form of Justification/Salvation by Grace and works. Eventually, the Nazarene (Notzerim) and anti-Pauline Judaistic letter named James was incorporated into false Gentile Christianity.

It is utterly disgraceful, dishonest, and deceptive for those who profess to be Protestant and Reformed to claim that Paul and James were not at odds with one another, either in their person, or in their two mutually distinct views on Justification. There is so much historical evidence, let alone Scriptural evidence, to show that in no way can James the Nazarene Torah-bound Jew and Paul's Gospel of Grace/Justification alone, through Faith alone, ever be reconciled.

For example, there is the witness of the Pseudo-Clementine Homilies. These documents, probably dating into the latter second century, are a very late witness to a tradition that Paul and James were not in agreement.

The below website is pro-Nazarene, pro-Torah-observing, false Christianity. He sees the Constantinian formation of Roman Catholicism as the major whore of Babylon. But what both of these false prophets have in common, are a false Gospel and a false Christ.

http://www.yashanet.com/library/nazarene_judaism.html

Ep. 4:11-15 “11 And he gave some to be apostles; and some, prophets; and some, evangelists; and some, pastors and teachers; 12 for the perfecting of the saints, unto the work of ministering, unto the building up of the body of Christ: 13 till we all attain unto the unity of the faith, and of the knowledge of the Son of God, unto a full grown man, unto the measure of the stature of the fulness of Christ: 14 that we may be no longer children, tossed to and fro and carried about with every wind of doctrine, by the sleight of men, in craftiness, after the wiles of error; 15 but speaking truth in love, we may grow up in all things into him, who is the head, even Christ;”

Like the ship not fully anchored during the raging storm being tossed to and fro, so too can God’s people get tossed to and fro and carried about with every wind of false doctrine. But we do have an anchor and foundation that is immovable. Our foundation and anchor is Jesus Christ alone. He is our head. Jesus Christ is the head and leader of His ekklesia - His Body, the Body of Christ.

The role of Apostles, Prophets, evangelists, pastors, and teachers is for the perfecting of the saints (not to create them through canonization), and to build up the body of Christ “till we all attain unto the unity of the faith, and of the knowledge of the Son of God.”

True men of God who are called to these offices and roles point individuals to Christ and teach the true Gospel of Jesus Christ. True men of God magnify Christ in such a way as to make men dependent on Christ alone for their
salvation. Not themselves, nor a church body, nor any good works performed themselves, nor the works of others on their behalf.

Let's not kid ourselves. A true unity of the faith can only be attained when God's people understand the "knowledge of the Son of God." That is, His person/Deity and the redemptive work of Christ. These two elements are inseparable and have equal importance. They give us our distinct identity as believers and followers of Jesus Christ, as compared to all the other religions of the world, including the false Christendom. These two elements are most critical for God's elect to understand. If one is incorrect, the whole is lost and useless.

Our brother Paul said that if Christ was not raised from the dead, then our whole faith is in vain. The resurrection of our Lord Jesus Christ is the fruit of His work. It is our inheritance also. If one were to deny the resurrection of Jesus Christ, then he might as well throw the Christian faith in the garbage can. The resurrection is not only a transformation of physical death and decay to a renewed, glorified bodily life, but also a spiritual transaction from death to life of our dead and depraved soul. Jesus came to give life. He is the God of the living and not of the dead.

For the false prophet (pseudo-Christianity) to gain any momentum, credence, growth, and authority over the souls of men, the crack in the door must be made in the work of Jesus Christ. This would give the beast a plausible and successful entry, while still maintaining a seemingly visible authenticity by paying homage (lip service) to the Divinity of Christ. This strategy was most successful in that the beast can now substitute the finished work of Christ (the objective Gospel, Imputation of Righteousness, and eternal sainthood status of the redeemed elect), for the works of the beast/false prophet church. The beastly church, after usurping and dethroning Christ, then becomes the mediator between God and Man. The beast/false prophet now acts as the dispenser and conduit of God's graces (sacraments) for the hope of saving man. The promises of regeneration (spiritual resurrection), justification, and eventual glorification (bodily resurrection) of Christ's people have been made subject and dependent on and through the role, office, and works of a group of men called the clergy and their superstitious liturgical practices. This clever substitution was successful for the beast/false prophet in that it dethroned Christ as the only mediator between God and man.

1Ti. 2:5 “For there is one God, and one mediator between God and men, the man Christ Jesus;”

The methods employed by the false prophet in presenting his false gospel are: Sacerdotalism, Sacramentalism, Neonomianism, Animism, Clergy/Laity distinction, Iconalism, Idolatry, Superstition, excommunication and death for heretics, Monasticism, Mystical and Superstitious liturgical practices, and a monarchical and patriarchal ecclesiastical system. These are but a few methods employed by the beast for the ruination of souls.
Paul, called to be an apostle to the Gentiles, had his task cut out for him. He was entering a Gentile world replete with every foul and pagan practice imaginable. Pagans had their temples, priests, pantheon of false gods, altars for sacrifice, liturgical forms of worship, animism, worship of images, statues, idols, and a distinct clergy system dressed apart from their subject laity.

Paul was not attempting to convert Gentiles from their current form of paganism to a Christianized form of paganism. If that were the case, Paul would have been better off just being a proselytizer for Torah adhering false Christianity. Rather, Paul preached and taught that through faith alone, in Jesus Christ alone, without all works (including Torah observance) they are Justified and have an inheritance in heavenly Jerusalem. To Paul, all religious activity, both good works displayed through acts and virtues of charity, and dead works on the part of man to appease the wrath of God, were useless.

Unregenerate and reprobate mankind does not like the Gospel Paul announced, for it takes away the pride and ability of man to aid, cooperate, and act on his behalf for his own redemption.

Ge. 3:7 “And the eyes of them both were opened, and they knew that they were naked; and they sewed fig leaves together, and made themselves aprons.”

Unregenerate men love their fig leaves. Why? Because it is a work they have performed. “They sewed,” you see.

But the works of man are never considered by God to be a suitable covering for his sin/nakedness, for they must be clothed with the righteousness of God. The Lamb’s robe of righteousness, a work that only God Himself can perform through Jesus Christ alone.

Jesus alone is our High priest and Holy sacrifice. All salvific activity between God and elect man is mediated through Christ alone. Period!

1Ti. 2:5 “For there is one God, and one mediator between God and men, the man Christ Jesus;”

We are elected through Christ alone.
We are justified through Christ alone.
We are regenerated through Christ alone.
We are given faith in and through Christ alone.
Our glorification and eternal inheritance is through Christ alone.
We worship God through Christ alone.
We confess our sins to God alone, through Christ alone.
Our hope is through Christ alone.
Our resurrection is through Christ alone.
We have communion with God through Christ alone, through faith alone. Our sins and guilt have been washed away by and through Christ alone. We have been set free by and through Christ alone.

All salvific activity between God and elect man is mediated through Christ alone. The indwelling gift of the Holy Spirit is our seal that we are one with the living body of Christ. It is finished!

We are now to proclaim the good news, teach the brethren, and wait for Christ's return.

The false prophet lamb-like beast hates the true concepts of “Grace alone”, “Christ alone”, and “faith alone”. Whenever the beast hears the word “imputation”, he recoils. For imputation renders the beastly and false Christian church, with its false priests, false ministers, and false plan of salvation through the will and work of man, useless.

The Pauline message of Christ to the Gentiles was quickly distorted and substituted for the pagan variety. It is this “alone” business that did not rest well with pagans. Hence the development of an improvised brand of Christianity (that was and still is false) was established. The pagans can now continue in their heathen practices and add but one more God (the Trinity God) to their collection of gods. Although officially the beast (false prophet) will deny this, and he should because he is the father of lies, deceit and falsehoods, in practice this is made evident.

Pagans can continue to worship in their elaborate temples and sanctuaries.

Pagans can continue having their unique clergy priesthood.

Pagans can still enjoy their pantheon of false gods, now renamed the intercession (merit exchanging) of the dead saints, and continue to practice a “peculiar” worship of their Queen mother (Mary) to act as a co-mediator between Christ and man. If they’re truly blessed, the Queen herself will forgive their sins.

Pagans can still enjoy their sacrificial altars for the perpetual unbloody sacrifice of Jesus Christ, which is a denial and rejection of the efficacy of Christ's one time sacrifice. An utterly blasphemous ritual the beast practices.

Pagans can still practice their liturgical forms of worship to satisfy their ego, and present a grand show of performance (will worship) to their audience with all the necessary props. Lit candles, burning incense, elaborate stage costumes, golden cups and plates, ornamented altars, bell ringing, etc.

Pagans can still enjoy their animism through the rites and ceremonies of priest craft and superstition, deceiving themselves into thinking that they are calling
Christ out of heaven to manifest Himself in a piece of bread and a cup of wine, so like their fathers did in calling the gods out of the heavens to manifest their “real presence” in their carved and molded images made like unto men and beasts of the earth.

These, the pagans call sacraments.

Pagans can still enjoy their worship of images (icons), statues, and idols. And just maybe, if they chant, pray, mutilate and flagellate their very own flesh within the confines of their monasteries, their icons, statues, and idols may even miraculously weep and bleed for them. And for a bonus, if they flat out cut (blood-let) themselves of evil spirits, then just maybe, their very own eucharist will throb, pulsate, and bleed for them.

Pagans can still maintain their distinct and loved clergy system that is dressed apart from their subjected laity: a new breed of Pharisees.

Pagans can still have their elaborate plan of salvation through works. Now renamed meritorious good works.

The Scriptures call this activity “the mystery of iniquity”. But it is no mystery for the elect who have been made alive by Christ (2 Th. 2:7).

These are some of the activities of the beast, a beast that hates the Gospel.
I do not agree with the term “Church Fathers” as understood by the West (Romanists), the East (Orthodox), and the Protestants (ecumenical children sympathetic to Rome). The usage of the word “father” in the spiritual sense is repugnant to God and Christ (rf. Mt. 23:8-10).

They are not my fathers at all. They are the fathers of the beast. So in using this term (fathers) henceforth, there should be no doubt about where I stand on this matter.

From the “fathers”, the heretical seeds of false dogma and doctrine that were planted by false brethren and teachers during the life and ministry of the Apostles were further watered and nourished. Let it be noted also, that not everything the “fathers” taught and believed was heretical. This section is only to show where the “fathers” departed from the faith once delivered to the Saints (Jude 3).

It is the “fathers” that give Roman Catholicism and Eastern Orthodoxy their distinctive false teaching of Apostolic Succession and a Tradition that is of equal authority as Scripture. It is through and by an understanding of the “fathers”, that a post-reformation attempt is made to engender and foster ecumenical unity with the beastly (two-horned) false prophet: East and West.

A quote from Robert E. Webber: “The early Fathers can bring us back to what is common and help us get behind our various traditions ... Here is where our unity lies. ... evangelicals need to go beyond talk about the unity of the church to experience it through an attitude of acceptance of the whole church and an entrance into dialogue with the Orthodox, Catholic, and other Protestant bodies” (Ancient-Future Faith, 1999, p. 89).
Robert E. Webber is just one of thousands of unregenerate men who are held in
high esteem by the beastly, false-Christian, religious empire.

Roman Catholic, Orthodox, Protestant, and Evangelical ecumenical apologetic
ministries appeal to the "fathers" as proof that their doctrines and dogmas are to
be found in the earliest traditions of the church, thus attempting to show that their
teachings are Scriptural. Now it is true that the beast will find corroboration for
their false doctrines in the "fathers". There is no denial about this on my part.
However, that does not automatically make false teachings true or Scriptural just
because a bunch of men, "so-called fathers", taught them. Some Reformed
Protestant and evangelical groups also enlist the "fathers" in support of their
doctrines. This should not be. Scripture alone is sufficient for the living Body of
Christ. The Gospel and nothing but the Gospel is the filter that eliminates corrupt
dogma and doctrine.

The real fact of the matter is the "church fathers" were mostly infected with the
philosophies of Socrates, Plato, and Aristotle among others, along with the
heathen and mystical religions contemporaneous with their culture. So were the
Jews for some 400 years before the first Advent of our Lord. Their understanding
of the Christ event was heavily filtered through these pagan philosophies.

2 Ti. 3:16-17 “16 Every scripture inspired of God is also profitable for teaching,
for reproof, for correction, for instruction which is in righteousness. 17 That the
man of God may be complete, furnished completely unto every good work.”

Scripture alone is our only foundation. This is not so with the beastly East/West
and their allies. For them, it is Scripture and traditional teachings of the clergy
fathers. A tradition that was accepted from their “fathers”, and a tradition that is
continuously evolving further from truth to this very day.

The writings of the “fathers”, including their creeds and ecumenical councils, are
not to be compared with the inspiration of the Scriptures. They are not at all on
par with the Holy Writ.

The “fathers” are grouped in different ways:

*Apostolic fathers* (second century)
*Ante-Nicene fathers* (second and third centuries)
*Nicene fathers* (fourth century)
*Post-Nicene fathers* (fifth century)

“Nicene” refers to the Council of Nicaea in A.D. 325.

Some other ways they are referred to are:
Greek fathers
Latin fathers
Patristic fathers

Some are called “doctors”

There are some “fathers” recognized from the East that are not recognized by the West and vice-versa. Also there are “fathers” recognized by both East and West.

The Roman beast has their own distinct list of “fathers”, while the Orthodox beast has their own also that differs with Rome. Within Orthodoxy, the differing sects have variants also.

Some “fathers” are considered Saints, while some others are not. Also to be noted, one considered as a heretic could still be called a “father” and then is considered as quite orthodox according to the beast.

Below is a partial list of “church fathers” from the Roman Catholic perspective. The dates are an approximate date of death. The names in bold type are Doctors of the (beast) Church, which gives them a certain pre-eminence. The beast titled some “saints”, and others not.

Pope St. Clement I (ca. 99)
St. Ignatius of Antioch (ca. 110)
St. Polycarp (ca. 155)
St. Justin Martyr (ca. 165)
Athenagoras (ca. 200?)
Theophilus of Antioch (ca. 200?)
St. Irenaeus (ca. 202)
Clement of Alexandria (ca. 215)
Tertullian (ca. 220)
St. Hippolytus of Rome (235/6)
Origen (253/4)
St. Cyprian (258)
St. Methodius of Olympus (ca. 300)
Eusebius of Caesarea (ca. 339)
Aphraates (ca. 350)
St. Hilary of Poitiers (ca. 367)
St. Eusebius of Vercelli (371)
St. Ephrem the Syrian (373)
St. Athanasius (373)
St. Basil (379)
St. Cyril of Jerusalem (387)
St. Gregory of Nazianzus (ca. 390)
St. Gregory of Nyssa (ca. 394)
Apostolic Fathers of the second century were teaching the false gospel that baptism, celibacy, and martyrdom provided forgiveness of sin. And in later “fathers” Clement, Origen, Cyril, Jerome, Ambrose, Augustine, Theodore, and John Chrysostom, we find in their lives and teachings the seed plot of almost all that arose later. Here, in infantile stages, appear the dogmas of purgatory, transubstantiation, consubstantiation, priestly mediation, baptismal regeneration, the whole sacramental system, clergy/laity distinction and many more falsehoods.

Let’s examine some false teachings of the beast “fathers”; doctrines and dogmas of devils that support and strengthen the beast and enslave their followers; doctrines and dogmas that confound and destroy the Gospel of Jesus Christ.

The “fathers” replaced the objective and historical Gospel of Jesus Christ for a subjective and mystical form of religion they called Christianity. This mystical religion in essence is not new. It is rather a continuation of the pagan mystery religions. It was a mixture of corrupted Judaism, pagan philosophy, heathen mystery, and occult liturgical practices. The real message of Imputed Righteousness as taught by Paul's Gospel was distorted and lost through this beastly creation.

Let's examine some of the major heresies the beast flourishes on.
Baptismal Regeneration and/or Sacrament of Baptism

A brief explanation: Water Baptism is the means by which the Holy Spirit regenerates and eventually saves a person. All sins committed prior to baptism are forgiven and washed away by the power of Christ. All, including infants, should be baptized for the remission of sins and entrance into the church of Jesus Christ.

Roman Catholicism, Orthodox of all persuasions, Reformed Protestants, and some evangelical groups hold to this heresy. The “fathers” held and taught this heresy. A few notable ones were Justin Martyr, Augustine of Hippo, Cyril of Jerusalem, Tertullian, Cyprian, Hippolytus, Irenaeus, Clement of Alexandria, Hermas, and many more.

Also to be noted, not only with Gentiles, but also in the Ebionite and Nazarene sects of false Christianity, this heresy was promulgated.

William Webster, a former Catholic turned Evangelical, in his 1995 book The Church of Rome at the Bar of History, freely admits the unanimous position of the Church Fathers as to what is called “baptismal regeneration”: “The doctrine of baptism is one of the few teachings within Roman Catholicism for which it can be said that there is a universal consent of the Fathers.... From the early days of the Church, baptism was universally perceived as the means of receiving four basic gifts: the remission of sins, deliverance from death, regeneration, and the bestowal of the Holy Spirit” (Webster, page 95-96).

THE EPISTLE OF BARNABAS (c. A.D. 70)
Now let us see if the Lord has been at any pains to give us a foreshadowing of the waters of Baptism and of the cross. Regarding the former, we have the evidence of Scripture that Israel would refuse to accept the washing which confers the remission of sins and would set up a substitution of their own instead [Jer 22:13; Isa 16:1-2; 33:16-18; Psalm 1:3-6]. Observe there how he describes both the water and the cross in the same figure. His meaning is, “Blessed are those who go down into the water with their hopes set on the cross.” Here he is saying that after we have stepped down into the water, burdened with sin and defilement, we come up out of it bearing fruit, with reverence in our hearts and the hope of Jesus in our souls (11:1-10, shortened).

THE SHEPHERD OF HERMAS (c. A.D. 140)
“I have heard, sir,” said I, “from some teachers, that there is no other repentance except that which took place when we went down into the water and obtained the remission of our former sins.” He said to me, “You have heard rightly, for so it is” (The Shepherd 4:3:1-2).

They had need [the Shepherd said] to come up through the water, so that they
might be made alive; for they could not otherwise enter into the kingdom of God, except by putting away the mortality of their former life. These also, then, who had fallen asleep, received the seal of the Son of God, and entered into the kingdom of God. For, [he said,] before a man bears the name of the Son of God, he is dead. But when he receives the seal, he puts mortality aside and again receives life. The seal, therefore, is the water. They go down into the water dead [in sin], and come out of it alive (ibid 9:16:2-4).

JUSTIN MARTYR (inter A.D. 148-155)
Whoever is convinced and believes that what they are taught and told by us is the truth, and professes to be able to live accordingly, is instructed to pray and to beseech God in fasting for the remission of their former sins, while we pray and fast with them. Then they are led by us to a place where there is water; and there they are reborn in the same kind of rebirth in which we ourselves were reborn: In the name of God, the Lord and Father of all, and of our Savior Jesus Christ, and of the Holy Spirit, they receive the washing with water. For Christ said, “Unless you be reborn, you shall not enter into the kingdom of heaven.” ...The reason for doing this, we have learned from the Apostles (The First Apology 61).

THEOPHILUS OF ANTIOCH (c. A.D. 181)
Moreover, those things which were created from the waters were blessed by God, so that this might also be a sign that men would at a future time receive repentance and remission of sins through water and the bath of regeneration — all who proceed to the truth and are born again and receive a blessing from God (To Autolycus 2:16).

IRENAEUS (c. A.D. 190)
“And [Naaman] dipped himself...seven times in the Jordan” [2 Kings 5:14]. It was not for nothing that Naaman of old, when suffering from leprosy, was purified upon his being baptized, but [this served] as an indication to us. For as we are lepers in sin, we are made clean, by means of the sacred water and the invocation of the Lord, from our old transgressions, being spiritually regenerated as new-born babes, even as the Lord has declared: “Except a man be born again through water and the Spirit, he shall not enter into the kingdom of heaven” (Fragment 34).

TERTULLIAN (inter A.D. 200-206)
“A treatise on our sacrament of water, by which the sins of our earlier blindness are washed away and we are released for eternal life will not be superfluous......taking away death by the washing away of sins. The guilt being removed, the penalty, of course, is also removed.....Baptism is itself a corporal act by which we are plunged in water, while its effect is spiritual, in that we are freed from sins (On Baptism 1:1; 5:6; 7:2).

...no one can attain salvation without Baptism, especially in view of the declaration of the Lord, who says: “Unless a man shall be born of water, he shall
not have life” (On Baptism 12:1).

CLEMENT OF ALEXANDRIA (ante A.D. 202)
When we are baptized, we are enlightened. Being enlightened, we are adopted as sons. Adopted as sons, we are made perfect. Made perfect, we become immortal. “and sons all of the Most High” [Psalm 82:6]. This work is variously called grace, illumination, perfection, and washing. It is a washing by which we are cleansed of sins; a gift of grace by which the punishments due our sins are remitted; an illumination by which we behold that holy light of salvation -- that is, by which we see God clearly; and we call that perfection which leaves nothing lacking. Indeed, if a man know God, what more does he need? Certainly it were out of place to call that which is not complete a true gift of God’s grace. Because God is perfect, the gifts He bestows are perfect (The Instructor of Children 1:6:26:1).

RECOGNITIONS OF CLEMENT (c. A.D. 221)
But you will perhaps say, “What does the baptism of water contribute toward the worship of God?” In the first place, because that which has pleased God is fulfilled. In the second place, because when you are regenerated and born again of water and of God, the frailty of your former birth, which you have through men, is cut off, and so ...you shall be able to attain salvation; but otherwise it is impossible. For thus has the true Prophet [Jesus] testified to us with an oath: “Verily, I say to you, that unless a man is born again of water....he shall not enter into the kingdom of heaven” (Recognitions 6:9).

ORIGEN (post A.D. 244)
Formerly there was Baptism, in an obscure way....now, however, in full view, there is regeneration in water and in the Holy Spirit. Formerly, in an obscure way, there was manna for food; now, however, in full view, there is the true food, the flesh of the Word of God as He Himself says: “My flesh is truly food, and My blood is truly drink” [John 6:55] (Homilies on Numbers 7:2).

The Church received from the Apostles the tradition of giving Baptism even to infants. For the Apostles, to whom were committed the secrets of divine mysteries, knew that there is in everyone the innate stains of sin, which must be washed away through water and the Spirit (Commentaries on Romans 5:9).

CYPRIAN OF CARTHAGE (c. 200 - 258 A.D.)
But afterwards, when the stain of my past life had been washed away by means of the water of re-birth, a light from above poured itself upon my chastened and now pure heart; afterwards through the Spirit which is breathed from heaven, a second birth made of me a new man... Thus it had to be acknowledged that what was of the earth and was born of the flesh and had lived submissive to sins, had now begun to be of God, inasmuch as the Holy Spirit was animating it (To Donatus 4).
[When] they receive also the **Baptism of the Church**...then finally can they be fully sanctified and be the sons of God...since it is written, “Except a man be born again of water and of the Spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God” *(Letters 71[72]:1)*.

[It] behooves those to be baptized...so that they are prepared, in the lawful and true and only **Baptism of the holy Church**, by divine regeneration, for the kingdom of God...because it is written, “Except a man be born of water and of the Spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God” *(Letters 72[73]:21)*.

**SEVENTH COUNCIL OF CARTHAGE (c. A.D. 256)**

And in the gospel our Lord Jesus Christ spoke with his divine voice, saying, “Except a man be born again of water and the Spirit, he cannot enter the kingdom of God.” ...Unless therefore they receive saving **Baptism in the Catholic Church, which is one**, they cannot be saved, but will be condemned with the carnal in the judgment of the Lord Christ.

**APHRAATES THE PERSIAN SAGE (inter A.D. 336-345)**

For from Baptism we receive the Spirit of Christ. At that same moment in which the priests invoke the Spirit, heaven opens, and He descends and rests upon the waters; and those who are baptized are clothed in Him. For the Spirit is absent from all those who are born of the flesh, until they come to the water of re-birth; and then they receive the Holy Spirit....in the second birth, that through Baptism, they receive the Holy Spirit *(Treatises 6:14)*.

**CYRIL OF JERUSALEM (c. A.D. 350)**

*If any man does not receive Baptism, he does not have salvation. The only exception is the martyrs, who, even without water, will receive the kingdom...for the Savior calls martyrdom a Baptism* *(cf. Mark 10:38)* ...Bearing your sins, you go down into the water; but the calling down of grace seals your soul and does not permit that you afterwards be swallowed up by the fearsome dragon. You go down dead in your sins, and come up made alive in righteousness *(Catechetical Lectures 3:10,12)*.

Since man is of a twofold nature, composed of body and soul, the purification also is twofold: the corporeal for the corporeal and the incorporeal for the incorporeal. **The water cleanses the body, and the Spirit seals the soul**.... When you go down into the water, then, regard not simply the water, but look for salvation through the power of the Holy Spirit. **For without both you cannot attain to perfection.** It is not I who says this, but the Lord Jesus Christ, who has the power in this matter.

And He says, “Unless a man be born again” -- and He adds the words “of water and of the Spirit” – “he cannot enter into the kingdom of God.” He that is baptized with water, but is not found worthy of the Spirit, does not receive the grace in perfection. Nor, if a man be virtuous in his deeds, but does not receive the seal
by means of the water, shall he enter the kingdom of heaven.

A bold saying, but not mine; for it is Jesus who has declared it (Catechetical Lectures 3:4).

BASIL THE GREAT (c. A.D. 330 - 379)
For prisoners, Baptism is ransom, forgiveness of debts, death of sin, regeneration of the soul, a resplendent garment, an unbreakable seal, a chariot to heaven, a protector royal, a gift of adoption (Sermons on Moral and Practical Subjects: On Baptism 13:5).

This then is what it means to be “born again of water and Spirit”: just as our dying is effected in the water [Rom 6:3-4; Col 2:11-13], our living is wrought through the Spirit. In three immersions and in an equal number of invocations the great mystery of Baptism is completed in such a way that the type of death may be shown figuratively, and that by the handing on of divine knowledge the souls of the baptized may be illuminated. If, therefore, there is any grace in the water, it is not from the nature of water but from the Spirit’s presence there (On the Holy Spirit 15:35).

AMBROSE OF MILAN (c. A.D. 333 - 397)
The Lord was baptized, not to be cleansed Himself but to cleanse the waters, so that those waters, cleansed by the flesh of Christ which knew no sin, might have the power of Baptism. Whoever comes, therefore, to the washing of Christ lays aside his sins (Commentary on the Gospel of Luke 2:83).

The Church was redeemed at the price of Christ’s blood. Jew or Greek, it makes no difference; but if he has believed, he must circumcise himself from his sins [in Baptism -- Col 2:11-13] so that he can be saved...for no one ascends into the kingdom of heaven except through the sacrament of Baptism....“Unless a man be born again of water and the Holy Spirit, he cannot enter the kingdom of God” (On Abraham 2:11:79,84).

You have read, therefore, that the three witnesses in Baptism are one: water, blood and the Spirit [1 John 5:8]; and if you withdraw any one of these, the sacrament of Baptism is not valid. For what is the water without the cross of Christ? A common element with no sacramental effect. Nor on the other hand is there any mystery of regeneration without water: for “unless a man be born again of water and the Spirit, he cannot enter the kingdom of God” (On the Mysteries 4:20).

GREGORY OF NAZIANZ (c. A.D. 330 - 389)
Baptism is God’s most beautiful and magnificent gift...We call it gift, grace, anointing, enlightenment, garment of immortality, bath of rebirth, seal, and most precious gift. It is called gift because it is conferred on those who bring nothing of their own; grace since it is given even to the guilty; Baptism because sin is buried
in the water; anointing for it is priestly and royal as are those who are anointed; enlightenment because it radiates light; clothing since it veils our shame; bath because it washes; and seal as it is our guard and the sign of God’s Lordship (Orations on Holy Baptism 40:3-4; PG 36, 361C cited in CCC [1216]).

Do you have an infant child? Allow sin no opportunity; rather, let the infant be sanctified [i.e. baptized] from childhood. From his most tender age let him be consecrated by the Spirit. Do you fear the seal because of the weakness of nature? O what a pusillanimous mother, and of how little faith! ....Give your child the Trinity, that great and noble Protector (Orations on Holy Baptism 40:17).

JOHN CHRYSOSTOM (c. A.D. 344 - 407)

Behold, they thoroughly enjoy the peacefulness of freedom who shortly before were held captive. They are citizens of the Church who were wandering in error. They have their lot in righteousness who were in the confusion of sin. For not only are they free, but holy also; not only holy, but righteous too; not only righteous, but sons also; not only sons, but heirs as well; not only heirs, but brothers even of Christ; not only brothers of Christ, but also co-heirs; not only co-heirs, but His very members; not only His members, but a temple too; not a temple only, but likewise the instruments of the Spirit.

You see how many are the benefits of Baptism, and some think its heavenly grace consists only in the remission of sins; but we have enumerated ten honors. For this reason we baptize even infants, though they are not defiled by sin [or though they do not have personal sins] so that there may be given to them holiness, righteousness, adoption, inheritance, brotherhood with Christ, and that they may be His members (Baptismal Catecheses quoted by Augustine in Contra Iulianum 1:6:21).

APOSTOLIC CONSTITUTIONS (c. A.D. 400)

Be ye likewise contented with one Baptism alone, that which is into the death of the Lord [Rom 6:3-4; Col 2:11-13]...he that out of contempt will not be baptized shall be condemned as an unbeliever and shall be reproached as ungrateful and foolish. For the Lord says, “Except a man be baptized of water and of the Spirit, he shall by no means enter into the kingdom of heaven.” And again, “He that believeth and is baptized shall be saved, but he that believeth not shall be damned” (6:3:15).

JEROME (c. A.D. 415)

This much you must know, that Baptism forgives past sins, but it does not safeguard future justice, which is preserved by labor and industry and diligence, and depends always and above all on the mercy of God (Dialogue Against the Pelagians 3:1).

AUGUSTINE OF HIPPO (c. A.D. 354 - 430)

By this grace baptized infants too are ingrafted into [Christ’s] body, infants who certainly are not yet able to imitate anyone. Christ, in whom all are made
alive....gives also the most hidden grace of His Spirit to believers, grace which He secretly infuses even into infants....It is an excellent thing that the Punic [North African] Christians call Baptism itself nothing else but “salvation” and the sacrament of Christ’s Body nothing else but “life”.

Whence does this derive, except from an ancient and, as I suppose, apostolic tradition, by which the Churches of Christ hold inherently that without Baptism and participation at the table of the Lord it is impossible for any man to attain either to the kingdom of God or to salvation and life eternal? This is the witness of Scripture too.

If anyone wonders why children born of the baptized should themselves be baptized, let him attend briefly to this....The Sacrament of Baptism is most assuredly the Sacrament of regeneration (Forgiveness and the Just Deserts of Sin, and the Baptism of Infants 1:9:10; 1:24:34; 2:27:43 c. A.D. 412).

It is this one Spirit who makes it possible for an infant to be regenerated....when that infant is brought to Baptism; and it is through this one Spirit that the infant so presented is reborn. For it is not written, “Unless a man be born again by the will of his parents” or “by the faith of those presenting him or ministering to him,” but: “Unless a man be born again of water and the Holy Spirit.” The water, therefore, manifesting exteriorly the sacrament of grace, and the Spirit effecting interiorly the benefit of grace, both regenerate in one Christ that man who was generated in one Adam” (Letters 98:2 c. A.D. 408).

Those who, though they have not received the washing of regeneration, die for the confession of Christ -- it avails them just as much for the forgiveness of their sins as if they had been washed in the sacred font of Baptism. For He that said, “If anyone is not reborn of water and the Spirit, he will not enter the kingdom of heaven,” made an exception for them in that other statement in which He says no less generally, “Whoever confesses Me before men, I too will confess him before My Father, who is in heaven” [Matt 10:32] (City of God 13:7 c. A.D. 420).

FULGENCE OF RUSPE (c. A.D. 524)
From that time at which our Savior said: “If anyone is not reborn of water and the Spirit, he cannot enter the kingdom of heaven,” no one can say, without the sacrament of Baptism, except those who, in the Catholic Church, without Baptism pour out their blood for Christ, receive the kingdom of heaven and eternal life. Anyone who receives the sacrament of Baptism, whether in the Catholic Church or in a heretical or schismatic one, receives the whole sacrament...

[But one outside the Church] must, therefore, return to the Church, not so that he might receive again the sacrament of Baptism, which no one dare repeat in any baptized person, but so that he may receive eternal life in Catholic society, for the obtaining of which no one is suited who...remains estranged from the
Catholic Church *(The Rule of Faith 43).*

If you have read all that was listed above, you will see many other falsehoods from the pagan beast other than the mystical animism of “baptismal regeneration”. Can you spot them? If so, please reply in a separate post.

This section on the lamb-like beast will be rather long so we the elect of God can without doubt identify the adversaries of Jesus Christ and His people during this inter-advental period.
Do the Scriptures make distinctions between classes of men who perform and act as the “clergy” in the New Testament ekklesia, while others within that same ekklesia are “laity”?

The beast would answer yes. But the New Testament “kerygma” addresses no such distinction.

The beast needs a “caste” system, just as importantly as he needs a “sacramental” and mystical form of baptismal regeneration, along with all the other mystical inventions of man, to supposedly mediate the Grace of God. These false entities are necessary for the beast to rule and control religious mankind from the cradle to the grave.

The institution of the “clergy system” empowers the beast/false prophet with another great weapon to rule over the mind and souls of men. The clergy system “clerisy”, once firmly established and accepted by unsuspecting souls, elevates a select group of men to act as mediators of God’s Grace, along with being a conduit or voice of God’s word. The “clergy” then can be viewed as an absolute and necessary function for some men within the lamb-like beastly religious system to aid, assist, and mediate all the necessary graces and merits required for the future hope and need of salvation. Christ's role as the only mediator between God and man is now made subject to and dependent upon the “clergy/cleric” to carry out these functions.

As one who was born and raised in the very center and heart of the beastly pseudo-Christian empire, the Roman Catholic institution, I can speak not only...
from knowledge, but also from experience.

The Roman Catholic Institution is the chief, most vile, corrupt, wicked, and repugnant manifestation of the false prophet. Second to none of those others within the beastly kingdom that professes the name of Christ. She is the very religious heart of the Dragon. She, as acting head of the lamb-like beast, along with all her daughters (Protestants included), is the very antithesis of all that is Christ’s.

The “clergy system” is a system Christ hates and the Dragon loves.

During the lives of the Apostles, the seeds of preeminence and distinction were already present.

Diotrephes, recorded in 3 John 1:9, was such “who loveth to have the preeminence among them.” He sought after preeminence among the Body of Christ.

By the 3rd century, the clergy was a fully entrenched institution. The clear class distinctions of clergy and laity can be found in the writings of Tertullian, Origen, Clement of Alexandria, Cyprian of Carthage, and others of that early era. Even today, the beastly Christian empire will stop at nothing to defend this false institution.

Firstly, let’s consider the definitions, forms, and Scriptural usages of the words “clergy” and “laity”.

Kleros (clergy) #2819 – heritage, inheritance, lot, part, portion, acquisition, patrimony

Laos (laity) #2992 - a people, people group, tribe, nation, all those who are of the same stock and language

Let’s examine some Scriptural references of “Laos”. Context is of extreme importance.

Mt. 1:21 “And she shall bring forth a son, and thou shalt call his name JESUS: for he shall save his laos from their sins.”

We who dearly embrace the Scriptural doctrine of Election can see that HIS LAOS includes ALL of the elect Body of Christ. No distinctions at all. ALL the elect are laos. Apostles, Prophets, Bishops, Deacons, Elders, Pastors, Evangelists, Teachers, etc. are all laos.

Now some who defend the clergy system, may make the case that all the clergy can be considered laos, and all the laos are not considered clergy. They would
be forced to admit this. If not, then their sins are not forgiven. Christ came to save His laos from their sins.

It is interesting that this is the very first mention of laos in the New Testament. This laos is restricted and defined by the word HIS. For the purpose of this section, I will cite the passages that restrict the word laos to only the elect Body of Christ and those referring to ethnic Israel.

Lu. 1:17 “And he (John the Baptist) shall go before him in the spirit and power of Elias, to turn the hearts of the fathers to the children, and the disobedient to the wisdom of the just; to make ready a laos prepared for the Lord.”

Lu. 1:68 “Blessed be the Lord God of Israel; for he hath visited and redeemed his laos.”

Lu. 1:77 “To give knowledge of salvation unto his laos by the remission of their sins,”

Lu. 2:32 “A light to lighten the Gentiles, and the glory of thy laos Israel.”

In previous segments we have established that the elect Body of Christ is considered True Israel, comprised of both Jew and Gentile laos.

Ac. 15:14 “Simeon hath declared how God at the first did visit the Gentiles, to take out of them a laos for his name.”

Ac. 18:10 “For I (the Lord Jesus) am with thee, and no man shall set on thee to hurt thee: for I have much laos in this city.”

To this point we have seen the restricted usage of laos as only meaning the elect laos. Generally speaking, the word laos as used in the four Gospels and Acts, was descriptive of only ethnic/national Israel. Gentiles were not considered laos, ethnically speaking, as seen below.

Ac. 26:17 “Delivering thee from the laos, (ethnic Israel) and from the Gentiles, unto whom now I send thee.”

Ac. 13:17 “The God of this laos of Israel chose our fathers, and exalted the laos when they dwelt as strangers in the land of Egypt, and with an high arm brought he them out of it.”

Ac. 26:23 “That Christ should suffer, and that he should be the first that should rise from the dead, and should shew light unto the laos, (ethnic Israel) and to the Gentiles.”

Ac. 28:27 “For the heart of this laos (ethnic Israel) is waxed gross, and their
ears are dull of hearing, and their eyes have they closed; lest they should see with their eyes, and hear with their ears, and understand with their heart, and should be converted, and I should heal them.”

Ro. 9:24-26 “24 Even us, whom he hath called, not of the Jews only, but also of the Gentiles? 25 As he saith also in Osee, I will call them my laos, (elect Gentiles) which were not my laos; and her beloved, which was not beloved. 26 And it shall come to pass, that in the place where it was said unto them, Ye are not my laos; there shall they be called the children of the living God.”

The Christ event broke down the dividing wall between Jew and Gentile.

Ro. 10:21 “But to Israel he saith, All day long I have stretched forth my hands unto a disobedient and gainsaying laos (reprobate Israel).”

Ro. 11:1-2 “1 I say then, Hath God cast away his laos (ethnic Israel)? God forbid. For I also am an Israelite, of the seed of Abraham, of the tribe of Benjamin. 2 God hath not cast away his laos which he foreknew....”

Seeing through the lens of the Gospel Paul only respects the elect laos of ethnic Israel. They, along with elect Gentiles, are now considered the true laos of God.

To summarize thus far, the word laos means people in general. So when referring to the Body of Christ, the laos of God, we the elect are the laos of God. All within the body are equal and are laos/laity.

1 Co. 10:7 “Neither be ye idolaters (speaking to Gentile believers), as were some of them (reprobate Israel); as it is written, The laos (Israel) sat down to eat and drink, and rose up to play” (cf. Ex. 32:6).

1 Co. 14:21 “In the Law it is written: ‘Through men of strange tongues and through the lips of foreigners I will speak to this laos (reprobate Israel), but even then they will not listen to me,’ says the Lord.”

2 Co. 6:16 “What agreement is there between the temple of God and idols? For we are the temple of the living God. As God has said: ‘I will live with them and walk among them, and I will be their God, and they will be my laos.’”

Paul, writing to Gentiles, says we (both elect Jew and Gentile) are the temple of the living God. He supports this truth by appealing to Leviticus 26:12, Jeremiah 32:38, and Ezekial 37:27, whereas these “Old” Scriptures refer to the laos of elect Israel.

Tit. 2:14 “Who gave himself for us, that he might redeem us from all iniquity, and purify unto himself a peculiar laos, zealous of good works.”
So far, we find that in every usage of the word laos in its context, not a hint is offered of a further class distinction or division within the elect laos, nor is one mentioned or inferred.

He. 8:10 “For this [is] the covenant that I will make with the house of Israel after those days, saith the Lord; I will put my laws into their mind, and write them in their hearts: and I will be to them a God, and they shall be to me a laos.”

God, through our High Priest and Sacrifice Jesus Christ, is the God of the elect laos.

He. 13:12 “Wherefore Jesus also, that he might sanctify the laos with his own blood, suffered without the gate.”

1 Pe. 2:9 “But ye [are] a chosen generation, a royal priesthood, an holy nation, a peculiar laos; that ye should shew forth the praises of him who hath called you out of darkness into his marvellous light.”

Peter sums up in one verse that the laos are considered a chosen generation, a royal priesthood, an holy nation. This understanding is inescapable!

1 Pe. 2:10 “Which in time past [were] not a laos, but [are] now the laos of God: which had not obtained mercy, but now have obtained mercy.”

Peter understood election. Those of Israel who obtained mercy are now the true elect laos of God.

Concluding with the word laos in its restricted sense, it can only refer to all the elect of God.

If there is such a class distinction (clergy/laity) within the body of Christ, we won’t find it in the Scriptures referring to laos. Let us next examine the word Kleros.

Kleros (clergy) #2819

The word Kleros is mentioned 13 times in 11 verses in the New Testament. We will examine all its usages in context.

Mt. 27:35 “And they crucified him, and parted his garments, casting kleros: that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophet, They parted my garments among them, and upon my vesture did they cast kleros.”

Here the word is given the meaning of a “lot”. Shortly after the wicked Jews cried out for Barabbas to be released, Jesus was apprehended by the Roman soldiers. They stripped Jesus of His raiment and put on Him a scarlet robe.
Also “they had platted a crown of thorns, they put [it] upon his head, and a reed in his right hand: and they bowed the knee before him, and mocked him, saying, Hail, King of the Jews! And they spit upon him, and took the reed, and smote him on the head. And after that they had mocked him, they took the robe off from him, and put his own raiment on him, and led him away to crucify [him]” (Mt. 27:28-31).

It was this scarlet robe the soldiers were wanting, so they cast "lots/kleros". Probably some marked pebbles, pieces of wood, etc. The winning lot would then receive the scarlet robe. So we find no help at all in this verse to derive a clergy class distinct from the laity.

Mk. 15:24 “And when they had crucified him, they parted his garments, casting lots/kleros upon them, what every man should take.”

No help here either to support a clergy class. However Mark gives us a little more insight. He adds, “what every man should take.” We can now see a slight and weak inference that the lots/kleros have something to do with a possession, an apportionment, or an allotment.

Lu. 23:34 “Then said Jesus, Father, forgive them; for they know not what they do. And they parted his raiment, and cast lots/kleros.”

In Luke's statement we find no help for the clergy system. Actually, the actions of the kleros/lots are linked with all wicked actions against our Lord in His crucifixion.

Jn. 19:24 “They said therefore among themselves, Let us not rend it, but cast lots/lagchano for it, whose it shall be: that the scripture might be fulfilled, which saith, They parted my raiment among them, and for my vesture they did cast lots/kleros. These things therefore the soldiers did.”

John introduces another Greek word “lagchano” #2975 rendered as "lot" also. This word can mean - to obtain by lot, to receive by divine allotment, obtain, to cast lots, determine by lot.

We will add this word to our list also, to see if we can find grounds for a distinct clergy class institution.

Lu. 1:9 “According to the custom of the priest's office, his (Zacharias the priest) lot/lagchano was to burn incense when he went into the temple of the Lord.”

No help here, either. The Mosaic administration is done away with. It is fulfilled in Christ who is our high Priest. Only the beastly pagans continue to burn incense in their liturgical sanctuaries.
Ac. 1:17 “For he was numbered with us, and had obtained/lagchano part/kleros of this ministry.”

Luke uses both Greek words to describe the role of Judas in verse 16, “Men [and] brethren, this scripture must needs have been fulfilled, which the Holy Ghost by the mouth of David spake before concerning Judas, which was guide to them that took Jesus.”

Judas was an Apostle; one of the original twelve. However, he was a false Apostle. Nonetheless, he had “legchano kleros” of the ministry. If a case can be made that Judas was an official clergyman distinct from the laos, then the kleros class must be restricted to Apostles and Bishops, at least according to this verse. The beast would then defeat himself using this verse. The “heretical fathers” and their later successors expanded this alleged clergy class to include priests, cardinals, monks, brothers, pastors, deacons, lectors, and those officially ordained by some seminary or church group.

Two men were considered to replace Judas’ bishoprick: Acts 1:20, “For it is written in the book of Psalms, Let his habitation be desolate, and let no man dwell therein: and his bishoprick let another take.”

Apostles were also considered Bishops.

Ac. 1:25-26 “25 That he may take part/kleros of this ministry and apostleship, from which Judas by transgression fell, that he might go to his own place. 26 And they gave forth their lots/kleros; and the lot/kleros fell upon Matthias; and he was numbered with the eleven apostles.”

To replace Judas, the Apostles qualified two men, Joseph and Matthias. After casting the kleros/lots, Matthias was chosen.

So far, all we have seen is that kleros and legchano in some contexts and in some fashion, by way of inference, link men to a ministry. More specifically Apostles and Bishops thus far.

Ac. 8:21 “Thou hast neither part nor lot/kleros in this matter: for thy heart is not right in the sight of God.”

This passage is speaking to Simon the sorcerer. Through sorcery he was bewitching the people of Samaria and considered himself a great one. The people were deceived into thinking he had great power from God. He was a prototype of our modern day Pentecostal and Charismatic false ministers that are infatuated with signs, wonders, miracles and phony spiritual exercises.

Context:
Ac. 8:18-20 “18 When Simon saw that through laying on of the apostles’ hands...”
the Holy Ghost was given, he offered them money, 19 Saying, Give me also this power, that on whomsoever I lay hands, he may receive the Holy Ghost. 20 But Peter said unto him, Thy money perish with thee, because thou hast thought that the gift of God may be purchased with money."

Can we derive from verse 21 that Peter was refusing to give an “official” clergy status to Simon?

No doubt Simon was refused of something, but it was not membership in the “clergy”. Simon wanted to purchase the power of God, a power that is only given as a gift. In this refusal he had no lot/kleros in this matter.

Ac. 26:18 “To open their eyes, [and] to turn [them] from darkness to light, and [from] the power of Satan unto God, that they may receive forgiveness of sins, and inheritance/kleros among them which are sanctified by faith that is in me.”

Paul, speaking to king Agrippa, retells how Jesus spoke with him and gave Paul his mission to the Gentiles. Kleros is rendered inheritance. Is the opening of the eyes, turning from darkness to light, deliverance from the power of Satan unto God, forgiveness of sins, sanctification, and faith only an inheritance for the clergy class and not laos also?

We can easily see so far the difficulties of those who promulgate the false teaching of a distinct and separate class of men called the clergy within the ekklesia. We cannot thus far deduce from Scripture this distinction with any of the words laos, kleros, and legchano, as they have been used in their contexts.

Col. 1:12 “Giving thanks unto the Father, which hath made us meet to be partakers of the inheritance/kleros of the saints in light.”

Kleros again is rendered inheritance. Was Paul referring to a kleros/inheritance only for a distinct class of men called the clergy and not the laos? No way!

Paul opens and addresses his letter to the Colossians, “Paul, an apostle of Jesus Christ by the will of God, and Timotheus [our] brother, To the saints and faithful brethren in Christ which are at Colosse: Grace [be] unto you, and peace, from God our Father and the Lord Jesus Christ.”

This kleros/inheritance is for all the elect [Jew-Gentile] body of Christ. ALL!

1 Pe. 5:1-3 “1 The elders which are among you I exhort, who am also an elder, and a witness of the sufferings of Christ, and also a partaker of the glory that shall be revealed: 2 Feed the flock of God which is among you, taking the oversight [thereof], not by constraint, but willingly; not for filthy lucre, but of a ready mind; 3 Neither as being lords over [God’s] heritage/kleros, but being ensamples to the flock.”
The icing on the cake. Peter not only is an Apostle, but an elder, and one who hath a bishoprick. He exhorts the elders to feed the flock and not LORD OVER GOD'S KLEROS!

If there ever was a Scripture in context that would show a clear distinction between the clergy elder and the laos flock of God, this would be the one. However, the flock is stated as God's kleros not laos.

God's elect saints are simultaneously considered kleros and laos.

ALL KLEROS ARE LAOS - AND ALL LAOS ARE KLEROS!

There is absolutely no warrant, no Scriptural evidence at all, of a distinct clergy class contrasted from the laos.

This clergy-laity distinction and institution is a profitable myth that has been foisted upon mankind. This lie has been perpetuated for so long now that it has been accepted as traditional truth. Even protest-dumb perpetuates this wicked and profitable lie to deceive their followers and control the minds of their minions.

Finally, consider 2 Peter 1:1, “Simon Peter, a servant and an apostle of Jesus Christ, to them that have obtained/lagchano like precious faith with us through the righteousness of God and our Saviour Jesus Christ.”

We, the elect kleros laos, have obtained/lagchano (to receive by divine allotment) like precious faith.

Since we find no New Testament distinction of a clergy class and laos class, how did this falsehood creep in?

As persons supposedly converted from Judaism and from Gentile paganism to the new Christian faith, they brought along with them the sacerdotalism of Judaism and the traditional practices of their Gentile pagan religions. During the post-apostolic era, the heretical "church fathers", especially Tertullian and Cyprian, gradually planted the seeds for the distinction and introduction of a clergy class of teachers and priests that were higher and apart from the laity.

These cancerous seeds then evolved and bloomed into Ruling Bishops, The Sacrificial Priesthood, along with the non-Scriptural titles given to the clergy class. These we will discuss in our next segment.
To this point we have examined two mighty weapons utilized by the lamb-like beast (pseudo-Christianity), namely *baptismal regeneration* and the *clergy laity class distinction*.

The rise of autocratic ruling Bishops evolves with the false clergy laity distinction. This autocracy is necessary for the beastly religion to control not only their laos but to control their subordinate clergy also. The early “post apostolic” rule of bishops was more of an oligarchy rather than a monarchy. But as time moved forward, the lamb-like beast would find her fullest control over the souls of the ignorant and superstitious through the monarchical form of ecclesiastical government. This was identical to the pagan Imperial Rome model of “Pontifex Maximus”, which we will discuss shortly.

None of the Apostolic, first-century, local churches were governed by oligarchical or monarchical bishops. Nor was the episcopate considered an upper caste of a distinguished clerical order that governed the clergy and laos.

In the New Scriptures, the terms and offices of bishop or overseer (*episkopos*), elder or presbyter (*presbuteros*), and pastor (*poimen*) are used synonymously (rf. Ac. 20:17, 28; Tit. 1:5, 7; 1 Pe. 5:1, 2). These terms are used interchangeably. A bishop, elder, pastor and deacon never had autocratic control over a body singularly or collectively. These leaders/men were plural in number, and they led as servants by way of example, rather than as worldly lords (1 Pe. 5:1-5; Mt. 20:25-28; Mk. 10:42-45). Bishops and presbyters seem to be much the same in role and office (Tit. 1:5, 7).
The misconception of a singular ruling/autocratic bishop is derived from an improper and wrong understanding of 1 Timothy 3:2 and Titus 1:7. Although in these Scriptures the term overseer is used in the singular, it does not conclude that there is only to be one bishop in each body, they simply address the qualifications of bishops. The role and office is one of service rather than of rank and power.

The main qualification of the overseer, as with all roles within the ekklesia, is that the Holy Spirit only has truly called, equipped, and appointed one to a role or office.

Ac. 20:28 “Take heed therefore unto yourselves, and to all the flock, over the which the Holy Ghost hath made you overseers, to feed the church of God, which he hath purchased with his own blood.”

As early as the second century, the Scriptural and divine order of ecclesiastical government was gradually being overthrown and substituted with a humanistic form of government. The singular Bishop was gaining a preeminent and authoritarian status not even remotely close to what Peter had written in 1 Peter 5:2-3.

Let’s look at a few writings of the “fathers” in reference to “Bishops”. Bold type and underlining added.

**Ignatius of Antioch to the Trallians:** 2 “…For when you obey the bishop as if he were Jesus Christ, you are (as I see it) living not in a merely human fashion but in Jesus Christ’s way, who for our sakes suffered death that you might believe in his death and so escape dying yourselves. It is essential, therefore, to act in no way without the bishop, just as you are doing. Rather submit even to the presbytery as to the apostles of Jesus Christ.”

Ignatius equates obedience to the Bishop as parallel to obedience to Christ, and submission to the presbytery as parallel to submission to the Apostles. We can start to see the development of an upper echelon of Bishops, a graduating caste system with higher rank over the presbytery.

3 “Correspondingly, everyone must show the deacons respect. They represent Jesus Christ, just as the bishop has the role of the Father, and the presbyters are like God’s council and an apostolic band. You cannot have a church without these. I am sure that you agree with me in this.”

Even during the early post-apostolic stages of the formation of the lamb-like beast, the early references to “father”, though mildly innocent, have grown a long way to this day, and have taken on a greater false spiritual significance. Even more so than what Ignatius may have intended.
7 “Be on your guard, then, against such people. This you will do by not being puffed up and by keeping very close to God, Jesus Christ, and the bishop and the apostles’ precepts. Inside the sanctuary a man is pure; outside he is impure. That means: whoever does anything without bishop, presbytery, and deacons does not have a clear conscience.”

13 “...Submit to the bishop as to law, and to the presbytery too....”

Ecclesiastical tyranny was later developed from an expansion on statements like these.

Ignatius uses more of the same language in his letter to the Magnesians.

Ignatius to the Magnesians: 2 “…I am delighted with him, because he submits to the bishop as to God’s grace, and to the presbytery as to the law of Jesus Christ....”

To clarify, true and proper submission to one another within the ekklesia is a Scriptural mandate. However, all submission must be willing and based on truth and love. Never by the use of force or imperilment of one’s own soul. No one would suggest (except for the devil and his minions) that we should submit to the Pope (bishop) of Rome, or any other bishop, elder, deacon, or pastor who teaches falsehoods.

6 “…Let the bishop preside in God’s place, and the presbyters take the place of the apostolic council, and let the deacons (my special favorites) be entrusted with the ministry of Jesus Christ who was with the Father from eternity and appeared at the end....”

What is very disturbing at this early point in history is that Ignatius sees and writes that the “bishop” is to be distinguished from the rest of the body to the point that he attributes the bishop presiding in God’s place. I’m not imputing evil motives to Ignatius, but from what I have read and studied, I find he highly exalts the role of the bishop even over the deacons and elders.

7 “…As, then, the Lord did nothing without the Father (either on his own or by the apostles) because he was at one with him, so you must not do anything without the bishop and presbyters. Do not, moreover, try to convince yourselves that anything done on your own is commendable. Only what you do together is right.”

During that early period of persecution toward the Christian faith, the need for unity was of tremendous importance. It is my opinion that Ignatius’ exaltation of the role and authority of the bishops was influenced by this persecution, and possibly he perceived a threat to his own bishoprick by some within his fellowship. However, the later “fathers” used the statements of Ignatius and gave them an entirely different meaning within a different context. Ignatius did not
convey the Papal understanding of this statement, “Let the bishop preside in God’s place.” Henceforth, though Ignatius’ language may infer the exalted view of episcopal authority we see in later centuries, it was not as fully developed as what it has become in this day. Ignatius had definitely moved far beyond the ecclesiology of the New Testament.

Polycarp, who was a contemporary of Ignatius, in his letter to the Philippians, did not distinguish bishops from presbyters in such a way as Ignatius.

Within a century after the death of the last apostle, the “church” experienced the initial emergence of an ecclesiastical system that was to have devastating consequences that aided the lamb-like beast to flourish and gain control.

In the 3rd century, Clement of Alexandria referred to bishops, presbyters, and deacons as grades (or ranks) within the church, with the episcopate (bishop) being the highest grade or rank (rf. Stromata of Clement 6:13).

Origen believed in a hierarchical scale in knowledge and perfection progressing from the laity up to the members of the clergy, with the bishop possessing the highest knowledge.

Tertullian believed that “laymen” were fully qualified to perform clerical functions if expediency required it. Writing on the administering of baptism, he wrote:

CHAP. XVII. OF THE POWER OF CONFERRING BAPTISM
“For concluding our brief subject, it remains to put you in mind also of the due observance of giving and receiving baptism. Of giving it, the chief priest (who is the bishop) has the right: in the next place, the presbyters and deacons, yet not without the bishop's authority, on account of the honour of the Church, which being preserved, peace is preserved. Beside these, even laymen have the right; for what is equally received can be equally given. Unless bishops, or priests, or deacons, be on the spot, either disciples are called i.e. to the work. The word of the Lord ought not to be hidden by any: in like manner, too, baptism, which is equally God’s property, can be administered by all. But how much more is the rule of reverence and modesty incumbent on laymen--seeing that these powers belong to their superiors--lest they assume to themselves the specific function of the bishop! Emulation of the episcopal office is the mother of schisms. The most holy apostle has said, that ‘all things are lawful, but not all expedient.’ Let it suffice assuredly, in cases of necessity, to avail yourself (of that rule), if at any time circumstance either of place, or of time, or of person compels you (so to do); for then the steadfast courage of the succourer, when the situation of the endangered one is urgent, is exceptionally admissible; inasmuch as he will be guilty of a human creature’s loss if he shall refrain from bestowing what he had free liberty to bestow.

“But the woman of pertness, who has usurped the power to teach, will of course
not give birth for herself likewise to a right of baptizing, unless some new beast
shall arise like the former; so that, just as the one abolished baptism, so some
other should in her own right confer it! But if the writings which wrongly go under
Paul's name, claim Thecla's example as a licence for women's teaching and
baptizing, let them know that, in Asia, the presbyter who composed that writing,
as if he were augmenting Paul's fame from his own store, after being convicted,
and confessing that he had done it from love of Paul, was removed from his
office. For how credible would it seem, that he who has not permitted a woman
even to learn with over-boldness, should give a female the power of teaching
and of baptizing! 'Let them be silent,' he says, 'and at home consult their own
husbands.'"

A few points need to be addressed. First, the usage of the term priest and how it
is used. For Tertullian, he sees the chief priest as being the bishop. He also
sees the chief priest higher in rank over the presbyters and deacons. Hence
water baptism is a sacramental function properly to be administered by the
clergy. Only IF a clergyman is not present then can the laymen perform this
function. Then he goes on to say: But how much more is the rule of reverence
and modesty incumbent on laymen--seeing that these powers belong to their
superiors--lest they assume to themselves the specific function of the
bishop! Emulation of the episcopal office is the mother of schisms.

By this period in history, the power and authority of the Bishop was clearly
evident. This is a rapid departure from the Divine order and structure of the
“ekklesia”.

These exalted economic functions of the bishop were modeled from the Old
Covenant Levitical priesthood; a priesthood that has been done away with.

Cyprian of Carthage argued, “every one honored by the divine priesthood, and
ordained in the clerical service, ought to serve only the altar and sacrifices, and
to have leisure for prayers and supplications.” He wrote:

65:1 “Cyprian to the presbyters, and deacons, and people abiding at Furni,
greeting. I and my colleagues who were present with me were greatly disturbed,
dearest brethren, as were also our fellow presbyters who sate with us, when we
were made aware that Geminius Victor, our brother, when departing this life, had
named Geminius Faustinus the presbyter executor to his will, although long
since it was decreed, in a council of the bishops, that no one should appoint any
of the clergy and the ministers of God executor or guardian by his will, since
every one honoured by the divine priesthood, and ordained in the clerical
service, ought to serve only the altar and sacrifices, and to have leisure for
prayers and supplications. For it is written: No man that wars for God
entangles himself with the affairs of this life, that he may please Him to whom he
has pledged himself. As this is said of all men, how much rather ought those
not to be bound by worldly anxieties and involvements, who, being busied
with divine and spiritual things, are not able to withdraw from the Church, and to have leisure for earthly and secular doings! The form of which ordination and engagement the Levites formerly observed under the law, so that when the eleven tribes divided the land and shared the possessions, the Levitical tribe, which was left free for the temple and the altar, and for the divine ministries, received nothing from that portion of the division; but while others cultivated the soil, that portion only cultivated the favour of God, and received the tithes from the eleven tribes, for their food and maintenance, from the fruits which grew. All which was done by divine authority and arrangement, so that they who waited on divine services might in no respect be called away, nor be compelled to consider or to transact secular business. Which plan and rule is now maintained in respect of the clergy, that they who are promoted by clerical ordination in the Church of the Lord may be called off in no respect from the divine administration, nor be tied down by worldly anxieties and matters; but in the honour of the brethren who contribute, receiving as it were tenths of the fruits, they may not withdraw from the altars and sacrifices, but may serve day and night in heavenly and spiritual things.”

We can see from Cyprian a revival of Judaism, which in effect is a clear denunciation of Christ's fulfillment of the Mosaic administration, and a fully entrenched un-scriptural pattern of the clerical office.

With this clergy/priest class now isolated for sacerdotal functions, it necessarily leads to a clergy that is supported by the laos. This of course evolved to a professional paid ministry, especially in our current business and career minded USA. A ministry career with all its peculiar benefits: pension plans, salaries, discounts for the clergy class, etc., etc. How shameful.

As the now (pagan/Judaistic) high priest of the church, the monarchical bishop assumed near-divine status. The exalted role Ignatius (previously discussed) ascribed to the bishop is relatively a minor falsehood compared to that of the bishop described in the Constitutions of the Holy Apostles below.

Book II-26 XXVI “The bishop, he is the minister of the word, the keeper of knowledge, the mediator between God and you in the several parts of your divine worship. He is the teacher of piety; and, next after God, he is your father, who has begotten you again to the adoption of sons by water and the Spirit. He is your ruler and governor; he is your king and potentate; he is, next after God, your earthly god, who has a right to be honoured by you. For concerning him, arid such as he, it is that God pronounces, ‘I have said, Ye are gods; and ye are all children of the Most High.’ (2) And, ‘Ye shall not speak evil of the gods.’ (3) For let the bishop preside over you as one honoured with the authority of God, which he is to exercise over the clergy, and by which he is to govern all the people. But let the deacon minister to him, as Christ does to His Father; (4) and let him serve him unblameably in all things, as Christ does nothing of Himself, but does always those things that
please His Father. Let also the deaconess be honoured by you in the place of the Holy Ghost, and not do or say anything without the deacon; as neither does the Comforter say or do anything of Himself, but gives glory to Christ by waiting for His pleasure. And as we cannot believe on Christ without the teaching of the Spirit, so let not any woman address herself to the deacon or bishop without the deaconess. Let the presbyters be esteemed by you to represent us the apostles, and let them be the teachers of divine knowledge; since our Lord, when He sent us, said, ‘Go ye, and make disciples of all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost: teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I have commanded you.’ (5) Let the widows and orphans be esteemed as representing the altar of burnt-offering; and let the virgins be honoured as representing the altar of incense, and the incense itself.”

Sounds like a page taken from the Papacy, but the Papacy, as we know it, was not fully established as of this point in history. Can we see why post-apostolic “tradition” is so important and necessary for the lamb-like beast?

Both East and West (and now even most Protestants) heavily rely on “tradition” to further perpetuate their falsehoods. A tradition and apostolic succession of bishops that are equal in authority with the inspired Scriptures. False teachings of their “fathers” that they cannot break from.

Due to the many different heretical views (theologies and philosophies) that were promulgated within the first four centuries of post-apostolic pseudo Christianity, the need for solidarity that eventually led to “one supreme voice”, evolved from the false traditions and writings of the fathers. Henceforth the abomination of the “Supreme Bishop” titled Pontifex Maximus was created.

Below are some of the early heretical views that were used as a catalyst, a pretext to justify the centralization of power and authority to the one office of “Supreme Bishop”:

- Apollinarianism
- Marcionism (Caesarea, in Asia Minor)
- Arianism (Alexandria)
- Monarchianism
- Docetism
- Monophysitism
- Donatism (Carthage)
- Monotheletism Ebionism (Judea)
- Montanism (Asia Minor)
- Encratite Nestorianism
- Eutychianism
- Priscillianism (Spain)
- Gnosticism (Syria)
- Sabellianism (North Africa)
Manichaeism (Babylonia)
Pelagianism

The above views, although heretical, were rampant throughout the beastly Christian empire. Some were discarded, while others were still held by some. The people who held these views believed these views to be Scriptural. The meaning and teaching of Scripture was twisted to conform to these pagan philosophies.

With the legalization of this pseudo Christianity during the fourth century by Constantine, arose a number of other healthy developments for the lamb-like beast. There was an increased appropriation of Roman politics. Extensive legal privileges (including complete tax exemption) turned the priesthood into a lucrative and rewarding career. With this legalization of the clergy/cleric caste system of pseudo-Christianity the door was swung wide open for every manner of tyranny, fraud, extortion, etc., etc. Bishops drifted even further from the congregations they supposedly were to serve, often leaving smaller churches for more prestigious and glamorous ones, especially in lucrative areas where trade and commerce flourished.

As this Judeo/pagan church (wrongly called Christian) became more hierarchical and bureaucratic (more worldly), many embraced monasticism. Monk/priests began to fill the ranks of “the clergy”, parading their asceticism. As “the clergy” further drifted apart from “the laity”, the beastly hierarchy continued to evolve. The church catholic was rapidly becoming the Roman Catholic Church.

Monarchical bishops from the West were perceived to be more important than those of the East. The exaltation of the bishop by the middle of the second century soon led to the recognition of special honors due to the monarchical bishops in both East and West.

Pontifex Maximus, The Roman Pontiff, Supreme Pontiff

![Image of Pope Francis]
The *Oxford English Dictionary* definition of the term, “Pontifex Maximus”:

“Pontifex 1. Roman Antiquity. A member of the principal college of priests in ancient Rome (Pre-Christian paganism Ed.), the head of which was the Pontifex Maximus or chief pagan priest.”

It is quite certain not only from historical records but from the Holy Scriptures that this term and office of “Pontifex Maximus” is thoroughly pagan!

The fact that the beastly Judeo/pagan Christian empire has its foundation established from pagan antiquity more than from the Scriptural teachings of Jesus Christ and His apostles, one need only to review the source of the title, “Pontifex Maximus”, with all of its inferences.

Taken from the Catholic Encyclopedia, the beast admits its Pagan origins:

“This term, borrowed from the vocabulary of pagan religion in Rome, early made its way into Christian discourse. Lexicographers derive it, though with clear misgivings, from the Latin words pons (bridge) and facere (to make, build). If this derivation be accepted, it is easy to see how readily it applies to those who build a bridge, make a way for men to God. In any case it designated in Roman religion members of the council of priests (pagan ed.) forming the ‘Pontifical College’, which ranked as the highest priestly organization at Rome and was presided over by the ‘Pontifex Maximus’.

“It is not clear when it first made its appearance as a designation for Christian religious leaders, or whether Tertullian's ironic use of the designation ‘Pontifex Maximus’ (in his De pudicitia, c. A.D. 220) for a Catholic bishop represents current terminology or not. In the Vulgate Pontifex is used in Hebrews for the Greek a'pxlepev's (chief priest, high priest).

“In present ecclesiastical usage the term ‘Pontiff’ (with its derivatives, ‘Pontifical’ and the verb ‘Pontificate’) is applied to bishops and especially to the Pope. Though we still for the sake of clarity prefix supreme (sovereign) or Roman to the word Pontiff in designating the Pope, it is generally to him that there is reference when we speak of ‘the Pontiff’.”

There is absolutely no basis in Scripture from the teachings of Jesus Christ and His Apostles to support any such position of ecclesiastical authority in the church founded by Jesus Christ, especially a supreme bishop as head of the church. Jesus Christ Himself is the only head of the Ekklesia.

It is also a well-known fact that on the Pope’s official mitre (headdress, which is patterned after that worn by pagan bishops and is a replica of an open fish mouth, the foremost pagan reproductive symbol) is the title “Vicarius Filii Dei,” which means, “Vicar of the Son of God.” The origination is from ancient pagan religious practice.
To this point we have discussed three weapons afforded to the Judeo/Pagan lamb-like beastly empire that are utilized for salvific control over the ignorant, superstitious and desperate souls of mankind.

The continuance of a sacrificial priesthood is another necessary weapon granted to the beast. In effect, this is nothing more than a blind denial of the finished work of our Savior Jesus Christ. It is an utter repudiation of the Gospel, which is Justification through faith alone, in Christ's imputed righteousness alone, without and unaided by ALL good works performed by men, especially the works of sacerdotal and liturgical clergymen.

Priest and sacrifice are two words that are interrelated and are prominent themes in the Scriptures from Genesis to Revelation.

He. 5:1 “For every high priest taken from among men is appointed for men in things pertaining to God, that he may offer both gifts and sacrifices for sins."

A priest is a mediator who stands between God and man. He offers sacrifice to God on behalf of man, and administers other ceremonial and liturgical worship functions for, and on behalf of the people and himself.

Historically, the presence of a “priesthood” can be found in virtually every society since the great flood. The Nimrod cults, along with the ancient Assyrians and Babylonians had their peculiar priesthoods. The Grecian/Roman empires had
their priesthoods. Abram encountered Melchizedek, who was not only “king of Salem”, but was also a priest of the Most High God. Abram acknowledged the king’s sacred office and paid tithes to him (Ge. 14:18-20). Joseph in Egypt was given to wife the daughter of an Egyptian priest (Ge. 41:45).

The necessity of a priesthood developed within all cultures stems from mankind’s inner consciousness of sin. Even in the absence of a written code/law from God, mankind is aware of his sin (Ro. 2:14-15).

Lucius Annaeus Seneca (Seneca the younger) was a Roman Stoic philosopher. He was tutor and later adviser to the emperor, Nero. Even within Roman paganism there was a conscious awareness of sin. He writes: “The first and greatest punishment of the sinner is the conscience of sin.” “The first step in a person’s salvation is knowledge of their sin.” Statements such as these can be found in pre- and post-Christ pagan cultural philosophical writings.

The presence of priesthood within virtually every human culture is a testimony to the fact that man feels he is without merit to atone for his own sins. To experience peace and favor with his gods, the priesthood can stand in the gap and mediate the grace of the gods. Sinful mankind has longed for some method of pardon even as early as the darkest recesses of paganism.

An honest person is aware of his sin and imperfection. A dishonest person suppresses his guilt, and becomes willfully ignorant of his true condition.

With priest must come sacrifice. In many priestly cultures there was the practice of offering blood sacrifices to appease the gods. In ancient times some pagans even sacrificed their children to their “gods”. Israel also practiced this abomination (2 K. 17:16-18). The priests of the temple of Jupiter, in their blind zeal for Paul and Barnabas, attempted to offer blood sacrifices (Ac. 14:13). In conclusion, the concept of sacrifice and priestly mediator was not only limited to Hebraic Israel.

God had a specific purpose in mind when His people were admonished to offer sacrifices. These sacrifices were to prefigure and point to the ultimate one-time sacrifice of Jesus Christ.

Abel offered a sacrifice (Ge. 4:4), Noah offered sacrifices (Ge. 8:20-21), Abram offered sacrifices (Ge. 12:7; 22:13), Job the patriarch of Uz offered sacrifices (Job 1:5).

The formal establishment of the priesthood was to be found in Aaron, then subsequently in Levi.

One of the main features of the Mosaic priestly system was to graphically emphasize the holy nature of Almighty God. The priestly ministration of the law
Moses was characterized by numerous detailed regulations. The high priests, along with the subordinate priests, were required to dress in a particular way not only to distinguish them from the rest of Israel, but to also reflect the concept of holiness. Pagan priests of surrounding cultures also dressed in a particular fashion. The construction of tents/tabernacles and temple were to house the presence of God. The Pagans also had their elaborate temples to house the statues and symbols of their gods.

The arrangement with Melchizedek, who was both king and priest simultaneously, prophetically foreshadowed the fact that Jesus would serve as king and high priest at the same time and forever. This historical circumstance demonstrates that Christ’s reign is heavenly and permanent (not earthly and temporal) in scope, because Jesus was not genealogically qualified as a descendent of Levi to function as a temporal earthly priest.

One of the major emphases of the book of Hebrews is the fact that the priesthood of the Mosaic economy was typical (pictorial), temporary, and thus preparatory in nature. As the inspired writer noted, those elements of the law were “a shadow of the good things to come” (He. 10:1; cf. 8:5), indeed, he says, “a figure for the time present” (He. 9:9). The Mosaic system was “carnal and temporary”, whereas Melchizedek was “unchangeable and permanent” (Ps. 110:4; He. 6:20; 7:17).

Why is it that the “fathers” of the Judeo/pagan beast clamored for the inferior, as evidenced in their writings and by their gravitation back to Moses and paganism for their alleged clergy/priest/cleric authority for their self-willed practices? It is because they did not desire nor understand the Gospel: the finished work of Christ.

The glorious message of the gospel is this: All true believers are typified as priests! Not in the liturgical, propitiatory, and sacerdotal sense, but in offering spiritual sacrifices. The very giving of our life in service to our true brethren and our Lord Jesus Christ is our spiritual sacrifice (Ro. 12:1; Ph. 2:17; 4:18; He. 13:15-16; 1 Pe. 2:5). We offer up our lives, service, and profession to God through our High Priest, Jesus Christ (He. 3:1; 4:14), who mediates on our behalf (He. 2:17; 1 Ti. 2:5). These are the truths that are referenced as to children of God being “priests” in the New Testament (1 Pe. 2:5, 9; Re. 1:6; 5:10; 20:6).

All of God’s elect are in so complete a union with Christ that we jointly share all that is Christ’s. We are considered kings and priests and rule with Christ our King of Kings and Lord of Lords. And yes! We as the elect priesthood of God do dress differently. We are clothed with Christ’s robe of righteousness, a Robe that is seen on His people by God himself. A Robe that unregenerate and reprobate religious mankind hate and replace with the stupid costumes worn by self-pious clergymen of early post-apostolic days and even to this very day.
The Roman Catholic (West), Orthodox (East), Anglican, Episcopalian, and Lutheran (the main groups who use the title or office of priest) ideas of a sacerdotal system of physical priests (clergy) for sacramental mediation have no support in the New Testament. It is based upon the fallacious notion that the apostles were given the exact and same mediatory powers of Jesus Christ, and that “priests and the priesthood” as “successors” of the apostles are similarly endowed with this mediatory power.

The priestly idea (Roman and Orthodox) is associated with the satanic delusion that in performing the “Mass” the priests are sacrificing the body of Christ afresh (perpetually), a notion completely at variance with the Scriptures. The New Testament teaches that Jesus was sacrificed once, and that was entirely sufficient (He. 9:25-28), to be realized through faith alone.

In the below Roman Catholic website you will get a pretty good understanding of how “scripture” is so contorted to conform to pagan superstition.

http://www.newadvent.org/cathen/10006a.htm

However, in Protestant priestly and/or clerical sacramental circles, heretical and superstitious as they are, their "mass" is not a perpetual sacrifice of Jesus Christ, but considered a propitiatory offering of the one-time sacrifice that becomes salvific through sacramental mediation of the clergy/priest. This Protestant version still must be mediated through a priest and or minister clergyman for sacramental and salvific efficacy. In effect, this activity still is a denial of faith alone.

http://philorthodox.blogspot.com/200...e-of-mass.html

Two points must be strongly affirmed here:

First, the Melchizedek priesthood was to belong to none other than Christ alone forever. The writer of Hebrews says concerning Jesus that: “... He, because He abides for ever, has His priesthood unchangeable” (He. 7:24). The key word is “unchangeable” (aparabatos), which suggests that the Lord’s priesthood is imperishable. This priesthood is also non-conferrable.

Secondly, the Aaronic/Levitical priesthood cannot be operative today because it was an integral part of the law of Moses, which law was abolished by Christ (Ep. 2:15), and was nailed to His cross (Col. 2:14). Moreover, the verb rendered “hath taken away” in this latter passage is a perfect tense form, which argues for the permanent abolition of that law. There is no Scriptural foundation that the law was to be, or ever will be, restored. Especially not a sacrificial or offertory priesthood for offering Christ once again. One cannot restore the Aaronic/Levitical priesthood without the necessity of resurrecting the entire Mosaic Law (He. 7:12). With Moses, it's ALL the law, or none.
The premillennial insistence that the Aaronic priesthood is to be resumed nationally in their “Future Millennial Israelitish Kingdom”, is groundless and a denial of Calvary. However, some “Post” and “A” Millennial adherents are also to be faulted for seeing the continuance of this monstrosity under the guise of a so-called new clerical priestly “Christian administration”.

The mystical pagan “fathers” started all this mess. In their writings you will find the excessive use of the words “priest”, “altar”, “sacrifice”, “clergy”, “sacrament”, etc. These corrupted seeds grew into the full-blown abomination of “the Sacrifice of the Mass”.

From Ignatius of Antioch to Augustine of Hippo and beyond, the lamb-like beast was nourished by their falsehoods and grew to great proportions.

*If you would like a listing of quotes pertaining to the priesthood and sacrifice from the Judeo/pagan “fathers”, please ask. Or better yet, study them for yourself.*
Chapter 22
Titles, Uniforms and Costumes

Ps. 127:1 “Except the LORD build the house, they labour in vain that build it....”

Mt. 15:9 “But in vain they do worship me, teaching for doctrines the commandments of men.”

Col. 2:8 “Beware lest any man spoil you through philosophy and vain deceit, after the tradition of men, after the rudiments of the world, and not after Christ.”

To this point we have seen the lamb-like beast (pseudo-Christianity) exhibit some distinct characteristics which not only erode the Gospel of Jesus Christ, but replace the truth of the Gospel and its benefits with falsehoods, lies, distortions, and human traditions.

We have discussed some weapons (falsehoods) given to the beast, i.e.:

Baptismal/Sacramental Regeneration
Clergy/Laity Distinction
Autocratic/Monarchical Bishops
Pseudo Priesthood/Sacrifice/Sacerdotalism

It is only natural that this beast should also properly appear in the sight of men as pious and holy, along with being given the appropriate titles to mesmerize the ignorant masses of mankind. This endeavor was highly successful in the past, as it is today.

Is it appropriate for members of the “ekklesia” to use high-sounding titles like reverend, eminence, your holiness, or father? No! And you will not find anything in the New Testament Scriptures to corroborate this arrogance or its practice. However, it is very necessary and appropriate for the “beast” to display such arrogance. This arrogance is rooted in the depravity of mankind. Unregenerate mankind is not only “vain” by nature, but is also proud and boastful. Man loves to be elevated among his peers.

In the above passages of Scripture, the word “vain” is emphasized for a reason. Let’s further explore a few definitions.

Vain: 1. Filled with or showing undue admiration for oneself, one's appearance, etc.; 2. Unproductive; worthless; fruitless: a vain attempt. 3. Having no real basis or worth; empty: vain hopes. 4. Ostentatious; showy. - in vain - To no purpose;
Vainglory: Excessive or groundless vanity; also, vain pomp; boastfulness.

Vanity: 1. The condition or character of being vain; excessive personal pride. 2. Ambitious display.

The lamb-like beast is all of the above, in essence. She labors in vain to build the house of God, a house only God is able to build through divine regeneration of an elect soul unto eternal life and thus add this elect soul to His kingdom. However the beast does succeed in building a house. She builds a house and sanctuary fitted for reprobate devils and men. She, as a whore, gives them the necessary wardrobe and titles to further inflate their sinful ego.

The beast worships God in vain, for all her false teachings are doctrines and commandments of men. The beast is infected with the deadly disease of pagan philosophy and vain deceit, “after the tradition of men, after the rudiments of the world, and not after Christ.”

Before we learn what Jesus our Lord and Scripture teach on this subject, allow me to list some titles that are given to “clergymen” and/or “clergywomen” within all factions of Judeo/Pagan false professing Christianity, and how these vain, pompous, self-aggrandizing religious individuals are to be addressed.


There are more of these titles, but these should be sufficient.

The two main general titles that are used by Papist, Orthodox, and Protestant (all non-Catholic) factions of the beast are “Father” and “Reverend”. Although some evangelical groups do not employ the words Father or Reverend for their Pastors, most still hold to a clergy laity distinction, thus addressing their ministers by the title of Pastor. This is wrong also. John Doe may be called to be a pastor, but he is not “titled”, or to be addressed as “Pastor John Doe”. No more than we should address someone as “Deacon John Doe”, or “Evangelist John Doe”, etc., etc.

Let’s look at a brief definition of the word Reverend.
Reverend: 1. Worthy of reverence; deserving to be revered: used with the as an honorific epithet for a member of the clergy, prefixed to the first name or initials and last name, and, in very formal use, preceding another title [the Reverend A. B. Smith, the Reverend Dr. Ann B. Smith, the Reverend Mr. Jones]. 2. Of or characteristic of the clergy. Noun - informal a member of the clergy.

What does the Scripture say about this?

Let's examine some usage of “reverend” and “reverence” in the “Old” Testament.

Strong's Hebrew #3372 “yare” 1) to fear, revere, be afraid a) (Qal) 1) to fear, be afraid 2) to stand in awe of, be awed 3) to fear, reverence, honour, respect b) (Niphal) 1) to be fearful, be dreadful, be feared 2) to cause astonishment and awe, be held in awe 3) to inspire reverence or godly fear or awe c) (Piel) to make afraid, terrify.

Ps. 111:9 “He sent redemption unto his people: he hath commanded his covenant for ever: holy and reverend [is] his name.”

Le. 19:30 “Ye shall keep my sabbaths, and reverence my sanctuary: I [am] the LORD.”

Le. 26:2 “Ye shall keep my sabbaths, and reverence my sanctuary: I [am] the LORD.”

The clergy attempts to minimize the effect of their title “reverend” as one of only honor and respect, and not of fear or awe. But if there is no clergy/laity distinction (caste) in the Body of Christ, then how can they alone be called “reverend”? If all we elect in the Body are considered by God to be Kleron and Laos, then all should have this honor and respect, and thus all be addressed as “reverend”. But that would be false also. I'm just making my point. No man should be called Reverend or Father. In matters pertaining to the Body of Christ and His Kingdom, only God is deserving of this “title”. Those that attach the title “reverend” to their name are asking for reverence. Reverend is not a title in Scripture that the Lord God uses towards His creation. It is audacious for man to arrogate to himself such a term as reverend.

Some years ago, my wife and I attended her cousin's wedding reception. At that reception was another cousin of hers who is a Papist priest. I approached him in the crowd and said, “Hi Tom, how are you?” He gave me a strange look but did not say anything. But another man standing beside me said, “He is Father Tom, Nick... Not Tom!” This sickness is not only confined to the Papist world, but also to the non-Catholic religious world. I remember many years ago when a pastor came to our home to discuss membership into “his church”. I casually addressed him by his first name and he tried to correct me right quick. He said “when talking with me in private or in public, please address me as “Pastor Dale.” How arrogant
the clergy is. Tom and Dale are but two examples among the thousands of “officially ordained” clergy.

Mt. 18:1 “At that time the disciples came to Jesus and asked, “Who, then, is the greatest in the kingdom of heaven?”

Jesus was given a tremendous task. Not only was He to die for His elect, but also to teach the truth of the Holy nature of God and His Kingdom in contrast to the depravity and sinfulness of religious man and the Devil’s Kingdom.

Before His disciples were taught truth from our Lord, they too were pious and self-righteous. Jesus' reply was not expected. Jesus said, “Whosoever therefore shall humble himself as this little child, the same is greatest in the kingdom of heaven” (Mt. 18:4). James and John besought the Lord to grant them special places of esteem and recognition in the kingdom (Mt. 20:20). Even their mother made a similar request regarding her sons (Mk. 10:35).

The Kingdom of God is not at all like the kingdoms of this world. The military have rank and title. Corporations have rank and title. Government offices have rank and title given to their members. But in the Kingdom of God this is not to be so.

Our Lord said, “For whosoever exalteth himself shall be abased; and he that humbleth himself shall be exalted” (Lu. 14:11).

Please read Matthew 23:5-12. A proper understanding of this passage is enough to overthrow all of the post apostolic clergy system with all its titles and wardrobe.

Lu. 22:24-27 “24 And there arose also a contention among them, which of them was accounted to be greatest. 25 And he said unto them, The kings of the Gentiles have lordship over them; and they that have authority over them are called Benefactors. 26 But ye shall not be so: but he that is the greater among you, let him become as the younger; and he that is chief, as he that doth serve. 27 For which is greater, he that sitteth at meat, or he that serveth? is not he that sitteth at meat? but I am in the midst of you as he that serveth.”

Spoken from the Master Himself. We the elect body of Christ not only are one with Christ in humility, but also have the mind of Christ. We who are in the midst of our true brethren are like Christ. It is we that serveth. We are all brethren. We are equals in all things pertaining to the Kingdom of God.

The so-called Christian clergy system with its titles and Pharisaical costumes are born from hell and are anti-Christ. There are religious websites that teach “clergy etiquette”. These sights are available in pretty much all denominations. Below are but a few. There are more.
Below are a few images of Judeo/Pagan religion, wrongly considered Christianity by the world of unregenerates and reprobates. These practices are nothing other than the practices of the pagan and animistic mystery religions. The below shown are from Roman Catholic, Orthodox, Anglican, Lutheran, and Episcopalian sects of the beastly religion. Boy how they love to idolize their “flour and water” God, and make a grand performance of idol and will worship to mesmerize their laity.

Also, please note that the usage of the “tonsure”, prevalent in early Judeo/Pagan Christianity monasticism, was copied from pagan mystical religions.

**Tonsure** is the traditional practice of pseudo-Christian churches of cutting or shaving the hair from the scalp of clerics, monastics, and, in the Eastern Orthodox Church, all baptized members.

**Tonsure**, usually qualified by the name of the religion concerned, is now sometimes used more generally for such cutting or shaving for monks, devotees,
or mystics of other religions as a symbol of their renunciation of worldly fashion and esteem, e.g. by Buddhist novices and monks, and some Hindu streams.

http://www.ambedkar.org/Tirupati/Chap26.htm

Paganism, Occultism, and Shear Stupidity.
Mt. 1:21 “And she shall bring forth a son, and thou shalt call his name JESUS: for he shall save his people from their sins.”

Is. 1:18 “Come now, and let us reason together, saith the LORD: though your sins be as scarlet, they shall be as white as snow; though they be red like crimson, they shall be as wool.”

Ro. 5:1 “Therefore being justified by faith, we have peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ” (cf. Ro. 3:28; Ga. 2:16; 3:11; 3:24).

Col. 2:13 “And you, being dead in your sins and the uncircumcision of your flesh, hath he quickened together with him, having forgiven you all trespasses.”

The main theme of the Holy and Inspired Scriptures is that God Himself alone would redeem His elect sinning people through and by His Son Jesus Christ alone. The salvific work of Jesus Christ alone for His people washed away every rotten sin and cast them away forever. Sin has no more hold or grip on His people. Sin is intrinsic to our very nature. This sin, which manifests itself in the very acts of commission/omission, was made irrelevant in matters concerning our salvation as a result of the Grace manifested on the Cross of Jesus Christ. Sin shall never reign and rule in our lives again. Christ alone hath borne and taken away our guilt. What a glorious Gospel we have. What a glorious Savior we have.
We are justified in God’s sight! We have been made alive! Hallelujah! The Son, Jesus Christ alone has set us free from the curse of the law. We are FREE! Faith alone in Christ alone is the response of a regenerate conscience.

This indeed is very good news, however, the adversary hates this good news. The devil's ministers hate this good news. The devil's apostles hate this message. The devil's prophets hate this Gospel.

The lamb-like Judeo/Pagan beast hates this good news. The “fathers”, in their blindness, rejected the good news of “Christ alone” and substituted another method of salvation that stripped away the “alone” aspect of Christ’s mediatorial priestly office, and added the works of the clergy church.

Hence, according to the “fathers”, it is the work of Christ PLUS the sacramental mediation of that work of Christ through rites, ceremonies, and liturgies performed by the ordained clergy.

As a Gospel believing Amillennialist, it is quite offensive to think that a future Jewish reestablishment of priest, temple, and sacrifice would occur once again in light of Christ’s fulfillment of the Mosaic administration. It is equally offensive to consider a new so-called Christian establishment of a priesthood (with perpetual sacrifice of Christ instead of lambs, bulls, and goats) that also would share the same authority as God Himself in the forgiveness and remission of sins.

Mk. 2:5-11 “5 When Jesus saw their faith, he said unto the sick of the palsy, Son, thy sins be forgiven thee. 6 But there were certain of the scribes sitting there, and reasoning in their hearts, 7 Why doth this man thus speak blasphemies? who can forgive sins but God only? 8 And immediately when Jesus perceived in his spirit that they so reasoned within themselves, he said unto them, Why reason ye these things in your hearts? 9 Whether is it easier to say to the sick of the palsy, Thy sins be forgiven thee; or to say, Arise, and take up thy bed, and walk ? 10 But that ye may know that the Son of man hath power on earth to forgive sins, (he saith to the sick of the palsy,) 11 I say unto thee, Arise, and take up thy bed, and go thy way into thine house.”
To be fair, Mosaic Judaism, Roman Catholicism, Orthodox Catholicism, and Protestants (including all non-Catholic professed Christians) have always taught that God alone (in the ultimate sense) can forgive sins.

When our Lord Jesus Christ forgave the sins of the man with palsy, two truths were manifested. One, only God can remit sins. Two, Jesus Christ claimed to be God by the very act of forgiving sins.

The early “fathers” both East and West reasoned that Jesus Christ acting as God and in His humanity was given authority (mediatorial office) on earth from God the Father to forgive sins. This is quite true. However, The beast claims this same and exact authority was then “conferred” to the clergy of the church. The main foundational texts used to support this conferring of mediatorial authority/power are:

Jn. 20:23 “If you forgive anyone’s sins, their sins are forgiven; if you do not forgive them, they are not forgiven.”

Mt. 16:19 “And I will give unto thee the keys of the kingdom of heaven: and whatsoever thou shalt bind on earth shall be bound in heaven: and whatsoever thou shalt loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven” (see also Mt. 18:18).

The main questions are these: Did God/Christ confer His exact and equivalent supreme authority in matters pertaining to absolution of one’s sins to ordained men called the clergy? Is justification/salvation dependent on the works, ceremonies, and liturgies of the clergy church? Is there salvation outside membership in the visible sacramental church, or any church?

How these three questions are answered exposes the foundational differences between Pauline soteriology/ecclesiology in contrast to the Judeo/Pagan soteriology/ecclesiology of the “fathers”.

Is confession (whether private or public) to a clergy person/priest a late invention of the Fourth Lateran Council 1215 AD for Roman Catholicism, and the Synod of Jerusalem 1672 AD for Eastern Orthodoxy? Or was salvific/sacramental confession practiced from the earliest of post-apostolic times?

Let’s examine some teachings of the “fathers”. What they believed on this subject of Confession, Forgiveness, and Penance.

John Chrysostom had much to say on this subject. Some Protestants (mainly from Reformed circles) think that Chrysostom taught the Scriptural truth on this matter. Chrysostom uses the phrases, “God alone”, or “to God Alone” in many of his writings. But what did he really mean?
To Chrysostom (and many other fathers), confessing one’s sins to a priest is the same as confessing to “God alone”. The clergy priest is a mediator between God and man. Acting as “Alter Christus”.

http://biblestudy.churches.net/CCEL/FATHERS2/INDEX.HTM

**John Chrysostom** De paenitentia homiliae – “Have you sinned? Go into Church and wipe out your sin. As often as you might fall down in the marketplace, you pick yourself up again. So too, as often as you sin, repent your sin. Do not despair. Even if you sin a second time, repent a second time. Do not by indifference lose hope entirely of the good things prepared. Even if you are in extreme old age and have sinned, go in, repent!”... “For here there is a physician’s office, not a courtroom; not a place where punishment of sin is exacted, but where the forgiveness of sin is granted. **Tell your sin to God alone**: ‘Before You alone have I sinned, and I have done what is evil in Your sight’ and your sin will be forgiven” (Homilies on Penance 3:4).

There are a few points to be considered. One, according to Chrysostom, confession is made by going into the church to be heard by the Priest who, acting on God’s behalf, grants forgiveness of sin (Jn. 20:23). Two, Chrysostom believed in sacramental confession of sins just as the Catholic West, Orthodox East, and some reformed sects teach today. The statement “to God ALONE” must be understood in light of other statements made by Chrysostom in writing on priests and the ministerial priesthood. See below, bold added.

“Great is the dignity of priests. ‘Whose sins you forgive,’ He says, ‘they are forgiven them’ [John 20:23]... **The things that are placed in the hands of the priest, it belongs to God alone to give....**” (Homilies on John 86:4).

“What greater power is there than this? The Father has given all the judgment to the Son. And now I see the Son placing all this power in the hands of men. [cf. Matthew 9:8] They are raised to this dignity as if they were already gathered up to heaven, elevated above human nature, and freed of its limitations” (The Priesthood 3:5:183-184).

“Our priests have received the power not of treating with the leprosy of the body, but with spiritual uncleanness; not of declaring cleansed, but of actually cleansing.... God has given to priests powers greater than those given to our parents; and the differences between the powers of these two is as great as the difference between the future life and the present.... Our parents begot us to temporal existence; priests beget us to the eternal. The former are not able to ward off from their children the sting of death, nor prevent the attack of disease;
yet the latter often save the sick and perishing soul -- sometimes by imposing a lighter penance, sometimes by preventing the fall. Priests accomplish this not only by teaching and admonishing, but also by the help of prayer. Not only at the time of our regeneration [at Baptism], but even afterward they have the **authority to forgive sins** [cf. John 20:21-23; James 5:14-16]" (The Priesthood 3:6:190-6).

**Origen** “In addition to these [kinds of forgiveness of sins], albeit hard and laborious: the remission of sins through penance...when he [the sinner] **does not shrink from declaring his sin to a priest of the Lord and from seeking medicine**.... In this way there is fulfilled that too, which the Apostle James says: ‘If, then, there is anyone sick, let him call the presbyters [where we get priests] of the Church, and let them impose hands upon him, anointing him with oil in the name of the Lord; and the prayer of faith will save the sick man, and if he be in sins, they shall be forgiven him [James 5:14-15]’ (Homily on Leviticus 2:4).

**Augustine Of Hippo** “Let this be in the heart of the penitent: when you hear a man confessing his sins, he has already come to life again; when you hear a man lay bare his conscience in confessing, he has already come forth from the sepulcher; but he is not yet unbound. When is he unbound? By whom is he unbound? ‘Whatever you loose on earth,’ He says, ‘shall be loosed also in heaven’ [Mt 16:19; 18:18; Jn 20:23]. Rightly is the loosing of sins able to be given by the Church...” (Psalms 101:2:3).

“Yet those who do penance in accord with the kind of sin they have committed are not to despair of receiving God’s mercy in the Holy Church, for the remission of their crimes, however serious” (Echiridian 17:65).

“Iniquity, however, sometimes makes such progress in men that even after they have done penance and after their reconciliation to the altar they commit the same or more grievous sins.... and although that place of penance in the Church is not granted them, God will not be unmindful of His patience in their regard....” (Letters 153:3:7).

“There have been those who would say that no penance is available for certain sins; and they have been excluded from the Church and have been made heretics. **Holy Mother Church is not rendered powerless by any kind of sin**” (Sermons 352:9).

We can find more of these types of teachings from Tertullian, Cyprian of Carthage, Athanasius of Alexandria, Basil the Great, Ambrose, and Theodore of Mopsuestia, among others.

**Leo The Great** “I decree also that that presumption contrary to the apostolic regulation, which I recently learned is being committed by some in an illegal usurpation, is by all means to cease. With regard to penance, certainly what is
required of the faithful is not that the nature of individual sins be written in a document and recited in a public profession, since it is sufficient that the guilt of consciences be indicated to priests alone in a secret confession. For although that fullness of faith may seem to be praiseworthy which, for fear of God, is not afraid to blush before men, nevertheless, because the sins of all are not of such kind that those who seek Penance do not fear to make them public, such an unapproved custom is to cease” (Letter of Pope Leo I to the Bishops of Campania, Samnium and Picenum, dated March 6, 459 AD).

It is extremely untrue to claim that the Roman Catholic and Orthodox Churches invented the idea of confession (to a priest/clergyman), penance, and subsequent absolution of sin as late as some seven to fourteen hundred years after the death of Christ. The two horns of the lamb-like beast only continued to further define in councils and synods (not invent) this dogma as taught from their early fathers. This is why Apostolic succession and tradition, continued from the fathers, are vitally essential in their mutual theologies.

In the link below, you will get another glimpse as to how one can have his sins forgiven according to the Judeo/Pagan religion started by the “fathers”:

http://ldysinger.stjohnsem.edu/@text...13_12remis.htm

Is doing acts of penance the same or similar to repentance? The answer depends on how one understands the Gospel of Jesus Christ.

Either one is justified (complete remission of sins and declared righteousness) in God’s presence by the imputed righteousness of Christ alone, realized through faith alone, without all works whether performed by self or the clergy church, or we are justified in God’s presence by the infusion (merits and graces poured into the heart to increase and aid in the process of Justification) of Christ’s righteousness, and to be administered through the office of the “keys”: sacraments mediated through the clergy.

http://www.newadvent.org/cathen/11618c.htm

The Council of Ancyra in 314 AD gives us more insight as to the function of the clergy in relation to the degree, length, and grade of penances to be performed by the sinner and administered by the clergy. This penitential system is completely contrary to the Gospel, and later evolved into the dogmas of cardinal, mortal, and venial sins, along with salvific suffering to merit justification. Please read all the canons in the supplied links. I'll just mention one.

**Canon 25**
One, who had betrothed a maiden, corrupted her sister, so that she conceived. After that he married his betrothed, but she who had been corrupted hanged herself. The parties to this affair were ordered to be received among the co-
standers after ten years [of penance] according to the prescribed degrees.

http://www.synaxis.org/canon/ECF37TH...HISTORICAL.htm

http://www.newadvent.org/fathers/3802.htm

Is this the Gospel once delivered to the Saints?

If one takes up the task of a serious and in depth reading and study of the “fathers”, he will not find the objective Gospel of Jesus Christ as taught by the Apostle Paul. The “fathers” were blind to the Gospel, therefore creating one of the most blasphemous, subjective and mystical religions in the world. This is a religion that totally misrepresents Christ and the Gospel. This is a religion that deceived the world then, and to this very day.
An Amillennial Understanding of the Kingdom of God

Nicholas A. Laurienzo

Chapter 24
Constantinian Orthodoxy, Council of Nicaea 325 AD
A Wicked Precedence Established - Let There Be Blood

Should Christ's “ekklesia” enlist or appeal to the government to settle its differences?

Should Christ's “ekklesia” enlist the support of government to establish warfare on its behalf?

Should Christ's “ekklesia” enlist the government to exterminate rival religions?

If you are a Papist/Orthodox/Protestant, Muslim, or Zionist (the main offenders), you will probably answer yes to all three, because you have done it before, and continue to do it now. You are part of the problem, not the solution.

The purpose of these next few sections is not to give a complete historical account of events during this period, but rather to show the arrogance, wickedness, brutality, and downright abuse of power exercised by the Judeo/Pagan lamb-like beastly church.

Before we get started, let's briefly examine how God's elect people, the “ekklesia”, are to perform their mission and proclamation of the Gospel.

Lu. 4:18 “The Spirit of the Lord is upon me, because he hath anointed me to preach the gospel to the poor; he hath sent me to heal the brokenhearted, to preach deliverance to the captives, and recovering of sight to the blind, to set at liberty them that are bruised.”

Our Lord's above statement gives us the very essence and nature of our calling. It is our calling because it was Christ's calling. He is our master teacher. We do things His way. Not our way or through the use of any political scheme.

Let's address the problem and the solution.

Poor: Due to sin, God's elect people are poor. Not economically speaking, but rather spiritually poor. We are, in fact, bankrupt. We have no individual merit or goodness of our own to offer to God. Christ alone is our solution. His righteousness/riches are all we need. He imputed His righteousness to us.

Brokenhearted: The elect will realize their sin and rebellion toward God. The Holy Spirit divinely convicts our hearts and causes us to experience true sorrow
for offending God. Christ alone is our solution. He divinely heals our broken heart and takes away our guilt.

**Captivity:** From birth we are held captive by sin. We are totally depraved. Christ alone sets us free. We are no longer in bondage and slavery to sin. Sin is no more our master.

**Sight:** From birth, we are blind and dead in our trespasses and sins. Through Christ alone, the Holy Spirit (regeneration) opens our blind eyes to the truth of self, and God (Father, Son, and Holy Spirit.)

**Liberty:** Like captivity, our sin enslaves us. Christ has released us from bondage and imprisonment through forgiveness and pardon of sins (letting them go as if they had never been committed), and complete remission of the penalty.

The task is simple. One, Christ alone did all the saving work described in Luke 4:18. Two, we the regenerate elect are to proclaim this good news. That's it!

Once someone is born into the Kingdom of God/Heaven, if locally possible, we are to have fellowship and discipleship based on the true Gospel of Christ alone. We are not to have fellowship with those who reject the true Gospel of Christ; no matter how “Christian” they may sound. “What fellowship hath light with darkness?” A false gospel is a dark gospel. It is no Gospel at all.

We are not called to “proselytize”, “torture others”, “burn books that we don’t agree with”, “imprison those that disagree”, “banish and exile from society those we deem as heretics”, “murder and rape those who will not convert”, “burn down their houses, destroy their fields, kill their animals”, “invade other countries with our so-called Christian armies”, etc., etc. These are the methods of Satan’s despotic beasts, both political and ecclesiastical.

This is the way of the Lord - Mark 6:11: “And whosoever shall not receive you, nor hear you, when ye depart thence, shake off the dust under your feet for a testimony against them. Verily I say unto you, It shall be more tolerable for Sodom and Gomorrha in the day of judgment, than for that city.”

The True Judge will deal with those who reject His true Gospel. Remember, Christ builds His “ekklesia”. We are Ambassadors of His Kingdom.

The Devil (Red Dragon) and his then adolescent Judeo/Pagan lamb-like church did not agree with Christ. This beast does not have a Gospel. This beast does not proclaim good news. This beast demands submission. This beast converts by threatening the use of the literal sword, imprisonment, banishment, torture, and downright murder. The Devil was a murderer from the beginning. And likewise are the devil’s religious children.
Was Constantine an advocate for the true Gospel and Kingdom of God? Or was he an advocate of the Devil and his Judeo/Pagan religion?

What was so appealing to Constantine that he assured this “falsely called Christianity” a place in society and the political realm? Constantine was born a pagan, and found that this Judeo/Paganism presented by the “fathers” was exactly what he needed to hold his crumbling Roman empire together. Not only to hold his crumbling empire together, but to use this Judeo/Paganism to enlarge his empire.

When politics and religion are so wedded together in pursuit of similar and mutual causes, let the world be warned, the blood will most definitely flow. Organized religion in league with government is the main source of hatred and tyranny in the world.

Blind faith is the surrendering of the mind. It is the surrender of reason. It is the ultimate surrender of soul and conscience to those Blue Bloods (Monarchs, Apostolic Successors, Clerics, Political and Religious leaders) who have deceived and threatened the masses of the ignorant throughout the ages.

To Constantine, this religion of the “fathers” did not upset the depraved nature of his subjects. It offered to them the same essential characteristics of their current heathen paganism. Salvation by works and penances, Sacerdotalism, Sacramentalism, Sacrifices, Altars, Clergy/clerical Priesthood, Liturgical and mystical worship, Iconalism, Statue Worship, Religious feast days, along with all the pomp and ceremony that the Pagan/Roman world came to love and embrace. This religion would definitely appeal to will-worship and carnality of the pagans, and was made the state religion of the Roman Empire.

Constantine took the traditional title, “Pontifex Maximus”. The title originally applied to Roman “high priests” who were the “great bridge builders” between men and the gods. The Emperors used it to designate themselves head of all the state religions. They did not submit to Christ as being the head of His church at this point in history. The later, “City of God” (a la Augustine) was already in the hands of brutal men. Believing he was “God’s man”, Constantine referred to himself as a bishop ordained by God to oversee the external church.

Constantine envisioned a united Roman Empire. He expected his newly embraced Judeo/Pagan's cross/multi-cultural appeal to fuse the people together into a single religious body. But there were still some divisive issues that needed to be dealt with. During Constantine's reign, two great controversies (among many) prohibited unity within Judeo/Paganism: Donatism and Arianism.

This brash pagan “Pontiff” attempted to settle these matters. The issue of whether they were right or wrong are not the concern of this segment. What matters is how Constantine dealt with them, thus setting precedence for future
Judeo/Pagan clerics and political leaders allied with this religion.

The Donatists, after a hearing in 314 AD at Arles, disagreed with the “pontiff” Constantine. The recalcitrant Donatists refused to accept the authority of the Council at Arles and Constantine. Constantine threatened to take care of things. He said:

“I am going to make plain to them what kind of worship is to be offered to God... What higher duty have I as emperor than to destroy error and repress rash indiscretions, and so cause all to offer to Almighty God true religion, honest concord and true worship.”

The “pontiff” then ordered the confiscation of Donatist churches and banished their leaders. He continued harassing Donatists until numerous Donatist martyrs shed their blood. By 411 Donatists disappeared. Donatist churches opposed Roman policies and disagreeing bishops.

Submission by brute force and fear tactics is how Judeo/Paganism flourishes, but never could it truly convert a soul to Christ nor truly correct any errors. Only the Holy Spirit can effect such a change.

The Arian Controversy was another such case where Constantine the “pontiff” was directly involved. Around 318-319, Alexander, Bishop of Alexandria, had a bitter conflict with an ascetic and popular presbyter named Arius. Alexander called for a council to discuss Arius’s heretical views. One hundred Libyan and Egyptian bishops met in 318 to discuss the issue. The council excommunicated Arius, five other presbyters, six deacons and two bishops. Other church leaders educated by Lucian rushed to Arius’s rescue and schism resulted. Arius received his education in Lucian of Antioch’s school.

Constantine issued a letter to Alexander and Arius seeking for them to reconcile. That failed. He then called a council to convene in Nicaea in 325. There were over 300 bishops present. A majority of the 300 came from the Empire’s eastern regions.

The Emperor involved himself directly in the council. As a result, bishops of the Arian persuasion carefully voted with their “pontiff”, Constantine. Originally Constantine favored the Arian position. What soon became obvious to the “pontiff” was that the other party, the Athanasians, named after Athanasius, the new Alexandrian bishop, was well represented. A compromise creed came to the floor, but the Athanasian party demanded inclusion of the term “homoousios”, meaning “identical in substance”. The council accepted the compromise creed as amended and called on all bishops to sign it. Arius and two bishops who refused to sign the creed were thus banished. The amended creed was rewritten in 381 and stood as the Nicene Creed.
Due to influence from Eusebius, Constantine recalled Arius from exile in 328. The “pontiff Constantine” ordered Athanasius to restore Arius as presbyter in Alexandria. When Athanasius refused, the Emperor deposed him. The Arian party then called for a synod in which Athanasius and the “orthodox party” were condemned. The controversy continued raging during the lifetimes of Arius and Athanasius.

Athanasius faced exile five times. Arius, the chief antagonist, found himself in and out of favor as well. Finally, in 336, Arius died. This controversy continued and still remains today.

What we have learned in these two cases is the failure of Constantine (political and governmental involvement) to (1) pacify, and (2) unite religion. Both Arian religion and Orthodox religion grew rapidly. Constantine’s own family divided over Arianism. Ultimately, Arianism became so powerful that Judeo/Pagan Orthodoxy did not overcome until 496 when Clovis, King of the Franks, converted to Judeo/Pagan pseudo-Christianity.

From this point of history to 1054 AD (East-West Schism), the world would experience all manner of wickedness and brutality at the hands of the “Judeo/Pagan Lamb-like Catholic (universal) Church”.

242
An Amillennial Understanding of the Kingdom of God

Nicholas A. Laurienzo

Chapter 25
Brutality and Intolerance 300 AD to 1054 AD (East-West Schism)

Jn. 18:36 “Jesus answered, My kingdom is not of this world: if my kingdom were of this world, then would my servants fight, that I should not be delivered to the Jews: but now is my kingdom not from hence.”

Ep. 6:12 “For we wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this world, against spiritual wickedness in high places.”

This does not mean that Christ's Kingdom is alienated from this world in such a fashion that the true gospel does not impact mankind, but rather that His Kingdom acts contrary to the devices, methods, and schemes of this fallen world of reprobates.

Unregenerate and reprobate mankind condescends to the baser instincts of human depravity in the use of brute force for the advancement of sociopolitical and socio-religious ideals, and to suppress and destroy opposing voices. The reason and justification for their use of brute force is rooted in ignorance and fear. This fear perceives that anyone who possesses a sound, rational, objective, unbiased, and honest mind, upon hearing and engaging into meaningful dialogue/debate, would most definitely reject their proposals (ideas of mad fanatical politicians and the religious). Hence, to overthrow conscience, logic, and reason, and to discourage debate, the despotic forces of this world resort to brute force, intimidation, misrepresentation, torture, distortion, slander, censorship and ultimately murder when necessary. These tactics keep evil religious-political men in power. This is the basic “M.O.” of the lamb-like beast as with most false religions of this world. Satan was cast down to this earth. He is given subordinate control as an agent of God to deceive and wreak havoc upon unregenerate and reprobate mankind. In the end, this will be his own demise and will glorify God.

Fanatical religionists are nothing more than deranged psychopaths and sociopaths.

Psychopath: Also called: sociopath a person afflicted with a personality disorder characterized by a tendency to commit antisocial and sometimes violent acts, and a failure to feel guilt for such acts.

When discussing intolerance, or the state of being intolerant, three categories should be addressed.
Individual and Personal Intolerance
The word intolerance is generally understood to mean the savage passion that leads one to hate and persecute those in error. This would be considered the wrong use of intolerance. However, there is a right use of intolerance that does not lead to the hate and persecution of individuals, but rather a disliking or unyielding attitude to what others may believe without resorting to violent acts of aggression and suppression. I personally am very intolerant of “false gospels”, but never advocate the use of torture, harassment, or murder as a persuasive measure.

Ecclesiastical Intolerance (Wrong use)
This corporately consists of considering as false all religions or so-called Christian denominations other than one’s own individual or group beliefs. This technically is not wrong, but becomes wrong when by promulgating this faith there is no respect for the life and the well being of disagreeing humanity. In other words, “It's our way or ultimately death.”

Civil Intolerance (Wrong use)
This corporately consists of ceasing all peaceful relations, and advancing by all sorts of violent means our political forms of government on those who have a way of thinking about religion, worship and civil (secular) issues that are different from our own.

We as Christ’s servants understand the state and condition of depraved humanity, for we ourselves share (in the flesh) this depravity. The mind of man can only acquiesce before that which it recognizes as true. The heart can only love that which seems good to it. The will of man only submits to that which conscience will allow. Aggressive acts of violence as a means to “convert” will turn a weak man into a hypocrite (acting against conscience), and a brave man into a martyr. Weak or brave, mankind will feel the injustice of persecution and resent it, whether his beliefs are deemed to be true or false.

Education, persuasion through the use of logic/reason, and prayer are the only legitimate means of spreading the faith and Gospel of Jesus Christ. Men cannot change the way they think and believe. God alone is the one that could impress truth upon the heart of man. Some plant, some water, but God, via regeneration, gives the increase unto life eternal.

Unregenerate and reprobate religionists resort to illegitimate means to “convert”. Illegitimate means that provoke hate, indignation and scorn. Illegitimate means that stir lustful passions and foster self-interest. Means that tend to incite men to rebel, bring nations to arms, and fill the earth with blood.

It is wrong to forcibly coerce another person's conscience. Conscience must be enlightened, not constrained or coerced.
If I believe I have truth on my side, I must naturally believe those who disagree with me to be in error. If I deem you to be blind and in error, should I strike a blind man dead with the power of the state behind me? These sentiments go both ways. Vice-versa.

Neither men of true faith, nor men of false faith, should employ forcible measures to proselytize into submission with one’s own religious views, but rather trust in God’s sovereignty and judgment. Self-interest, fanaticism, and social circumstances are a few determinate factors that guide or restrain the amount/degree of persecution/harassment mankind conducts on his fellow man.

What did our Lord Jesus Christ teach His disciples upon sending them among the nations? Was it to kill others, or to die? Was it to persecute others, or to suffer for the sake of the Gospel?

In an intolerant state (Constantinian merger of church/state), the prince becomes an executioner in the service of the clergy. Christ said: "My kingdom is not of this world," but false disciples want to tyrannize this world. Christ said: "I am gentle and humble of heart." Is the pseudo-Christian church gentle and humble of heart? Christ said: “Happy are the meek, the peace-makers, and the merciful.” Is the beastly church meek, peaceful, and merciful?

Within this period, 300 AD - 1054 AD, the major enemies of the "beastly catholic church" are classified as such. These enemies included Non-Trinitarian Christian sects, all Non-Christian pagans and Jews. Added to the list, starting in the 6th century, Mohammedans (Islam-Moslems).

As the West (Roman) bishops became more influential than those bishops of the East, the Western bishops would eventually start to disagree with the Eastern bishops. This eventually led to the Schism of 1054 AD. This schism was based on theological issues, supremacy of the singular Roman Pontiff/bishop, and the real underlying motives of Satan: the political and religious control of men, power, and wealth. As Rome’s power grew, she saw herself as the only true church. Hence, the Roman Catholic Church saw herself as the only door to heaven. ALL those nations and individuals not baptized as Roman Catholics and submitted to the POPE, were considered infidels, demented, insane, or heretics, and were worthy of destruction by whatever means.

In Hoc Signo Vinces: “In this sign conquer.” Depraved mankind, to one degree or another (minimal manifestations or to extreme proportions), has seeds of superstition that are intrinsic to his nature.

From the pagan priests of antiquity to our modern day Papists, Orthodox, Protestant/Evangelical, and Charismatic/Pentecostal charlatans, superstition and mysticism drive men to insane proportions.
Constantine was such a man and the first to fight wars in the name of “pseudo-Christianity”. Whether appearances, manifestations and signs are supernatural in origin, a fabricated hoax, or by-products from a delusional state of mind is not the issue. How does mankind respond to such things? This is the crux of the matter.

The battle of the Milvian Bridge in the year 312 AD was a major historical step and turning point for the Judeo/Pagan religion of the “fathers”. Constantine’s alleged vision of the cross and the words “In Hoc Signo Vinces” have differing accounts. Eusebius seems to prefer the Chi-Rho symbol to the crucifix, as purported in an earlier account of Constantine’s vision. Whatever the case, this symbol would be the foundation and justification for what the devil’s children believed was “Christian holy blood-shedding”. This monogram was also engraved on the soldiers’ shields and formed on the Labarum (a military standard) for Constantine I. When Constantine won the victory over his rival, Maxentius, he eventually became the sole ruler of the Roman Empire. The Chi-Rho symbol predates Jesus Christ and is thoroughly pagan in origin. As with most practices of East and West Orthodoxy, paganism was “baptized” and craftily distilled into a more “perfect” practice. See images below of Chi-Rho.

These pagan symbols, when seen by men, did not represent Christ’s people coming to announce peace and goodwill to men through the proclamation of the Gospel, but rather were symbolic of death and destruction.

The crumbling Roman Empire was now invigorated with a new “supposed life”; a new mystical and superstitious religion that replaced the old. This alleged “holy union” of state and religion plotted a course for the goal and establishment of the “Holy Roman Empire” leading to the establishment of the Roman Papacy. But was this empire Holy?

The Judeo-Pagan lamb-like beast, now armed with the might and power of state, kept the world in darkness. A wave of madness, superstition and intolerance (pre-ordained and determined by God), designed to discredit and confound Jesus Christ and His Gospel, was in force.

We will now cite a few historical activities of this newly state-embraced “religion” falsely called Christianity. The below usages of the term “Christian” are not to be confused with Christ’s “ekklesia”, which are those elect who believe the true Gospel and are the only true body of Christ. The lamb-like beast never possessed, loved, or proclaimed the true Gospel of Christ.
The dates, whether actual or approximate, are not an issue. What matters, is that these wicked attitudes and actions are a record of history and should guide us who are among Christ's true “ekklesia" to distance ourselves from this wicked enterprise.

A common practice displayed by ignorant and superstitious men is the forceful action of “book burning”. Now let's be clear here. If an individual decides he wants to destroy his own writings, or writings of others that he personally possesses, that's his own business. This is seen in the case of the superstitious in Ephesus that were converted to Christ.

Ac. 19:18-19 “18 Many also of them that had believed came, confessing, and declaring their deeds. 19 And not a few of them that practised magical arts brought their books together and burned them in the sight of all; and they counted the price of them, and found it fifty thousand pieces of silver.”

For political and religious institutions to forcibly destroy “books" (censorship) would be tantamount to destroying freedom of speech, conscience, and expression. These are ideals that ALL tyrannical men hate.

http://www.rjgeib.com/thoughts/burning/burning.html

This ignorance of mankind was exhibited many years before the birth of Jesus Christ and continues throughout the world to this very day. See link:

http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/List_of...-Qin_rebels.29

The “fathers” practiced this ignorance and it became a staple in Judeo/Pagan pseudo-Christianity. The catholic church (East-West) went so far as to issue lists of books or writings that the laity was forbidden to read. The Holy Scriptures were even forbidden for the laity to read. Only a satanic kingdom would prohibit one from reading the words of life.

The beast took these measures a step further. Why not just get rid of the source? The beast not only burned and destroyed opposing writings; it burned and destroyed opposing humanity.

Along with book burning, listed below are some other measures taken by the lamb-like beast against Jews, differing Christian sects, and non-Christian pagans.

306: The church Synod of Elvira banned marriages, sexual intercourse and community contacts between Christians and Jews.

Please read all the canons listed in the below website that reveal the deranged religious mentalities of clergymen. You will notice in many of the canons
Communion, “The Eucharist”, was withheld for certain actions committed. Remember, this alleged holy “magic” bread and wine (sacrament) is a necessary means for the infusion of Grace and Justification. The clergy shuts the door of grace until the offender performs certain acts (works) of penance. And in some cases, this alleged “sacrament” was withheld even up to the point of death. Would any true, honest, legitimate, and compassionate doctor withhold the medicine (Grace) that would cure his patient?

http://faculty.cua.edu/pennington/ca...viraCanons.htm

317: Constantine’s Roman Christian sectarians in Carthage filled the well outside the main Donatist [non-Roman Christians] church with the bodies of their Christian opponents.

333: Constantine issued edicts against Arius forbidding his teaching, and even outlawing ownership of the Arian version of the New Testament.

Constantine, the first Christian Emperor, was a murderer as revealed by many historians. Constantine had five of his near relatives put to death. Those whom Constantine had murdered include his wife Fausta, and one of his sons. Other victims of Constantine were two of his brothers-in-law, one of which was co-emperor Licinius. Constantine also had the 11-year-old son of Constantia (Constantine’s half-sister) and Licinius murdered. He is highly viewed as “St.” Constantine within Eastern Orthodoxy. The West (Rome) adores him also.

His second son and successor, the Christian Roman Emperor Constantius II, followed in the footsteps of his father and was an equally vicious murderer. He had both of his uncles, and seven cousins murdered to rise to power. Only two other cousins, twelve-year-old Gallus, and seven-year-old Julian, who was to become the last pagan emperor, survived this butchery in the first so-called “Christian” Dynasty.

337: Christian Emperor Constantius created a law that made the marriage of a Jewish man to a Christian punishable by death.

339: Converting to Judaism became a criminal offense.

No, we are not discussing Adolph Hitler, The third Reich, and the NAZI party. We are discussing the establishment of the union of religion and state. The “Catholic” church in power. Hitler only continued the immoral practices of the “Catholic Church”. He did not invent them.

372-444: During this time frame, Manichaeans were exterminated in huge campaigns throughout the Roman Empire. Thousands were brutally destroyed.

379-395: Emperor Theodosius the Great permitted the destruction of
synagogues if it served a religious purpose. Christianity was officially approved as the state religion of the Roman Empire at this time.

380: Roman “Christian” Emperor Theodosius passed a decree that read:

“We shall believe in the single Deity of the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit, under the concept of equal majesty and of the Holy Trinity. We command that those persons who follow this rule shall embrace the name of Catholic Christians. The rest, however, whom We adjudge demented and insane, shall sustain the infamy of heretical dogmas, their meeting places shall not receive the name of churches, and they shall be smitten first by divine vengeance and secondly by the retribution of Our own initiative, which We shall assume in accordance with the divine judgment.”

380: The bishop of Milan was responsible for the burning of a synagogue; he referred to it as “an act pleasing to God.”

382: In Egypt, celebrating Easter on the day set aside by the local non-Roman Christian sects, was punishable by death.

383: In Spain, Urbanica was stoned to death for non-Roman Christian beliefs.

385: Priscillianus (a Spaniard) and six followers were beheaded for heresy in Trier/Germany.

387: John Chrysostom preached eight homilies against the Jews. These homilies further instilled hatred and bigotry throughout the “Christian Empire”.


431: Council of Ephesus, Nestorius condemned as a heretic. Anathemas were flying everywhere like bullets from a machine gun. Those who even talked to Nestorius were to be under anathema.

440-461: Emperor Valentinian III had decreed that if you didn't accept the primacy of the Roman See over all others, you were a traitor. He is described as spoiled, pleasure loving, and influenced by sorcerers and astrologers. Valentinian was devoted to religion. He contributed to churches of St. Laurence in both Rome and Ravenna. He also oversaw the accumulation of ecclesiastical authority in the hands of the bishop of Rome as he granted ever-greater authority and prestige to Pope Leo the Great, in particular.

449: Second Council of Ephesus. Dioscoros, the Pope of Alexandria (Cyril's successor), condemned Flavian, the Pope of Constantinople. Dioscoros and Eutyches brutally assaulted Flavian so severely that he died three days later. Mobs of monks and soldiers wielding staves, swords, and chains were present to
aid Dioscoros in convincing the bishops to vote against Flavian.

489-519: Christian mobs destroyed synagogues in Antioch, Daphne (near Antioch), and Ravenna.

528: Emperor Justinian passed the Justinian Code. It prohibited Jews from building synagogues, reading the Bible in Hebrew, assembling in public, celebrating Passover before Easter, and testifying against Christians in court. This code also established the Roman Bishop as supreme.

529: Justinian ordered the closing of Plato's ancient academy in Athens, and its property was confiscated.

http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Corpus_Juris_Civilis

http://www.aloha.net/~mikesch/jus-code.htm

As with most Christian emperors since the rise of Constantine's Imperial marriage to the church, Justinian incorporated clerical intolerance into the legal framework of his regime. Justinian achieved far-reaching victories for the Catholic (East-West) religious war against freedom of thought. This was achieved by oppressive imperial decrees, government support of forced conversions, the continuation of temple destruction, and the use of imperial troops to these ends. Using troops to force a religious viewpoint on people was a “holy practice”. The state enforced agenda of religious repression started by Constantine in the early fourth century made significant gains under Justinian. The false Christian religion started by the “fathers” only engendered more superstition, darkness, and madness. The wicked clergy taught men (laity) to be ignorant serfs in an alleged “Christian Society”.

Justinian continued the work of Constantine and Theodosius in persecuting “Christian” dissenters against Rome: Jews and non-Catholic pagans. Like most of the Christian Emperors, and all of the clergy, he was convinced that the empire's stability required an empire wide conformity to the Nicene Creed. Justinian's Codex and Novella parts of the Corpus Juris Civilis were specifically designed to eradicate, by whatever means, religious diversity and freedom of religious thought/choice. These codes were written to secure and protect the “Catholic Church” alone with the might and law of the empire. To Justinian, it was for the good of the empire to eradicate individual freedom of religious choice. To Justinian, choice/freedom meant disorder. To the Catholic Emperor, individuality and freedom of conscience meant chaos. Justinian was the king of the despots.

This Catholic Roman Empire required all to conform. That is totalitarianism by definition. In 523 his Uncle Justin did what other emperors had done; he outlawed Arianism. Arianism had been under attack since Constantine and the Council of Nicaea. Campaigns and persecutions against Arians became
widespread. Justinian was no different with regard to heresies with one exception: Monophysitism, to which his wife Theodora was an adherent. Monophysitism was never wiped out and became the foundation for major churches in Syria and North Africa. Egyptian Coptic, Ethiopian, and some Syrian churches are Monophysite, and began with the denominational fracture at the Council of Chalcedon. The doctrinal difference was that with these Monophysites, Christ had only one nature and it was divine. With Nicene’s he had two: fully human and fully divine. With Arians, Jesus was an anointed human messenger from God, and not divine in essence.

Justinian threatened severe penalties for all other heresies but Monophysites from the start. Justinian savagely persecuted the Manicheans, the Montanists, and the Sabbatians. His brand of inquisition brought about penalties such as the loss of citizen rights, exile, and death for paganism and heresy. The execution of many by burning or drowning was performed in his presence.

Another of Justinian’s early decrees was to order the total destruction of Hellenism, the post-Alexandrian spread of Hellenic thought. In his decrees, recorded as Codex Justinianus 1.11.9-10, he ordered the execution of those who practice sorcery, divination, magic or idolatry. In one translation, Justinian refers to them as “the ones suffering from the blasphemous insanity of the Hellenes.” Execution was by fire, crucifixion, wild beasts in an arena, or being shredded to pieces by sharp iron nails.

Was this brutal activity what Jesus meant when He said, “Go ye therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost” (Mt. 28:19)?

More from Justinian (bold type and underlining added):

“All those who have not yet been baptized must come forward, whether they reside in the capital or in the provinces, and go to the very holy churches with their wives, their children, and their households, to be instructed in the true faith of Christians. And once thus instructed and sincerely renounced their former error, let them be judged worthy of redemptive baptism. Should they disobey, let them know that they will be excluded from the State and will no longer have any rights of possession, neither goods nor property; stripped of everything, they will be reduced to penury, without prejudice to the appropriate punishments that will be imposed on them.”

Let me summarize the catholic/state plan of salvation:

Work Number One: The altar call. You must come forward.

Work Number Two: Submit your whole family to the “clergy/church” to be catechized.
Work Number Three: Renounce your former errors (both political and religious) and be declared worthy by the clergy/priest.

Work Number Four: Receive the “drip, sprinkle, or drowning.”

Success! You have now earned the sacrament of baptismal regeneration. You have become twice sons of the devil. You have earned the right to exist on this earth.

Justinian again:

“We forbid anyone stricken with the madness of the impure Hellenes to teach, so as to prevent them, under the guise of teaching those who by misfortune happen to attend their classes, from in fact corrupting the souls of those they pretend to educate. They will not receive state pensions, having no license either by Sacred Scripture or earthly law, to claim for themselves any immunity whatsoever.”

Justinian, united with the insane “Catholic” clerics, was no better regarding the issues of liberty than any other totalitarian ideology that sought to crush human freedom. Twentieth century dictators like Hitler, Mao, Pol Pot, Stalin, Franco, Mussolini, Marcos and Pinochet also crushed human conscience and anything approaching dissent. The same is seen in fanatical Islam. Like these dictators, in the name of the Church and with its blessings, Justinian crushed dissent with force and jailed all non-conformists.

535: The Synod of Claremont decreed that Jews could not hold public office or have authority over Christians.

538: The 3rd and 4th Councils of Orleans prohibited Jews from appearing in public during the Easter season. Canon XXX decreted: “From the Thursday before Easter for four days, Jews may not appear in the company of Christians.” Marriages between Christians and Jews were prohibited.

561: The bishop of Uzes expelled Jews from his diocese in France.

612: Jews were not allowed to own land, to be farmers, or to enter certain trades.

613: Very serious persecution began in Spain. Jews were given the options of either leaving Spain or converting to Christianity. Jewish children over 6 years of age were taken from their parents and given a Christian education.

692: Cannon II of the Quinisext Council stated: “Let no one in the priestly order nor any layman eat the unleavened bread of the Jews, nor have any familiar intercourse with them, nor summon them in illness, nor receive medicines from them, nor bathe with them; but if anyone shall take in hand to do so, if he is a cleric, let him be deposed, but if a layman, let him be cut off.”
722: Leo III outlawed Judaism. Jews and Pagans were baptized against their will.

855: Jews and non-conformists were exiled from Italy.

1050: The Synod of Narbonne prohibited Christians from living in the homes of Jews.

1054: Great Schism - Eastern Orthodox and Western Catholic churches separate.

By no means is the above a complete listing of events that took place during this period, but rather a sampling of the wickedness perpetuated at the hands of this institution called “Catholic Christianity”.

In our next segment we will discuss the historical rise of Islam/Moslem/Muslim and the wicked intolerance between both of these false religions: pseudo- Christianity and Islam.
In previous segments we discussed National Israel's hateful rejection of Jesus Christ and His Kingdom. This rejection led to many sects arising from Judaism that followed the teachings of Jesus Christ, yet denied His divinity. To them, Jesus was just another prophet sent from God to show by way of example how man can obey the laws (Torah) of God and become justified. One major group was called the Ebionites.

The initial Jesus movements in Jerusalem were formed by early followers of Jesus Christ, and headed by the disciple James. Henceforth a letter was written under that name that reflected the Ebionite and Nazarene view of Justification through law, obedience and good works. The letter of James was cleverly written to not introduce or raise any polemical issue as to the divinity of Christ, which would have driven a wedge between these main two sects, but rather in a Judaistic style that would still keep these two sects within the framework of Judaism and Torah Law. Contrast this with Paul the Apostle, who tore down the dividing wall between Jew and Gentile. Paul taught the Mosaic Law was fulfilled and found its fullest expression in Jesus Christ. To Paul, any subservience to law or good works as a means of Justification was antithetical to Grace.

Historical evidence almost certainly shows that James was the principal leader of the Jerusalem church as opposed to the Catholic myth that Peter was the first “Pope”. Their (Ebionite) understanding of Christianity differed fundamentally from the teaching of Paul the Apostle, whom they considered to be a false teacher. Obedience to LAW as a basis for Justification and reconciliation with God is one of their major tenets. This is similar to Nazarenes who were strict legalists but did maintain a belief in the divinity of Christ. Mohammed's early religious beliefs
closely (not exactly) resembled the religion preached by Ebionites on many grounds.

This group of early followers of Jesus, known as the Ebionites (the poor), is sometimes confused with the Nazarenes. Both were labeled “heretics” and heavily persecuted by the Trinitarian Catholic pseudo-Christian church, both East and West.

The Ebionites believed:

Jesus was a created human, and not divine.
Jesus was a teacher and prophet sent from God.
Jesus was the expected Messiah.
The Law (Torah) must be observed.
Their was the earliest congregation of followers to Jesus, starting from the beginning of Jesus' ministry.
They emphasized the humanity of Jesus Christ.
They rejected the divinity of Jesus.
They rejected the atoning and substitutionary death of Jesus Christ.
Some Ebionites rejected the virgin birth of Jesus Christ.

Irenaeus, wrote in “Against Heresy”:

“Those who are called Ebionites agree that the world was made by God; but their opinions with respect to the Lord are similar to those of Cerinthus and Carpocrates. They use the Gospel according to Matthew only, and repudiate the Apostle Paul, maintaining that he was an apostate from the law. As to the prophetical writings, they endeavor to expound them in a somewhat singular manner: they practice circumcision, persevere in the observance of those customs which are enjoined by the law, and are so Judaic in their style of life, that they even adore Jerusalem as if it were the house of God.”

The link below shows an in-depth explanation of current day beliefs of Ebionism. It is radically different from early Ebionism.

http://www.ebionite.org/faq.htm

There is a substantial amount of historical evidence linking Mohammed's life, education, and religious philosophy to being exposed to Ebionism. The surviving Ebionite communities up till the Muslim conquest of the Middle East were mainly absorbed into Islam. Ebionites of Syria and Egypt were converting to Islam in the 7th century AD, either by real heartfelt conversion or through fear of death. The Quran shares similar beliefs with Ebionites, i.e. Monotheism, emphasizing the humanity of Jesus, and rejection of the Trinity. One exception is the virgin birth, which the Quran confirms (with quite a different understanding in contrast to the New Testament witness), and most Ebionites reject. The Ebionite communities
quite easily could have seen Islam as a continuation of the same message of God delivered by their prophets: Moses, Abraham, Jesus and now Mohammed.

For those interested, there are many websites that deal with historical Islamic origins. Below are a few. As with all sites listed in these studies, I do not completely endorse all of their theological beliefs. They are listed for historical reference pertaining to this subject.

In the first site below, the sections start at part 8, but all parts are offered in descending order:

http://www.jihadwatch.org/2011/10/is...ct-part-8.html

http://staringattheview.blogspot.com...and-quran.html

http://isaacandishmael.blogspot.com/

http://bibleprobe.com/muhammad.htm

http://answering-islam.org/Index/E/ebionites.html

All sects of Ebionism and Arianism, whether they are called Christian, Islamic, Judaistic, or something else, are patently false and reject Christ's own claim to divinity. There can never be a proper doctrine of salvation from sin in these religions. They are all components of Anti-Christ religion.

The most important two beliefs (premises) for the true elect believer in Christ are (one): The divinity of Jesus Christ, and (two): The gospel of salvation by Grace alone through the imputed righteousness of Christ Alone and realized through Faith Alone without all works.

The Catholic (East-West) church, although agreeing to the divinity of Jesus Christ as a tenet of their faith, totally rejected the finished work (Gospel) of Jesus Christ and substituted a works-oriented Judeo/Pagan mystical hybrid religion. This rejection of the objective Gospel forfeited their claim on Christianity, thus making them an Anti-Christ religion also.

All Anti-Christ religions teach forms of justification/salvation by human effort and cooperation. The most deceptive anti-Christ soteriology on justification is the infusion of Grace + Works as the ground for justification as taught and perfected by Augustine of Hippo.

Judaism, pseudo-Christianity, and Islam all claim Abraham as their father, but reject Abraham's faith and distort his true seed, Jesus Christ. These three religions together have manifested the most evil and wicked intolerance of all worldly religions combined.
The Quran, like the Talmud, is immoral, hate filled, blasphemous, and the Christ-rejecting writings of deranged fanatical religious psychopaths.

For a timeline of brutal and wicked aggression exercised by the Islamic forces of evil, see the site below:

http://answering-islam.org/Authors/A...s_timeline.htm

In our next segment, we will discuss the historical period from 1054 AD to the reformation: the Roman Papacy, including an examination of Thomas Aquinas’ false teachings, along with the wicked intolerance (inquisition) he perpetuated.
An Amillennial Understanding of the Kingdom of God

Nicholas A. Laurienzo

Chapter 27
1054 AD To The Reformation - The Beast Thirsts For More Blood

Jn. 13:34-35 “34 A new commandment I give to you, that you love one another: just as I have loved you, you also are to love one another. 35 By this all people will know that you are my disciples, if you have love for one another.”

Ro. 5:8 “But God commendeth his own love toward us, in that, while we were yet sinners, Christ died for us.”

Before examining this period of history, I want to briefly discuss the most important, yet most difficult (hard to swallow) aspect of the “true faith” delivered to the saints, which is Love.

Love is most important because Jesus said it was.

Mk. 12:30-33 “30 and thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind, and with all thy strength. 31 The second is this, Thou shalt love thy neighbor as thyself. There is none other commandment greater than these. 32 And the scribe said unto him, Of a truth, Teacher, thou hast well said that he is one; and there is none other but he: 33 and to love him with all the heart, and with all the understanding, and with all the strength, and to love his neighbor as himself, is much more than all whole burnt-offerings and sacrifices.”

Love is the most difficult because while possessing the gift of the Holy Spirit, which is our source of power and enlightenment, we still live in this body of death. We war and struggle with the application of this truth. Romans 7. Nonetheless, just because we struggle with the application of this “love”, in no way is our Lords' commandment to be minimized or set aside as an impossible task. True faith strives to please God as a result of Justification. “We love Him because He first loved us” (1 Jn. 4:19).

Jesus Christ our Lord commands us to love one another in the same manner that He loved us.

Did Jesus love and die for His people unconditionally?

Those of us who understand the Grace of God would answer yes. What does unconditional mean? It means God’s affection toward us is not based/grounded on some intrinsic pleasing quality in the creature of His affection. His love is not determined or influenced by someone or something outside Himself. Concluding
that the Grace of God is 100% tolerant toward His people, despite their acts of sin, lack of absolute doctrinal purity, lack of perfect obedience, and lack of perfect submission in all things. On the contrary, as we have discussed in previous segments, the beastly religion is intolerant in all aspects and manifests itself as antithetical toward the true love of God.

For the religious beast to exist, it must shed blood to survive. It is ordained to do just that.

Mt. 23:35 “That upon you may come all the righteous blood shed upon the earth, from the blood of righteous Abel unto the blood of Zacharias son of Barachias, whom ye slew between the temple and the altar.”

Religious intolerance started from the very beginning of mankind, manifested in apostate National Israel, and will continue until God destroys this shadow creation. The premillennial [and postmillennial] myth of a thousand year golden age of Christ on this earth physically, is ludicrous. As long as mankind exists on this earth in his fallen condition and in the flesh, there will be wickedness and intolerance.

Pseudo-Christianity (including Trinitarian sects) and Islam are Judaized forms of religion. Like their visible root/mother, “National Israel”, they thrive on blood-shedding.

This is what Paul the Apostle said:

2 Co. 10:1-6 “1 By the meekness and gentleness of Christ, I appeal to you I, Paul, who am ‘timid’ when face to face with you, but ‘bold’ when away! 2 I beg you that when I come I may not have to be as bold as I expect to be toward some people who think that we live by the standards of this world. 3 For though we live in the world, we do not wage war as the world does. 4 The weapons we fight with are not the weapons of the world. On the contrary, they have divine power to demolish strongholds. 5 We demolish arguments and every pretension that sets itself up against the knowledge of God, and we take captive every thought to make it obedient to Christ. 6 And we will be ready to punish every act of disobedience, once your obedience is complete.”

Would Paul the Apostle condone the brutal wickedness of what our current world mistakenly views as Christianity, the Christian religion?

Paul on Love: 1Co. 13:1-13:

1 If I speak with the tongues of men and of angels, but have not love, I am become sounding brass, or a clanging cymbal.

2 And if I have the gift of prophecy, and know all mysteries and all knowledge;
and if I have all faith, so as to remove mountains, but have not love, I am nothing.

3 And if I bestow all my goods to feed the poor, and if I give my body to be burned, but have not love, it profiteth me nothing.

4 Love suffereth long (not according to the beast), and is kind (murder and intolerance); love envieth not (hates and envies all who will not submit); love vaunteth not itself (The beast has done nothing but vaunt herself in the eyes of the world), is not puffed up (the beast is conceited and self-righteous),

5 doth not behave itself unseemly (worse! the beast has shown utter contempt for humanity and Gods' kingdom), seeketh not its own (has sought her own lust for power and control from the very beginning), is not provoked, taketh not account of evil (has displayed the opposite);

6 rejoiceth not in unrighteousness, but rejoiceth with the truth (The beast rejoices in unrighteousness and her false gospel while hating the truth);

7 beareth all things, believeth all things, hopeth all things, endureth all things.

8 Love never faileth (intolerance, murder and torture will fail): but whether there be prophecies, they shall be done away; whether there be tongues, they shall cease; whether there be knowledge, it shall be done away.

9 For we know in part, and we prophesy in part;

10 but when that which is perfect is come, that which is in part shall be done away.

11 When I was a child, I spake as a child, I felt as a child, I thought as a child: now that I am become a man, I have put away childish things.

12 For now we see in a mirror, darkly; but then face to face: now I know in part; but then shall I know fully even as also I was fully known.

13 But now abideth faith, hope, love, these three; and the greatest of these is love."

Love is not an abstract principle of God's kingdom. Love is the foundation of His Kingdom. Without love there is no kingdom of God for His people. Similar to the Scriptures, the gospel must interpret what constitutes Scripture and likewise Scripture must witness to the Gospel. Both are integral and inseparable. Truth, doctrine, and love are inseparable. They coexist together. Truth and doctrine without love profits nothing for it will lack the source, which is love. And a professed love that dismisses truth and doctrine is a false love. There are no
abstract principles in God's kingdom. The greatest is Love in order of necessity.

As discussed in previous segments, the pseudo “churchmen” during the great apostasy born during the lives of the apostles discarded the teachings of Jesus and Paul, devising a different plan to establish the “kingdom”. An earthly kingdom they alleged to be the kingdom of Christ. A kingdom established by the rule of blood, tyranny, autonomy, brutal intolerance, and suppression of conscience. A fake kingdom with a false gospel and a false Christ. This wicked kingdom of theirs will eventually be thoroughly destroyed.

We as Christ’s elect people have the benefit of history on our side. We possess computers/internet that provide us with a wealth of information. Unlike our community libraries or some church libraries that are limited and cannot be frequented on a daily basis, we posses the evidence (the smoking gun) that indicts, and proves the beast guilty of crimes against all humanity and most particularly, crimes against God's true saints.

“Seek and ye shall find”

1054 AD (East-West Schism) was another pinnacle period of history. The tension that was brewing for centuries prior between the East (Greek/Byzantine) and West (Latin/Rome) factions of the beastly religion came to a boiling point. As briefly mentioned earlier, these tensions were based along political, theological, and ecclesiastical issues.

For a better understanding, please read from the below links. These are just a few:


http://www.newworldencyclopedia.org/entry/Great_Schism

From a Scriptural perspective we have already discussed some false premises the beastly religion was founded upon.

It is wrong from an ecclesiastical premise.
It is wrong from a soteriological premise.
It is wrong from a political premise.

Due to this incorrectness there would be more blood-shedding, hate and intolerance. The lust for world supremacy (power and control over souls) would continue. From Constantine to this period in discussion, we get a pretty good glimpse at the realities of “reconstructionism” in its actual historical application. It did not work in the past and postmillennial reconstructionism will not work presently or in the future.
The West (Latin Catholicism) would at this time prove to be the more formidable foe between the two. Why? The West duped (through religious sorcery and false claims) more political kings and princes to fight for her than her counterpart. This period also demonstrates more fully the intrinsic evil of the Papal despotic system. The Crusades and the Inquisition were motivated by both Satanic political and theological aspirations. Lofty goals to achieve world supremacy by attempting to subjugate all peoples to the Vicar of Christ.

Here is a brief example of the arrogant claims made by the Papacy that the Byzantines would not and could not accept. And neither would I.

Pope Gregory VII (originally named Hildebrand) (1020-1085) *Dictatus papae:*

1. That the Roman church was founded by God alone.
2. That the Roman pontiff alone can with right be called universal.
3. That he alone can depose or reinstate bishops.
4. That, in a council, his legate, even if a lower grade, is above all bishops, and can pass sentence of deposition against them.
5. That the pope may depose the absent.
6. That, among other things, we ought not to remain in the same house with those excommunicated by him.
7. That for him alone is it lawful, according to the needs of the time, to make new laws, to assemble together new congregations, to make an abbey of a canonry; and, on the other hand, to divide a rich bishopric and unite the poor ones.
8. That he alone may use the imperial insignia.
9. That of the pope alone all princes shall kiss the feet.
10. That his name alone shall be spoken in the churches.
11. That this is the only name in the world.
12. That it may be permitted to him to depose emperors.
13. That he may be permitted to transfer bishops if need be.
14. That he has power to ordain a clerk of any church he may wish.
15. That he who is ordained by him may preside over another church, but may not hold a subordinate position; and that such a one may not receive a higher grade from any bishop.
16. That no synod shall be called a general one without his order.
17. That no chapter and no book shall be considered canonical without his authority.
18. That a sentence passed by him may be retracted by no one, and that he himself, alone of all, may retract it.
19. That he himself may be judged by no one.
20. That no one shall dare to condemn one who appeals to the apostolic chair.
21. That to the latter should be referred the more important cases of every church.
22. That the Roman church has never erred; nor will it err to all eternity, the Scripture bearing witness.
23. That the Roman pontiff, if he have been canonically ordained, is undoubtedly made a saint by the merits of St. Peter; St. Ennodius, bishop of Pavia, bearing witness, and many holy fathers agreeing with him. As is contained in the decrees of St. Symmachus the pope.
24. That, by his command and consent, it may be lawful for subordinates to bring accusations.
25. That he may depose and reinstate bishops without assembling a synod.
26. That he who is not at peace with the Roman church shall not be considered catholic.
27. That he may absolve subjects from their fealty to wicked men.

The above 27 satanic falsehoods set the world on a new course. “Let there be more blood.” Totalitarian, egotistic, insane, criminal psychopathic despotism cloaked under the guise of the Christian faith. There is only one reason why an individual would still maintain that the Papacy, her ecumenical friends, and daughters (protestants) are to be considered part of the Body of Christ. That reason is due to blindness. Only one who has been regenerated by God's (Holy Spirit) grace possesses the ability to discriminate between that which belongs to the Kingdom of Light, and that which belongs to the kingdom of darkness.

Although I am just as much opposed to the Orthodox wing of the religious beast, below are a few sites from an Orthodox perspective to achieve a better understanding of the conflict.

In one of the articles you will find this statement:

“Our (Orthodox-added) involvement in various religious topics which relate completely to Orthodoxy, should at no time be seen as intolerance or as some sort of hostile activity.”

History tells us a different story. Although Orthodoxy/Byzantium was weaker than the Papal States, they have a fair share of intolerance and blood on their hands also.


Do we recall when God divided mankind? Nimrod proposed both a religious and political unity based on rebellion against God. This enduring spiritual principal of
rebellion is applicable to ALL of unregenerate and reprobate mankind. Even to the establishment of the pseudo-Christian enterprise. Additional comments in blue.

Ge. 10:8 “And Cush begat Nimrod: he began to be a mighty one in the earth.”

The great apostasy produced the false un-biblical Christian clergy, false gospel, and a Judaized form of Christian religion. They became mighty on the earth.

Ge. 10:10 “And the beginning of his kingdom was Babel....”

The beginning of their kingdom was the lamb-like beast. Her spiritual “DNA”, like Islam, was rooted in apostate National Israel.

Ge. 11:4 “And they said, Come, let us build us a city, and a tower, whose top may reach unto heaven, and let us make us a name; lest we be scattered abroad upon the face of the whole earth.”

The lamb-like beast said let us build the “City of God ala Augustine” by the good works of our own hands. So we can merit justification before God and reach up to heaven. Let us make a name for ourselves with all applicable clergy titles, ecclesiastical structure, and offices so we will not be divided.

Ge. 11:5 “And Jehovah came down to see the city and the tower, which the children of men builded.”

And the Lord looked at this abominable institution which the children of men built and said, “Except the LORD build the house, they labour in vain that build it: except the LORD keep the city, the watchman waketh but in vain.”

Ge. 11:6 “And Jehovah said, Behold, they are one people, and they have all one language; and this is what they begin to do: and now nothing will be withholden from them, which they purpose to do.”

They indeed are one people. From the “fathers” to this day their clerical robes are drenched with blood. They all share in the language of heresy.

Ge. 11:7 “Come, let us go down, and there confound their language, that they may not understand one another’s speech.”

Indeed God did take action. He brought about schism after schism till this monster became shattered into hundreds of sects.

Ge. 11:8 “So Jehovah scattered them abroad from thence upon the face of all the earth: and they left off building the city.”
Now they build their own denominations and sects and reject the absolute sovereignty of God and the Gospel of Christ's imputed righteousness. They hold to falsehoods of “mans free will and human responsibility” along with the notion God loves everyone.

Ge. 11:9 “Therefore was the name of it called Babel; because Jehovah did there confound the language of all the earth: and from thence did Jehovah scatter them abroad upon the face of all the earth.”

The Christian religion (not the true faith of Christ) is part of Babel/Babylon. And their heresies and evils are spread throughout the earth (cf. Re. 14:8; 16:19; 17:5; 18:2, 10, 21).

Nimrod proposed both a religious and political unity based on rebellion against God. So did institutional pseudo-Christianity, Talmudic Judaism, and Islam. These three constitute an unholy trinity.

This schism brought about a wave of madness called the crusades. During the Crusades many Orthodox Churches were ransacked and destroyed, and many relics and ancient items stolen and destroyed (among them the Holy Napkin) by the Latin Catholics, who had pretty much at this time abandoned the Orthodox.

These incidents happened during one of the most brutal times in (Christian?) history. One would think that after 1200 years since Christ was on this earth, the true Gospel proclaimed and taught by Paul the Apostle, the spiritual growth of Christianity would have been better than that. However, without the truth of the Gospel, and guidance of the Holy Spirit, what else can be expected. The situations leading up to the sack of 1204 and the sack itself have left deep scars. Pope John Paul II addressed the Archbishop of Athens and Primate of Greece. He said:

“Clearly there is a need for a liberating process of purification of memory. For the occasions past and present, when sons and daughters of the Catholic Church have sinned by action or omission against their Orthodox brothers and sisters, may the Lord grant us the forgiveness we beg of Him.”

“Some memories are especially painful, and some events of the distant past have left deep wounds in the minds and hearts of people to this day. I am thinking of the disastrous sack of the imperial city of Constantinople, which was for so long the bastion of Christianity in the East. It is tragic that the assailants, who had set out to secure free access for Christians to the Holy Land, turned against their own brothers in the faith. The fact that they were Latin Christians [Roman Catholics] fills Catholics with deep regret. How can we fail to see here the 'mysterium iniquitatis' at work in the human heart? To God alone belongs judgment and, therefore, we entrust the heavy burden of the past to his endless mercy, imploring him to heal the wounds that still cause suffering to the spirit of
the Greek people."

http://www.vatican.va/holy_father/jo...athens_en.html

Just another bit of lip service from the pontiff. But what happened in 1204? Was the blood spillage due to real truthful Scriptural differences? Let’s see.

The Crusades began in the 1090’s, which is forty years after the Orthodox desecrated the Latin Eucharist and holy books (because they were in Latin rather than Greek). **Now that's a good reason to kill and slaughter one another, right??????**

The Byzantine patriarch attacked the Latin churches in Constantinople itself, which were Latin speaking churches which existed since the time of Constantine; and he declared that their Eucharist was invalid because the Romans used unleavened (rather than leavened) bread. **Wow! Another good reason to shed blood?????**

The Eastern Patriarch Cerularius tried to force the Byzantine rite on the Romans living in the Eastern Empire. So he took armed soldiers into the Latin churches in Constantinople, and had them open the Tabernacles and throw the consecrated Eucharist in the streets. **Sheer insanity!!**

For those not familiar with the “tabernacle”, it is a little house, usually on the back altar, where Jesus is stored for a time until the priest removes Jesus from the house and eats him. How dare they throw Jesus (consecrated hosts) in the street. **Utter superstition! Madness!**

Horrifying as the sack of 1204 was, it should be noted that it was not totally unprovoked; more than once (massacre of 1182) the Greeks of Constantinople had treated the Latins there as they were now being treated. A bloodcurdling massacre of thousands [about 2000 Greeks were killed in Constantinople in 1204, according to secular historian Will Durant], in which the slaughterers (Christians?) spared neither women nor children, neither old nor sick, neither priest nor monk. Cardinal John, the Pope’s representative, was beheaded and his head was dragged through the streets at the tail of a dog; children were cut out of their mother’s wombs; bodies of dead Westerners were exhumed and abused; some 4,000 who escaped death were sold into slavery to the Turks. I thought the Scriptures taught, **“Vengeance is mine saith the Lord.”** But not according to false Christianity.

Eastern Orthodox scholar, Bishop Ware, also honorably writes about the Orthodox share of the blame in these massacres:

“Each . . . must look back at the past with sorrow and repentance. Both sides must in honesty acknowledge that they could and should have done more to
prevent the schism. Both sides were guilty of mistakes on the human level. Orthodox, for example, must blame themselves for the pride and contempt with which during the Byzantine period they regarded the west; they must blame themselves for incidents such as the riot of 1182, when many Latin residents at Constantinople were massacred by the Byzantine populace.”

Catholic historian Warren Carroll recalls two other lamentable Byzantine incidents:

“In 1171 (only 33 years before), on the orders or at least with the tacit approval of the Byzantine government, thousands of Venetians in the Eastern empire had been killed, mutilated, or arrested and held for years in prison. In 1188 (only 16 years before) Frederick Barbarossa requested permission of the Eastern Emperor, Isaac II Angelus, for passage of his army through Byzantine dominions on the way to the Holy Land, and for the right to purchase food for his troops within them. Isaac said he agreed . . . but in fact Isaac was resolved to oppose the passage of the crusaders, and made contact with Saladin [the Muslim commander] to concert plans ‘to delay and destroy the German army.’ About this ‘Byzantine treachery’ there is no doubt; even the many modern Western historians sympathetic to Byzantium and hostile to the Crusades have to admit it [e.g., Emperor Isaac, in 1187, had written Saladin to congratulate him for his great achievement of re-taking Jerusalem from the Latin crusaders].”

“[Frederick's envoys, imprisoned for a time] returned to Frederick . . . with infuriating (and accurate) reports of the Byzantine alliance with Saladin, plans to destroy the crusading army as it crossed the Dardanelles, and the violent anti-Western attitude of Patriarch Dositheus of Constantinople, who had offered unconditional absolution to any Greek killing a Westerner. Frederick passed on this information to his son Henry, . . . to ask the Pope's approval for a crusade against the Eastern Empire because of its treachery and dealings with the enemy. No Papal approval was given and Frederick soon thought better of the idea . . . Though a war against Christians was indubitably a perversion of the crusading ideal, Emperor Isaac's acts against the crusaders had clearly been acts of war” . . .

“Everything that the Fourth Crusade later did to Christendom's discredit, Frederick Barbarossa refused to do. . . The extent of Byzantine provocation of the Third Crusade is obvious from the sequence of events. It would be a long time before anyone in the West would trust them again.”

Latin Catholic bishop Bruno [1048-1123] made these statements assessing his own church: “justice had perished”, “churchmen in high places were constantly unmindful of justice.” Although he was made a “saint” by the Roman Catholic church, canonized by Pope Lucius III in 1183, it shows that even some unregenerate men can still produce an honest statement once in a while.
The administration of justice was based on pure superstition during many centuries of the Middle Ages, and known as *ordeals or ‘judgments of God’*. These alleged judgments of God gave rise to new superstitions. Whether guilty or not, persons subjected to the trials would often put more confidence in charms, magic formulas, and ointments than in the Providence of God. As late as 1538 the legal lore had hitherto been presented in a very barbarous form. As for widows and orphans, one of the proudest brags of the insane clerics, the “Church” by sword and rack and stake, has made an infinity more of widows and orphans than she ever meagerly cared for in her monkish lazarettos.

The “Christian” motto of the Vedic crusade in 1147: "*He who will not be baptised, shall die.*"

There were Crusades against the Moslems and Jews.
There were the Northern Crusades: against the non-Christians of Eastern Europe.
There were Crusades against the Eastern Orthodox Church.
There were Crusades against Orthodox Russia.
There were Crusades against alleged Christian heretics: the Albigenses, Cathar and Waldensians.
There even was a Children’s Crusade.

The bloody history and pattern of violence is so overwhelming that only a reprobate would try to defend the Christian religion. The Christian religion is evil. It is as evil as Talmudic Zionism and Islam. Only through divine causality regeneration and faith in our Lord Jesus Christ is one able to “*come out from among her*” and partake of the true faith, to eat and drink in His kingdom via the Holy Spirit.

“*Wherever there have been fought wars, where pillaging, burning and bloodshed have taken place, the holy church has participated…*” (A. Overland).

“*Damned be he who protect his sword from blood…*” (Pope Gregory VII).

“*When the key of St. Peter don’t suffice, let his sword help me!*” (Pope Julian II).

“*Through God’s wonderful and just judgement the crusaders waded in blood to their knees, - yes, even up to their horses saddles*” (Raimond of Agiles).

The crusades were in reality nothing other than pure Roman Catholic wars organized by the Popes. However, crusades are not something enjoyed by papists within medieval times only. They are something we also can find in modern times. The Vietnam War was declared as a crusade by the American Catholic bishops. Those same bishops also declared, in the second Vaticanum, that one should use the atomic bomb against Vietnam to defend Catholicism there.
The beast does not change. How can a reprobate system ever change?
Thomas is attributed with honorary titles such as Doctor Angelicus, Doctor Communis, or Doctor Universalis by the Roman Catholic Church, along with being adored and confirmed by Rome's papal vassal sympathizers: the “fifth column” apostate Protestant theologians.

Thomas, in my view, was an eclectic writer. He is Aristotelian, Platonic, and Socratic at his core, and his clever powers of synthesizing Scripture with philosophy were extraordinary.

Thomas continued to refine and more adequately present the already existing philosophical/theological heresies promulgated by his earlier Latin/West predecessors Gregory the Great, Ambrose, Augustine, and Jerome, also drawing upon men of the East, John Chrysostom, Basil, and Gregory Nazianzen.

The writings that exercised the greatest influence on his mind were the writings of the philosophers, especially of Aristotle, Plato, Boethius, the “Sentences” of Peter Lombard, the works of the Fathers both Greek and Latin, Augustine, the decrees of the councils and of the popes, the Scriptures.

In the “Summa” alone he quotes from the writings of forty-six philosophers and poets, his favorite authors being Aristotle, Plato, and Boethius, a pseudo-Christian writer. From Boethius he learned that Aristotle's works could be used without detriment to Papal Christianity. In general Aristotle was his master, but the maturing of Thomas' ideas speak strongly of Plato also.
The importance of this brief examination into Thomas cannot be overstated. The evils of “Thomism” and/or a postmillennial “Thomist societal worldview” are currently working to reinstate the Medieval Papal pseudo-Christian religion (united with her ecumenical whore Protestant daughters) to a status far beyond their twin evil brothers Talmudic Jew Zionism and Islam. The goal of course, as always with Papal despotism, is to achieve and maintain chief evil status and supremacy in the world of religion and politics amongst her evil religious brothers. These three false monotheistic religious systems continually war amongst one another, currently as in the past.

We will only focus on two subjects pertaining to Thomas: one, his heretical ecclesiastical intolerance and two, his heretical soteriology on Justification.

I whole-heartily recommend that all of you read Thomas' works for the benefit of not being misguided by those who claim to be reformed, but are none other than philosophical Thomists and Papal sympathizers. There are many of these “Judases” in Reformed and non-Catholic circles. Just to name a few notables: Timothy M. Renick, David C. Steinmetz, John L. Farthing, John H. Gerstner, R.C. Sproul, Norman Geisler, J.I. Packer, N.T. Wright. Charles Colson in his book, “How Now Shall We Live”, extols and praises the virtues of a Thomist society. These men for decades have been resurrecting Aquinas (Thomism) and Augustine, giving them the status of proto-Protestants. Nothing can be further from the truth, and it is the biggest lie perpetuated from the depths of hell and taught from the mouths and writings of the above named corrupt theologians and writers.

Thomas was a very organized and clever writer. In the sections (Summa Theologica) he opens with an “entire question” then breaks the question down into different categories. Within the different categories he proposes objections. Some are straw men, in my view, and some are from other religious and philosophical writers. Then he proceeds to answer the objections with his own personal views as developed from Augustine, Jerome, and the fathers, among others. All quotes will be taken from Thomas' own writings, “Summa Theologica”.

Now please bear in mind the “objections” are what Thomas writes against.

My critiques are in blue. Bolding and underlining are added.

For added clarification, all sections below listed from Summa Theologica will have the “ST” abbreviation.

**Heretical Ecclesiastical Intolerance**

**Summa Theologica**

ST Question: Whether it is suitable for the articles of faith to be embodied in a
symbol? (IIa IIae q. 1 a. 9).

ST Objection 1. It would seem that it is unsuitable for the articles of faith to be embodied in a symbol. Because Holy Writ is the rule of faith, to which no addition or subtraction can lawfully be made, since it is written (De. 4:2): "You shall not add to the word that I speak to you, neither shall you take away from it." Therefore it was unlawful to make a symbol as a rule of faith, after the Holy Writ had once been published.

The essence of the proposed objection seeks to undermine the Papal claim that tradition, living magisterium, and the collective witness of the "church" codified in dogma and doctrine are of equal authority as to the Scriptures and thus binding on the conscience. So even before the official start of the "reformation" some few hundred years later, there were those who were starting to dissent or at minimum shared some concerns against Papal infallibility.

Thomas: ST “On the contrary, the universal Church cannot err, since she is governed by the Holy Ghost, Who is the Spirit of truth: for such was Our Lord’s promise to His disciples (Jn. 16:13): “When He, the Spirit of truth, is come, He will teach you all truth.” Now the symbol is published by the authority of the universal Church. Therefore it contains nothing defective.”

Thomas: ST Reply to Objection 1. “The truth of faith is contained in Holy Writ, diffusely, under various modes of expression, and sometimes obscurely, so that, in order to gather the truth of faith from Holy Writ, one needs long study and practice, which are unattainable by all those who require to know the truth of faith, many of whom have no time for study, being busy with other affairs. And so it was necessary to gather together a clear summary from the sayings of Holy Writ, to be proposed to the belief of all. This indeed was no addition to Holy Writ, but something taken from it.”

There are some truths and errors mingled in his reply, but the end result is disastrous. In his general opening argument he proposes the faulty premise that the Church of Rome cannot err, therefore its teachings contain nothing defective.

It is quite true that “truth” is contained in the Holy Writ. It is also quite true that for one to gather more truth requires long study and practice. But it is wrong for an individual to allow clerics to decide for them what should be believed (or not) as truth, and accept proposed beliefs for all to blindly submit to. You see, because Thomas considers the laity to be burdened by the affairs of this world, we should let the clergy decide for us what is truth, then blindly follow that alleged truth.

This essential “Thomist” way of thinking is not only confined to the papal religious realm, but it has reached outward to political thought also. Most citizens do not question the motives and actions of their respective governments. They have been misguided into thinking that their government (through blind loyalty wrongly
equated as patriotism) would never act to lie, harm or injure them. Most Protestants think the same way. Many Americans think the same way also.

From this point I'll mainly quote Thomas' replies. If you want to see all the objections a link will be supplied. You can read for yourself.

http://www.sacred-texts.com/chr/aquinas/summa/

ST- Ila IIae q. 1 a. 10 (bold and underlining added):

ST “On the contrary, the symbol was drawn us by a general council. Now such a council cannot be convoked otherwise than by the authority of the Sovereign Pontiff, as stated in the Decretals. Therefore it belongs to the authority of the Sovereign Pontiff to draw up a symbol.”

This is false, and not Scriptural at all.

ST “I answer that, as stated above (obj. 1), a new edition of the symbol becomes necessary in order to set aside the errors that may arise. Consequently to publish a new edition of the symbol belongs to that authority which is empowered to decide matters of faith finally, so that they may be held by all with unshaken faith. Now this belongs to the authority of the Sovereign Pontiff, ‘to whom the more important and more difficult questions that arise in the Church are referred,’ as stated in the Decretals. Hence our Lord said to Peter whom he made Sovereign Pontiff (Lu. 22:32): ‘I have prayed for thee,’ Peter, ‘that thy faith fail not, and thou, being once converted, confirm thy brethren.’ The reason of this is that there should be but one faith of the whole Church, according to 1Cor. 1:10: ‘that you all speak the same thing, and that there be no schisms among you’: and this could not be secured unless any question of faith that may arise be decided by him, who presides over the whole Church, so that the whole Church may hold firmly to his decision. Consequently it belongs to the sole authority of the Sovereign Pontiff to publish a new edition of the symbol, as do all other matters which concern the whole Church, such as to convokes a general council and so forth.”
More lies and falsehoods.

ST “Athenasius drew up a declaration of faith, not under the form of a symbol, but rather by way of an exposition of doctrine, as appears from his way of speaking. But since it contained briefly the whole truth of faith, it was accepted by the authority of the Sovereign Pontiff, so as to be considered as a rule of faith.”

Although Athenasius may have had some truth, per Thomas, this truth must be affirmed by the Imperial Potentate himself to be considered a rule of faith.

ST- Ila Ilae q. 5 a. 3

ST “Now it is manifest that he who adheres to the teaching of the Church, as to an infallible rule, assents to whatever the Church teaches; otherwise, if, of the things taught by the Church, he holds what he chooses to hold, and rejects what he chooses to reject, he no longer adheres to the teaching of the Church as to an infallible rule, but to his own will. Hence it is evident that a heretic who obstinately disbelieves one article of faith, is not prepared to follow the teaching of the Church in all things; but if he is not obstinate, he is no longer in heresy but only in error. Therefore it is clear that such a heretic with regard to one article has no faith in the other articles, but only a kind of opinion in accordance with his own will.”

Allow me to break this down a bit.

One: If one believes the Papal church to be infallible then naturally they must believe ALL its teachings to be absolute truth.

Two: If one dissents by rejecting some teachings of the Papal church, in that rejection he denies the alleged infallibility of the church, thus rejecting the alleged guidance of the Holy Spirit thus acquiescing to his own will.

ST “On the contrary, the universal Church cannot err, since she is governed by the Holy Ghost.”

Three: A heretic is defined as one who “obstinately” disbelieves “one” article of the Papal faith. The one who is not “obstinate” yet disagrees, is only considered to be in error. However in both cases Thomas sees these individuals as guided by their own will and not of the Holy Spirit.

ST “The various conclusions of a science have their respective means of demonstration, one of which may be known without another, so that we may know some conclusions of a science without knowing the others. On the other hand faith adheres to all the articles of faith by reason of one mean, viz. on account of the First Truth proposed to us in Scriptures, according to the teaching of the Church who has the right understanding of them. Hence
whoever abandons this mean is altogether lacking in faith.”

According to Thomas, he alleges that true faith adheres to all articles of the Papal faith by reason of “ONE MEAN”, that is, the Scriptures as solely interpreted and understood by the Papist clergy, period!

Whoever abandons the dogmas and teachings of the Papacy has abandoned the “MEAN”, thus totally lacks faith.

ST- Whether unbelief is a sin?
Ila Iiae q. 10 a. 1

ST “Unbelief, in so far as it is a sin, arises from pride, through which man is unwilling to subject his intellect to the rules of faith, and to the sound interpretation of the Fathers. Hence Gregory says (Moral. xxxi, 45), that “presumptuous innovations arise from vainglory....”

We have already shown in Thomas that the “rules of faith” strictly belong and are the prerogatives of the Papal church alone. Any dissension against the Papal church is considered the sin of unbelief.

ST-Whether unbelievers ought to be compelled to the faith?
Ila Iiae q. 10 a. 8

ST Objection 1: “It would seem that unbelievers ought by no means to be compelled to the faith. For it is written (Mt. 13:28) that the servants of the householder, in whose field cockle had been sown, asked him: ‘Wilt thou that we go and gather it up?’ and that he answered: ‘No, lest perhaps gathering up the cockle, you root up the wheat also together with it’: on which passage Chrysostom says (Hom. xlvi in Matth.): ‘Our Lord says this so as to forbid the slaying of men. For it is not right to slay heretics, because if you do you will necessarily slay many innocent persons.’ Therefore it seems that for the same reason unbelievers ought not to be compelled to the faith.”

Thomas: ST “On the contrary, It is written (Lu. 14:23): ‘Go out into the highways and hedges; and compel them to come in.’ Now men enter into the house of God, i.e. into Holy (Roman) Church, by faith. Therefore some ought to be compelled to the faith.”

Thomas from this point will start to define what “compel” means.

ST “I answer that, Among unbelievers there are some who have never received the faith, such as the heathens and the Jews: and these are by no means to be compelled to the faith, in order that they may believe, because to believe depends on the will: nevertheless they should be compelled by the faithful, if it be possible to do so, so that they do not hinder the faith, by their blasphemies, or
by their evil persuasions, or even by their open persecutions. It is for this reason that Christ’s faithful often wage war with unbelievers, not indeed for the purpose of forcing them to believe, because even if they were to conquer them, and take them prisoners, they should still leave them free to believe, if they will, but in order to prevent them from hindering the faith of Christ.”

Here, Thomas is quite clever in his wording. He does not deny “compelling”, but legitimates the act of compelling based on the correct motive. In other words, if the motive is correct, it is OK to compel through acts of war and bloodshed.

He correctly admits that belief is dependent on the will and no amount of coercion can change that will, nonetheless waging war (a preemptive holy jihad) with unbelievers is thoroughly just, according to Thomas, on the grounds of preventing them from hindering the spread of Papal Catholicism. And this psychopath has the audacity to say these are the actions of Christ's faithful.

ST “On the other hand, there are unbelievers who at some time have accepted the faith, and professed it, such as heretics and all apostates: such should be submitted even to bodily compulsion, that they may fulfil what they have promised, and hold what they, at one time, received.”

Bodily compulsion? He means threat of imprisonment, torture, and duress.

ST “Some have understood the authority quoted to forbid, not the excommunication but the slaying of heretics, as appears from the words of Chrysostom. Augustine too, says (Ep. ad Vincent. xciii) of himself: ‘It was once my opinion that none should be compelled to union with Christ, that we should deal in words, and fight with arguments. However this opinion of mine is undone, not by words of contradiction, but by convincing examples. Because fear of the law was so profitable, that many say: Thanks be to the Lord Who has broken our chains asunder.’ Accordingly the meaning of Our Lord’s words, ‘Suffer both to grow until the harvest,’ must be gathered from those which precede, ‘lest perhaps gathering up the cockle, you root the wheat also together with it.’ For, Augustine says (Contra Ep. Parmen. iii, 2), ‘these words show that when this is not to be feared, that is to say, when a man’s crime is so publicly known, and so hateful to all, that he has no defenders, or none such as might cause a schism, the severity of discipline should not slacken.’”

Thomas now has to deal with Chrysostom, Augustine, and the words of Christ Himself forbidding the slaying of heretics. Not excommunication. Thomas concludes it is perfectly just to slay heretics. And we already know what he means by heretics: those opposed to the Papacy.

Rome always rules its subjects (political/religious) through the use of fear, intimidation, and tyranny. As Christ guides His flock with love, truth and compassion, Rome and her allies guide with hate, lies and death.
ST- Whether it is lawful to communicate with unbelievers?
IIa IIae q. 10 a. 9

ST “The Church does not exercise judgment against unbelievers in the point of inflicting spiritual punishment on them: but she does exercise judgment over some of them in the matter of temporal punishment. It is under this head that sometimes the Church, for certain special sins, withdraws the faithful from communication with certain unbelievers.”

In other words, if you live in a Papal controlled country/state, the church decides whom you can communicate with.

ST- Whether unbelievers may have authority or dominion over the faithful?
IIa IIae q. 10 a. 10

ST “Those who are in authority can pronounce judgment on those over whom they are placed. But unbelievers cannot pronounce judgment on the faithful, for the Apostle says (1 Cor. 6:1): ‘Dare any of you, having a matter against another, go to be judged before the unjust,’ i.e. unbelievers, ‘and not before the saints?’ Therefore it seems that unbelievers (non Catholics) cannot have authority over the faithful.”

How is this any different than the Talmud and Qur'an? It's not. Papists have always attempted to subvert non-Catholic countries and install Papal dictators and/or sympathizers. Just look at South America and the Philippines to name two.

ST “I answer that, that this question may be considered in two ways. First, we may speak of dominion or authority of unbelievers over the faithful as of a thing to be established for the first time. This ought by no means to be allowed, since it would provoke scandal and endanger the faith, for subjects are easily influenced by their superiors to comply with their commands, unless the subjects are of great virtue: moreover unbelievers (non-Papists) hold the (Roman) faith in contempt, if they see the faithful fall away. Hence the Apostle forbade the faithful to go to law before an unbelieving judge. And so the Church altogether forbids unbelievers to acquire dominion over believers, or to have authority over them in any capacity whatever.”

“Nevertheless this right of dominion or authority can be justly done away with by the sentence or ordination of the (Papal) Church who has the authority of God: since unbelievers in virtue of their unbelief deserve to forfeit their power over the faithful who are converted into children of God.”

OK. Thomas and the Popes have spoken. Forfeit your authority and government. Give your people and country over to the rule of the Pontiff.
ST “This the Church does sometimes, and sometimes not. For among those unbelievers who are subject, even in temporal matters, to the Church and her members, the Church made the law that if the slave of a Jew became a Christian, he should forthwith receive his freedom, without paying any price, if he should be a ‘vernaculus’, i.e. born in slavery; and likewise if, when yet an unbeliever, he had been bought for his service: if, however, he had been bought for sale, then he should be offered for sale within three months. Nor does the Church harm them in this, because since those Jews themselves are subject to the Church, she can dispose of their possessions, even as secular princes have enacted many laws to be observed by their subjects, in favor of liberty. On the other hand, the Church has not applied the above law to those unbelievers who are not subject to her or her members, in temporal matters, although she has the right to do so: and this, in order to avoid scandal, for as Our Lord showed (Mt. 17:25, 26) that He could be excused from paying the tribute, because ‘the children are free,’ yet He ordered the tribute to be paid in order to avoid giving scandal. Thus Paul too, after saying that servants should honor their masters, adds, ‘lest the name of the Lord and His doctrine be blasphemed.’

ST “Slaves are subject to their masters for their whole lifetime, and are subject to their overseers in everything.”

The Jews and Portuguese Catholics were the biggest slave traders in the entire world. And this is some twelve centuries after Jesus was on this earth.

ST- Whether the rites of unbelievers ought to be tolerated?
IIa IIae q. 10 a. 11

ST “On the other hand, the rites of other unbelievers, which are neither truthful nor profitable are by no means to be tolerated, except perchance in order to avoid an evil, e.g. the scandal or disturbance that might ensue, or some hindrance to the salvation of those who if they were unmolested might gradually be converted to the faith. For this reason the Church, at times, has tolerated the rites even of heretics and pagans, when unbelievers were very numerous.”

This statement is the heart of the Papacy. Individual rights of non-Catholics are not permitted. In other words, they do not exist, nor are they profitable to the goals and aims of the Papacy, hence should not be tolerated. The only exception to that rule is “at certain times” toleration must exist only when Roman Catholics are in the minority. History shows us that when the Papacy controls a country and is in the majority, the beast is cruel, unloving, hateful, bigoted, and bloodthirsty.

ST- Whether heresy is a species of unbelief?
IIa IIae q. 11 a. 1
ST “Falsehood is contrary to truth. Now a heretic is one who devises or follows false or new opinions. Therefore heresy is opposed to the truth, on which faith is founded; and consequently it is a species of unbelief.”

We have already shown that according to Thomas, truth can only be seen through the lenses/eyes of the Pontifical Roman Catholic Church. Any form of dissent from Rome is considered an act contrary to truth. These individuals are viewed as heretics who oppose the truth. Thus they are unbelievers.

ST “Therefore heresy is a species of unbelief, belonging to those who profess the Christian faith, but corrupt its dogmas.”

Thomas also includes individuals who profess to be of the Christian faith but corrupt its dogmas. Dogmas, of course, as defined and taught solely through Papal Rome.

ST “Wherefore, as to the case in point also, the proximate end of heresy is adherence to one’s own false opinion, and from this it derives its species, while its remote end reveals its cause, viz. that it arises from pride or covetousness.”

Thomas labors in vain to find the root cause of heresy. But as long as he wears the lens of Rome, he cannot see himself for the rank heretic that he is.

ST- Whether heresy is properly about matters of faith? IIa IIae q. 11 a. 2

ST “As Augustine says (Ep. xliii) and we find it stated in the Decretals (xxiv, qu. 3, can. Dixit Apostolus): ‘By no means should we accuse of heresy those who, however false and perverse their opinion may be, defend it without obstinate fervor, and seek the truth with careful anxiety, ready to mend their opinion, when they have found the truth,’ because, to wit, they do not make a choice in contradiction to the doctrine of the Church. Accordingly, certain doctors seem to have differed either in matters the holding of which in this or that way is of no consequence, so far as faith is concerned, or even in matters of faith, which were not as yet defined by the Church; although if anyone were obstinately to deny them after they had been defined by the authority of the universal Church, he would be deemed a heretic. This authority resides chiefly in the Sovereign Pontiff. For we read: ‘Whenever a question of faith is in dispute, I think, that all our brethren and fellow bishops ought to refer the matter to none other than Peter, as being the source of their name and honor, against whose authority neither Jerome nor Augustine nor any of the holy doctors defended their opinion.’ Hence Jerome says (Exposit. Symbol§): ‘This, most blessed Pope, is the faith that we have been taught in the Catholic Church. If anything therein has been incorrectly or carelessly expressed, we beg that it may be set aright by you who hold the faith and see of Peter. If however this, our profession, be approved by the judgment of your apostleship, whoever may blame me, will prove that he
himself is ignorant, or malicious, or even not a catholic but a heretic.”

To summarize, heresy is thus the obstinate denial of the definitive teachings of the Pontifical church. However, many a person was murdered and tortured for crimes against the Papal Church that were not yet defined by the Sovereign. Similar to the provisions in the US Patriot Act, whereas US citizens can be detained, arrested, and thrown into prison on mere suspicion without due process of law. Same evil mentality with same results. If one dissents or disagrees with the US Federal Government's teachings/policies, that citizen is considered a heretic/treasonist and worthy to be imprisoned. No difference in essence. The provisions of the “Patriot Act” (drop the phony name) can easily be adopted in Talmudic Zionist and Islamic controlled countries. The essential deprivation of human rights is always the goal of evil religionists and despotic governments.

ST- Whether heretics ought to be tolerated?
Ila Ilae q. 11 a. 3

ST “With regard to heretics two points must be observed: one, on their own side; the other, on the side of the Church. On their own side there is the sin, whereby they deserve not only to be separated from the Church by excommunication, but also to be severed from the world by death.

ST “On the part of the Church, however, there is mercy which looks to the conversion of the wanderer, wherefore she condemns not at once, but ‘after the first and second admonition,’ as the Apostle directs: after that, if he is yet stubborn, the Church no longer hoping for his conversion, looks to the salvation of others, by excommunicating him and separating him from the Church, and furthermore delivers him to the secular tribunal to be exterminated thereby from the world by death.”

Like the wicked Pharisees and Jewish leaders in Christ's day, the Papists want to deliver dissenters to the secular tribunals (Pilate) for extermination. Stalin learned this tactic from the Zionist Jews in Russia. Hitler, Franco, and Mussolini, among others, learned from the Pope. Thomas Aquinas is evil to the core. No wonder the Catholic Church canonized him as a saint. Evil begets evil.

ST “According to Decret. (xxiv, qu.iii, can. Notandum), ‘to be excommunicated is not to be uprooted.’ A man is excommunicated, as the Apostle says (1 Co. 5:5) that his ‘spirit may be saved in the day of Our Lord.’ Yet if heretics be altogether uprooted by death, this is not contrary to Our Lord’s command, which is to be understood as referring to the case when the cockle cannot be plucked up without plucking up the wheat, as we explained above (q. 10, a. 8, ad 1), when treating of unbelievers in general.”

Bull S__t!
Whether the Church should receive those who return from heresy?
IIa IIae q. 11 a. 4

ST “The Decretal Ad abolendam (DeHaereticis, cap. ix) says that ‘those who are found to have relapsed into the error which they had already abjured, must be left to the secular tribunal.’ Therefore they should not be received by the Church.”

ST “…heretics who return after falling no matter how often, are admitted by the Church to Penance whereby the way of salvation is opened to them.”

If a heretic has not been put to death by the secular tribunal, but only tortured to secure a recantation, this heretic then can be re-admitted into the Papal church to perform works of penance to save his own soul.

ST “But when they fall again, after having been received, this seems to prove them to be inconstant in faith, wherefore when they return again, they are admitted to Penance, but are not delivered from the pain of death.”

ST “In God’s tribunal, those who return are always received, because God is a searcher of hearts, and knows those who return in sincerity. But the Church cannot imitate God in this, for she presumes that those who relapse after being once received, are not sincere in their return; hence she does not debar them from the way of salvation, but neither does she protect them from the sentence of death.”

Oh how merciful the devil can be. End of Blue comments for now.

Below is a link to an article written by John Robbins. The article examines the evil grip religion has on our USA.

http://godshammer.wordpress.com/2010...o-quick-quote/

Aquinas: Against Paul the Apostle On Justification

Justification by Christ's imputed righteousness alone along with the equally important doctrine of the deity of Jesus Christ, are the citadel of the Christian faith. They are the very foundation and essence of all that the Holy Scriptures reveal from start to finish. Any minor deviation or abandoning of one or both of these foundational and paramount doctrines are grounds to disqualify anyone or any group from claiming themselves as part of the body of Christ.

The attack on the Pauline doctrine of Justification through faith alone in Christ's imputed righteousness alone has been basically twofold and started by some during the ministry of Paul the Apostle. On the one hand, it is contended that
justification is not central to the Christian faith; on the other hand, the judicial nature of justification is called into question and thus repudiated. To the former, existential philosophy/theology are the center of focus. The role and mission of the so-called “church” in the world to effect social justice, politics, and morals have become the central concerns. To the latter, the inner renewal and moral rehabilitation/ transformation of man are now considered the real basis and grounds of justification, hence a complete man-centered gospel which reduces justification to the quality, growth, and maturity of one's inward spiritual experience/faith. This subjectivism is the heart of Augustine. It is also the heart of Aquinas and thus the heart of The Council of Trent and the beastly religion.

This is one of those “line in the sand” issues. Either one is Justified [declared righteous] by Christ's imputed righteousness alone, or one is Justified [declared righteous] on the basis of an infused righteousness that makes him, or is in the process of making him, inherently righteous. The devil (Rome and her ecumenical sympathetic allies) can be content with all forms and nuances of the latter, as long as no one dare believe the former. Conversely, the true regenerate elect child of God can NEVER, I mean NEVER, accept the latter. The acceptance of the latter is a manifest denial of the Gospel.

Since I am neither Roman Catholic nor Protestant religiously speaking (although I do love to protest in the real sense of the word), I do not try to protect one side or the other. In fact, most Protestants prior to, and more so after Vatican II, have been taught and believe subtle nuances of evangelical Roman Catholic soteriology in their seminaries and churches concerning Justification. I'll just mention one man for now, who is a patent liar and deceiver, the late John H. Gerstner.

Gerstner was bold enough to state that Thomas Aquinas was a proto-Protestant. That can be a true statement if Protestants originally taught Papist soteriology. However what Gerstner is really driving at, is that Aquinas, like Augustine, taught imputation, or at least inferred imputation in his theological writings. This is where Gerstner has to eat his own words. Nothing can be further from the truth.

The reason an ignorant man like Gerstner can get away with such a foolish statement is because pew warmers (laity) and his clergy colleagues look at his alphabet soup and never dare question him. Accepting the faulty premise that a man of his prestige, education, and credentials would not state something so profound unless it was true. Well I must tell these blind souls Gerstner was a patent liar and a fool.

I will only summarize the basic tenets of Aquinas' view of Justification taken from “Summa Theologica” and “Questiones Disputatae de Veritate, q. 28.”

http://dhspriory.org/thomas/QDdeVer.htm
Whether the remission of sins ought to be reckoned amongst the things required for justification?
Summa Ia IIae q. 113 a. 6

According to Thomas, there are four things necessary for Justification. This is the “order of Justification” in Thomas:

1. Infusion of grace.
2. Movement of free will toward God.
3. Movement of free will from sin.
4. Remission of sins.

To point number one, you will immediately notice that according to Aquinas, Justification becomes a process that is started by the infusion of grace, Gratia Infusa. So in essence, Justification, or the process of Justification, commences via the sacrament of baptism, which is equated with regeneration.

Most Protestants err at this starting point also. How so? To the old school Protestant mentality, Justification was not a process, so to speak, but rather a legal verdict imputed to an individual only after faith in Christ was demonstrated. Faith, of course, being a direct result of regeneration (infusion of Grace via the sacrament). So to conclude, both Roman Catholicism and the majority of Protestantism hold the heretical view that Justification (whether process or not) can only be declared or started post Gratia Infusa. In other words, both parties demonstrate that Justification is the result of an intrinsic quality/virtue in man as opposed to an objective historical legal reality in Christ alone. Heretical Protestants will state that before regeneration and faith in Christ occur, an elect man is still under the legal wrath of God, thus repudiating the extrinsic nature and efficacy of an imputed righteousness. This kind of thinking also denigrates the efficacy of both the eternal decree to Justify and the historical cross of Jesus Christ. In other words, the cross of Jesus Christ, which emanates from eternal decree, is considered legal fiction only and not efficacious in reality.

Justification only becomes a legal reality when a sinner is regenerated. This is the error of Augustine, Aquinas and many Protestant theologians. Now there are some “reformed” folk out there that will admit that the cross was efficacious and actually accomplished something and not a mere opportunity. But my question to some of these individuals is this: “If the cross, as you claim, was an effectual transfer of sin to righteousness, how can those elect individuals not yet born, or born yet not regenerated still be under the wrath of God?” Either the cross is our actual historical Justification, or it is nothing more than a mere prerequisite to that end; a prerequisite that requires our approval/ascent to make it a real and binding verdict.

To points two and three we can readily deduce that according to Thomas the regenerated individual does not remain static. But before explaining this more in
depth, let’s address the free-will issue.

Catholic theology admits that prior to regeneration and due to original sin, the will of man is not free at all in any sense or relation to God. It is only after the administering of the sacrament of baptism (regeneration) that the will is set totally free. This free will of man is now able to move toward God and move away from sin. Also this same free will can move away from God and move toward sin thus falling from Grace (Justification). But it is never permanent as long as the individual is still alive and able to rush to a priest to make a sound confession (Sacrament of Penance).

For Thomas, (http://www.sacredtexts.com/chr/aquinas/summa/sum518.htm), justifying grace and justification refer not only to entrance into the family of God via the sacramental drip, but to the infusion of sanctifying grace at baptism and all the subsequent graces that work to transform the individual from the inside out.

Let’s read a few portions of Thomas' philosophical arguments pertaining to this transformation taken from Questiones Disputatae de Veritate. Abbreviated “QDV”:

http://dhspriory.org/thomas/QDdeVer.htm

Thomas: QDV “Now justification means a motion to justice, just as whitening means a motion to whiteness, though justification could also signify the formal effect of justice; for justice justifies in the same way as whiteness makes white.”

According to Thomas there is no imputation or reckoning of righteousness at all. Justification is a whitening process for the sin-blackened soul with inherent sinless perfection being the goal.

Thomas: QDV “In the justification of sinners man contracts a kind of spiritual marriage with God, as is written in Osee (2:19): ‘I will espouse thee to me in justice.’ But in carnal marriage mutual consent is required. With all the more reason, then, is this true of the justification of sinners. And so the use of free choice is needed for it.”

QDV “The justification of sinners does not take place without charity, because, as is written in Proverbs (10:12), ‘charity covereth all sins.’ But since charity is a kind of friendship, it demands mutual love. For, as the Philosopher makes clear, friendship involves reciprocated love. But mutual love requires the use of free choice in each of the parties. Consequently there cannot be justification without the use of free choice.”
Thomas elaborates on two heretical concepts. One, that Justification is reciprocal and two, justification requires free choice. Whereas the Scriptures teach that Justification is purely the monergistic, extrinsic work of Christ alone and not dependent on the free choice of man. Free will is a myth.

From Summa-IIa-IIae q.111 we deduce from Aquinas that sanctifying grace is a habitual grace. This habitual grace, as it heals and justifies the soul, or makes it pleasing to God, is called operating grace; but inasmuch as it is the principle of meritorious works, which emanate from the free-will, it is called cooperating grace. Also, because God is the sole mover in the infusion of habitual grace, it is entirely attributable to Him. This is also called operating grace. But if habitual grace is supposed to heal and justify the soul, and the soul has by nature certain powers to think and act, then this healing and justification must manifest itself in the activities of the soul. Consequently, these acts allow us to cooperate with God for our inward transformation. Aquinas calls this cooperating grace, since any meritorious acts performed by a soul infused with habitual grace by God would lack merit without that grace and thus without God’s cooperation.

Thomas: “God does not justify us without ourselves, because whilst we are being justified we consent to God’s justification [justitiae] by a movement of our free-will. Nevertheless this movement is not the cause of grace, but the effect; hence the whole operation pertains to grace.”

According to Thomas, justification and sanctification are not different actions on the part of God, one extrinsic and the other intrinsic. Rather, “sanctification” is the ongoing intrinsic work of the Holy Spirit in justifying, or making the individual rightly ordered (righteous) by means of God’s grace, the same grace that intrinsically changed the believer at the moment of his initial “justification” (i.e. sacrament of baptism) into an adopted child of God.

As long as an individual remains in sanctifying grace, according to Thomas, he is being progressively justified. If he sins mortally, Justification is interrupted. By means of the sacrament of penance, the individual continues on the road to Justification.

Point four, remission of sins, is the logical outcome of Thomas' heretical view of Justification and naturally leads to a place called Purgatory. Purgatory is the final step in the process of Justification where complete remission of sins occurs. Augustine, and more so Aquinas, both heretics, fully taught the myth of Purgatory.

Also supplied is a link to another section of “Summa” where Aquinas really displays more of his ignorance and superstitious teachings:

Concluding this portion I must state that John Gerstner and his disciple R.C. Sproul, Sr. are religious fools for claiming that Aquinas and Augustine were champions of the Gospel. Thomas was more a proto-Tridentine Catholic than a proto-Protestant. These snake-bit scholars, in their blindness, find creative ways to make it seem as if this thirteenth-century Dominican Friar was a lonely beacon for the Protestant cause amidst the papist fog. But, why? What is their motive for promulgating obvious deception?

Below is a link to an article similar in topic. The writer is too soft on Gerstner, in my opinion.

The Trinity Foundation - John H. Gerstner on Thomas Aquinas as a Protestant
Chapter 29
Inquisition And Blood - The Manifest Heart Of The Beastly False Religion

Is. 26:1 “For, behold, the LORD cometh out of his place to punish the inhabitants of the earth for their iniquity: the earth also shall disclose her blood, and shall no more cover her slain.”

Is. 59:3-8 “3 For your hands are defiled with blood, and your fingers with iniquity; your lips have spoken lies, your tongue hath muttered perverseness. 4 None calleth for justice, nor any pleadeth for truth: they trust in vanity, and speak lies; they conceive mischief, and bring forth iniquity. 5 They hatch cockatrice’ eggs, and weave the spider’s web: he that eateth of their eggs dieth, and that which is crushed breaketh out into a viper. 6 Their webs shall not become garments, neither shall they cover themselves with their works: their works are works of iniquity, and the act of violence is in their hands. 7 Their feet run to evil, and they make haste to shed innocent blood: their thoughts are thoughts of iniquity; wasting and destruction are in their paths. 8 The way of peace they know not; and there is no judgment in their goings: they have made them crooked paths: whosoever goeth therein shall not know peace.”

Unregenerate and reprobate mankind, including most men from all Christian religious sects, scarcely learns from history past. Most who claim to read the
Scriptures (especially clergymen) lack the fortitude, will, desire, and guts to apply Isaiah's above words to their present political and religious situation. These men (or women) who claim to be shepherds and protectors of God's flock hide behind their titles, degrees, accolades, and doctorates, and some wear their funny costumes. Some of these blind guides expect to gain the respect and submission of individuals based solely on the faulty premise that a piece of paper states, "I'm officially ordained." If God hath not ordained them by the Holy Spirit of truth, then they are not ordained of God at all. These people and their laity serfs continue to this very day by supporting the repetition of the most cruel and heinous acts of violence against mankind equally as their predecessors committed. They cunningly justify this wickedness under the banner of religion and/or patriotism no matter what country they are born unto.

No nation on earth (including the USA) will be exempt from the mighty judgment of God. The Inquisitorial practices of evil, whether wrapped in a UN Flag, Zionist flag, Islamic flag, Papal flag, or US flag, etc., are still evil in God's sight.

Christ's people are called to be ambassadors for the Kingdom of God. We represent a King and a Kingdom that is infinitely and eternally more worthy of our efforts than any kingdom and nation currently existing upon this temporal earth.

We as soldiers for Christ are firstly to proclaim and defend the Gospel. Secondly, as prophets of God, we are to cry out against wickedness just like Isaiah did amongst his corrupt nation. Cry out against a wickedness that manifests itself throughout all segments of society, both political and religious. This may not be seen as "politically correct" for some, and others may go so far as to consider Christ's mouthpieces as those who practice treasonous hate speech, or who are somehow un-loving, however, "We ought to obey God rather than men" (Ac. 5:29).

Religious and political entities need to know and hear that there are true voices for Christ in this country and around the world. Men and women of truth must speak for truth and righteousness amidst a corrupt society and/or corrupt policies both foreign and domestic. Our uncompromising speech/witness is their judgment. They are to be continuously put on notice and warned. Repent or perish!

In this segment we will discuss the devil's use of the Inquisition to further perpetuate his mendacious efforts to subvert, enslave, and destroy mankind.

As written thus far, the Christian religion started by the "fathers" was doomed from the very outset. The evilness and blood lust manifested was tantamount to all her pagan rivals. The history of the Christian religion is a gory horror story.

Understanding the following words through Papal eyes is most critical in helping us discern the nature and cruelty of the Papal Inquisition, i.e. Satanic religious
despotism.

Anathema…Bigotry…Excommunicated…Extirpate…Heretic…Inquisition…Intolerance…Mass Murder…Torture. These are the words used to exemplify the devil's church.

The Papal Inquisition is a permanent institution (office) in the Catholic Church charged with the eradication of heresies as so stated and defined by the Pope and the Magisterium of the Roman Catholic Church. All methods employed and by whatever means necessary to quash ecclesiastical and/or political dissent from Papal controlled countries are deemed to be holy and just. The goal, of course, is to subject all nations and peoples of this earth to the Vicar of Christ through the use of her political and religious allies.

The targets of the inquisition are wide, deep, and many, but can be summed up by stating all who disagree and/or become obstinately hostile and vocal against Rome are classified as enemies of the state: enemies subject to a legal inquisition.

Before the protest movement came into being, Rome the wicked, independent of the East, would flex her muscles once again. She discarded and made herself enemies with the East as previously discussed. Now was her hour to again wield her impiety, superstition, and ruthlessness upon mankind.

The Crusades were Rome's foreign policies of aggression and expansion. The Inquisition is Rome's domestic policy/tool of control and submission.

Dissenting sects like the Albigenses (Cathari) and Waldenses in the 12th century first led to the ecclesiastical Inquisition. Bishops and clergy were urged to investigate and deal locally with heretics, since they were seen as a threat to both the ecclesiastical and the social order. In other words, they were a threat to totalitarian political and ecclesiastical despotism. Papal documents such as the Second, Third, and Fourth Lateran Councils prescribed imprisonment and confiscation of property as punishment for heresy, and threatened to excommunicate princes who failed to punish heretics. The threat of excommunication was a fear tactic used by the clergy. Not only did this verdict mean you were consigned to eternal punishment with no hope of salvation, but also temporal punishment as well.

The legal inquisition was also an extortion racket. After the arrest, the property and personal belongings of the accused were instantly confiscated. Rarely was property returned. The popes publicly praised the rule of confiscation (economic ruin) as a prime weapon against heresy. Defending the "faith" became a lucrative enterprise. Rome made its inquisitors incredibly wealthy in the 14th century. Within two years, the inquisitor of Florence amassed "more than seven thousand
flourins, an enormous sum." As the inquisitor Heinrich von Schultheis complacently wrote, "When I have you tortured, and by the severe means afforded by the law I bring you to confession, then I perform a work pleasing in God's sight; and it profiteth me."

Confiscation of one's hard earned property took place before an actual conviction, because it was commonly understood that no one escaped. Officials considered themselves safe in acting upon the presumption of guilt. Sometimes confiscation took place even before a confession was made. This is how the devil's justice is administered in Papal controlled societies past and present.

Pope Gregory IX formally instituted the Inquisition in 1231 following a law of Holy Roman Emperor Frederick II, (Lombardy 1224). Gregory ordered convicted heretics to be seized by the secular authorities and burned. Like Frederick, Gregory also mandated that heretics be sought out and tried before a church (kangaroo) court. For this purpose, he first appointed special inquisitors (for example, Conrad of Marburg in Germany and Robert le Bougre in Burgundy) and later entrusted the task to members of the newly established Dominican and Franciscan Orders of friars/diabolos.

During the 13th century, the typical procedure (though not always followed) began with the arrival of the inquisitors in a specific locality. Two informants, whose identity was unknown to the victim, were usually sufficient for a charge. Many people were subjected to an inquisition without any real informants at all. The court then summoned the suspect, conducted an interrogation, and tried to obtain the confession that was necessary for conviction. In order to achieve this, assisting secular authorities frequently applied physical torture. The use of such painful procedures as stretching of limbs on the rack, burning with live coals, squeezing of fingers and toes, or the strappado (a vertical rack) were utilized in the hope of extracting a confession. Papists, Zionists, and sadistic so-called Christian men and woman today in America push for the government's use of torture. If a person confessed and was made willing, the judges imposed minor penances like floggings, fasts, prayers, pilgrimages, or fines. In more severe cases, the wearing of a yellow "cross of infamy", with its resulting social ostracism, or imprisonment could be imposed. Denial of the charges without counter-proof, obstinate refusal to confess, and persistence in the heresy resulted in the most severe punishments. In this Thomist/Papal society rarely would one dare come forward to defend the accused. That would amount to sure death and/or imprisonment. The sentenced heretic was surrendered to the secular authorities for execution, usually by burning at the stake.

Sentences were pronounced through the use of a solemn ceremony known as the sermo generalis ("general address") or, in Spain, as the auto-da-fe ("act of faith"), attended by local dignitaries, clergy, and townspeople. In these solemn ceremonies penitents abjured their errors and received their penalties; obstinate heretics were solemnly cursed and handed over to be burned immediately in
The first inquisitors practiced their evil in central Europe (Germany, northern Italy, eastern France). Later centers of the Inquisition were established in the Mediterranean regions, especially southern France, Italy, Portugal, and Spain. The inquisitorial tribunal was used in England to suppress the Lollards (followers of the 14th-century reformer John Wycliffe). Queen Mary I of England (r. 1553-58) used the tribunal in her effort to reverse the political effects caused by the Protestant Reformation. The Inquisition's centuries of survival and public support can be attributed to the early inclusion of offenses other than heresy: sorcery, witchcraft, alchemy, blasphemy, sexual aberration, and infanticide, plus really anything the clergy could think of on a whim. These were grounds for the inquisitors.

Under Pope Gregory IX's First Inquisition, war was not only declared on heretics but “witches” as well. Undoubtedly the most important document supporting the witch hunts, is the *Malleus Maleficarum* (Witches' Hammer of 1487) in three volumes, the first of which deals with witchcraft, the second with examples and remedies, the third volume describes the legal prosecution (e.g. who is to be tortured, when, and how).

Due to the vow of celibacy, monks and priests naturally have to suppress their basic God given biological functions and feelings. This suppression of natural biological functions leads these men into a natural hatred for women on the grounds that women are somehow seen as detrimental to their vow of celibacy. What the Papacy defined as witches for the most part were none other than midwives and herbal healers. Remember, in those days there were no pharmacies or hospitals like today. Herbal remedies and midwives were necessary.
If a priest or monk looked upon a woman and some natural attraction, emotion, or even carnal lust started to arise from within himself, the priest or monk could claim the woman bewitched him or cast a spell on him and she could be tried as a witch. If a devout married Papist woman saw or suspected her husband of looking at another woman with lustful eyes, that wife could be an informant against the other woman and claim the woman bewitched or cast a spell of lust on her husband and therefore could be construed as a witch. If a woman had peculiar birth marks, moles, or imperfections on her body, the church upon a full examination of her imperfections could claim those marks were proof she was a witch and of the devil.

In 1484, Pope Innocent VIII issued the notorious witchcraft bull *Summis desiderantes affectibus*. The bull appeared as a preface to a book commissioned by the Pope and written by the two Dominican inquisitors, Heinrich Kramer and Jakob Sprenger, entitled the *Malleus Maleficarum* or *Hammer of Witches*, as previously mentioned. It became the official handbook of witchcraft trial judges all over Europe.

The medieval satanic minds behind the book, laboring under the ignorance of pagan superstition and fancies, came up with the following:

18. Witchcraft, the book claimed, sprang from the “carnal lust” of the witch, which was an innate attribute of the female.
19. Witches had the power to change themselves into animals, and they could fly.
20. They worked in secret and could only be brought to justice by extra-legal methods.
21. The book recommended the witch be tortured first into confessing her own guilt, and then again to incriminate accomplices.

Witch hunters had to deal not only with the suspected witches themselves, but also their children. If a certain witch would not confess, one had to interrogate the little daughters of the sorceresses and witches since it was often found that their mothers had instructed them.

In a similar way, the *Malleus* had warned that usually the daughters of witches were to be suspected of imitating the crimes of their mothers. Once convicted, the witch was then handed over to the secular arm to be burned to death “to the satisfaction of the church and delight of the mob.”

The inquisitors, fully gorged with their depraved inhumanity, developed a degree of callousness rarely equaled in the annals of civilization. Many of the inquisitors were sadists. Many were libidinous monsters. Some incarcerated the good looking women/witches, as they desired, on trumped-up charges of heresy, and kept them for the rest of their days as their sex mistresses. It was either sex slavery or burn at the stake as a condemned witch. Life for a female in those
days was not safe at all.

In 1252, Pope Innocent IV sanctioned the use of torture in the extraction of confessions of heresy during the Inquisition by issuing the bull *Ad extirpanda* “to be exterminated”. This ordered all secular rulers to arrest and execute non-Roman Catholic Christians and political dissenters. Thus inquisition chambers were turned into rooms of abject horror.

Members of the Dominican order, whose monks were called, the “black friars”, performed most of the torturing. To the Dominicans, the screams of their victims were like music to their ears - as it meant “one soul was drawing closer to God.” Many other inquisitors and torturers were monks of the Franciscan order, who, like the Dominican monks, had taken vows of poverty and celibacy. Of course, this did not stop them from stealing much of the property and assets of their victims.

Torture and cold-blooded murder of dissidents, witches, and heretics cannot be viewed as isolated or even remote incidents performed by a few fringe groups in Papal countries. Torture, cold-blooded murder and extortion was a way of life for almost 700 years. Torture and murder were fully and legally incorporated into the very fabric of “Papal” society. In fact, both the clergy and civil authorities perfected this practice into an art form: an industry and craft so to speak. It was also a very lucrative venture for all who participated, right down to the vendor in the town square selling his delicious baked goods on a typical “burning” day. Murder and torture became a form of entertainment just like the Gladiatorial contests performed a thousand years prior in pagan Rome. Public display of “torture and murder” also served the Vatican, in that it created intense fear in the hearts of the people. This fear was a psychological weapon to maintain Rome’s evil grip on the populace.

Let’s revisit some of the technological advances created in Papal societies.
The Pulley, either Strappado or Squassation

The victim was stripped naked with his wrists tied securely behind his back. A stout rope was then fastened to his wrists and carried over a pulley fixed to the roof of the torture chamber. The executioners then drew the victim up with this rope until he was suspended about six feet from the floor. In this position, heavy iron weights, usually amounting to about 45 kg (100 lbs.) were attached to his feet.

At this juncture the victim was asked once more to reveal the truth. Refusal meant the infliction of a number of stripes with a whip upon his naked back. The questions were repeated.

Failure to confess was the signal for the torture to start in real earnest. The executioners pulled on the rope, raising the victim almost to the ceiling. Suddenly allowing the rope to slack for several feet, they then brought this rapid descent to an abrupt termination before the weights reached the floor. The shock to the body of this suddenly terminated fall was sufficient to jar every bone, joint and nerve in the system. In most cases it entailed dislocation. The process was repeated again and again until the culprit confessed or became unconscious.

The Rack and the Ladder

These were other forms of torture designed to prolong the body. The rack, standing about a meter from the floor and consisting of a stout wooden framework, was mandatory in almost any ecclesiastical dungeon. It has been said that a victim could be prolonged by up to 30 centimeters during the question of the third degree.

In the question of the first degree, the victim suffered dislocation of the shoulders as the result of his arms being pulled up behind his back. In the second degree, the victim’s knee, hip and elbow joints were forced from their sockets; muscle was ripped from the bone causing severe agony and permanent maiming. In the third degree, joints were separated “very audibly”; the victim was dismembered and paralyzed and, gradually, over hours and days, the life functions ceased one by one.

Legally, torture sessions lasted up to two hours; however, sessions of between three and four hours were not uncommon, as different methods were employed.

Church authorized instruments were often sprinkled with holy water and blessed by the pagan/Catholic priest before use.

To muffle screams within the torture chamber, victims had their mouths stuffed with cloth and the walls themselves often were lined with heavy quilts to make
the torture chamber as soundproof as possible.

Listed below are other “holy” methods utilized by the “faithful”:

In both heresy and witchcraft trials, commonly used tortures included the boot which crushed the foot, ankle and leg bones “until the blood and marrow spouted forth.”

Thumbscrews, toescrews and knee-splitters also were used to crack, pop or break the joints, or splinter the bones of a suspect.

Flesh was ripped, nipped, sliced or pierced with cold or red-hot pincers, skewers, knives or hooks.

Toenails and fingernails were broken and torn out with a turkas or tongs, either red hot or cold.

Tongues were pierced, cut or rooted out, and eyes were extinguished by gouging, plucking, bursting or burning.

Ears, noses, hands and feet were sawn, cut or hacked off; toes and fingers were amputated sometimes joint by joint over several days.

Teeth were extracted with pliers or chisels and the raw tooth sockets probed with cold or red-hot needles to add to the pain.

Men had their genitals cut away, crushed or burnt off with balls of flaming brimstone.

Woman had their nipples torn out with cold or red-hot pincers; or their entire breasts sliced off with shears.

Vaginas and rectums were mutilated with the “pear”, a device that, on insertion, was expanded by means of a screw causing the cavity to rip apart, often with fatal results.

Many women were raped by their “Catholic” captors, while men were flogged with chain scourges or flails for the slightest breach of regulations, including speaking or making sounds.

Leather or corded scourges, called skinning cats, also were used; their thongs often were stiffened by being dipped in melted pitch, which tore away flesh at every stroke until the back became one large ulcer.

Forced feeding with salted fish (which induced thirst) was another often used form of torture, as was pouring molten lead down the victim’s throat.
Victims also were forced to take either freezing cold or scalding hot baths, the latter laced with lime that seared the flesh. Scouring with a device resembling a wire brush often followed these.

Others had their naked bodies raked or shredded to the bone with a device known as the “cat’s paw”.

Roasting on a spiked iron chair was a favorite in all Catholic dungeons; so too was scorching the skin of the armpits or groin with burning feathers dipped in sulphur. Feet were coated with lard or oil before they were slowly roasted over a fire: the bones cracking and popping as the marrow dripped into the flames. If the victim did not confess after this, the hands were the next to go.

Another frequently applied torture used by both Roman Catholics and Protestants was “thawing”, which involved the victim being jerked roughly about by means of a rope tied securely around the head. Some victims were forced to kneel on a prayer stool studded with nails while others were branded with a red hot cross.

Others suffered the torture of the slipper, a large red hot metal boot that fried the foot or dissolved the flesh when filled with boiling glue.

Another favorite torture was to place small bags of gunpowder in the mouth or armpits of the victim, which were then set alight.

Others had burning matches or tapers placed between their fingers and toes.

One gruesome torture involved a large bowl filled with rats, which was turned upside down on a victim’s bare stomach. A fire was lit on top of this container, causing the rats to panic and burrow into the victim’s bowels.

A grim device that was widely used in Germany was the iron maiden, which crudely resembled the Virgin Mary. It featured two large doors lined with sharp spikes which, when closed, pierced the victim’s arms, legs, stomach, chest, bladder, genitals, eyes and shoulders. It was said the victim could survive up to two days pinned in this device if left to expire.

Homosexuals sometimes found themselves being lowered naked on to a red-hot spike in a torture known as the chambre chaufée. This was the church approved method for interrogating gays until 1816. Currently gays and pedophiles are numerous in the Papist clergy.

Those convicted of sodomy, male or female, were tied upside down and their bodies sawn through until the navel was reached. An inverted position ensured oxygen reached the brain so the victim remained conscious throughout the
Those who survived the torture chamber invariably found themselves convicted of their crimes. Rarely was the accused ever acquitted. In many cases, particularly in Germany, victims suffered further torments on their way to the stake or gallows.

At Bamberg, women had their breasts ripped off by red-hot pincers while elsewhere others had their hands chopped off at the place of execution. In many cases the executions were tortures in themselves: burning at the stake; skinning or flaying alive; breaking with the wheel.

Many victims were drawn and quartered or disemboweled, whereby the intestine was slowly pulled out through an incision made above the solar plexus.

http://www.torturamuseum.com/this.html

In discussing the cruelty of Papal satanism it would be extremely unfair to not mention another of Rome's faithful sons. Tomas de Torquemada (1420-98): Loyal Spaniard, Dominican monk, inquisitor, and torturer.

The Inquisition underwent special development in Portugal, Spain and their colonies. The Infanta Isabella chose him as her confessor while at Segovia, and when she succeeded to the throne of Castile in 1474 he became one of her most trusted and influential councilors.

Pope Sixtus IV endorsed (1483) the creation of an independent Spanish Inquisition presided over by a high council and grand inquisitor. History has proven the first grand inquisitor of Spain, Tomas de Torquemada, to be a symbol of ultimate cruelty, bigotry, intolerance, and religious fanaticism. These are the virtues required in order to be counted among the “faithful” when defending Catholicism.
Its major targets were the Marranos (converts from Judaism) and Moriscos (converts from Islam), many of who were suspected of secretly adhering to their original faiths. During the 16th century, Protestants and Alumbrados (Spanish mystics) seemed to be the major danger. Serving political and ecclesiastical ends, the Spanish inquisitors also exercised their dreaded missionary functions among the converted Indian populations of the Spanish colonies in America.

In the course of fourteen years (1485-1498) at least 2000 Jews were burnt as impenitent sinners.

Torquemada's ways of ferreting out and punishing heretics were justifiable according to Papal law and Thomist theology and were necessary for the preservation of Papal Spain. The contemporary Spanish chronicler, Sebastian de Olmedo (Chronicon magistrorum generalium Ordinis Praedicatorum, fol. 80-81) calls Torquemada “the hammer of heretics, the light of Spain, the saviour of his country, the honour of his order.”

Not waiting to receive information (informants) on suspects, he ordered his inquisitors out into the field to hunt them down like dogs. His ruthless satanic blood lust fanaticism and Papal loyalty was known to have inspired Hitler in his treatment of Jews over 500 years later. Torquemada established tribunals in various cities and laid down directions for the guidance of inquisitors. He was personally responsible for the deaths of some 2000 people (at minimum, other historians claim more) and the torturing of many others.

Torquemada always saw to it that punishment was worse than death:

Rather than simply burning victims at the stake they were often first roasted over a slow fire and then burned. Sometimes fat was rubbed on the soles of their feet so they would sizzle a while.

Victims were stretched on the rack or bound with cords that cut through the skin and muscle down to the bone.

Many were flailed at specified intervals with whips studded with knots or sharp blades.

Fingernails and toenails were pulled out one by one and arms and legs were broken with blows of the mallet.

Some victims were left to starve in their small, windowless cells.

Others victims had their heads covered with steel helmets containing strategically placed screws. These were tightened one by one, crushing noses or puncturing eardrums.
The Roman Catholic Church has been notorious throughout history for “excommunicating” many individuals, including some of their own devout Roman Catholics, who had opposed her corrupt practices, and then compelling State authorities to execute the excommunicated individuals. An excellent example of such papal injustice was the excommunication (in 1497) and execution (in 1498) of the Dominican Girolamo Savonarola (1452-1498), who had led a revival in Florence, Italy. His “crime”? Savonarola exposed the corrupt, immoral papal court of Pope Alexander VI (Pope: 1492-1503).

In 1496, Torquemada retired from his honorable position of eminence and died two years later. He has, of course, never been excommunicated by the Papal church, having served the Vicar of Christ and The Queen of Heaven faithfully.

Before continuing, let's make a brief summary to this point. The inter-advental period from the Cross [Resurrection, Pentecost, Ascension] to Christ's second coming is considered the millennium, the latter 3.5 years of the 70th week, 1260 days, 42 months, and Time, Times, and Half Time. These terms depict the same period of time which grows and culminates into a final intensification shortly before Christ appears to destroy this shadow creation and usher in the New Heaven and Earth.

True Israel (The Israel of God) are Christ's elect saints only who are born and led of the Holy Spirit. They constitute the True Ekklesia, the bride of Christ. They are not a religious institution or any denomination of religious institutions. They dwell by faith alone in the Kingdom of God/Heaven submitting to Christ their King. These Saints are uncompromising and defend the Gospel at all costs no matter in what generation they have existed. These saints are not ecumenical and will not unite spiritually with those who preach and teach a false Christ and a false Gospel. Their unswerving love and devotion for the true Gospel and their husband Jesus Christ prohibits them from exercising false unity/ecumenism, which is an act and manifestation of spiritual adultery. Christ’s faithful saints from the beginning and throughout every successive generation to this day, have obeyed the voice of their Lord and “come out from among them”, having no part in pseudo-Christian religious idolatry: Past, Present, and Future.

Re. 18:4 “And I heard another voice from heaven, saying, Come out of her, my people, that ye be not partakers of her sins, and that ye receive not of her plagues.”

Our adversary is the Roman Beast (symbolic and syncretistic of all reprobates in the world) who is both political and religious in essence. Rome is motivated by the Red Dragon (Satan) who empowers this beast. The main religious and most
The deceptive manifestation of this beast is its lamb-like characteristic (pseudo-Christianity), which is a deceptive weapon/institution to destroy mankind and bring ill repute against the “Holy One”, Jesus Christ. The Papacy has grown to be the most vocal, most powerful, and most evil of all her pseudo-Christian allies. She is most deceptive for she claims to be Christ’s true church but is none other than a usurper and an imposter.

The lamb-like beast originated and grew out from the apostasy that commenced during Paul the Apostle’s day. This apostasy was watered and nurtured by the post-apostolic “heretical fathers” and their successors. Their blindness and hatred for the true gospel of Christ led them in the establishment of a Judeo/Pagan mystical and superstitious hybrid religion. This false religion (whore) wedded with the state to create war and bloodshed as a tool for its missionary expansion and to crush all dissent.

Because both the political and religious beasts draw their strength and authority from Satan, they will always be at war with themselves, mankind, and especially against all Christ’s elect.

Mk. 3:26 “And if Satan rise up against himself, and be divided, he cannot stand, but hath an end.”

Satan is a liar, deceiver, and murderer, and so it is with all his followers, both political and religious.

We have seen thus far from history that Roman Catholicism had created for herself many enemies: Islam, Trinitarian Orthodox, Jews, Non-Trinitarians, Protestantism, and pretty much ANYONE who would not submit to her. Most importantly, she is the very enemy of Jesus Christ Himself.

Wherever there was (and is) human blood, the Papists must by all means be the world leaders in cornering the market on “bloodshedding”.

French statesman Baron DePonnat stated the following in 1940: “Roman Catholicism was born in BLOOD, has wallowed in BLOOD, has quenched its thirst in BLOOD, and it is in letters of BLOOD that its true history is written.”

Rome, at this point in her bloody Inquisition, found another enemy to focus her “holy” attention. That being a group called Protesters. Later called Protestants, they currently are nothing more than “ants” as a result of the Jesuit Counter-Reformation. The Protestant religions will be discussed in more detail in upcoming segments. We will continue to deal with Rome’s intolerance in this segment.

The most faithful and loyal sons of Popery (among many) were the Spaniards. Not surprisingly, a Counter-Reformation developed to combat heresies.
(according to Papists) as promoted by the protesters, and bolster the doctrine and practices of the Roman Catholic Church. The undisputed leader of this counter-reformation movement was Spain led by another of her grand sons Ignacio de Loyola. Spain at that point of history was the dominant world power and closest ally of the Papacy.

In the previous segment we discussed the Spanish son and devil Tomas de Torquemada.

Tomas was an evil mass murderer, sadist, psychopath, and torturer. This man was so evil that 100 Charles Mansons’ combined could not equal the wickedness and evil of Tomas.

Ignatius de Loyola [1491-1556] was a priest, theologian, and Spanish knight. He founded the Jesuit order (Society of Jesus) and was its first Superior General. Ignatius emerged as a leader in the counter-reformation.

He allegedly experienced a vision of the Virgin Mary and the infant Jesus while at the shrine of “Our Lady of Montserrat” in March 1522. He and his cult followers later became the most adulate worshipers of the Marion cult. Ignatius himself was a mystic, often flagellating and cutting himself.

He was “A mixture of piety and diplomacy, asceticism and worldly wisdom, mysticism and cold calculation: as was Loyola’s character, so is the trademark of this Order…” (Les Jesuites 1875).
Ignatius is well known for his famous writings: “Spiritual Exercises” and “Constitutions of the Society”. 

http://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/va...vatican13.htm

http://www.oregonjesuits.org/the-spiritual-exercises/

“The Society was not founded with the avowed intention of opposing Protestantism. Neither the papal letters of approbation nor the Constitutions of the order mention this as the object of the new foundation. When Ignatius began to devote himself to the service of the Church, he had probably not even heard of the names of the Protestant Reformers. His early plan was rather the conversion of Mohammedans, an idea which, a few decades after the final triumph of the pseudo-Christians over the Moors in Spain, must have strongly appealed to the chivalrous Spaniard. The name ‘Societas Jesu’ had been born by a military order approved and recommended by Pius II in 1450, the purpose of which was to fight against the Turks and aid in spreading the pseudo-Christian (Roman Catholic) faith. The early Jesuits were sent by Ignatius first to pagan lands or to Catholic countries; to Protestant countries only at the special request of the pope and to Germany, the cradle-land of the Reformation, at the urgent solicitation of the imperial ambassador. From the very beginning the missionary labours of the Jesuits among the pagans of India, Japan, China, Canada, Central and South America were as important as their activity in pseudo-Christian (Papist) countries. As the object of the society was the propagation and strengthening of the Catholic faith everywhere, the Jesuits naturally endeavored to counteract the spread of Protestantism. They became the main instruments of the Counter-Reformation; the re-conquest of southern and western Germany and Austria for the Roman Church (Papacy), and the preservation of the Catholic faith in France and other countries were due chiefly to their exertions” (from the Catholic Encyclopedia).

http://www.catholicity.com/encyclope...of_jesus.html

The main duties of the Jesuit order are to subvert all lands and religions bringing them under the dominion of the Vicar of Christ by whatever means necessary. The Jesuits have been considered the “SS” of the Roman Catholic Church. They were successful at destroying Protestantism as a whole, but these devils can never defeat one of God’s true elect saints.

Today, thousands of Protestant men, women, and clergy are leaving their churches and becoming Roman Catholics. Remaining Evangelical and Protestant churches are part of the World Council of Churches, National Council of Churches, or other ecumenical organizations, and are in ecumenical unity with their mother. They have become Papal sympathizers (fifth columnists) and repudiate the true Gospel taught by Paul the Apostle.
Documents such as ECT I, ECT II, Lutherans and Catholics Together, Evangelicals and Catholics Together, Postmillennial Reconstructionism, New Perspective on Paul, etc., are “ipso facto” proofs and results of the successes of the counter-reformation and serve in the damnation of Protestantism.

http://www.ianpaisley.org/article.asp?ArtKey=jesuit

The site below supplies some very interesting and documented material. Some of the videos have been pulled (censored) by “You Tube”. Disclaimer: This site is listed only to provide information pertaining to Roman Catholicism. Not fully knowing their theological position, I cannot fully endorse their theology.

http://www.remnantofgod.org/ratzinger.htm

The Catholic Church was obviously corrupt throughout the medieval days and from her beginnings. This corruption resulted in calls for reform and improvement. Pope John XII had open love affairs. Urban VI tortured and murdered some of his cardinals. Innocent VIII proudly acknowledged his illegitimate children and heaped church riches upon them. Simony and nepotism were rampant. Most efforts ended in the reformers being called heretics and dying for their troubles.

The influence of the reformers grew strong enough to survive, but only at the cost of millions of lives as the Protestant Reformation battled the Catholic Counter Reformation in towns and fields throughout Europe. Martin Luther’s (still a Papist in that day) 95 theses, nailed to a church door, set off a firestorm of violence and blood. German princes managed to fight Catholic armies to a standstill by 1555, which resulted in the Peace of Augsburg. Protestant “heretics” were allowed to live in Germany, but that level of tolerance was not extended to other countries.

Unfortunately, that “peace” didn’t last. From 1618 to 1648 Europe experienced the Thirty Years’ War, which left Germany a wasteland after millions and millions were slaughtered. Catholic armies, under the leadership of Catholic Emperor Ferdinand II, kept defeating Protestant armies, but then made the mistake of trying to eliminate Protestantism completely, engaging in terrible repression and persecution. This caused new Protestant armies in foreign lands like Denmark and Sweden to be called up to oppose him. The result of all this was more bloodshed and a victory for no one. There was an estimated drop of Germany’s population from 18 million to 4 million. With too few people left to work the field and trade for goods, starvation and disease ravaged the miserable survivors. Such are the fruits of European Religion.

In France, the largest Protestant group was known as the Huguenots. They were mercilessly persecuted, and King Henry created a heresy court known infamously as The Burning Chamber because that was the standard punishment
for heretics. On the night of August 24, 1572, known as St. Bartholomew’s Day, Catholic soldiers swept through Huguenot neighborhoods of Paris in a foreshadowing of what would happen to the Jews under Nazi rule.

http://www.reformation.org/bart.html

Thousands were slaughtered in their homes and other massacres timed for the same night occurred in cities across France. In response to this, Pope Gregory XIII wrote to France’s King Charles IX: “We rejoice with you that with the help of God you have relieved the world of these wretched heretics.”

Pope Pius sent Catholic troops into France to aid in the repression efforts, ordering the army commander to kill all prisoners. Pius, unsurprisingly, was later canonized as a saint. In the Catholic Church, sainthood is an honor that goes not to the nicest person or to someone who has aided humanity, but to those Catholics who have done great deeds of wickedness to advance the cause of Catholicism. As a result of such horrific treatment, Huguenots fled France in large numbers. One group reached what would later become Florida, and when they were discovered by a Spanish expedition, all were violently killed.

In Flanders, all heretical Protestants were ordered executed and thousands were burned at the stake. But Queen Mary was merciful to Protestants who recanted: instead of burning, the men would be killed by a sword and women buried alive. Philip II, Spanish king and also ruler of Holland and Belgium, was positively obsessed with eliminating Protestantism and ordered that all prisoners be killed so that there would be no chance that they might escape through neglect or mistakes. The Duke of Alva was sent in and began what became known as the “Spanish Fury” in which thousands of Antwerp Protestants were killed and almost all “heretics” in Haarlem were massacred.

Are Papists truly repentant for their crimes against humanity? NO!

Did the peace treaty of Westphalia put an end to religious intolerance in Europe? NO!


Cardinal Lépicier, expressly supported by Pope Pius X (Pope from 1903-14), declared the church’s reign of terror was right, just because the church did it. He said: “The naked fact that the Church, of her own authority, has tried heretics and condemned them to be delivered to death, shows that she truly has the right of killing ... Who dares to say that the Church has erred in a matter so grave as this?”

A new manual of Church Law, specially authorized by Pope Leo XIII, written by a Papal professor, printed in a Papal press, was published. It was in Latin; and
probably few Catholics in America will fail to be astonished to learn that the author states, and proves at great length, that the Church claims and has “the right of the sword” over heretics, and only the perversity of our age prevents it from exercising that right!

The Congregation for the Doctrine of the Faith, over which Cardinal Ratzinger presided, was formerly called the Holy Inquisition. It’s not gone away, it’s merely been renamed.

“Heretics may be not only excommunicated, but also JUSTLY PUT TO DEATH” (“Catholic Encyclopedia”, Vol. XIV, Page 768).

“The Catholic Church has the RIGHT and DUTY to KILL heretics because it is by fire and sword that heresy can be extirpated….The only recourse is to PUT them to DEATH” (Jesuit Dr. Marianus de Luca, Professor of Canon Law at the Georgian University in Rome; 1901).

“Protestantism of every form has NOT, and NEVER can have, any rights where Catholicity is triumphant” (“Bronson’s Review”).

“Non-Catholic methods of worshipping God must be branded COUNTERFEIT” (“Living Our Faith”, by Flynn, Loretto, and Simon; a widely used high school textbook; Page 247).

“In themselves all forms of Protestantism are UNJUSTIFIED. They should NOT exist’ (“America”, January 4, 1941).

“We declare it to be altogether NECESSARY TO SALVATION that every human creature should be subject to the Roman Pontiff” (Pope Boniface VIII).

“Into this fold of Jesus Christ NO ONE can enter if not under the guidance of the Sovereign Pontiff; and men can securely reach salvation ONLY when they are united with him, since the Roman Pontiff is the Vicar of Christ and represents His person on this earth” (Pope John XXIII).

“The true Church can tolerate NO strange churches besides herself” (“Catholic Encyclopedia”, Vol. XIV, Page 786).

“We believe that the rulers of a Catholic country have the RIGHT to RESTRICT the activity of those who would lead their people away from their allegiance to the Catholic Church….They possess the RIGHT to PREVENT propaganda against the Catholic Church” (Monsignor Francis J. Connell; American Roman Catholic theologian, “American Ecclesiastical Review”, January 1946).

“The Catholic Church is the ONLY organization authorized by God to teach religious truth and to conduct public religious worship. Consequently, they hold
that any creed which differs from that of the Catholic Church is ERRONEOUS, and that any religious organization which is separated from the Catholic Church LACKS the approval and authorization of God. The very EXISTENCE of any other church is opposed to the command of Christ, that all men should join His one church. From this it follows that, as far as God’s law is concerned, NO ONE has a real RIGHT to accept any religion SAVE the Catholic Church” (Monsignor Francis J. Connell, American Roman Catholic theologian; “Freedom of Worship, the Catholic Position”, a Roman Catholic pamphlet).

“The Roman Catholic Church, convinced through its divine prerogatives of being the ONLY true church, must demand the right of freedom for herself ALONE, because such a right can only be possessed by truth, never by error. As for other religions, the Church will never draw the sword, but she will require that by legitimate means they shall NOT be allowed to propagate false doctrine. Consequently, in a state where the majority of people are Catholic, the Church will require that legal existence be denied to error, and that if religious minorities actually exist, they shall have only a ‘de facto’ existence WITHOUT opportunity to spread their beliefs….In some countries Catholics will be obliged to ask full religious freedom for all, RESIGNED at being FORCED to cohabit where they ALONE should rightfully be allowed to live” (“Civiltà Cattolica”, April 1948; official Jesuit organ; Rome).

“NO man has a right to choose his religion. CATHOLICISM is the most INTOLERANT of creeds. It is INTOLERANCE itself. We might as rationally maintain that two and two does not make four as the theory of Religious Liberty. Its impiety is only equaled by its absurdity” (John Hughes, Roman Catholic Archbishop of New York; statement made in 1864).

“ROME must ALWAYS be the center of ALL Christianity and the POPE must be the head” (Pope John Paul II [Pope: 1978-2005]).

**Question:** “Why do the texts of the Council, and those of the Magisterium since the Council, not use the title of ‘Church’ with regard to those Christian Communities born out of the Reformation of the sixteenth century?”

**Response:** “According to Catholic doctrine, these Communities do NOT enjoy apostolic succession in the sacrament of Orders, and are, therefore, deprived of a constitutive element of the Church. These ecclesial Communities which, specifically because of the absence of the sacramental priesthood, have not preserved the genuine and integral substance of the Eucharistic Mystery CANNOT, according to Catholic doctrine, be called ‘Churches’ in the proper sense” (“Responses to Some Questions Regarding Certain Aspects of the Doctrine on the Church”, a catechetical decree of the Roman Catholic Church which was released by Pope Benedict XVI on July 10, 2007).

“The Bible is NOT for the people; whosoever will be saved must RENOUNCE it.
It is a FORBIDDEN book. Bible societies are satanic contrivances” (Pope Pius IV [Pope: 1559-1565]).

Although the Roman Catholic Church currently “allows” its members to read the Bible, they cannot interpret the Scriptures nor formulate any opinion contrary to the Catholic Church.

“NO ONE may possess the books of the Old and New Testaments in the Romance language, and if anyone possesses them he must turn them over to the local bishop within eight days after the promulgation of this decree, so that they may be BURNED” (Council of Tarragona, Roman Catholic Church Council in 1234 A.D.).

“We PROHIBIT laymen possessing copies of the Old and New Testament….We FORBID them most severely to have the above books in the popular vernacular. The lords of the districts shall carefully SEEK OUT the ‘heretics’ in dwellings, hovels, and forests, and even their underground retreats shall be entirely WIPED OUT” (“Concil Tolosanum”, Decree of the Roman Catholic Council of Toulouse in 1229 – Pope Gregory IX).

“The church has persecuted. Only a tyro in church history will deny that…one hundred and fifty years after Constantine, the Donatists were persecuted and sometimes PUT TO DEATH.

“…Protestants were persecuted in France and Spain with the full approval of the church authorities….When she thinks it good to use PHYSICAL FORCE, she WILL use it” (“The Western Watchman’, Roman Catholic publication out of St. Louis; quote taken from “National Sunday Law”, by A. Jan Marcussen).

“When confronted with ‘heresy’, she does NOT content herself with persuasion; arguments of an intellectual and moral order appear to her insufficient, and she has recourse to FORCE, to CORPORAL PUNISHMENT, to TORTURE” (H.M.A. Baudrillart, Rector of the Catholic Institute of Paris).

“Stunned by the staggering growth of evangelical sects in Brazil, leaders of the Roman Catholic Church have threatened to launch ‘HOLY WAR’ against Protestants unless they stop leading people from the Catholic fold. At the 31st National Conference of the Bishops of Brazil, Bishop Bohn called evangelicals a serious threat to the VATICAN’S INFLUENCE in his country. “We will declare a HOLY WAR; don’t doubt it. The Catholic Church has a ponderous structure, but when we move we will SMASH anyone beneath us” (“Charisma”, May 1994 issue).

“Individual liberty in reality is only a deadly anarchy” (Pope Pius XII [Pope: 1939-1958]; April 6, 1951).
“It is NOT lawful to demand, to defend, or to grant unconditional freedom of thought, or speech, or writing, or religion, as if these were so many rights given by nature to man” (Pope Leo XIII, “Libertas”, 1903).

“The unrestrained freedom of thinking and of openly making known one’s thoughts is NOT inherent in the rights of citizens and is by NO MEANS worthy of favor and support” (Pope Gregory XVI [Pope: 1831-1846]).

“The absurd and erroneous doctrines or ravings in defense of liberty of conscience, are a MOST PESTILENTIAL ERROR – a PEST, of all others, most to be dreaded in a State” (Pope Pius IX [Pope: 1846-1878]; Encyclical Letter, August 15, 1854).

“The State has NOT the right to leave every man free to embrace whatever religion he should deem true…The Church has the RIGHT to REQUIRE that the Catholic religion shall be the religion of the State, to the EXCLUSION of ALL OTHERS…. CURSED be those who assert liberty of conscience and of worship and such that maintain that the Church may not employ FORCE” (Pope Pius IX [Pope: 1846-1878]; “Syllabus Errorum” of December 1864).

“FASCISM is the regime that CORRESPONDS MOST CLOSELY to the concepts of the CHURCH OF ROME” (“Civitalla Cattolica”, official Jesuit organ).

“The church seeks not virtue, but herself, her aim and her recruitment; her true concern is the constant swelling of her ranks, the strengthening of her power. Are you then surprised at her predilection for Germany, despite the latter’s crimes? The (R.C.) Church and Germany? But they are sisters. Both love themselves for themselves alone and are hypnotized by their own powers; both know perfect organization, discipline, hierarchy and CONTEMPT OF LIBERTY; both know how to justify their methods; both exercise dissimulation and hypocrisy. In short, they both are opposed to the Christian spirit” (Rene Boylesve, Roman Catholic, member of Academie Francaise, written during the First World War).

“Our ABSOLUTIST system, supported by the Inquisition, the strictest censorship, the suppression of all literature, the privileged exemption of the clergy, and arbitrary power of bishops, cannot endure any other than ABSOLUTIST governments…” (J.H. Ignaz von Dollinger, German Roman Catholic theologian and historian; “The Pope and the Council”; Page 23).

“…We do NOT accept it, or hold it to be any government at all… If the American Republic is to be sustained and preserved at all, it must be by the rejection of the principle of the Reformation, and the acceptance of the Catholic principle " (“Catholic World”, August 1871; Page 735).

“The pope has the RIGHT to pronounce sentence of deposition against any

“The pope is the supreme judge, even of civil laws, and is incapable of being under any true obligation to them” (“Civilta Cattolica”, official Jesuit organ).

“NO Catholic may positively and unconditionally approve of the separation of church and state’ (Monsignor O’Toole, Catholic University of America, 1939).

“These false and perverse opinions [of democracy and individual freedom] are so much the more DETESTABLE, by as much as they…hinder and banish that salutary INFLUENCE which the Catholic Church, by the institution and command of her Divine Author, OUGHT FREELY TO EXERCISE, even to the consummation of the world, not only OVER individual men, but nations, peoples, and sovereign.’ (Pope Pius IX [Pope: 1846-1878]; Quanta Cura; December 8, 1864).

The Spanish philosopher George Santayana said: “Those who cannot remember the past are condemned to REPEAT it.”

Rome’s most recent murder sprees were the Vatican’s Holocaust in Roman Catholic Fascist Croatia in the early 1940s, where a Fascist State and the Roman Catholic Church collaborated on a vicious religious genocide that took the lives of up to one million Serbian Orthodox. However Hitler (German Fascist), Franco (Spanish Fascist), and Mussolini (Italian Fascist) were Rome’s great sons and allies. They performed their holy service to the Pope in the slaughter of millions. Women and children included.

William Ewart Gladstone [1809-1898], British statesman and prime minister, made the following statement in a letter to Earl Aberdeen: “No more cunning plot was ever devised AGAINST the freedom, the happiness and the virtue of mankind than ROMANISM.”

On March 16, 1960, Raymond Frazier warned: “Persecution of non-Catholics in Catholic-controlled countries should WARN Americans as to what will happen here if the pope ever gains full control of this country. Rome NEVER changes.”

Author David W. Daniels, in the Sept./Oct. 2005 issue of the “Battle Cry” newsletter, stated: “…The new pope, Benedict XVI, was recently in Germany for World Youth Day 2005. He urged Europe to return to its ‘Christian roots’. What does that mean? It means a time when kings lived in FEAR of the POPE. This new Roman Catholic leader was formerly the Chief Inquisitor, head of the ‘Holy Office’ of the Inquisition. Is it any coincidence that this German pope is still referred to by his colleagues as ‘Der Panzerkardinal’? …Get ready, folks, and hang onto your Bibles. What this new pope really wants is a 21st CENTURY VERSION of the DARK AGES.”
The Marquis de Lafayette, French statesman and general, stated: “It is my opinion that if the liberties of this country – the United States of America – are DESTROYED, it will be by the subtlety of the ROMAN CATHOLIC JESUIT PRIESTS, for they are the most crafty, dangerous ENEMIES to civil and religious liberty. They have instigated most of the wars of Europe.”

I myself can even attest to the power and hatred of the Catholic institution. In 1983 and 1984 I held a radio ministry/program in Cleveland, Ohio entitled, “No Compromise”. My goals were to proclaim the Gospel and to expose the falsehoods of Roman Catholicism and ecumenical unity. I was received with bitter and harsh reprisals from both Catholics and Protestants.

One morning I awoke to find garbage spewed all over my front lawn.

Another day, a member of the “Blue Army of Our Lady Of Fatima” came to my home and threatened me with personal violence.

I was thrown out of an Evangelical church in front of 250 people on a Wednesday evening service. What was my crime? I stated the Roman Catholic religion was false. As I walked out the doors, the Pastor led the congregation to all laugh at me.

I received a threatening letter one day with a picture of a bloody dagger that looked like a cross. On the back of the picture it said, “This is your blood.”

Finally, the Cleveland Catholic “diocesan office”, under its then leader Bishop Pilla, sent a letter to the radio station demanding that my radio program be canceled. It was!

Ronald Reagan often called religion the world's mightiest force for good, “the bedrock of moral order.” George Bush said it gives people “the character they need to get through life.” Millions hold these false views. But the truism isn't true. The record of human experience shows that where religion is strong, it causes cruelty. Intense religious beliefs produce intense hostility. Only when religious faith loses its force can a society hope to become humane.

Politicians are politicians. They say and do what is necessary to “get the votes”. They suck up to the religious clergy who control the laity. The clergy are no better. They anesthetize the ignorant and lead them into false hopes, bondage, and tyranny. Thus they have been mentally prepared to serve as mind slaves for both the state and the clergy.

Anything that divides people breeds inhumanity. Religion serves that ugly purpose. Only Jesus Christ can truly unite His people. Christ has done that in the past, and is doing that now and forever.
“Let us dare to read, think, speak and write” (John Adams, 1735-1826; 2nd President of the United States; statement made in 1765).

Next we will discuss Protestantism.
As a sinner who is saved (Justified) by Jesus Christ alone, and as someone who loves and serves Jesus Christ above all, I see and experience the fruit of His Gospel through the eyes of the Holy Spirit and the Scriptures alone. I believe that the only way to understand the Gospel is through the eyes of Christ mainly, and through the Apostles, especially Paul. Apart from Holy Spirit regeneration and illumination, the Scriptures are only a collection of historical writings void of life for reprobate humanity. It is these reprobates who use the Scriptures to create hordes of religious sects and/or denominations, both Christian in name and non-Christian. They pick and choose from Scripture moral principles, and devise theological recipes to establish plans of salvation, cultures, and societies. However, when the wind shifts directions, these same moral principles once advocated by their purveyors are discarded as being too harsh, narrow or biased. So it is now OK to be a homosexual Christian and even a homosexual clergy person. It is OK to teach all roads and religions lead to the same God above. Moral and Scriptural absolutes have been dethroned in favor of Moral and Theological Relativism.

These divisions serve a twofold purpose: one, in the damnation of the reprobate and two, in the blessing of Christ's elect saints. It damn's the reprobate for they will be forever divided over issues that have no relevance as to the person and work of Jesus Christ. It blesses the elect in that we who have “eyes” to see can deduce their drivel, hence exposing and departing from them.
When Jesus Christ resurrected my dead soul and gave me eternal life in Christ, I had no further need of the useless and evil Roman Catholic religion. So I departed from the Roman Catholic religion. When one possesses true faith in Christ alone, religion (whether Catholic, Protestant, or other) then becomes obsolete, for religious exercise can never save or regenerate anyone. Any continuation of will-worship (religious exercise) can only serve to hamper one’s true faith and freedom in Christ.

I did not leave one religion (Catholicism) to join another religion or religions (Protestantism-Evangelicalism). I was saved FROM religion TO Christ.

The term “Protestant”....

In 1517 AD due to 1200 years of Catholic abuse, mass murder, extortion, superstition, and wickedness, Martin Luther began to officially dissent from the established Latin Papacy by speaking out on the subject of indulgences (95 theses). Luther the still Catholic theologian and his colleagues effectively branched off and started a new form of Christian expression, which was accepted by many princes and towns of the German empire. As the wicked Pope decided how best to handle Luther, the debates commenced with the Pope, Emperor and Catholic controlled governments on one side, and members of Luther's new “group” on the other.

In 1526 a meeting of the Reichstag [a form of German imperial parliament], issued a proclamation (Recess) on the 27th of August stating that each individual government within the empire could decide which religion they wished to follow. However, a new Reichstag that met in 1529 [Second Diet of Speyer] was not so amenable to the Lutherans and the Emperor canceled the Recess. In response, the followers of the new church issued the 'Protest', which protested against the cancellation on April 19th. The Diet voted to end the toleration of those who followed the teachings of Martin Luther within Germany, which had previously been granted at the first Diet in 1526.

Despite differences in their theology, Southern German cities aligned with Swiss reformer Zwingli joined other German powers following Luther to sign on to the 'Protest' as one. They thus became known as Protestants: those who protested. This was a dual protest by protesting both the political and theological tyranny of the Papacy. This eventually led to a bloody “inquisition” against “protestors” as previously discussed.

A true regenerate elect child of God and follower of Jesus Christ is in essence and belief “anti-Roman Catholic”, or in other words, a true protestor. However all “anti-Catholics” cannot be considered true elect followers of Jesus Christ.
For example, Talmudic Judaism and Islam are inherently anti-Catholic, at least in the past. Hardly could they be construed as followers of Christ. Even among professing Christians there are anti-Catholic groups that promulgate a false gospel. Some are even anti-Trinitarian.

“The Good”

In no specific order I will cite what I believe to be the greatest achievements of the Reformation. A reformation and protest that gave the world hope against the second most evil enterprise on earth, the Papacy. (The first, of course, being Israel and the Jews that cried out, “Crucify Him.”) However, that Israel was destroyed, but its hatred for Christ and the Pauline gospel lives spiritually in the lamb-like beast. And it is this very lamb-like beast who has aided and abetted the current rebuilt nation of Israel.

The core of true and original Protestant teaching lies within the “Five Solas”, the heart of true Protestant theology, so to speak.

Sola Scriptura (by Scripture alone)
Sola Fide (by faith alone)
Sola Gratia (by Grace alone)
Solus Christus or Solo Christo (Christ alone – through Christ alone)
Soli Deo Gloria (glory to God alone)

From these points mankind was given some extremely good, Christ honoring theology. Some not so good in my opinion, but scripturaly basic enough to grow and refine.

Essentially, original Protestantism is characterized by emphasis on the Scriptures as the sole source of infallible truth and the doctrine of salvation by grace through faith alone in the imputed merits of Christ alone. In addition, original Protestants have traditionally encouraged private interpretation of the Scriptures by individuals rather than relying on the interpretation of a church group (for example as in the case of Roman Catholicism with its Magisterium, or alleged teaching authority). As a result of differing theological interpretations, various groups emerged such as Baptists, Lutherans, Presbyterians, Anglicans, Methodists, etc. each holding their own distinctive doctrines. Papists call this the weakness of Protestantism, although I differ. I would rather shop at a fruit market that offers many baskets of apples to choose from. I am free to look into each basket, pick out the good fruit from each basket, and leave the rotten fruit behind. This would be a much better exercise than having to look into only one basket (Catholicism) that contains all rotten apples.

The original Protestant ethic was clear. The absolute supremacy of the “Word”,
the Grace of Christ, the general priesthood of all believers, righteousness by imputation, and faith alone.

The Reformers saw themselves as returning to a Bibliocentric form of Christianity. This was a reaction to what they perceived as a corruption of Christ by the Papists. The Reformation was seen as necessary to restore the church to correct doctrine and practice.

The original Protestant school of prophetic understanding (eschatology) was mainly “a-millennial”, and they were unanimous in addressing the Papacy as the Beast of Revelation 13, also as the great whore of Revelation 17-18. This was due primarily to Rome’s false gospel of Justification through and by meritorious good works. However, many other Papal falsehoods led them to this conclusion.

Although the Papacy is an apostate whore no doubt, steeped in lies and falsehoods, I do believe Israel is the Mother of Harlots and the Synagogue of Satan. Islam and Pseudo-Christianity sprang up from their mother, apostate Israel. That is why they all share in a false Gospel.

The zenith of Reformation expression (in my opinion) was written in the canons of Dort. It is the opinion of this author that “Dort” does not express the full and complete sovereignty of God as revealed in the Scriptures and contains gross and superstitious errors.

See: http://www.crcna.org/pages/dort_canons_main.cfm

Overall, the Reformation ideals provided mankind a framework to think and act independently politically, spiritually, and temporarily without reprisal from Rome and her puppet governments.

Unfortunately, Reformation theology did not discard the humanistic platonic philosophies of Augustine in their attempt to understand Pauline soteriology. This love affair with Augustine would eventually result in their demise, as we see this very day.

The original Protestants may have broken from Rome politically and ecclesiastically at that time, but spiritually, numerous cancerous seeds of Catholicism still remained in their bowls.

Protestantism as a whole and as a political movement is DEAD today. The Jesuits and Zionists had seen to that. The Papacy reached out and gathered her wayward children. Now they are safe and secure in their mother’s arms. She will gently guide them into perdition, for she herself is damned to that very end.
“The Bad”

In previous segments we showed the intolerance between the Latin West and the Orthodox East. Both pseudo-Christian parties were shedding each other’s blood over theological, political, and downright idiotic and superstitious issues that have absolutely no relevance at all to scriptural faith. Then we showed Papal brutality against Protestant dissenters.

Did the early reformers practice what they preached?

Were Protestants innocent of being intolerant? Were they innocent from proactive blood shedding? Were they innocent from superstition? Were they innocent from hatred and bigotry? Were they innocent from harsh and extreme legalism? Were they innocent from perpetuating tyranny? We shall see.

If humanity strives to live peaceably and civilly amongst one another, there must be an honest effort to admit wrongdoing. Religious and political groups are the worst at truly expressing humility and fessing up to their crimes against humanity. Protestants included. But why? Why do men and governments not learn from the past? Why do the religious and political entities continue to repeat the same mistakes and past crimes against humanity? These answers lie in the very depravity of human nature and the Sovereignty of God. Principles the “reformers” taught, but hardly learned for themselves.

God is active in blinding men from truth and hardening their hearts. Unless God through Jesus Christ brings a revival of truth in the hearts of men, darkness will prevail and the world will continue practicing the wickedest forms of hatred, bigotry, superstition, and intolerance against his fellow man. We’re not talking about swords, spears, and primitive weaponry as employed in the far past, but current state-of-the-art “killing” apparatuses. From nuclear, biological, and thermal forms of blood shedding all the way down to the simple handgun and modern day sophisticated methods of torture.

Skeletons in the closet need to be brought into the classroom, surveyed, and exposed. Historical facts are historical facts. Most Protestants (clergy and pew-warmer) are unaware of their history. They (the facts) for the most part have been ignored or perhaps purposely censored by their clergy leadership.

One would think that with 1,400 years of religious history to analyze (100 AD to 1517 AD) the early Protestants would have made greater strides in conforming (not reforming the Papacy) to Scriptural Christianity by striving for a witness to Christ and the Gospel that would be above all reproach and objective criticism. Unfortunately, that did not entirely happen in actual practice.
The witch-hunt craze did not end when Protestants (political and ecclesiastical) started to gain control over their respective countries. This superstition was very much prevalent in both Lutheran and Calvinistic societies. The witch-hunt craze did not phase out till the mid 18th century.

The early 16th century Protestant reformers Martin Luther and John Calvin were not as enlightened as some have been led to think. They were equally brutal, superstitious, intolerant, and repressive individuals as their Papal counterparts. Neither Luther nor Calvin was given the light to shake off Augustine, Aquinas, and the “fathers”. Much of reformed theology still contains the ignorance and superstition of their ancestors, as well as an ecclesiastical system that closely resembles the Papacy.

The Protestant’s treatment of “herbal healers and mid-wives” was no more humane than that of the Papists.

Luther, in a 1522 sermon, charged “witches” with a host of supernatural behaviors, including transformation into different animals, accusations which, to the rationally thinking mind, would be ludicrous indeed. This demonstrates, at least to me, that Luther’s motive for breaking away from the Catholic Church was not primarily a restoration of Pauline Christianity, but to establish a non-Papal religious orthodoxy of his own as he saw fit.

Luther shared some of the superstitious views about witchcraft that were common in his time. He stated that, with the help of the devil, witches could steal milk simply by thinking of a cow.

On 25 August 1538 there was much discussion about witches and sorceresses who were poisoning chicken eggs in the nests, or poisoning milk and butter. Luther said: “One should show no mercy to these [women]; I would burn them myself, for we read in the Law that the priests were the ones to begin the stoning of criminals....” (WA Tr 4:51–52, no. 3979 quoted and translated in Karant-Nunn, 236. The original Latin and German text is: “25, Augusti multa dicebant de veneficis et incantatricibus, quae ova ex gallinis et lac et butyrum furarentur. Respondit Lutherus: Cum illis nulla habenda est misericordia. Ich wolte sie selber verprennen, more legis, ubi sacerdotes reos lapidare incipiebant”).

The Reformation did not convert the people of Europe to Protestant forms of Christianity through preaching and catechisms alone. It was a 300-year period of witch-hunting and heresy hunters who aided Protestant causes from the fifteenth to the eighteenth century. Protestants used the persecution of witches to wipe out dissent, subordinate the individual to authoritarian control, and openly denigrate women.

The witch-hunts were a continuation of pseudo-Christianity's vilification of
women. The second century “father” Clement of Alexandria wrote: “Every woman should be filled with shame by the thought that she is a woman.” The heretic Tertullian explains in the below quote why women deserve their status as despised and inferior human beings:

“And do you not know you are an Eve? The sentence of God on this sex of yours lives in this age: the guilt must of necessity live too. You are the devil's gateway: you are the unsealer of that tree: you are the first deserter of the divine law: you are she who persuaded him whom the devil was not valiant enough to attack. You destroyed so easily God’s image, man. On account of your desert -- that is, death -- even the Son of God had to die.”

And what about Mr. Jean Cauvin (John Calvin)? It was Calvin who taught that Adam (according to Augustine and Calvin) was endowed with an alleged “glorious, free and sinless will”. A will, if demonstrated perfectly, that could have attained Eternal bliss without the merits of Christ. Was it not Adam who believed the woman and ate of the fruit Mr. Calvin? Should not men, rather than women, bear some blame for plunging mankind into the depths of sin and degradation? Why, then, all this hatred toward women Mr. Calvin and Mr. Luther?

John Calvin, the despotic tyrant of Geneva, had a rather cruel and misguided approach to not only men who disagreed with him doctrinally, but of women and children also.

“In 1563, a girl named Genon Bougy, who had insulted her mother by calling her “japa”, was condemned to three days in prison on bread and water, and she had to make a public apology after worship services. In 1566, Damian Mesnier, a child from the village of Genthod, for insulting his mother by calling her “diablesse, hérège, larronne” and by throwing stones at her, was whipped in public and then hanged from the gallows with the rope passed under his arms, as a sign of the death he had deserved, but which was spared him because of his youth. Philippe Deville was beheaded in 1568 for having beaten his father and stepmother. Four years later, a 16-year-old child tried to strike his mother, and was also condemned to death; but the sentence was reduced in light of his young age, and he was only banished, after being whipped in public with a rope around his neck.”

SOURCE:
Jean Picot [Professeur d'histoire dans la faculte des lettres de l'Academie de cette ville] Histoire de Geneve, Tome Second (Published in Geneva, i.e., AGeneve, Chez Manget et Cherbuliez, Impreimeurs-Libr. 1811) p. 264.

As a theocratic dictator, Calvin displayed characteristics every bit as evil as the very worst Popes of history. He ruthlessly dispatched any intellect he considered a threat to his absolute rule and the plan to create a lasting theocratic dynasty of Calvin.

Calvin also displayed an obsession about witchcraft and ensuring women remained enslaved property to men. Calvin also showed a relish for cruel torture, especially for those he believed were disloyal such as Sebastian Castello.

To many, including Ami Perrin who first helped him to power, Calvin was a terrible despot, a man of immeasurable hypocrisy and evil, the founder of a new tyrannical religious sect.

Some of Calvin’s crimes against humanity listed below:

1531 - Thousands of religious nonconformists are killed and witches burned after John Calvin (1509-1564) turns Geneva into a religious police state.

1553 - John Calvin, the “Protestant Pope” of Geneva did order Michael Servetus, the Spanish physician, burned at the stake for heresy. Servetus had opposed Trinitarianism and infant baptism.

1531 - Calvin orders beheading of Jacques Gruet for blasphemy.

1531- Calvin urges burning of witches.

Both Calvin and Luther were no better than the Popes, and the evil Constantine who enforced religious submission or death. So much for “freedom of conscience” under their reign of terror.

The sixth century Christian philosopher, Boethius, wrote in *The Consolation of Philosophy*, “Woman is a temple built upon a sewer.” Bishops at the sixth century Council of Macon voted as to whether women had souls. In the tenth century Odo of Cluny declared, “To embrace a woman is to embrace a sack of manure...” The thirteenth century Thomas Aquinas (you know, the proto-Protestant, according to Gerstner) suggested that God had made a mistake in creating woman: “nothing [deficient] or defective should have been produced in the first establishment of things; so woman ought not to have been produced then.” Lutherans at Wittenberg, following their fathers Augustine and Aquinas, debated whether women were really human beings at all.

Women are often understood to be impediments to spirituality in a context where God reigns strictly from heaven and demands a renunciation of physical
pleasure. The Inquisitors who wrote the *Malleus Maleficarum*, “The Hammer of the Witches”, explained that women are more likely to become witches than men:

> “Because the female sex is more concerned with things of the flesh than men; because being formed from a man’s rib, they are ‘only imperfect animals’ and ‘crooked’ whereas man belongs to a privileged sex from whose midst Christ emerged.”

King James I (tutored by George Buchanan, a staunch Calvinist) estimated that the ratio of women to men who “succumbed” to witchcraft was twenty to one. Of those formally persecuted under his regime for witchcraft, between 80 and 90 percent were women.

The reformers were as ignorant as the “fathers” and “Papists” when it came to women and superstition.

Luther's *consubstantiation* is but another example of superstition. And “reformed” sacramental theology is but another mystical delusion of the mind.

Witches (primarily women) in Protestant Europe were held accountable for nearly every problem. Any threat to social uniformity, any questioning of authority, and any act of rebellion could now be attributed to and prosecuted as witchcraft. Not surprisingly, areas of political turmoil and religious strife experienced the most intense witch-hunts. Witch-hunting tended to be equally as severe in Protestant strongholds in Germany, Switzerland, France, Poland and Scotland as in more homogeneously Catholic countries such as Italy and Spain. Witch-hunters declared that, “Rebellion is as the sin of Witchcraft.” Yes, I would agree, but a rebellion to God alone, not a rebellion (dissent) against wicked, despotic, and evil masters. In 1661 Scottish Protestant royalists proclaimed, “Rebellion is the mother of witchcraft.” And in England, the Puritan William Perkins called the witch, “The most notorious traitor and rebel that can be...” Hence in Protestant lands when the peasants who were exploited by the wealthy monarchical aristocrats complained and sought redress, these acts were considered “rebellious” and thus construed as acts of “witchcraft”.

According to Luther, any acts of dissent, whether honorable or dishonorable, were considered the “devils work”. See:

[http://www.historyguide.org/earlymod/peasants1525.html](http://www.historyguide.org/earlymod/peasants1525.html)

If dissent can be construed as the handiwork of the devil, then Luther, Zwingli, and Calvin should be considered devils. Well Rome thought that, but the reformers who were dissenters themselves never considered themselves to be devils. Only those who did not “conform” to their new found sects were saved for that treatment.
The Reformation played a critical role in convincing people to blame witches for their societal problems. They were considered the “medieval terrorists” of their day. Particularly in Protestant countries, where Papal superstitious protective rituals such as crossing oneself, sprinkling holy water, or calling on saints or guardian angels were no longer allowed, people felt defenseless. As Shakespeare's character, Prospero, says in The Tempest:

“Now my charms are all o’torrown,
And what strength I have’s mine own,
which is most faint...”

It was most often the sermons of both Catholic and Protestant preachers that would instigate a witch hunt. The witch-hunts in Salem, Massachusetts were similarly preceded by the fearful sermons and preaching of Samuel Parris in 1692.

The climate of fear was continued by churchmen of the Reformation and led to countless deaths of accused witches quite independently of Papal inquisitional courts or procedure. For example, in Protestant England where there were no inquisitional courts and where witch-hunting offered little or no financial reward (extortion), many women were killed for witchcraft by mobs. Instead of following any judicial procedure, these mobs used methods to ascertain guilt of witchcraft such as “swimming a witch”, where a woman would be bound and thrown into water to see if she floated. The water, as the medium of baptism, would either reject her and prove her guilty of witchcraft, or the woman would sink and be proven innocent, albeit also dead from drowning.

As some Protestant people continued the belief that the world was the terrifying realm of the devil uncontrolled by God, they blamed witches for every misfortune. Since they believed the devil authored all the ills of the world, his agents the witches could be blamed for them. Witches were thought by some to have as much if not more power than Christ. This faulty belief was a continuance of the “father’s” logic that God was not the “author of sin and evil”. Witches, they believed, could raise the dead, turn water into wine or milk, control the weather, and know the past and future. Witches were held accountable for everything from a failed business venture to a poor emotional state. A Scottish woman, for instance, was accused of witchcraft and burned to death because she was seen stroking a cat at the same time as a nearby batch of beer turned sour. Witches now took the role of scapegoat that had been long held by Jews. Any personal misfortune, bad harvest, famine, or plague was seen as their fault.

Churchmen are not doctors. To relieve labor pains, as a Scottish clergyman put it, would be “vitiating the primal curse of woman...” The introduction of chloroform to help a woman through the pain of labor brought forth the same opposition. According to a New England minister:
“Chloroform is a decoy of Satan, apparently offering itself to bless women; but in
the end it will harden society and rob God of the deep earnest cries which arise,
in time of trouble, for help.”

Martin Luther wrote, “If [women] become tired or even die, that does not matter.
Let them die in childbirth -- that is why they are there.” It is hardly surprising that
women mid-wives, who not only possessed medicinal knowledge but who used
that knowledge to comfort and care for other women during childbirth, would
become prime suspects of witchcraft according to Luther.

The Lutheran Judge, Benedict Carpzov (1595-1666), claimed to have sentenced
20,000 devil worshipers. In 1635 he published his Practica Rerum Criminalum to
support systematized legal persecution of witches. Under him, 20,000 death
warrants for arrest, torture and execution of German witches took place. Carpzov
even argued that under the most excruciating torture, witches were likely to give
a false account, but it should still be employed. This reformed Lutheran even
read the Bible, cover to cover, over fifty three times and took the Lutheran Mass
each week.

Luther, in addition to his intense anti-Semitism,
see: http://www.colchestercollection.com/titles/chunk/O/on-the-jews/title-
page.html strived to encourage the adoption of his version of Protestantism as
the state-sponsored religion of numerous German principalities at the expense of
the religious freedoms of those principalities' citizens. Where was Luther's
freedom of conscience in all this? His intolerance extended even to the
Zwinglians in Switzerland, with whom he exhibited only a minor disagreement
over his superstitious doctrine of consubstantiation.

John Calvin's description of witches in the Institutes of the Christian Religion
even more transparently revealed his true motives of combating dissension from
his version of Protestantism. Calvin draws, from his passage on witchcraft, the
conclusion that "we have to wage war against an infinite number of enemies."
Calvin might have included under this category anyone who did not conform to
the declarations of his strict church government in Geneva.

Calvin's autocratic policies were to stringently oversee people's private lives,
church attendance, and intellectual expression, and ensure that nothing they said
or did would displease God. It should therefore come as no surprise that Geneva
experienced a far larger number of witch-hunts than most other major European
cities. H.C. Erik Midelfort's statistics show Geneva as having experienced 95
cases of witch persecution over 125 years, almost two and a half times more
than had occurred in the entire Department of the Nord in France during 137
years.

Calvin was frank about his use of the witch craze to enforce the power of his own
theocratic (reconstructionist) order, stating in the Institutes that he had brought
up the entire issue “in order that we may be aroused and exhorted,” i.e. rallied behind Calvin’s religious movement.

Witch-hunts were neither small in scope nor implemented by a few aberrant individuals; the persecution of witches (another name for heretics, non-conformists, and dissenters) was the official policy of both the Catholic and Protestant Churches. The Church invented the crime of witchcraft, established the process by which to prosecute it, and then insisted that witches be prosecuted. After much of society (rational thinkers) had rejected witchcraft as delusional superstition, some of the last to insist upon the validity of witchcraft were among the religious clergy, both Protestant and Catholic. Under the pretext of first heresy and then witchcraft, anyone could be disposed of who dared to question “the authority” or the “Protestant Christian Church”.

Through the terror of the witch hunts, reformation Christians convinced common people to believe that magic was evil (true), that there was a powerful devil (true), and that women were most likely to be his agents (absolutely false). The vast numbers of people brutalized and killed, as well as the impact upon the common distorted perception of God, make the witch-hunts one of the darkest chapters of human history.

Another prominent Protestant, John Wesley (1703-1791), the founder of the Methodist Church, wrote that anyone who denied the reality of witchcraft was in direct opposition not only to the Bible, but also to the suffrage of the wisest and best of men in all ages and nations. Thus, giving up of witchcraft is in effect giving up the Bible.

We understand what Wesley means here. To give up on “witch hunting” and “witch burning” is equal to giving up the Holy Scriptures.

The Protestant lands burned at least as many women for witchcraft as the Roman Inquisition burned men for heresy. However no one could beat the combined record setting numbers of the Roman church since the days of Constantine. Rome still holds that record. Her Protestant daughters will never outscore their mother. The numbers executed as witches by the Protestants were not inconsiderable. In a ninety-year period, between 1590 and 1680, 4,400 people were executed in Calvinist Scotland for witchcraft. In Anglican England, for a comparable period, 1542-1736, at least a few hundred people suffered the same fate. While most of those executed were women, even here men were not spared as well. When King James (1566-1625) met with a storm on his return voyage from Denmark, a Scottish physician was accused of using witchcraft to generate the tempest. He was tortured and finally burnt at the stake for witchcraft. In Protestant Scotland, the last legal execution for witchcraft happened in 1722: an old woman was burnt at the stake, accused of turning her daughter into a pony and riding her to a witches’ sabbat. As late as 1782, witches were still being burnt in Switzerland. The Protestants in New England were not to
be left out as well. In the last decade of the seventeenth century, the holy and
pious Puritans executed at least twenty people for witchcraft in Salem,
Massachusetts.

At least two hundred thousand people were murdered in the witch-hunts, and
when the Reformation came, Luther, Calvin and some of their die-hard and loyal
followers supported the continuation of hunting down those who practiced the
‘dark arts’.

“If the merits of Christianity [Catholic-Orthodox-Protestant] as a civilizing force
are to be in any way determined by its influence in avoiding bloodshed; its record
in the matter of witch-slaying alone serve to place it, in that regard, lower than
any other creed” (J.M. Robertson).

The Protestants continued practicing some errors of East and West professed
Christianity. Their faulty ecclesiology, although differing from one another to
some degree, and marriage of Church and State for example, fared no better
than that of Papal intolerance. Protestants should have learned that these
previous models did not work because they were not Scriptural. However in vain
they proceeded in blindness, further proving to elect mankind that conversion
through acts of violent force and/or punishment for non-compliance to
their respective religious creeds did not work. Thus more blood was shed in
the “Name of Christ”: this time, at the hands of Protestants.

Protestant roots are from the Latin West sect of pseudo-Christianity. The
Reformation, and the various Protestant sects it gave birth to, was born of their
mother, Roman Catholicism, and not of Greek Orthodoxy. The history of
Protestantism is undeniably the history of their Catholic ancestors with a heavy
reliance upon the writings of the “fathers”. The Reformation was not an attempt to
dismantle the institutional church system as developed from the “fathers”, but
was an attempt to reform it.

Luther, Melanchthon, Zwingli, Calvin, and Bullinger, to name a few dissenters,
were all Papists in their early years. There was not complete harmony or
solidarity among differing Protestant groups as one may think.

Luther and Zwingli had major theological differences and strong clashes with one
another. The Marburg Colloquy is one example.

A group of professed Christians, the “Anabaptists”, was hated by both Papists
and the magisterial reformers. This hatred lies in the very religious nature of man.
When religious sects are small and wield no great political power they preach
tolerance for their own self-survival. But when and if they gain the support of
large numbers of people along with the machinery of government, they become
intolerant, brutal, and tyrannical as evidenced by their hatred of Anabaptists and
all those they deemed as heretics.
Zwingli and his followers threw the Anabaptists into the Lake of Zurich enclosed in sacks.

In April 1535, the Lutheran towns of Lubeck, Bremen, Hamburg, Luneburg, Stralsund, Rostock and Wismar all voted to hang Anabaptists and flog Catholics and Zwinglians before banishing them.

Luther's home territory of Saxony had instituted banishment for Catholics in 1527.

http://www.anabaptists.org/writings/...s/meneu-1.html

“That seditious articles of doctrine should be punished by the sword needed no further proof. For the rest, the Anabaptists hold tenets relating to infant baptism, original sin, and inspiration, which have no connection with the Word of God, and are indeed opposed to it . . . Secular authorities are also bound to restrain and punish avowedly false doctrine . . . For think what disaster would ensue if children were not baptized? ...Besides this the Anabaptists separate themselves from the churches . . . and they set up a ministry and congregation of their own, which is also contrary to the command of God. From all this it becomes clear that the secular authorities are bound . . . to inflict corporal punishment on the offenders . . . Also when it is a case of only upholding some spiritual tenet, such as infant baptism, original sin, and unnecessary separation, then . . . we conclude that . . . the stubborn sectaries must be put to death.” -- Martin Luther

Where is Luther's freedom of conscience?

http://www.gameo.org/encyclopedia/co...html#section-8

“Melanchthon accepted the chairmanship of the secular inquisition that suppressed the Anabaptists in Germany with imprisonment or death. ‘Why should we pity such men more than God does?’ he asked, for he was convinced that God had destined all Anabaptists to hell.”

Where is Melanchthon's freedom of conscience?

John Calvin was not tolerant of Anabaptists either.

http://www.gameo.org/encyclopedia/contents/C296.html


The burning of heretics (those who dissent or disagree with an established church) was practiced by Rome’s daughters also. Below are just a few names.
Protestants burned Roman Catholics, Anabaptists, witches, and non-conformists. Roman Catholics burned Protestants, Anabaptists, witches, and non-conformists. Protestants and Papists were pyromaniacs and blood-letters. They were obsessed with fire and blood. These violent acts were mere tools to strike fear in the hearts of common men.

Total control over the souls of men was the real motive. Both political and religious entities always join forces to subdue mankind when it is in their best interests to do so.

Whether these below individuals were right or wrong on their respective beliefs, torture, burning, and murder serve no humane purpose at all. Clerics have no power to convert a dead soul and cause regeneration. That causality belongs to God alone. Another point to consider. Were these not human beings that had families and loved ones? Did they not have parents, brothers and sisters, aunts, uncles, and others who were friends and possibly cared for them? These among thousands that were slain were PEOPLE. Not just names in history.

**Michael Servetus** (1511–1553)

**Anne Askew** (1521–1546)

**Joan Bocher** († 1550)

**George van Parris** († 1551)

**Matthew Hamont** († 1579)

**Peter Cole** († 1587)

**Francis Kett** († 1589)

**Bartholomew Legate** (1575–1612)

**Edward Wightman** (1566–1612), relapsed heretic

The Reformers and their offspring displayed as much ignorance as their mother, Rome.

The below site is also very helpful in ascertaining the true colors of
Protestantism. As I mentioned earlier, “I was saved from Religion to Christ.” I did not leave the Roman religion to join the Protestant religion. Religion is a useless enterprise. Religion only serves to anesthetize and opiate the ignorant.

Once deceived, men are molded into useful pawns that are easily manipulated by their religious and political overlords; they fight and die for their overlords for nothing more than global, religious and monetary conquests.

The toleration act of 1689 was a great milestone in the effort to restore sanity once again in England. The countless number of lives that were destroyed due to Protestant and Catholic tyranny should serve as an example that religious wars/conflicts profit no one.

http://www.thegloriousrevolution.org...erationact.htm

When the Spanish, French, and English pushed westward in their efforts to “civilize” and “convert” the natives of South America, North America, and Canada to their different forms of so-called Christian religion, more cruelty, hatred and bloodshed was exhibited in the name of Christ. The religionists never are able to learn from their bloody past.

Our Lord Jesus Christ and His truth were misrepresented throughout history due to religionists.

Protestants, Catholics and Orthodox in Europe continued murdering one another throughout the mid and late 20th century. World War II and Ireland are bloody examples.

One of the grossest lying statements ever to be embraced by Orthodox, Papists, and Protestants is this: “Outside the Church there is no salvation.”

The Apostolic witness teaches that outside of faith alone in Jesus Christ alone there is no Salvation.

“The Ugly”

This section will focus primarily on our current day religious apostasy. Before discussing this, let’s briefly examine Protestantism as it moved west from Europe to North America.

The word “Protestant” will be defined in this section as all religious groups that are not Roman Catholic or Orthodox but consider themselves Christians. Protestantism will be inclusive of all who profess Jesus Christ in some way whether they are Trinitarian or non-Trinitarian.
Religious individuals who abandoned Europe to explore a new land for themselves did so for mainly two reasons. One: To express their religious beliefs without fear, reprisal, torture and death from the wicked Lutheran, Calvinistic, and Papal controlled “monarch and church wedded” countries, which continued the slaughter of dissidents. Two: To exercise more control over their economic future.

European Monarchical and Ecclesiastical tyranny placed men in two categories. Either you were considered Prince/Clergy or Pauper/Laity. This is a “caste” system. The merchants of Europe were nothing more than serfs subjected to their “blue-blood” overlords both religious and political. In Europe, to dare to question the church (Protestant or Catholic) was to question the state, and vice-versa.

The dominant religious groups in early colonial America looked something like this:

- **Connecticut:** Congregational
- **Delaware:** Anglican, Dutch Reformed, Lutheran, Presbyterian
- **Georgia:** Anglican, Moravian
- **Maryland:** Roman Catholic, Presbyterian
- **Massachusetts:** Congregational, Puritan
- **New Hampshire:** Congregational
- **New Jersey:** Dutch Reformed, Lutheran, Quaker, Presbyterian
- **New York:** Dutch Reformed
- **North Carolina:** Anglican, Presbyterian, Free Will (Arminian) Baptists
- **Pennsylvania:** Amish, Brethren, Lutheran, Mennonite, Moravian, Quaker, Schwenkfelder ([http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Schwenkfelder_Church](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Schwenkfelder_Church)), Presbyterian, Reformed
- **Rhode Island:** Congregational, Reformed (Calvinistic) Baptists
- **South Carolina:** Anglican, Huguenots
- **Virginia:** Anglican, Presbyterian

An interesting change regarding church membership during American church history is easily evidenced. Due to the fact that church membership was not forced (mandatory) upon individuals through coercion, colonial church membership was relatively low: rarely higher than a third of adult New Englanders and as low as five percent of adults in the Southern colonies. Yet without this coercive element, as witnessed in Europe, there was regular participation in religious activities and rather high church attendance. In a study of diaries, missionary reports sent back to England, and other fragmentary evidence suggests that in 1700 as many as half to three-fourths of the colonists attended some kind of religious function with some regularity although not officially uniting in membership to these churches.
From 1820 to 1850 there was an increase in denominational expansion due primarily to the principle of “American freedom of religion”. This led to the expansion of Episcopalians, Unitarians, Methodists, Universalists, Mormons, and Baptists of both Arminian and Calvinistic persuasions.

From 1850 to 1930 there were even more groups emerging. Adventists, Assemblies of God, Church of God (all types), Church of God in Christ, Evangelical United Brethren, Russian Orthodox, Pentecostals (all types), Polish National Church, Jehovah’s Witnesses.

From 1930 to the present, there has been a considerable amount of re-grouping and re-aligning of religious denominations. In addition to the denominations or groups already mentioned, hundreds of smaller denominations and groups developed by the middle 1900's.

We have already shown the Papacy’s hatred of American Constitutional principles and the Bill of Rights. These principles make it very difficult for Rome to exercise Religious and Political control. Without a centralized form of government, Rome would have to utilize various methods in her attempt to gain control over the political and religious climate of the USA. Once achieved, Rome could use the military and machinery of the USA to fight proxy wars for both herself and her religious allies the Zionist Jews.

It was easy for Rome in Europe to control monarchs and princes in the past, but in America there are no kings, queens, and princes. To achieve control she must act to destroy the American Constitution and Bill of Rights by One: The Consolidation and centralization of power to the Federal Government. Two: Erode State constitutions and sovereignty. Three: Give the Executive branch unconstitutional dictatorial powers. Four: Consolidate and subordinate a sovereign state’s constitution and legal system to the Federal legal branch of Government, hence making the Federal Supreme Court the final court of opinion.

In other words, the political, moral and religious climate of the USA is decided (when necessary) by 9 unelected and handpicked Federal Judicial rogues. Rome and her Zionist allies were successful in their attempt.

For Rome to control the religious culture of America she must act to unite them to herself through the use of Ecumenism. To unite all world religions Rome employs Syncretism. This evil and wicked whore uses whatever means necessary to achieve ultimate power and control over the souls of men.

Rome’s greatest allies in the USA were the false ecumenical religious prophets of “Protestantism”. It is these people we will elaborate on.

We are going to discuss a few popular false prophets that have aided the rise of the ecumenical movement post World War II to this current day. Two words that are important to remember are “ecumenism” and “inter-faith”. Inter-faith is
After Rome failed in her attempt to subdue Europe, Russia, The Mediterranean region, and the Middle East through her fascist war-sons Hitler, Franco, Mussolini, Croats, and Slavic allies, she then concentrated her efforts on overcoming the nations that fought against her. It was payback time for Rome.

The 50's decade experienced a great growth of Roman Catholicism in the USA, both in the construction of parochial schools and papist parishes. But she needed more than these. She needed to organize a “fifth column” of non-Catholic sympathizers to aid and abet her treachery. Also within this time frame, Rome started to undergo a complete public image makeover that culminated in Vatican II, which was just propaganda to make Rome appear more mild, evangelical, loving and tolerant. Only ignorant and religious people fell for this tactic, and the Jews loved it.

Every devil in hell, her Jesuits, her controlled secret societies, her religious false-prophets, and all her then controlled politicians were called upon to serve and lend her credence.

The below links are helpful to acquire a general understanding of these concepts.

http://www.merriam-webster.com/dictionary/ecumenism

http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Syncretism

http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Interfaith

Ecumenism strives for a unity and cooperation within a specific religion (ex: Christianity, Islam, Judaism). Syncretism strives for unity and cooperation among the different religious groups. Both concepts are Satanic to the core and have no place in the lives of God’s elect Saints. They are social tools used by the devil.

Satan’s purpose and ultimate goal is to misrepresent Jesus Christ and His Gospel utilizing the lamb-like beast in promoting the false ideas that “all roads lead to god”, and “all religions are viable conduits to attain spirituality and salvation”, and “salvation is dependent on the free will of man”, and “salvation is maintained by good works and human participation”, etc. Satan uses his false prophets to promulgate these false and damning ideas.

Some Ecumenical and Inter-Faith damnable catch phrases:

Roman Catholics are my brothers and sisters in Christ.
Mormons and Jehovah’s Witnesses are my brothers and sisters in Christ.
Arminians teach the Gospel.
Roman Catholics and the Orthodox teach the gospel.
Lutherans teach the Gospel.
Pentecostals and Charismatics teach the Gospel.
All Protestants teach the Gospel.
Different understandings on Justification are not central and relevant to the Christian faith.
All worldly religions serve the same god.
We are all children of God.
God loves everyone.
Jesus Christ died for every human being.
God never interferes with man’s glorious “free will”.
Jesus is not the only way, but just one path to God.
It’s OK if Jesus was not divine. As long as I follow his teachings I am considered a good person.
The pope is a great moral leader.
The Talmudic Jews are God’s chosen people.
The land of Israel belong to the Jews.
All Calvinists are the same and teach the Gospel.
God accepts us because our good deeds outweigh our bad deeds.
I’m a church member; therefore I’m part of the body of Christ.
I became a Christian and part of the living body of Christ when I was baptized.
Just rededicate your life to Jesus by “coming forward” and you will be fine.
Accept Jesus as your Savior, become “born-again” and go back to your home church (including Catholic) and become more active.... a la Billy Graham.
You can receive Jesus by coming forward to the Priest and “eat him” in the Eucharist.

False prophet: Billy Graham, the Evangelical mini-Pope
To get a general idea of man worship from one of Billy’s followers, I'll quote her entire article that arrived in my mail.

**About Billy Graham by Marsha Tennant, Myrtle Beach, S.C.**

“In the Protestant South I grew up in, Billy Graham was our pope. I mean that in the most respectful way. He was the beacon that directed our moral compass as children. When I strayed - and I did - the way back was through the strong North Carolina Piedmont cadences of the preacher man.

I knew the power that Billy had in our house. We had traveled to see him preach several times during the late 1950’s. My daddy quoted him more than he did the Bible. It was close, but Billy won! The two of us would argue over faith and religion, and both of us used Billy's words in our defense. My mother taught Sunday school classes using his literature.

I have found solace in his words over the years as life's challenges have tried to beat me down or turn me in a different direction. Billy Graham has been my rock and anchor for my faith.

As I've watched Billy Graham accept illness and aging with peace, I can hear his song “Just as I Am” being sung in my ear, and I know that I owe part of my story and journey to this incredible preacher. He has touched many lives, and I am so glad that he is still part of mine.”

What is sad about this short four-paragraph article is that there is absolutely no mention of Jesus Christ. Quoting Billy more than the Bible? Using Billy’s words to defend their faith?? Billy is her rock and anchor?? Billy is her pope???? Absolutely disgusting!

Millions around the world share this woman’s sentiments. It reveals to God’s elect saints the evil mentality of religionists. Reprobate and unregenerate mankind are men followers not Christ followers. This sickness is not confined to Grahamites only. You can easily insert another name in Graham’s spot with identical results.

A rule of thumb that has worked for me [most of the time] in determining a religionist is this: When in face to face discussion, if a person talks more about
their church, church programs, their pastor or other religious leaders they may follow, and only mention Jesus Christ in some vague notion (sometimes never), this tells me what I am up against. I’m facing a “churched person” whose belief system is guided by men and not the Holy Spirit and Scripture. It is these people that have no clue at all what constitutes the True Gospel of Jesus Christ.

Not only has Billy never ever proclaimed the true Gospel of Jesus Christ, but also while acting as a false prophet and tool of the Papacy and Zionists, he has done more harm than good. However this harm has been ordained by God to deceive reprobate mankind.

Billy Graham, his children, his followers, and those workers currently united with his “Evangelistic Association” are blind religious fools. Billy and his minions are ecumenical puppets of the Papacy and Papal controlled politicians. Billy has heralded the cause of Syncretism for many decades.

http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=-gtR8rp4ozw

Even a “low grace”, semi-ecumenical, premillenial person like John MacArthur cannot stomach the blatant falsehoods of Billy Graham, however still considers him a brother in Christ.

http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=3odPpDTRjQc

Rather than listing quotes from “Billy”, below are a few links that serve that purpose. There are quite a bit more than these. These sites are listed only in relation to Billy Graham and are not cited to promulgate their theological views.


http://www.cephasministry.com/billy_..._the_real.html

http://cnview.com/on_line_resources/...connection.htm

http://www.cephas-library.com/baptis...ly_graham.html

False prophet: Jerry Falwell, the Fundamentalist mini-Pope
Being moral is not going to save anyone or any nation. This is a false gospel notion. Christ came to save His elect people from their sins, not to save any one country in particular. Jerry’s free will false gospel and “Moral Majority” antics have only served to unite (ecumenically) all false gospel institutions: i.e. Catholic, Evangelical, Protestant, Pentecostal, and Charismatic.

Though Falwell professed to be a fundamental free will Baptist, which is heretical to say the least, in reality he was another groundbreaking ecumenist who helped pave the way for unity with Zionists, Papists and her apostate daughters. He happily worked alongside Roman Catholics, Charismatics, Talmudic Jews, Mormons, and religionists of many stripes who are even opposed to the heretical doctrines that he professed to hold in his Baptist church.

Statements such as these, sum up Falwell’s corrupt religious mind.

Falwell called the pope and Billy Graham great moral and religious leaders in his January 1985 Morality Majority Report. Falwell has also said that the pope is “the greatest in my lifetime,” and that he knew “…many Catholic priests who are born again and who preach the same message I do.”

http://www.greatpreachers.org/jerry_falwell.html


Falwell and the Catholic priests preach the same message? But in the below You-tube clip, Falwell condemns aspects of the true Gospel:

http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=XBbcGlrqOds&feature=results_video&playnext=1&list=PL88B620D4219E9DA2

Falwell, like other politicians, was just another religious pawn controlled by the Papacy and the Jews.
Continuing with Rome's (Satan's) bid for ecumenical unity, another man emerged in the 50's. Television, although in its infancy, was used as a powerful media tool.

Rex Humbard is attributed with being the pioneer of Televangelism, and Telebegging. It was not only his original weekly televised church outreach beginning in 1952, but also the production of numerous television programs across the United States, Canada and around the world that helped pave the way for ecumenism and the further spreading of false gospels.

Due to great successes, swarms of false prophets jumped on the bandwagon and used television to deceive the masses. Later, as digital satellite technology developed, false prophets bought their own stations and developed their own networks. Many false prophets became tax-exempt millionaires by fleecing ignorant religionists through the use of “Christian show business and entertainment”. Rome also used the television media in the 50's by airing Roman Catholic Bishop Fulton Sheen, seen below with (Judas/Balaam) Billy.
As a young Catholic boy back in the late 50's, I viewed Fulton Sheen often. My family and relatives worshiped him. As I am writing, I continue to praise Jesus Christ for saving my soul and delivering me from Satan's stronghold.

Billy Graham, Fulton Sheen, and Rex Humbard worked to bridge the gap between Catholics and non-Catholics. None of these men proclaimed the true Gospel. The Pentecostalism of Rex Humbard was just another subjective and mystical fraud foisted upon the ignorant to empty their pockets and give them false hopes. However they did get a warm fuzzy feeling for their money once in a while, and maybe an occasional “slaying in the spirit”. But as for the Gospel, forget it, for Rex did not know it.

Evangelical revivalism, Pentecostalism, Neo-Pentecostalism and the Charismatic movement are not trends that lead to the proclamation of the objective historical Gospel, but trends that drift toward Roman Catholic anti-gospel subjective spirituality.

Pentecostalism finds its soteriological roots in Wesleyanism. John Wesley's emphasis on sanctification was his strong suit. He regards justification in essentially Augustinian and Aquinan terms as forgiveness for sins that are past; and he thinks of sanctification as the higher stage of redemption.

Wesley developed a doctrine of entire sanctification, known also as the “second blessing” or “Methodist sinless perfection”. He proposed that after justification
and a cooperative process of sanctification, the believer could receive by faith a sudden second blessing which would completely purge the soul from inbred sin (sinless perfection), enabling the fully sanctified to feel nothing but perfect love (this is Augustianian to the core). He called this experience “a still higher salvation”, “immensely greater than that wrought when he was justified” (Plain Account). Wesley and his preachers urged their hearers to seek this second blessing of perfection with all diligence.

Wesley, Arminians, Pentecostals of all stripes, and the majority of freewill advocates maintain and secure their salvation/justification by good works and legal performance. See below link for an understanding of Wesley, and thus Pentecostalism:

http://www.imarc.cc/esecurity/perseverance.html

Rome can and will embrace all who teach and think this way.

The development and growth of Methodism spilled over into other Protestant bodies, and by 1869 it became known as the “holiness movement”. The movement spread to England and found expression in the Keswick Convention. The emphasis that was popularized in the holiness movement was concerning the victorious, Spirit-filled life. Its focal point was not on the imputed righteousness of justification but on the attainment of an empirical experience of holiness and entire sanctification subsequent to conversion very similar to Catholic soteriology. However, the objective nature of imputation and value of justification and forgiveness ceased to be the central focus of the Gospel. Imputation and Justification were undervalued, even demeaned in the overwhelming preoccupation with religious experience and perfectionism. The holiness movement runs aground on the rocks of subjectivism, and because of this, it is basically more in harmony with Roman Catholicism than with the soteriology of Paul the Apostle. Consequently, between the years 1890 and 1900, numerous holiness denominations were founded. Later these became the Pentecostals who would ultimately plague the USA with their non-liturgical, non-sacramental, but Catholic subjective, mystical spirituality (insanity).

Toward the end of the nineteenth century, many within the holiness movement began to speak about and seek for the “baptism of fire.” One branch of the holiness movement was called the “Fire-Baptized Holiness Church”, originating in Iowa in 1895 and led by Benjamin Irwin. Those receiving “the fire” would often shout, scream, fall in trances or speak in other tongues. This alleged “baptism of fire” was regarded as a miraculous visitation of the Holy Spirit that followed entire (sinless perfection) sanctification. The more conservative teachers of the holiness movement rejected this “third” blessing of fire, for they regarded the second blessing and the special baptism of the Spirit as synonymous.

The radical “fire” advocates continued to make an impact within the movement
with fiery preaching and publications like *Live Coals of Fire* (first published in October 1899). This paper spoke of "the blood that cleans up, the Holy Ghost that fills up, the fire that burns up, and the dynamite that blows up." It is not hard to imagine the eccentric and mind-bending manifestations that accompanied the "blowing-up stage" of this emotional roller coaster religious high. The logical outcome of this religious trend was the appearance of the twentieth-century Pentecostal movement, which generally traces its beginnings to the ministry of Charles Parham at Topeka, Kansas in 1900.


"Out of the world-wide holiness movements the Pentecostal movement was born." The Pentecostal historian, Charles Conn, notes "that the Pentecostal movement is an extension of the holiness revival that occurred during the last half of the nineteenth century." (Frederick Dale Bruner, *A Theology of the Holy Spirit*, Grand Rapids, Mich.; Wm. B. Eerdmans Publishing Co., 1970, p.44).

"John Wesley was father to much of the 19th century American religious fervor; one of his children was the Holiness Movement which gave rise to the Pentecostalism of the 20th century." (Catholic author and contemporary ecumenist Kilian McDonnell, "The Classical Pentecostal Movement", *New Covenant*, Vol. I, No.11, May, 1972, p.1). (*New Covenant* is a monthly publication serving the Catholic charismatic renewal).

The Pentecostal movement came into being directly on the issue of insisting that the physical sign of speaking in tongues was the evidence of the baptism of the Spirit. This issue of tongues caused a split between the holiness and Pentecostal movements, yet the basic subjective emphasis of the two movements remains the same.

Pentecostalism is the inevitable fruit of subjective revivalism. The kind of revivals that flowed from TV personalities like Graham, Humbard, and Falwell are supremely orientated toward religious experientialism, i.e. "seeking the born-again experience", "walking the isle", etc.

For more than 400 years, Papal and demonic counter-Reformation influences have been at work within the Protestant movement to erode the objective nature of Paul's doctrine of justification by faith alone. It has been a drift back to Romanism all the way.

Roman Catholic author, Louis Bouyer, made these truthful observations:

“We see in every Protestant country, Christians who owed their religion to the movement we have called, in general, Revivalism, attain a more or less complete rediscovery of Catholicism” (Ibid, p. 188).

“The contemporary revivals most valuable and lasting in their results all present a striking analogy with this process of rediscovery of Catholicism...” (Ibid, p. 189). “...the instinctive orientation of the revivals toward the Catholic... would bring in that way a reconciliation between the Protestant Movement and the Church...” (Ibid, p. 197).

Bouyer closes with an appeal to his fellow Catholics to prepare for the inevitable return of the “separated brethren” under the influence of contemporary revivals. The fact that some revivalists regard themselves as anti-Catholic is irrelevant, for as Bouyer contends, they are simply in the dark about how the heart of their emphasis is in profound harmony with Catholicism.

**When the Pauline doctrine of Imputed Righteousness is abandoned or misrepresented, the wall that separates true faith from Roman religion is destroyed.**

Around 1960 a change took place. Pentecostalism started jumping the denominational boundary lines and penetrated the mainline Protestant churches. Soon there were thousands, and then millions of Episcopalian, Methodist, Lutheran, Baptist, Presbyterian, Congregationalist and other Protestant Pentecostals. This interdenominational phase of the movement became known as the neo-Pentecostal, or Charismatic movement. It was no longer a separate denomination but a subjective mystical experience that transcended all denominational boundary lines. Those sharing the mystical experiences in different denominations saw themselves as having more in common with each other than with non-charismatics of their own church. A new false language emerged. **The dichotomy of “spirit filled Christians” vs. “carnal Christians”.** Many that were deceived believed this was the beginning of the greatest revival the world had ever known.

**God sent lying spirits to deceive the religious.**

Toward the end of the 60’s, the neo-Pentecostal movement made astounding strides. It entered the youth culture and became known as the Jesus Movement. It is estimated that ninety percent of the Jesus People had some form of Pentecostal experience. The neo-Pentecostal movement also penetrated the Catholic Church in 1967. After a modest beginning in its great centers of learning (Duquesne and Notre Dame), it has spread like wildfire in the Catholic Church, gaining the support of cardinals, bishops and thousands of priests and nuns. And rightly so. **ALL mystical Babylonian religions of the world seek spiritual experiences.**
Since Roman Catholics are now receiving the identical pseudo (Pentecostal) experience as non-Catholics, the old-line traditional anti-Catholic Pentecostals had to re-evaluate their attitude toward Roman Catholicism. Most Pentecostal churches have changed their stance since “Pentecost” has come to Rome. They are all brothers now!

Although non-Catholic and evangelical Pentecostals introduced Pentecostalism to the Catholic Church initially, it met less resistance in Catholic circles than in Protestant circles. In fact, as many Catholic authors have pointed out, Pentecostalism is more at home in the ancient Roman church. It is more at home there because the overwhelming Pentecostal emphasis on subjective experience and sinless sanctification is in essential harmony with the tradition of the Roman Church and Augustine.

Benedictine monk, Father Edward O’Connor of Notre Dame says:

“Although they derive from Protestant backgrounds, the Pentecostal churches are not typically Protestant in their beliefs, attitudes or practices” (Edward O’Connor, *The Pentecostal Movement in the Catholic Church*, Notre Dame, Ind.: Ave Maria Press, 1971, p. 23).

“…it cannot be assumed that the Pentecostal movement represents an incursion of Protestant influence” (*Ibid.*, p. 32).

“…Catholics who have accepted Pentecostal spirituality have found it to be fully in harmony with their traditional faith and life. They experience it, not as a borrowing from an alien religion, but as a connatural development of their own” (*Ibid.*, p. 28).

“…the spiritual experience of those who have been touched by the grace of the Holy Spirit in the Pentecostal movement is in profound harmony with the classical spiritual theology of the Church” (*Ibid.*, p. 183).

“…the experience of the Pentecostal movement tends to confirm the validity and relevance of our authentic spiritual traditions” (*Ibid.*, p. 191).

“Moreover, the doctrine that is developing in the Pentecostal churches today seems to be going through stages very similar to those which occurred in the early Middle Ages when the classical doctrine was taking shape” (*Ibid.*, pp. 193-194).

**Neo-Pentecostalism does nothing to unsettle the faith of Catholics in their church and traditions.**
Father O'Connor says:

“Similarly, the traditional devotions of the Church have taken on more meaning. Some people have been brought back to a frequent use of the sacrament of Penance through the experience of the baptism in the Spirit. Others have discovered a place for devotion to Mary in their lives, whereas previously they had been indifferent or even antipathetic toward her. One of the most striking effects of the Holy Spirit’s action has been to stir up devotion to the Real Presence in the Eucharist” (Edward O’Connor, Pentecost in the Catholic Church (Pecos, N.M.: Dove Publications, 1970, pp. 14-15).

The 1970's brought us to a great ecumenical phase of revivalism and the charismatic movement.

Christianity Today of February 1, 1972 states:

“The force that appears to be making the greatest contribution to the current Christian revival around the globe is Pentecostalism. This movement, which began several decades ago, and which in its early years was very sectarian in character, is now becoming ecumenical in the deepest sense. A neo-Pentecostalism has lately appeared that includes many thousands of Roman Catholics . . . A new era of the Spirit has begun. The charismatic experience moves Christians far beyond glossolalia…. There is light on the horizon. An evangelical renaissance is becoming visible along the Christian highway from the frontiers of the sects to the high places of the Roman Catholic’s communion. This appears to be one of the most strategic moments in the Church’s history.”

The May 1972 issue of New Covenant (a Catholic charismatic publication), features Catholics and Protestants uniting in a great charismatic fellowship. It proclaims that the charismatic movement holds the hope of healing the wound of the sixteenth century. Dr. Henry Pitney Van Dusen (Union Theological Seminary) is featured as saying: “The presence of the charismatic (Pentecostal) movement among us is said to make a new era in the development of Christianity. This new Pentecost will appear to future historians as a ‘true reformation’ (compared to that of the 16th century) from which will spring a third force in the Christian world (Protestant-Catholic-Pentecostal)” (Henry Pitney Van Dusen, New Covenant, op. cit., p. 19).

This unholy union and false satanic spirituality is not based on the objective truth of Jesus Christ and His gospel, but on subjective experience. This is what syncretism relies on; the notion that similar experiences are equally valid and originate from God, regardless if you believe or know about Christ and the Gospel. No true Gospel loving historian would ever claim that this “New Pentecost” is a true reformation. It is the spiritual unity of devils.
American Christianity (the religious right) has drowned in the ocean of religious subjectivism. America is under the Judgment of God. Charismatic and Evangelical literature with its subjective revivalism has infested the land like the frogs of Egypt (Re. 16:13-14). Never has such a massive amount of literature been so devoid of the gospel of Christ. There is scarcely one extrinsic, objective thought written at all in it.

It’s all about you. It’s all about what the “Spirit” can make you to be. It’s all about how the “Spirit” can make you healthy, wealthy, and prosperous. It’s all about how the “Spirit” can make you victorious. It’s all about how the “Spirit” can make you sinless. All of this activity is a return to the medieval mysticism and superstition of Rome.

It is no wonder that there are remarkable similarities between Pentecostal, Evangelical, Charismatic and Catholic mysticism. And it is also no wonder that all of Christ’s true elect Saints will be hated by these religious fools. What they really hate is the Gospel of Christ, Imputed Righteousness, and His sovereignty over ALL things. In their human rebellion against God Almighty, they refuse to acknowledge their Total Depravity and hopelessness.

**False Prophetess: Kathryn Kuhlman, Ultra New Age Mystic and Ecumenist**

![Images of Kathryn Kuhlman](image1.png)

![Images of Kathryn Kuhlman](image2.png)
Probably no one has built the foundation for the New Age (subjective mysticism) faith healing movement more clearly in professed Christian circles than Kathryn Kuhlman. Hordes of charismatic faith healers emerged as a result of her showmanship and psychological techniques. She is the ultimate prototype for Telehealers, in my opinion.

These false faith healers actually believe they are led of the Holy Spirit, but God sent them lying spirits to deceive themselves and mankind. Satan and his minion spirits are master imitators and deceivers. Hell was created for the reprobate multitudes that truly believed they were following the leading of God the Holy Spirit. You will not find the true gospel of Christ in any of her writings, sermons or ministry. I challenge all to find them.

Jesus said: “Many will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in thy name? and in thy name have cast out devils? and in thy name done many wonderful works? And then will I profess unto them, I never knew you: depart from me, ye that work iniquity” (Mt. 7:22-23).

Since so much has been written about these false prophets, rather than being repetitious I will supply some links.

The below links are very helpful. As always, I do not fully endorse their theology.

http://www.cephas-library.com/charis...rit_guide.html

You can get your fill of men like Oral Roberts, Hagin, Copeland, Hinn, and many more of these devils in the below link.

http://www.cephasministry.com/index_charismatics.html

**False Prophet: D. James Kennedy, Coral Ridge Presbyterian Ecumenist, and Reconstructionist/Dominionist**

Kennedy was your typical, run-of-the-mill infralapsarian, closet Arminian, low grace, evangelical religionist. He made stardom with his television ministry, The
Coral Ridge Hour, and is well known for his interdenominational creation and publication of *Evangelism Explosion*.


http://www.rapidnet.com/~jbeard/bdm/Psychology/cor/dominion.htm

*Evangelism Explosion* is an inter-denominational and ecumenical/evangelical training course designed to teach the laity how to get people “churched”.

They state:

“Evangelism Explosion is a ministry that trains people how to share their faith in Christ and how to bring people from unbelief to belief. It utilizes a variety of components including prayer, actual on-the-job training where the experienced lead the inexperienced, and the principle of spiritual multiplication.”

“Multiplication” is the key component? Not just winning people to the Lord one-by-one (addition). But training those won to the Lord to win, and then train, others. In the Book of Acts we read that the disciples “multiplied” and “multiplied exceedingly”. This shift from addition to spiritual multiplication offers the one real hope of sharing the Gospel with a world population that is itself continually multiplying.

“On-the-job training is another vital ingredient. By actually going out with experienced trainers in real life witnessing situations, people learn how to share their faith. Much like learning to fly an airplane would be impossible without actually getting in the cockpit, evangelism is difficult without leaving the confines of a classroom.”

“By learning small parts of the Gospel each week, including Bible verses and illustrations, people incrementally grasp a Gospel tool that becomes a lifelong mission.”

The course and questions are written in such a way as to not address the soteriological differences among the different denominations. The generic course can be easily utilized among Calvinists, Arminians, Pelagians, Lutherans, and Semi-Pelagians. After some tweaking, even charismatic Catholics have used EE.

Their tracts are written with Arminian presuppositions, and engender generic easy-believism.

See example tract:  http://www.menorah.org/eetract.html
As you read the tract, you will see similarities to the Four Spiritual Laws of ecumenist Bill Bright. There are references to God not wanting to punish anyone, inviting Christ to sit on the throne of your heart, the Sinner’s Prayer and of course the Spiritual Birth Certificate. This is the typical “junk” mail and door-to-door sales tactics of evangelism that nourishes the lamb-like beast.

http://evangelismexplosion.org/

Kennedy stated his postmillennial reconstuctionist view well when he said: “We must be very busy about changing society in order to bring about the Kingdom of God.” A papist theologian could not have stated it any better. Did Christ do this? NO! Jesus said the Kingdom of God was at hand. That it was already a present reality by faith in Him. Jesus did not change the society of Imperial Rome and National Israel. Christ tells His elect people to come out from among them.

In early May 1997, the popular radio-television preacher D. James Kennedy featured Mother Teresa on his broadcast. The announcer for Kennedy stated warmly, “who better to speak on love than Mother Teresa?” Mother Teresa?????????? This reveals the blindness of Kennedy. He cannot even honestly discriminate between truth and error. Why not feature the love of Hindu and Buddhist monks?

Mother Teresa was so steeped in New Age Hindu mysticism that she was another pathetic lost soul! She was Gospelss!

Don’t be fooled by his titles, degrees, credentials and pedigree. Kennedy is just another run-of-the-mill, seminary bred, and confused “religionist”. But when it came to showmanship, church building, ecumenism, and money grabbing, he was ranked high on the charts.

When Kennedy died it was only fitting that his business empire and mega-church should so graciously be bequeathed to Billy Graham’s grandson to further the delusion.

http://www.freerepublic.com/focus/f-.../2207274/posts
We often ask ourselves, “How could something so false be so widely accepted by millions of people around the globe, including our political servants?”

The answer is quite simple for those of us who have been enlightened by Christ. Religious fraud and deception has been around since the creation of the world. From the “church fathers”, throughout the formation of the lamb-like beast (Catholic church including Protestants), to this very day, God has actively blinded pseudo-Christian mankind so that they are unable to comprehend spiritual truth. God’s causality is further manifested through the use of lying spirits to seduce mankind. These demonic lying spirits are sent by God to wreak havoc upon mankind.

God created for Himself two seeds of people. Vessels of honor (elect), and vessels of dishonor (reprobate). Mankind is unable to choose which side he is born unto. Man hath been preordained and predestined to his own very end.

Although segments of reprobate religious mankind may want to be considered as
“followers of Jesus Christ”, they will always manifest falsehoods. Some will be blatant and obvious, some not so obvious, but still discernible with a “little” homework.

On his website, Pat Robertson comments on the Election of Pope Benedict XVI:

VIRGINIA BEACH, Va., April 20, 2005: “I am delighted that the College of Cardinals has selected a Pope who is dedicated to carrying forward the initiatives of the beloved John Paul II. I believe that Pope Benedict XVI has an emphasis on moral relativism, which speaks to the culture of Europe and America with brilliant clarity. I will support him prayerfully in this overwhelming task that has been thrust upon him.”

http://www.patrobertson.com/pressrel...tselection.asp

Go ahead Pat and do just that. You can support a devil (or devils) all you want. You surely will not be the first to do so. Your false charismatic gospel makes Rome proud.

On virtually every broadcast, Pat closes his eyes, scrunches up his forehead, cheeks, and lips and dials up God. God answers this “spiritual phone call” and gives Pat all sorts of new revelations, and words of knowledge. Pat, now equipped with God’s direct words, is able to tell his viewing audience that some folks are now healed, receiving a financial blessing, or, better yet, what political figures should be assassinated, elected, or re-elected.

The Imperial cults of old had their version of these religious “soothsayers”. Emperors and kings sought these kinds of mystics for answers relating to all areas of their dominion. Should we go to war? How strong is our enemy? What military might do they possess? Will my family be healed of plagues? Will the gods favor us? And so on.


Our country is in deep trouble because politicians listen to these religious false prophets.

Pat Robertson also was one of the signers of the satanic document, “Evangelicals and Catholics Together”.

http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Evangel...olics_together

In 1985 Pat Robertson said to Roman Catholic Bishop Sullivan the following words:

“I have been your friend and booster. ... It has been my pleasure to assist on

Robertson gave this pro-Papist reply:

“I understand there have been some tremendous healings. ... Again, the nice thing is that so many Roman Catholics believe in miracles. They believe in a God who answers prayer. Miracles are part of the warp and woof of the Church.” (*February 27, 1986, “Wanderer”).

Pentecostals, Catholics, Charismatics, Orthodox, and Sacramental Protestants have been duped and are prime targets for satanic mysticism/delusion. With transubstantiation, bleeding and throbbing Eucharists, consubstantiation, holy water, rosary beads, miraculous medals, prayer clothes, relics, oils, and all the rest of these snake oil charms, these false prophets of doom have foisted upon mankind pagan witchcraft to deceive the masses.

Pat Robertson’s “Regent University” has many Roman Catholics on the payroll teaching Catholic theology to the young future ministers. An actual Catholic mass is held every week on campus. A frequent leader at the “masses” was Bishop Walter Sullivan, former head of the Richmond Diocese, whose motto is: “To Unite All in Christ.” This Bishop was also President of Pax Christi USA (the national Catholic peace movement), and has been documented as one who supports the ordination of homosexuals. Robertson speaks at many radically ecumenical men’s meetings.


“Pope John Paul II stands like a rock against all opposition in his clear enunciation of the foundational principles of the Christian faith” (*Pat Robertson “The Turning Tide”,* p. 279).

The below link is a partial transcript from “*Hannity & Colmes,*” April 4, 2005. Both Hannity and Pat are pope lovers.

http://www.foxnews.com/story/0,2933,...#ixzz1sV3f9oj6

Pat can have his false god (the pope). I want no part of him, his religion, or his ecumenical buddies.
An Amillennial Understanding of the Kingdom of God

Nicholas A. Laurienzo

Chapter 32
False Prophets – Protestant - J.I. PACKER

False Prophet: J.I. Packer, Ecumenical Anglican Clergyman, Reconstructionist Dominionist, and Tool of the Papacy

As a result of the new and improved image the Papacy has conjured up with Vatican II, the focus on ecumenism was given a new direction. Given a new battle plan, so to speak. Rather than prescribing harsh and brutal methods of intolerance, Rome set out to recapture her now “separated brethren” through the use of clever sophistry, semantics and a mild, sophisticated form of ecumenism.


The documents, Evangelicals and Catholics I [ECT I], and Evangelicals and Catholics II [ECT II], display this clever sophistry. These documents are no more than an ingenious religious propaganda tool to consolidate all who attach the words “Jesus Christ” to their peculiar forms of religion, and bridge a unity with Rome that would now allegedly “conquer the world for Christ.” In America we call these individuals “right wing conservative evangelical Christians”.

Being that J.I. Packer signed off on these horrendous documents we will discuss them. Before doing so, I must mention that Rome NEVER has ceased in her struggle to repair the schism of the 16th century both politically and ecclesiastically.

Robert Higby, one of our facilitators at Predestinarian.net and brother in Christ, produced a few years ago a wonderful series entitled “Seven Post Reformation Heresies”. This series gives us information on the rapid decline and apostasy within Protestantism.
It can be heard here: http://www.predestinarian.net/content-ration-Heresies.

Getting back to Packer, why would this so-called Protestant Anglican breed of Calvinism ever want to unite with Rome? If you studied his soteriology on Justification and his overall theology, it would be evident.

Allow me to comment on Packer's heretical view of Justification. Let's examine a few of his statements cited in Blue letters:

Packer:
“[God] reckons righteousness to them, not because he accounts them to have kept his law personally (which would be a false judgment), but because he accounts them to be united to one who kept it representatively (and that is a true judgment)” (J. I. Packer, “Justification,” in Evangelical Dictionary of Theology, ed. Walter A. Elwell [Grand Rapids, MI: Baker, 1984], p. 596).

If you buy into the concept of “union” as the formal cause of Justification (which is Augustinian, Aquinan, and Catholic), then the notion of justification being grounded on the imputed merit of Jesus Christ alone starts to fall apart in favor of the imparted (or infused) merit of Christ which brings regeneration (union). To be clear, the elect are indeed united to Christ, there is no denial on my part. However, union with Christ is always shown in Scripture as a consequence (fruit) of Justification and never an instrumental cause. The legal verdict of justification is rendered upon the elect prior to regeneration, and more specifically, was decreed from eternity. Were you and I alive when Christ justified us via the cross 2,000 years ago? No! But the elect were still justified in Christ.

http://monergism.com/thethreshold/arification.html

Packer:
“The necessary means, or instrumental cause, of justification is personal faith in Jesus Christ as crucified Savior and risen Lord (Rom. 4:23-25; 10:8-13). This is because the meritorious ground of our justification is entirely in Christ. As we give ourselves in faith to Jesus, Jesus gives us his gift of righteousness, so that in the very act of ‘closing with Christ,’ as older Reformed teachers put it, we receive divine pardon and acceptance which we could not otherwise have (Gal. 2:15-16; 3:24).”

Ground and Cause

The main difference between most of the reformers and the Catholic theologians is that the reformers shifted the ground of righteousness from a virtuous quality created in man to a perfect righteousness found in Christ alone. This is very correct. But the Reformers never shifted the formal cause of Justification away from man. They remained faithful to Rome and Augustine. This is a huge error!!!!
What is the consequence of this error? Well, according to Packer, you do your part (reciprocating by an infused gracious faith union) and Christ will do His part by rewarding you with His imputed righteousness. This the older reformed teachers called “closing with Christ”. After closing this deal through cooperative Grace (a la Augustine/Aquinas), we receive divine pardon and acceptance (Justification). Also, this error boldly concludes that prior to regeneration (infusion of Grace that leads to faith), the elect are no better off than the reprobate. They both are under the “wrath of God” and equally hated.

The Justification taught by Luther and Calvin was halfway correct. It was correct on the “Ground”, but incorrect on the “formal instrumental cause”.

Lutherans hold that the instrumental and formal cause of Justification (faith) can be repudiated, and thus imputation lost. Whereas Calvin taught that the instrumental cause (faith) can never be lost or repudiated. Both reformers still taught the Augustinian view (error) of regenerative faith being the formal instrumental cause of Justification.

This explains why I, and others of like belief, am considered by some to be one of those “hypers”. How dare I go beyond Pope Calvin and Pope Luther? It's easy; just dump Augustine and Aquinas. Stick with the Scriptures, Jesus, and the Apostles, mainly Paul.

Packer continues:

“Official Roman Catholic theology includes sanctification in the definition of justification, which it sees as a process rather than a single decisive event, and affirms that while faith contributes to our acceptance with God, our works of satisfaction and merit contribute too. Rome sees baptism, viewed as a channel of sanctifying grace, as the primary instrumental cause of justification, and the sacrament of penance, whereby congruous merit is achieved through works of satisfaction, as the supplementary restorative cause whenever the grace of God’s initial acceptance is lost through mortal sin. Congruous, as distinct from condign, merit means merit that it is fitting, though not absolutely necessary, for God to reward by a fresh flow of sanctifying grace. On the Roman Catholic view, therefore, believers save themselves with the help of the grace that flows from Christ through the church’s sacramental system, and in this life no sense of confidence in God’s grace can ordinarily be had. Such teaching is a far cry from that of Paul.”

The above statement is a good example of the “pot calling the kettle black.”

Packer does not disagree with the statement, “and affirms that while faith contributes to our acceptance with God,” although I disagree. What Packer disagrees with is that “our works of satisfaction and merit contribute too.” I would
agree with Packer’s disagreement on this works issue also.

The error of Packer is that he understands “faith” to be contributory in our acceptance with God. However, neither “faith” nor “works” are contributory in any sense as to our formal cause of Justification.

“Rome sees baptism, viewed as a channel of sanctifying grace, as the primary instrumental cause of justification, and the sacrament of penance.” Well, so Packer agrees with the Roman heresy on Baptismal regeneration being a channel of grace, also as the primary instrumental cause of Justification. And what about Packer’s “office of the keys” wherein the clergy absolves sins?

Absolution is a traditional theological term for the forgiveness experienced in the Sacrament of Reconciliation. This concept is found in the Roman Catholic Church, as well as the Eastern Orthodox churches, the Anglican churches, and most Lutheran churches.

“So is Packer's heretical view in “closing the deal”. The whole life of Anglicanism is centered on the “Sacraments” (not as many as Rome), membership in the “church”, and the almighty clergy. These teachings of Packer’s are also a far cry from that of Paul.”

Rome and Reformed heretical order of Justification:

2. Faith: reciprocal and formal instrumental cause of Justification.
3. Justification: Jesus gives the faithful the gift of righteousness and they receive divine pardon and acceptance.

In the case of Rome, Justification is a process of receiving divine pardon and righteousness and not a legal verdict by way of imputation. However Packer’s formal and instrumental cause is identical with Rome and is heretical.

The Pauline and Scriptural view:

1. Justification: From Eternity God decrees the elect righteous, divinely pardoned, and accepted via imputation that is grounded and caused by Christ’s historical fulfillment of that decree on Calvary alone.
2. Regeneration: The passive reception of Grace and the bestowal of the gift of faith.
3. Faith: The faithful response to Christ, and mental assent of the eternal and
historical judicial verdict of righteousness (non-causal).

In my opinion, Packer signed the ECT documents because in his overall scheme of justification (like many other apostates) “union” with Christ, which is the “formal cause” of his heretical view of Justification, takes preeminence over the “ground” which is Christ Himself. He, along with lost Papists and Evangelical religionists, exalt the “fruit” above the “root”. In this error they can unite.

Over the years I have had many discussions on the issue of Justification with many different pastors along different denominational persuasions to no avail. According to them, I was only “hairsplitting” over secondary issues. That’s their attitude. All they were concerned about was church growth, the born-again experience, preaching the love of Jesus, and how Jesus can enrich your walk and life with Him.

Supplied below are links to these horrendous documents [ECT I and II] with critiques from those who oppose them.

http://reformationanglicanism.blogspot.com/p/backlash-ect-i-packer.html

http://www.seekgod.ca/ect.htm

http://www.seekgod.ca/ect3.htm

http://www.seekgod.ca/ect2.htm

http://www.svchapel.org/resources/areligion...-ecumenicalism

http://vintage.aomin.org/Evangelical..._Together.html
False Prophet: John Piper, Purpose Driven Neo-Calvinist, Neo-Legalist, Synthesizing Trent Amyraldianism, Arminianism, and Calvinism

I know the heading may be shocking to some, so to clarify, I am not saying that Piper is a full blown subscriber to any of the above theological views singularly listed above. That would be slanderous on my part. He does contend to be a Calvinist. But there are many different types of Calvinists that have varying theological differences among themselves. What I am saying, from my personal assessment of his overall teaching, is that he presents in a scholarly way [no doubt] a “hybrid” view of soteriology that incorporates the essential elements of all of the above. In this, he is truly paradoxical and remarkable, but wrong. It’s as if Piper is trying to find ways to minimize the main differences [sharp edges] of these four views, i.e. Trent, Amyraldianism, Arminianism, and Calvinism, thus enabling him to incorporate some of these ideas in formulating a “hybrid” re-defining of the Pauline Doctrines of Grace and the 5 points.

I fully believe this man is sincere in what he believes, so I’m not attacking his character or motives. But being sincere does not equate with being correct.

To understand what I am driving at, the reader must arrive at some personal conclusions of his own by spending a few hours (or more) reading and listening to Piper. Please read and view the links below. Piper discusses many topics on his website. If one fully gets a handle on Piper, then you can be equipped with also identifying men who think and teach along those lines.

I have always felt the best way to defend what one believes is to fully
understand what your opponent believes. Learning is not a process of just memorizing a few Scriptures, doctrinal statements or creeds, etc. All religionists do this to some degree, however we all must strive individually to comprehend the real and underlying differences hiding behind words such as “Grace”, “Justification”, “Atonement”, “Merit”, etc. We must chip away at the rock to uncover the foundational premises of one's theology.

Please view all 9 parts and listen very carefully. You will detect the mixtures of Amyraldianism, Augustinianism, and Arminianism.

http://www.desiringgod.org/resource----s/tulip-part-1

http://www.desiringgod.org/resource----s-of-calvinism

Let's address his neo-Roman Catholic view of Justification, showing similarities from the Council of Trent documents “sixth session”. Piper teaches a neo-Tridentine view of Justification. Bold and Underlining added, Piper's statements in Blue.

http://history.hanover.edu/texts/trent.html

Piper:
"God justifies us on the first genuine act of saving faith, but in doing so he has a view to all subsequent acts of faith contained, as it were, like a seed in that first act."

“What we are trying to do here is own up to the teaching of Romans 5:1, for example, that teaches that we are already justified before God. God does not wait to the end of our lives in order to declare us righteous. In fact, we would not be able to have the assurance and freedom in order to live out the radical demands of Christ unless we could be confident that because of our faith we already stand righteous before him.”

“Nevertheless, we must also own up to the fact that our final salvation is made contingent upon the subsequent obedience which comes from faith. The way these two truths fit together is that those who do not lead a life of faith with its inevitable fruit of obedience simply bear witness to the fact that their first act of faith was not genuine.”

This one statement from Piper alone is so riddled with errors that the Papacy should canonize him.

When Piper uses the words “Saving Faith” he has in mind works of faith also, which he will show later. NOT FAITH ALONE! According to Piper, contained within man's first act of saving faith, God sees and anticipates all subsequent acts of faith/works. This final salvation/justification of man is made contingent
upon the subsequent obedience/works that evolve from that very first act [seed] of saving faith. According to Piper, a man can have assurance of salvation based upon his first act of saving faith because contained within that very first act is the “totality” of lifelong fidelity and obedience. Now, if God sees and anticipates all subsequent acts of faith, man must see it this way also. Man must not only base his assurance on his first “genuine” act of saving faith but must also rest his assurance in his continued future acts of faith and obedience. This is an inescapable conclusion from Piper.

What Piper proposes is an “analytical” justification. The Roman Catholic view of justification is known as analytic justification because in order for God to justify a person in the Roman system, that person must be made righteous by definition. Righteousness [faith and obedience] must inhere within the individual by way of “regeneration/union”. This righteousness may be rooted in the grace of God, but it must become a personal, inherent, and experiential righteousness through the cooperation of a life consisting of faithful obedience and good works.

The major errant similarity contained in Trent and Piper is that the formal, valid, and binding verdict of righteousness [Justification] can only be announced or viewed by God as a “real” righteousness at the point of “regenerationfaith”.

Where they differ, although both starting from the wrong premise of “regeneration”, is that Trent sees this righteousness [justification] as an “A to Z to Purgatory process”, while Piper sees this justification from “Z to A”. In other words, according to Piper, God sees the sum total of a completed historical life that consists of genuine faith that produces this consequential fruitful obedience. This “Z” in God's mind is brought forward historically to one's first act “A” of Genuine faith. Although this differs from Trent to some degree, it is still wrong! Both views ground the regenerate life of the believer as a necessary and formal cause which renders [secures] the verdict of Justification. Although Piper and many Calvinists are quite careful to not admit any “ground” in man, they are quite content to admit “cause”. Rome places both “ground” and “cause” within man, albeit by Grace.

It does not matter how you slice this loaf of bread. If the “ground” [Christ] alone, according to most reformers and Piper, does not fully and actually acquit and appease the wrath of God on behalf of the elect, but also requires regeneration and faith, then in reality Justification is conditioned on regeneration. In this the reformers never fully broke from Rome.

The reformers never fully recovered the Gospel of Justification.

What does God see in Justification?

God does not see anything in sinful man, whether that man is regenerate or not! Nothing at all! No “A to Z or Z to A.” He does not see regeneration/union, nor
your “first genuine act of saving faith”, nor good works, nor "all subsequent acts of faith and obedience” when he justifies the ungodly. God only sees the objective work of Christ outside of us. Jesus' perfect righteousness is in view, period and alone! If God had in view our acts of faith and obedience, we would never be justified; which is a declaration of righteousness and acquittal from wrath.

The formal ground and cause of Justification is not found in man, or "because of our faith that we already stand righteous before him." It is only because of the obedience and very divine nature of our substitute Jesus Christ alone, declared to the Father and imputed to us freely, that we stand righteous before God. Regeneration and union with Christ are a “fruit”, “consequence” and “gift” of Justification, and never to be confounded with the formal cause, ground, and declaration of Justification itself, which is Christ alone.

It is false that "our final salvation is made contingent upon the subsequent obedience which comes from faith." It is equally false to embrace that salvation is contingent upon our first act of faith alone also. This is similar to Trent. Our final salvation was already sealed and guaranteed from the decree of God and work of Christ alone. It is not contingent on anything we do or don't do. The sole ground and cause of justification is "Jesus Christ" extrinsic to us, and for us. Not for us and within us.

http://www.desiringgod.org/resource-...ome-100-for-us

Piper:

“When Does God Become 100% For Us?”

“What the Bible teaches is that God becomes 100% irrevocably for us at the moment of justification, that is, the moment when we see Christ as a beautiful Savior and receive him as our substitute punishment and our substitute perfection. All of God’s wrath, all of the condemnation we deserve, was poured out on Jesus. All of God’s demands for perfect righteousness were fulfilled by Christ. The moment we see (by grace!) this Treasure and receive him in this way his death counts as our death and his condemnation as our condemnation and his righteousness as our righteousness, and God becomes 100% irrevocably for us forever in that instant.”

Again Piper acquiesces to Trent. Not only Trent, but also Arminianists, the majority of Calvinists, and Amyraldianism. The main characteristic of Roman soteriology is centered in man’s cooperation with Grace. That is, “when man” does this, obeys this, performs this, perseveres in this, and so on. Piper concludes that it is only “when we” see and receive Christ as our Savior then and only then does Christ fully become 100% for us. In other words, Christ's death only “counts’ if man believes it. This is pure subjectivism, plain and simple.
Wow! You mean to tell me, Mr. Piper, that Christ was only 50% for us when He went to the cross for his elect sheep? That it is only when “we” believe [in us, regeneration, union, and faith] that “we” satisfy the other 50%? No! Piper is not saying that.

What Piper proposes, as we shall see further, is that there are two “senses” in which Christ is 100% for us. However, both “senses” according to him are necessary for Justification. He slides into the dark pit of Trent.

To further show that Piper thinks like heretics Augustine and Aquinas, Piper states: “What the Bible teaches is that God becomes 100% irrevocably for us at the moment of justification.” This statement standing alone is quite correct if understood apart from human action/response.

But Piper, like Rome, does not understand Justification. Piper defines his statement, or in other words infers Justification, in terms of regeneration, faith, and union. According to Piper, Christ’s death, His Righteousness, the acquittal from sin, and sin’s penalty of condemnation can be understood as only a plausible and potential anecdote to man’s problem. He may deny this conclusion, but to Piper the reality and totality of Justification lies in the “fruit”, a regeneration that produces a faith that performs and perseveres to the end.

Ro. 4:25 “Who was delivered for our offenses, and was raised again for our justification.” There is no hint of human cooperation here.

2 Co. 5:19 “To wit, that God was in Christ, reconciling the world unto himself, not imputing their trespasses unto them; and hath committed unto us the word of reconciliation.”

God was IN CHRIST, not in regenerate man, reconciling His elect by not imputing our trespasses [wrath] unto us.

Piper continues to further explain:

“The question this leaves unanswered is, ‘Doesn’t the Bible teach that in eternity God set his favor on us in election?’ In other words, thoughtful people ask, ‘Did God only become 100% for us in the moment of faith and union with Christ and justification? Did he not become 100% for us in the act of election before the foundation of the world?’ For example, Paul says in Ephesians 1:4-5, ‘[God] chose us in [Jesus] before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy and blameless before him. In love he predestined us for adoption as sons through Jesus Christ.’ Is God then not 100% for the elect from eternity? The answer hangs on the meaning of 100%.”

In the above statement, Piper now must contend with the likes of those
“thoughtful people” whom Rome, the reformed world, and the majority of Christendom consider “hypers” and/or heretics. Piper is no dummy. He raises his opponent’s [myself and others] valid arguments/questions.

Piper:
“With the term ‘100%’ I am trying to preserve a biblical truth found in several passages of Scripture. For example, in Ephesians 2:3, Paul says that Christians were ‘children of wrath’ before they were made alive in Christ Jesus. ‘We all once lived [among the sons of disobedience] in the passions of our flesh, carrying out the desires of the body and the mind, and were by nature children of wrath, like the rest of mankind.’”

Here Piper tows the typical Augustinian, Aquinan, and reformed party line. What Piper does, and what those who would agree with him do, is confound the inherent nature of man, which is depraved, and no doubt deserving of God's wrath, with Christ's legal verdict of acquittal from His wrath. In the above verse Paul is only stating the common depraved nature of ALL mankind shared by Elect and Reprobate. However, a change in man’s nature is not necessary for God to legally acquit the elect from the wrath of God. How can many miss this point?? Rome, Piper, and most of the reformed world miss it also.

If God is dependent not only on His Son Jesus Christ to validate, define, and impute righteousness, but also is dependent on regeneration and the inner renewal [change of nature] in man for validation, acquittal, and righteousness, I'll stop writing now! I will recant all that I have written and taught in the past, ask the Pope for forgiveness, perform my penance, and rejoin the Roman Catholic Church. Piper understands this verse wearing Augustine's glasses. If Paul the apostle would have left out the word “nature”, Piper's case may have been somewhat strengthened, but still not concluded when taking into consideration the whole of Paul's polemic on Justification.

Another point I want to mention is this. According to Piper, Jesus Christ assumed potentially the wrath of God on behalf of His elect people. By assuming this wrath, Christ only insured the fruit of Justification, [but NOT JUSTIFICATION ITSELF.] To Piper, before regeneration [fruit] takes place, Christ's death [root] on the cross in reality did not acquit one elect sinner from the wrath of God!!!!!! It is only at the point of a changed nature that God acquits man. This is Rome!!!!

The inherent nature of the elect [regenerate or not] and God's disposition toward the elect are not co-dependent and must never be confounded in arriving at a “verdict of righteousness”. But Piper and Rome think it must be so.

Ro. 5:10 “For if, when we were enemies, [unregenerate and unbelieving] we were reconciled to God by the death of his Son [alone], much more, being reconciled, we shall be saved by his life.”
How is Piper to understand this verse? According to him, he must force Paul to state something like this:

“For if, when we were regenerate believers, we were reconciled to God [no longer under His wrath] by the death of his Son, much more, being reconciled, we shall be saved by his life, including the final salvation that is made contingent upon the subsequent obedience which comes from faith.”

Piper:
“So Paul is saying that, before regeneration, God’s wrath was on us. The elect were under wrath. This changed when God made us alive in Christ Jesus and awakened us to see the truth and beauty of Christ so that we received him as the one who died for us and as the one whose righteousness is counted as ours because of our union with Jesus. Before this happened to us, we were under God’s wrath. Then, because of faith in Christ and union with him, all God’s wrath was removed and he then became, in that sense, 100% for us.”

What is Piper saying? To him, the material and formal cause of Justification is dependent on regeneration, faith, and union. Only in this sense is Christ 100% for us. This is the heart of Trent, period! Piper confounds root and fruit.

“Similarly in Romans 8:1, there is the crucial word ‘now.’ ‘There is therefore now no condemnation for those who are in Christ Jesus.’ The implication of ‘now’ is that there was once condemnation over us and now there is not. A real change in God’s disposition toward us happened in the moment of our regeneration and faith and union with Christ and justification. Notice the phrase ‘in Christ’ at the end of Romans 8:1. This is why God’s disposition toward us is different when we believe in Christ. When we believe in Christ, we are united to him—that is, we are ‘in Christ.’ This means that his death counts as our death and his righteousness counts as our righteousness.”

Let’s set aside the eternal aspect and decree of Justification for a moment, and just stick with Christ’s actual historical death, burial, and resurrection. Even at this juncture, Piper infers that the historical death of Christ was only preparatory, thus only guaranteeing an actual change, but not a real change of God’s heart, mind, and disposition toward the still unbelieving elect.

This is very dangerous, for it reduces and subordinates the extrinsic, historical mighty acts of Jesus Christ our Savior to Piper’s alleged higher more worthy acts of God in the regeneration of man. This is Trent!!!

“This is why there is now no condemnation, whereas before there was. Before Christ bore the curse of the law and we were united to him by faith, we were under the curse of the law. ‘Christ redeemed us from the curse of the law by becoming a curse for us’ (Galatians 3:13).”
Again Piper stresses union and faith as a condition to reverse God's disposition of wrath against His elect. This is Trent!

“When Paul uses the language of God being ‘for us’, he speaks of it in the context of what Christ has done for us in history. For example, in Romans 8:31-32, he says, ‘If God is for us, who can be against us? He who did not spare his own Son but gave him up for us all, how will he not also with him graciously give us all things?’ Not sparing his Son is the act that secures God’s being 100% for us forever.”

Here Piper shows us the other “sense” in which God is 100% for us. However, this sense is only to be seen as a bare promise that God will be 100% for His people. But according to Piper, faith alone in only a promise alone will not suffice. To Piper, faith must be grounded in the Promise of Justification, The Cross of Justification [root] AND the result of Justification [fruit]. This is Trent!!

“So was God 100% for us from eternity because we were elect? In one sense, yes. It was 100% certain that he would bring us to faith and save us. But when I ask the question, ‘When did God become 100% for us?’ I mean more than: ‘When did it become 100% certain that God would save us?’ I mean: ‘When did it happen that God was for us and only for us? That is, when did it happen that the only disposition of God toward us was mercy? Or: When did God become for us so fully that there was not any wrath or curse or condemnation on us, but only mercy?’ The answer, I still say, is at the point when, by grace, we saw Christ as a supremely valuable Savior and received him as our substitute sacrifice and substitute righteousness. In other words, it happened at the point of justification.”

To be very clear, Piper asserts, that in this “eternal 100% sense”, God only, and by bare promise, made certain that He would bring us to faith and actually save us. In other words God only pledged to do something. However, according to Piper this very pledge of God almighty in and of itself did not make God fully for us. God’s pledge alone did not change His mind and wrathful disposition against His elect. Piper blasphemes the very nature, love, and trustworthiness of God Himself.

Is not one’s pledge alone an act of honorable intentions? If I, as a sinner vowed and pledged to marry the woman of my affection, does this mean I’m against this woman up till the day she says “I DO”?

Piper insults and impugns the very integrity of God! But more than this, God's pledge, and Christ's death were still not enough to convince Piper that God was and is 100% for us. Or to even Justify us according to him. To Piper, it is only when God “regenerates” us that it can truly be claimed that Christ was 100% truly for us.
Piper not only confounds *root* with *fruit*, but also exalts the *fruit* as a higher and greater action of Christ the “*root*”.

**Piper's theology stinks of Rome, Augustine, and Aquinas.**

“The implication of this is that all our works, all our perseverance, all our continuing faith and obedience does not cause God to be 100% for us, but is the result of his being 100% for us.

“Paul’s logic in Romans 8:32 is that because God gave his Son to die for us therefore he will give us all things with him. That is, God will see to it that we persevere to the end not only because we are elect, but because Christ died for us and we are in Christ. That is the logic of 1 Corinthians 1:8-9: ‘[God] will sustain you to the end, guiltless in the day of our Lord Jesus Christ. God is faithful, by whom you were called into the fellowship of his Son, Jesus Christ our Lord.’ The call is mentioned as the ground of God’s faithfulness to sustain us to the end.

“Therefore, exult in the truth that God will keep you. He will get you to the end because in Christ he is 100% for you. And therefore, getting to the end does not make God to be 100% for you. It is the effect of the fact that he is already 100% for you.”

Piper, like so many other reformed Calvinists, has drunk deeply the wine of Rome. The reformers never fully discarded Augustine and Aquinas. Their cancerous seeds have grown to great proportions. Piper's thrust and strong suit is in “union and renewal”, thus fittingly should be placed in Rome.

Read some portions of Trent below and you will notice Piper agreeing in many areas. I will be more than happy to field any questions.

**Trent:**

CHAPTER X.

On the increase of Justification received.

Having, therefore, been thus justified, and made the friends and domesticis of God, advancing from virtue to virtue, they are renewed, as the Apostle says, day by day; that is, by mortifying the members of their own flesh, and by presenting them as instruments of justice unto sanctification, they, through the observance of the commandments of God and of the Church, faith co-operating with good works, increase in that justice which they have received through the grace of Christ, and are still further justified, as it is written; He that is just, let him be justified still; and again, Be not afraid to be justified even to death; and also, **Do you see that by works a man is justified, and not by faith only.** And this increase of justification holy Church begs, when she prays, "Give unto us, O
Lord, increase of faith, hope, and charity.

CHAPTER XIII.

On the gift of Perseverance.

So also as regards the gift of perseverance, of which it is written, He that shall persevere to the end, he shall be saved: -which gift cannot be derived from any other but Him, who is able to establish him who standeth that he stand perseveringly, and to restore him who falleth: -let no one herein promise himself any thing as certain with an absolute certainty; though all ought to place and repose a most firm hope in God's help. For God, unless men be themselves wanting to His grace, as he has begun the good work, so will he perfect it, working (in them) to will and to accomplish. Nevertheless, let those who think themselves to stand, take heed lest they fall, and, with fear and trembling work out their salvation, in labours, in watchings, in almsdeeds, in prayers and oblations, in fastings and chastity: for, knowing that they are born again unto a hope of glory, but not as yet unto glory, they ought to fear for the combat which yet remains with the flesh, with the world, with the devil, wherein they cannot be victorious, unless they be with God's grace, obedient to the Apostle, who says; We are debtors, not to the flesh, to live according to the flesh; for if you live according to the flesh, you shall die; but if by the spirit you mortify the deeds of the flesh, you shall live.

CANON XI. -If any one saith, that men are justified, either by the sole imputation of the justice of Christ, or by the sole remission of sins, to the exclusion of the grace and the charity which is poured forth in their hearts [regeneration] by the Holy Ghost, and is inherent in them; or even that the grace, whereby we are justified, is only the favour of God; let him be anathema.

CANON XII. -If any one saith, that justifying faith is nothing else but confidence in the divine mercy which remits sins for Christ's sake; or, that this confidence alone is that whereby we are justified; let him be anathema.

CANON XIV. -If any one saith, that man is truly absolved from his sins and justified, because that he assuredly believed himself absolved and justified; or, that no one is truly justified but he who believes himself justified; and that, by this faith alone, absolution and justification are effected; let him be anathema.

CANON XV. -If any one saith, that a man, who is born again and justified, is bound of faith to believe that he is assuredly in the number of the predestinate; let him be anathema.

CANON XVIII. -If any one saith, that the commandments of God are, even for one that is justified and constituted in grace, impossible to keep; let him be
anathema.

**CANON XX.** -If any one saith, that the man who is justified and how perfect soever, is not bound to observe the commandments of God and of the Church, but only to believe; as if indeed the Gospel were a bare and absolute promise of eternal life, without the condition of observing the commandments; let him be anathema.

**Back to Piper:**

Let's discuss Piper's heretical understanding of *“limited atonement.”*

http://www.desiringgod.org/resource-...s-of-calvinism

Piper:

“The atonement is the work of God in Christ on the cross whereby he canceled the debt of our sin, appeased his holy wrath against us, and won for us all the benefits of salvation.”

Apart from regeneration, faith, and works that flow from faith, Piper's opening statement is quite correct. But as previously discussed, this atoning work of Christ, according to Piper, was only in “one 100% sense”, a vital and necessary step [a phase] that guarantees and leads to the next step of “regeneration”. Only in regeneration, union, and a “genuine” workable faith does Piper consider the atoning work of Christ to be valid, authentic, real, and fully efficacious. Remember, according to Piper, the elect are still under the legal wrath of God, due to being dead inherently in their trespasses and sins prior to regeneration. So in Piper's schema, he synthesizes the infused/regenerate nature of man with the legal verdict. In other words, they are co-dependent with one another. He synthesizes the legal extrinsic work of Christ, [cause] with the infused fruit of regeneration [effect]. Another way of putting this is, unless God actually changes the nature of man, there can be no real, actual, and binding legal verdict of righteousness declared to the Father by Christ on behalf of His elect people. Piper blurs the distinctions between “impute-infuse” and “declare-make.”

“The death of Christ was necessary because God would not show a just regard for his glory if he swept sins under the rug with no recompense.” Agreed! “Romans 3:25-26 says that God ‘put Christ forward as a propitiation by his blood...’ This was to demonstrate God's righteousness because in his divine forbearance he had passed over former sins. It was to prove at the present time that he himself is righteous and that he justifies those who have faith in Jesus. In other words the death of Christ was necessary to vindicate the righteousness of God in justifying the ungodly by faith. It would be unrighteous to forgive sinners as though their sin were insignificant, when in fact it is an infinite insult
against the value of God’s glory. Therefore Jesus bears the curse, which was due to our sin, so that we can be justified and the righteousness of God can be vindicated.”

We must continue to remember at this point, that when Piper uses the phrase “justifying the ungodly by faith,” he really means that regeneration is the actual basis for legal justification. Not solely by an extrinsic legal imputation. Also, when he uses the word “necessary,” he means a necessary step, that leads to regeneration and thus a legal acquittal/vindication. We have already uncovered his faulty premise.

This is why it is critically important to understand how one defines his or his own terms.

A knowledgeable Roman Catholic, Lutheran, Arminian, and Calvinist will all equally state, “we are justified by Grace through faith”, while meaning and understanding this differently.

Pseudo-Christianity has been dumbed down to the point that ecumenical unity can be achieved by just agreeing to common theological words and phrases. This sickness permeates “christendumb.”

“The term ‘limited atonement’ addresses the question, ‘For whom did Christ die?’ But behind the question of the extent of the atonement lies the equally important question about the nature of the atonement. What did Christ actually achieve on the cross for those for whom he died?”

Listen very carefully as Piper builds his straw man.

“If you say that he died for every human being in the same way, then you have to define the nature of the atonement very differently than you would if you believed that Christ only died for those who actually believe.”

First of all, the Scriptures never teach Christ died for every human being. So the “same way” straw-man argument Piper starts to build falls apart immediately. There is no “same way” or even a “different way” that Christ died for every human being, as we shall see. Secondly, Christ not only died for those elect who actually are caused to believe, but also died for ALL the elect who are still unregenerate and have yet to come to faith.

“In the first case you would believe that the death of Christ did not actually save anybody; it only made all men savable. It did not actually remove God’s punitive wrath from anyone, but instead created a place where people could come and find mercy—IF they could accomplish their own new birth and bring themselves to faith without the irresistible grace of God.”
Piper now states the classical Arminian understanding of the Atonement. But what is interesting is that Piper agrees with this, except for the irresistible Grace part.

“For if Christ died for all men in the same way then he did not purchase regenerating grace for those who are saved. They must regenerate themselves and bring themselves to faith. Then and only then do they become partakers of the benefits of the cross.”

Irrelevant! Christ did not die for ALL men. So why labor over a faulty premise? But he must, due to the fact that he believes Christ died for ALL men yet in different ways.

“In other words if you believe that Christ died for all men in the same way, then the benefits of the cross cannot include the mercy by which we are brought to faith, because then all men would be brought to faith, but they aren’t. But if the mercy by which we are brought to faith (irresistible grace) is not part of what Christ purchased on the cross, then we are left to save ourselves from the bondage of sin, the hardness of heart, the blindness of corruption, and the wrath of God.”

You can see where he is going with this. Piper does not disagree that Christ died for ALL men. But argues over which manner Christ died for ALL men. Here, he bows to Amyraldianism.

Jn. 10:11 “I am the good shepherd: the good shepherd giveth his life for the sheep.”

Christ died for His sheep alone, in one manner alone. Not ALL men in two different manners.

“Therefore it becomes evident that it is not the Calvinist who limits the atonement. It is the Arminian, because he denies that the atoning death of Christ accomplishes what we most desperately need—namely, salvation from the condition of deadness and hardness and blindness under the wrath of God. The Arminian limits the nature and value and effectiveness of the atonement so that he can say that it was accomplished even for those who die in unbelief and are condemned. In order to say that Christ died for all men in the same way, the Arminian must limit the atonement to a powerless opportunity for men to save themselves from their terrible plight of depravity.”

This is the pot calling the kettle black again. Piper and Arminians are both wrong. Two wrongs don’t make a right. The issue and debate is not that of Free will vs Irresistible Grace. Since Piper, Amyraut, Arminians, Catholicism, and now the majority of Calvinists all agree [although falsely] that Christ died for ALL men, they are now forced to make this an issue. The real issue is, “did Christ die for...
ALL men period??” The answer is NO!!! So let's not get entangled over meaningless debates as to how a reprobate whom Christ [allegedly] died for can supposedly save himself without irresistible Grace.

“On the other hand we do not limit the power and effectiveness of the atonement. We simply say that in the cross God had in view the actual redemption of his children.”

Had in view the actual redemption?? Or did he actually accomplish redemption when Christ said, “It is finished?”

“And we affirm that when Christ died for these, he did not just create the opportunity for them to save themselves, but really purchased for them all that was necessary to get them saved, including the grace of regeneration and the gift of faith.”

Again, his argument is pointless because his heretical premise is faulty. His argument is just as pointless as Lutherans, Anglicans, some Calvinists, Papists and Orthodox arguing over the issue of 7 Sacraments vs 2 Sacraments, when in Scriptural fact there are NO Sacraments.

Arminians:  

Christ died for ALL men in the same way.  

Christ created opportunity for all men to save themselves.  

Christ purchased all that was necessary to get them saved except irresistible Grace.  

Piper:  

Christ died for ALL men in different ways.  

Christ only guaranteed that He would eventually Justify them.  

Christ purchased all that was necessary to achieve regeneration/Justification including the Grace of regeneration and the gift of faith.  

Both the above scenarios are wrong! And because Piper is wrong he must sink further into error, as we shall see.

“We do not deny that all men are the intended beneficiaries of the cross in some sense. 1 Timothy 4:10 says that Christ is ‘the Savior of all men, especially of those who believe.’ What we deny is that all men are intended as the beneficiaries of the death of Christ in the same way. All of God's mercy toward
unbelievers—from the rising sun (Matthew 5:45) to the worldwide preaching of the gospel (John 3:16)—is made possible because of the cross.”

In what way [sense] are the reprobate intended beneficiaries of the Cross, Mr. Piper?

The Scriptures deny that ALL men are intended as beneficiaries of the death of Christ. Only the elect are intended as beneficiaries of the cross. So Piper's “same way or different way” arguments are moot.

Piper strongly, though incorrectly, feels that the Scriptures portray a God that sent His only begotten Son to the Cross to accomplish mercy and grace for ALL men, elect and reprobate. Although this alleged mercy and grace [for all men] won by Christ is dispensed in different ways and not the same way. Piper strongly feels there is a kind of mercy and grace exhibited to the reprobate.

“This is the implication of Romans 3:25 where the cross is presented as the basis of God's righteousness in passing over sins. Every breath that an unbeliever takes is an act of God's mercy withholding judgment (Romans 2:4). Every time the gospel is preached to unbelievers it is the mercy of God that gives this opportunity for salvation.”

Piper, to this point, never once mentioned “election and reprobation”. In an article such as this, it is crucial to at least mention it. In fact, it is foundational! Wouldn't you think so? It's a little fuzzy to just state “unbeliever” generically.

Paul, in Romans, clearly distinguishes the differences between unbelieving elect and reprobate peoples. Piper, in using Romans, fails to do so, attempting to reinforce his faulty case. Piper equates “passing over sins” with “withholding judgment.” This is very correct if we understand this as Paul the Apostle meant it, rather than how Piper wants Paul to mean it, as we will clarify.

But more importantly, Piper does not understand the thrust of Paul’s teachings in Romans chapters 2 and 3.

Paul addresses and contrasts the relational differences between “old covenant” Jews and Gentiles during the Mosaic administration, and how this relationship between Jew and Gentile changed in the “new covenant”.

Prior to Christ arriving and dying on the cross for the sins of His elect people alone, this “passing over sins,” for the Old Testament elect only, was still grounded in Christ, but only pre-figured [typified] in the blood of bulls and goats. By doing this, God withheld His judgment and the destruction of National Mosaic Israel who were only a “schoolmaster” for the elect Jews.
When Christ, the awaited Messiah of Israel arrived, died, and arose, He firmly dealt with the “sin issue” once and for all by His own historical death. There is NOW no more “passing over sins” in the typical sense. Also, by virtue of the Cross, the judgment, fully earned and deserved by reprobate Israel, is no longer “withheld” but was carried out. Christ [true Israel] is Righteous, and unbelieving reprobate National Israel is guilty. Hence the destruction of National Israel, the schoolmaster, and the Mosaic administration were all put to an end.

Ro. 3:24-26 “24 being justified freely by his grace through the redemption that is in Christ Jesus: 25 whom God set forth to be a propitiation, through faith, in his blood, to show his righteousness because of the passing over of the sins done aforetime, in the forbearance of God; 26 for the showing, I say, of his righteousness at this present season: that he might himself be just, and the justifier of him that hath faith in Jesus.”

Romans 3:25 has been fulfilled in Christ, as stated in verse 26 “this present season.” Piper wrenches verse 25 out of its historical context to suit his own faulty understanding of the atonement and heretical “Fullerite” common grace theory.

Ro. 3:25 has no further post-Cross application. However, Piper continues to apply this verse to All men in a New Testament application. This is clearly eisegesis on his part, as we shall see in his next statement.

“Whence does this mercy flow to sinners? How is God just to withhold judgment from sinners who deserve to be immediately cast into hell? The answer is that Christ's death so clearly demonstrates God's just abhorrence of sin that he is free to treat the world with mercy without compromising his righteousness. In this sense Christ is the savior of all men.”

For Piper to support his errant view of the Salvific work of Christ, he must expand and make the Cross mean something that is not intended.

Because God does not immediately cast a reprobate into hell, but postpones hell till the consummation of all things, Piper sees this as an act of God's mercy, and salvific in one sense.

Example: A man is indicted for first-degree murder. After the trial, the jury finds this man guilty and gives him the death sentence. The man goes to jail and is on death row for 20 years. Finally, the man is put to death.

According to Piper, he sees this 20 year stay of execution as an act of mercy. But would not true, gracious, saving mercy free this man completely from the start? No jail, and no death sentence?
Example: Christ cursed the fig tree [National Israel], however the final destruction of that wicked nation did not occur till 70 AD. From the Cross to 70 AD, are we to understand this postponement as an act of mercy and Grace on God’s part?

Piper interjects “immediacy” or the lack thereof, as somehow a gracious act of mercy on God's part. The whole concept of “immediacy” or the lack thereof is totally irrelevant.

Since Piper believes Christ died for all men, elect and reprobate, let’s consider how his faulty view of grace, mercy, Justification, and “immediacy” apply to the Elect now.

Because God does not immediately cast the unbelieving elect into hell due to His wrath still being upon them [according to Piper], but postpones His wrath until they actually are regenerated and believe, Piper see this as an act of God's mercy, and salvific in the greater sense. But this understanding is wrong also, for the wrath of God was already appeased toward the unbelieving elect as a result of the cross.

"But he is especially the Savior of those who believe. He did not die for all men in the same sense. The intention of the death of Christ for the children of God was that it purchase far more than the rising sun and the opportunity to be saved. The death of Christ actually saves from ALL evil those for whom Christ died 'especially'."

Piper wants to have it both ways. He wants Christ to die for ALL men. SOME in one way, and SOME in another way. Truly paradoxical.

"There are many Scriptures which say that the death of Christ was designed for the salvation of God's people, not for every individual." Agreed!

Piper should not have introduced the incorrect theories of Arminius and Amyraut into the equation in the first place. Below he starts to become clearer but still not totally correct.

For example:

“John 10:15, 'I lay down my life for the sheep.' The sheep of Christ are those whom the Father draws to the Son. 'You do not believe, because you do not belong to my sheep.' Notice: being a sheep enables you to become a believer, not vice versa. So the sheep for whom Christ dies are the ones chosen by the Father to give to the Son.

"In John 17:6,9,19 Jesus prays, 'I have manifested Thy name to the men whom Thou gavest me out of the world; Thine they were, and Thou gavest them to
me...I am praying for them; I am not praying for the world but for those whom Thou hast given me, for they are thine...And for their sake I consecrate myself, that they also may be consecrated in truth.' The consecration in view here is the death of Jesus which he is about to undergo. His death and his intercession are uniquely for his disciples, not for the world in general.

"John 11:51-52, 'Caiaphas] being high priest that year prophesied that Jesus should die for the nation, and not for the nation only, but to gather into one the children of God who are scattered abroad.' There are children of God scattered throughout the world. These are the sheep. These are the ones the Father will draw to the Son. Jesus died to gather these people into one. The point is the same as John 10:15-16, 'I lay down my life for the sheep. And I have other sheep that are not of this fold; I must bring them also, and they will heed my voice.' Christ died for his sheep, that is, for the children of God.

"Revelation 5:9, 'Worthy art Thou to take the scroll and to open its seals, for Thou wast slain and by Thy blood didst ransom men for God from every tribe and tongue and people and nation.' In accordance with John 10:16 John does not say that the death of Christ ransomed all men but that it ransomed men from all the tribes of the world.

"This is the way we understand texts like 1 John 2:2 which says, 'He is the propitiation for our sins, and not for ours only but also for the sins of the whole world.' This does not mean that Christ died with the intention to appease the wrath of God for every person in the world, but that the 'sheep,' 'the children of God' scattered throughout the whole world, 'from every tongue and tribe and people and nation' are intended by the propitiation of Christ. In fact the grammatical parallel between John 11:51-52 and 1 John 2:2 is so close it is difficult to escape the conviction that the same thing is intended by John in both verses.

"John 11:51-52, 'He prophesied that Jesus should die for the nation, and not for the nation only, but to gather into one the children of God who are scattered abroad.'

"1 John 2:2, 'He is the propitiation for our sins, and not for ours only but also for the sins of the whole world.' The 'whole world' refers to the children of God scattered throughout the whole world.

"If 'the whole world' referred to every individual in the world, we would be forced to say that John is teaching that all people will be saved, which he does not believe (Revelation 14:9-11). The reason we would be forced to say this is that the term propitiation refers to a real removal of wrath from sinners. When God's wrath against a sinner is propitiated, it is removed from that sinner. And the result is that all God's power now flows in the service of his mercy, with the result that nothing can stop him from saving that sinner.
“Propitiated sins cannot be punished. Otherwise propitiation loses its meaning. Therefore if Christ is the propitiation for all the sins of every individual in the world, they cannot be punished, and must be saved. But John does not believe in such universalism (John 5:29). Therefore it is very unlikely that 1 John 2:2 teaches that Jesus is the propitiation of every person in the world. Mark 10:45, in accord with Revelation 5:9, does not say that Jesus came to ransom all men. It says, ‘For the Son of man also came not to be served but to serve, and to give his life as a ransom for many.’

“Similarly in Matthew 26:28 Jesus says, ‘This is my blood of the covenant, which is poured out for many for the forgiveness of sins.’ Hebrews 9:28, ‘So Christ, having been offered once to bear the sins of many, will appear a second time, not to deal with sin but to save those who are eagerly waiting for him.’ (See also 13:20; Isaiah 53:11-12.)

“One of the clearest passages on the intention of the death of Christ is Ephesians 5:25-27. Here Paul not only says that the intended beneficiary of the death of Christ is the Church, but also that the intended effect of the death of Christ is the sanctification and glorification of the church. This is the truth we want very much to preserve: that the cross was not intended to give all men the opportunity to save themselves, but was intended to actually save the church.

“Paul says, ‘Christ loved the church and gave himself up for her, that he might sanctify her, having cleansed her by the washing of water with the word, that he might present the church to himself in splendor.’

“Similarly in Titus 2:14 Paul describes the purpose of Christ's death like this: ‘He gave himself for us to redeem us from all iniquity and to purify for himself a people of his own who are zealous for good deeds.’ If Paul were an Arminian would he not have said, ‘He gave himself to redeem all men from iniquity and purify all men for himself’? But Paul says that the design of the atonement is to purify for Christ a people out from the world. This is just what John said in John 10:15; 11:51f; and Revelation 5:9.

“One of the most crucial texts on this issue is Romans 8:32. It is one of the most precious promises for God's people in all the Bible. Paul says, ‘He who did not spare his own Son but gave him up for us all, will he not also give us all things with him?’

“The crucial thing to see here is how Paul bases the certainty of our inheritance on the death of Christ. He says, ‘God will most certainly give you all things because he did not spare his own Son but gave him up for you.’ What becomes of this precious argument if Christ is given for those who do not in fact receive all things but instead are lost? The argument vanishes.
“If God gave his own Son for unbelievers who in the end are lost, then he cannot say that the giving of the Son guarantees ‘all things’ for the those for whom he died. But this is what he does say! If God gave his Son for you, then he most certainly will give you all things. The structure of Paul's thought here is simply destroyed by introducing the idea that Christ died for all men in the same way.”

After all the truthful things he stated, starting from his example, why must he maintain the dichotomy of “same way and different way”? He does this to continue his heresy that Christ died for ALL men, although in different ways. You see, by doing this he takes away, softens, and minimizes the harshness of Paul's polemic on “Christ’s perfect love for the elect” in contrast to “Christ's perfect hatred for the reprobate.”

“We can conclude this section with the following summary argument. Which of these statements is true?

1. Christ died for some of the sins of all men.
2. Christ died for all the sins of some men. True!
3. Christ died for all the sins of all men.

“No one says that the first is true, for then all would be lost because of the sins that Christ did not die for. The only way to be saved from sin is for Christ to cover it with his blood.

“The third statement is what the Arminians would say. Christ died for all the sins of all men. But then why are not all saved? They answer, Because some do not believe. But is this unbelief not one of the sins for which Christ died? If they say yes, then why is it not covered by the blood of Jesus and all unbelievers saved? If they say no (unbelief is not a sin that Christ has died for) then they must say that men can be saved without having all their sins atoned for by Jesus, or they must join us in affirming statement number two: Christ died for all the sins of some men. That is, he died for the unbelief of the elect so that God's punitive wrath is appeased toward them and his grace is free to draw them irresistibly out of darkness into his marvelous light.”

Hold on a minute, where is number 4?

4. Christ died and loved all men yet in different ways.

Piper’s common grace view of limited atonement teaches there is a type of grace and mercy exhibited toward the reprobates. In another video series he states the following:

“We may, therefore, say to every human being, God loves you. And this is how
he loves you: He gave his Son to die, so that if you would believe, your sins would be forgiven and you would have eternal life.

“That is what the love of God means and promises and does in John 3:16. And that's why this verse has been so amazingly blessed of God over the centuries in bringing people to Christ and to salvation. It expresses what we love to call the free offer of the gospel. There are no limits to this offer: It goes out to all people of every ethnic group and every age and every socio-economic category and, best of all, to every degree of sinner from the bad to the worst. God so loved the world, that he gave his only Son, that whoever indiscriminate and universal believes in him should not perish but have eternal life.”

Summary:

In his overall view of justification and the atonement, he believes that Christ died potentially for every human being [elect and reprobate]. These, to Piper, must only exercise faith to receive it. However, Christ only purchased irresistible grace for the elect, therefore they are the only ones who can exercise faith at the point of regeneration and thus at this point become Justified. This is Piper!

By doing this, he blends together tenets of Arminias, Amyraut, and Augustine/Trent. To say that Christ died “potentially” for each and every individual seems to kowtow to those who really don't accept the Pauline view of limited atonement.

For Piper to say that Christ died for all men, he traps himself by inferring that for those who are in hell, Christ's death had no power to save them. Further, he also infers that something else other than the death of Christ is necessary. Something aside from the death of Christ that justifies, i.e. man's regenerated will as an example.

It is a heretical position if Christ's death alone does not guarantee a saving result. But Piper insists Christ died for all men, yet in different ways. With Piper, he affirms some sort of general favor, grace, and love for the reprobate due to the Cross.

To Piper, Christ loves all men, but loves the elect more, inferring Christ sent to hell those whom he loved less.

Ro. 9:22 “What if God, willing to shew his wrath, and to make his power known, endured with much longsuffering the vessels of wrath fitted to destruction.”

Because God does not immediately cast a reprobate in hell, but postpones hell till the consummation of all things, Piper sees this extension of earthly life as an act of God's mercy in one sense, thus forcing Paul the apostle to contradict
himself!!!

How is it mercy when the very gospel of Jesus Christ will condemn a lost man's soul if he is not one of the elect?

How is wallowing in a prolonged life of sin, alienation from the very life giving presence of the Holy Spirit, piling up debt for sins committed in one's lifetime, and eventually thrown into hell, an act of “mercy”, Mr. Piper?

We must be very careful when speaking of such things as acts of “mercy” and “grace” when in reality they are not that at all.

Piper's overall theology is so steeped in contradiction and false premises, that to believe it, reason and logic must be thrown out the window.

Is an earthly and carnal action granted on God's part considered mercy, as in the shining of the sun, breathing the air, enjoying good health, having financial prosperity, etc.? But even if one were to express that God is showing a disposition of mercy, how can one conclude that this type of mercy is grounded in the death of Christ as Piper proclaims?? That would be doubly ridiculous!

Any generalization of the death of Christ only serves to undermine the particularity of the Cross and Grace. Why do you think the health-wealth-and prosperity false gospel is popular today?

In this final section dealing with false prophet John Piper, we will quote a few more of his statements [in blue] along with some from his ecumenical friend, R.C. Sproul.

John Piper's neo-Calvinism is rapidly joining the ranks of the apostate worldwide ecumenical movement. His false gospel represents and is in harmony with modern day pseudo-Christian movements who have re-defined the Gospel according to Rome. The role of good works are given so much attention in the life of the [alleged] believer, that these good works are made into a condition that now must be fulfilled to attain “final salvation.”

Through centuries of Jesuit counter-reformation tactics, the Pauline gospel of imputed, alien, extrinsic, and forensic Justification by Christ alone is all but missing in the majority of visible institutional Christianity. In fact, it is now vilified by most!

Those of us who stand our ground and maintain the true gospel of Jesus Christ, are given the same treatment as the Council of Trent give us. Not only by Papists, but the whole of apostate Christendom.

Terms like: “Initial salvation”, “final salvation”, “lordship salvation”, “seeker
sensitive”, “purpose driven”, “federal vision”, “assurance by church membership and good works”, and many other catch phrases such as these only serve to undermine and confound the true Gospel.

Piper:

“How can we be sure that our sins are forgiven and that we will be safe in the judgment?”

“The first time he came to deal with sin. The second time he is coming, not to deal with sin, but to save us from the wrath of God's judgment.”

“The first time he came to purchase our salvation by bearing our sins. The second time he comes to apply our salvation by shielding us from the wrath of God.”

Piper guts the present tense reality and finished work of the gospel, and places all man's hopes in the quality of his Christian performance and experience. Piper's teachings are so antithetical to the gospel that it is fully right to expose this heretic.

Jn. 5:24 “Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that heareth my word, and believeth on him that sent me, hath everlasting life, and shall not come into condemnation; but is passed from death unto life.”

Jn 3:36 “He that believeth on the Son hath everlasting life: and he that believeth not the Son shall not see life; but the wrath of God abideth on him.”

We who trust Christ THROUGH FAITH ALONE, NO WORKS whatsoever, HATH EVERLASTING LIFE!

We do not have to wait till Christ's second coming for Him to shield us from His wrath. The elect, by virtue of the cross, were NEVER under the wrath of God! Now that's assurance!

Piper also presents a “god” who is in conflict with his own desires. Read his “Two Wills” theory.

http://www.desiringgod.org/resource-...o-wills-in-god

No my friends, it is not God who is confused, but Piper.

Piper struggles in his attempt to reconcile Paul and James, but shows his true lack of knowledge when it comes to the doctrine of Justification.
“So when Paul renounces ‘justification by works’ he renounces the view that anything we do along with faith is credited to us as righteousness. Only faith obtains the verdict, not guilty, when we become Christians. Works of any kind are not acceptable in the moment of initial justification. But when James affirms ‘justification by works’ he means that works are absolutely necessary in the ongoing life of a Christian to confirm and prove the reality of the faith which justifies.”

Piper teaches a “Process Justification”.

Step 1. Christ's death was a potential Justification.
Step 2. Regeneration and faith toward Christ is an initial Justification.
Step 3. Faith + works confirm and prove your initial justification, and are necessary for your final Justification.

This is the heart of Trent. Christ’s work for us is not enough. To Rome and Piper, Justification is Christ’s work for us + Christ's work in us. Only after the sum total of one’s life is considered, [if he performs well enough] can God's wrath be removed at his second coming.

CANON XI. -If any one saith, that men are justified, either by the sole imputation of the justice of Christ, or by the sole remission of sins, to the exclusion of the grace and the charity which is poured forth in their hearts [regeneration] by the Holy Ghost, and is inherent in them; or even that the grace, whereby we are justified, is only the favour of God; let him be anathema.

CANON XII. -If any one saith, that justifying faith is nothing else but confidence in the divine mercy which remits sins for Christ's sake; or, that this confidence alone is that whereby we are justified; let him be anathema.

CANON XIV. -If any one saith, that man is truly absolved from his sins and justified, because that he assuredly believed himself absolved and justified; or, that no one is truly justified but he who believes himself justified; and that, by this faith alone, absolution and justification are effected; let him be anathema.

Rome and her Protestant daughters have destroyed assurance.

Piper:

"There is no doubt that Jesus saw some measure of real, lived-out obedience to the will of God as necessary for final salvation." (Piper, What Jesus Demands from the World p. 160).
Notice the phrase, *final salvation*? But let’s explore the phrase, “some measure”.

If the contingent factor that determines my *final salvation* is “some alleged *measure of real, lived-out, obedience to the will of God,*” according to Piper, then I want to inquire as to *how much* obedience is necessary?

Any standard recipe gives the proper amounts needed to bake a cake. For example: 3 eggs, 2 cups of flour, 2 tsp. of vanilla etc., etc. If I do not follow the proper *measures*, I will screw up the cake. But more importantly, if these false prophets do not fully explain the proper measure of good works that are necessary, I might be in danger of screwing up my final salvation.

So if my “*measure*” of obedience is necessary for final salvation, how much do I need? Do I need 2 cups of obedience? Or only 1 cup of obedience? Do I need 3 days of feeding the poor, or 6 days of feeding the poor? Do I need 15 days of loving my fellow man? Or 265 days? And so on, and so forth. What exactly does Piper mean by “*some measure*”? How can I, as a saint/sinner, ever know exactly if I have produced the acceptable *measure* of good works that are necessary for my “*final salvation*”?

This is the prevalent evangelical Protestant mindset. Even the false prophet R. C. Sproul suggests for a person to get to heaven he must not only believe the Gospel through faith alone, but his faith must produce a *measure* of good works.

Sproul:

“True faith is always accompanied by *non-saving*, but *absolutely necessary* works. If there are no good works, there is no true faith.” (Sproul, *Before the Face of God Book Four*, p. 432).

How can good works be both *"non-saving"* and *"absolutely necessary"* at the same time?

These false prophets have a way with words that are meant to confuse the mind.
If some measure [which they never define], of good works are absolutely necessary for final salvation, as Piper and Sproul suggest, does that not make GOOD WORKS a conditional factor to determine final salvation?

Faith + Works = Final Salvation/Justification

Sproul and Piper never provide a quantifiable way to measure how many good works are necessary for a person to be assured that he is saved. Sproul and Piper state that “good works are absolutely necessary” as “proof” that one is a Christian (Sproul, Before the Face of God Book Three, p. 86), but they never give the precise measurements needed, not only for assurance and proof, but to qualify for “final salvation”!

Contrary to these false assertions, one’s assurance of justification/salvation, whether initial or final [as falsely taught by these men], is not based upon his own good works, or any measure thereof.

It is “not by works of righteousness which we have done, but according to His mercy that He saved us.” (Tit. 3:5)

Assurance of eternal salvation is based solely upon the imputed righteousness of Jesus Christ alone. If I focus upon my good works as the basis for assurance and final justification, attempting to find some arbitrary measure, I will doubt my salvation every day because I'm looking at me and not Christ alone.

When I stumble, I have assurance; when I fail, I have assurance; whether I have 1 cup of good works or 2 cups of good works, I can be assured. Through faith alone in Christ alone, I am assured.

“For by grace are you saved through faith, and that not of yourselves, it is the gift of God. Not of works, lest any man should boast.” (Ep. 2:8-9)

If a measure of good works is necessary for final eternal salvation, according to Sproul and Piper, than the best we can ever hope for is a “measure of assurance” and not “full assurance.”

100% assurance of salvation is through faith alone in Christ alone! If one looks inward in the least bit, he denies the Gospel!

http://limerickreformed.com/index.php...eous&Itemid=12
http://www.trinityfoundation.org/PDF/197a-PiedPiper.pdf
http://www.trinityfoundation.org/journal.php?id=113
Piper and the rest of these neo-Calvinists feel no shame endorsing other heretics. They even go so far as to let some of them stand behind the pulpit and spew out their “purpose driven”, “federal vision” nonsense. Such as:

Piper and Jim Wallace:

![Image of Piper and Jim Wallace](http://apprising.org/2012/01/07/what...-be-delighted/)

Piper and Rick Warren:

![Image of Piper and Rick Warren](http://www.trinityfoundation.org/horror_show.php?id=35)
Piper and Doug Wilson:

http://itodyaso.wordpress.com/2010/0...urpose-driven/
http://www.purposedrivel.com/2010/04...eper-hole.html
http://www.takeheed.net/Take_Heed_20...per_invite.htm

The list can go on forever. This is not some “guilt by association” tactic. It is far worse! Piper as a pastor is admonished in Scripture to protect the flock from ravenous wolves. Not only is he a wolf, but also he unleashes the hounds of hell upon his flock. In the meantime, that Pope sitting in the chair of Peter can now rest assured that he is one among many anti-Christ.
Chapter 34
False Prophets – Protestant – John MacArthur

False Prophet: John MacArthur: Neo-Calvinist, Neo-Legalist, Closet Ecumenist, Semi-Arminianist

Among many topics that can be discussed pertaining to John MacArthur’s teachings, we will only address a few; namely, his views on Election and Reprobation, Justification, and Lordship Salvation.

Like John Piper and RC Sproul, MacArthur cannot fathom a God who hates individuals. Oh, God hates evil works and ways, but not individuals.

It is highly improbable to build 10,000 member churches teaching a God who loves one group and hates another group. That would break every rule of “seeker sensitivism”. Also, it would be political suicide, oops! I mean ecclesiastical suicide, for a pastor, minister, teacher, or preacher to state such things. Unregenerate mankind does not want to hear of a “God” like that.

MacArthur’s statements in blue:

http://www.gty.org/resources/questions/QA184

Question:
There are some [I, Nick, am one of the some] who teach that God loves only His elect and hates the non-elect. Please comment.

MacArthur:

“The fact that some sinners are not elected to salvation is no proof that
God’s attitude toward them is utterly devoid of sincere love. We know from Scripture that God is compassionate, kind, generous, and good even to the most stubborn sinners. Who can deny that these mercies flow out of God’s boundless love? Yet it is evident that they are showered even on unrepentant sinners.

No mistake about it. MacArthur (in context) states that 1. God exhibits a sincere love for the reprobate, and 2. He calls this sincere love “mercies” that are showered on the reprobate. By stating this, he breaks his own cardinal rule. According to MacArthur, RC Sproul, Piper, and the rest of these neo-Calvinist (closet Arminians), “the elect receive mercy while the reprobate receive justice.”

How, then, can the reprobate be showered with mercy and justice at the same time?? The only way for them to reconcile this contradiction is to make distinctions within love and mercy. In other words, they define different types of love and different types of mercies. However, the question pertains to elect and reprobate. He avoids clarifying this distinction as much as possible in this article.

MacArthur: “I want to acknowledge, however, that explaining God’s love toward the reprobate is not as simple as most modern evangelicals want to make it.”

Of course it is not a simple task. It’s not even a hard task. It is an impossible task! But in today’s Christendom, like their whoring predecessors, they continue to misrepresent God, and totally misrepresent the Holy Spirit-inspired Paul the apostle.

Since MacArthur does not tell us who the “modern evangelicals” are, let’s examine a few different strains of thought. Through reading plenty of MacArthur, I believe he is referring mainly to Arminian evangelicals.

**Arminians:** God loves and died for all men equally. God desires all men to be in heaven by accepting Christ.

**Neo-Calvinists and Lutherans:** God loves all men, but in different ways. Some others say God loves and died for all men however with different results.

**Scripture:** God loves the elect and hates the reprobate. Or, God does not, and has never hated the elect and God does not, and has never loved the reprobate.

**MacArthur:** “So there is a true and real sense in which Scripture teaches that God hates the wicked.”

You will notice that MacArthur is very clever in his wording. He does not distinguish between elect and reprobate, which he should have done in view of the question raised. He just states God hates the wicked. By doing this he can maintain the faulty idea of God’s wrathful disposition toward both unbelieving
elect and reprobate.

MacArthur: “So an important distinction must be made. God loves believers with a particular love. It is a family love, the ultimate love of an eternal Father for His children. It is the consummate love of a Bridegroom for His bride. It is an eternal love that guarantees their salvation from sin and its ghastly penalty. That special love is reserved for believers alone.”

Again MacArthur does not distinguish elect from reprobate, which of course appeals to Arminians. He just states “believers”. The love, he states, that God exhibits toward these believers is correct, no doubt.

But what about unbelievers? Does God love unbelievers with that same salvific, particular, and special love?

This is the million-dollar question.

If the unbelievers are the unregenerate, unbelieving, and maybe not born yet elect, then yes, God loves them!!

Ro. 9:11-16 “11 for the children being not yet born, neither having done anything good or bad, that the purpose of God according to election might stand, not of works, but of him that calleth, 12 it was said unto her, The elder shall serve the younger. 13 Even as it is written, Jacob I loved, but Esau I hated. 14 What shall we say then? Is there unrighteousness with God? God forbid. 15 For he saith to Moses, I will have mercy on whom I have mercy, and I will have compassion on whom I have compassion. 16 So then it is not of him that willeth, nor of him that runneth, but of God that hath mercy.”

This is Paul!! No child is a believer if he is not yet born. Nor hath he done anything good or bad. However, that is totally irrelevant in God’s purpose in election. God is not dependent on the actions and outcomes of creatures both elect and reprobate, to base any determination. God determined to love the elect and hate the reprobate from eternity. And in all this, God is Righteous!!!!!!!

Paul uses Jacob and Esau as an example of election and reprobation that applies to all humanity.

Elect Jacob is: Loved, shown mercy and compassion.

Non-elect reprobate Esau is: Hated, not shown mercy, and hardened.

18 “So then he hath mercy on whom he will, and whom he will be hardeneth.”
MacArthur: “However, limiting this saving, everlasting love to His chosen ones does not render God's compassion, mercy, goodness, and love for the rest of mankind insincere or meaningless.”

What?? How could MacArthur ever derive that God exhibits compassion, mercy, goodness, and love for reprobate mankind? MacArthur misrepresents Paul's clear teaching. Because MacArthur and others of his ilk teach this way they becomes the ones who reply [disagree] against God without them ever understanding their own plight.

MacArthur thinks that God loved Jacob in a special way. And loved Esau in a sincere, meaningful, but less special way. MacArthur does not deny God's sovereignty in election, but he denies God's sovereignty in Reprobation. Also he misrepresents God's disposition toward the reprobate.

13 “Even as it is written, Jacob I loved, but Esau I hated.”

Here is what MacArthur has to say about this:

MacArthur: “With regard to Esau, I say, nowhere in Genesis does it say that God hated Esau, it doesn’t say anywhere that he hated Esau. It was only after Esau had chosen sin and abandoned God for many, many years, over a thousand years before God would look back and say 'Esau have I hated.' By that time it was clear to all where Esau stood. So once the sinner is inexorably, and finally identified with his sin, then the sinner feels the hatred of God" (Tape GC-70-11).

How awful! Is that what Paul teaches? Paul states that God made a determination prior to the children ever being born and without any consideration of their good or bad works.

Ro. 9:20-24 “20 Nay but, O man, who art thou that repliest against God? Shall the thing formed say to him that formed it, Why didst thou make me thus? 21 Or hath not the potter a right over the clay, from the same lump to make one part a vessel unto honor, and another unto dishonor? 22 What if God, willing to show his wrath, and to make his power known, endured with much longsuffering vessels of wrath fitted unto destruction: 23 and that he might make known the riches of his glory upon vessels of mercy, which he afore prepared unto glory, 24 even us, whom he also called, not from the Jews only, but also from the Gentiles?"  
The reprobate was hated and fashioned by God to be a vessel of dishonor and fitted for destruction according to Paul the apostle. How then can these detrimental actions by God be viewed as acts of compassion, mercy, goodness, and love for the rest of mankind?
There is nothing offensive in God hating a man after he has lived out his sinful life. Reprobation is one of the most offensive and hated truths revealed in the Word of God; that God would love or hate a man before he comes into the world. Because this truth of God’s sovereignty in regards to election and reprobation is so offensive to the carnal mind and MacArthur, the Holy Spirit inspiring the apostle taught one premise upon another throughout Romans 9 to further establish this truth. The whole ground and basis in regards to election or reprobation is not in man or in man’s actions, but in God Almighty who from the same (unfallen) lump maketh one vessel unto honor and another unto dishonor; and hath mercy on whom He will, and hardeneth whom He will.

MacArthur: “When God *invites sinners to repent and receive forgiveness* (Isa. 1:18; Matt. 11:28-30), *His pleading* is from a sincere heart of genuine love. ‘As I live!’ declares the Lord God, ‘I take no pleasure in the death of the wicked, but rather that the wicked turn from his way and live. Turn back, turn back from your evil ways! Why then will you die, O house of Israel?’ (Ezek. 33:11). Clearly God does love even those who spurn His tender mercy, but it is a different quality of love, and different in degree from His love for His own.”

This is typical Arminian language with a pinch of neo-Calvinism to spice it up. According to MacArthur: 1. God invites and pleads with all men, elect and reprobate, to accept Christ from a sincere heart of genuine love. 2. Although this alleged love is different in quality and degree of effectiveness, nonetheless it is still the love of God and not hatred toward the reprobate.

It is pure speculation for MacArthur to derive from Ezekiel 33:11 that God loves the wicked, just because God states He does not take pleasure in the death of the wicked. The pleasure of God is talked about in many ways in both the Old and New Testaments. Also, there are different Hebrew and Greek words translated “pleasure”. “Pleasure” can refer to emotions, will, desires, and attitudes. God still hated (not loved) wicked reprobate Esau, even if He did not take pleasure in doing so. We should never base doctrine by the standards of our sinful humanistic emotions, and even more so, we should not try to fit God’s emotions with our own, but with clear Scriptural assertions and inferences rightly understood. Who can fully know and understand the infinite mind of God, let alone His emotions?

Ps. 73: “1 Truly God is good to Israel, even to such as are of a clean heart. 2 But as for me, my feet were almost gone; my steps had well nigh slipped. 3 For I was envious at the foolish, when I saw the prosperity of the wicked. 4 For there are no bands in their death: but their strength is firm. 5 They are not in trouble as other men; neither are they plagued like other men. 6 Therefore pride compasseth them about as a chain; violence covereth them as a garment. 7 Their eyes stand out with fatness: they have more than heart could wish. 8 They are corrupt, and speak wickedly concerning oppression: they speak loftily. 9 They set their mouth against the heavens, and their tongue walketh through the

---

386
Brother David was perplexed in his heart as to why the wicked were prospering in this world and he himself was under constant duress. It’s a good thing David did not seek out men like Piper, Sproul, MacArthur, and the majority of men who claim God loves everyone.

False prophets of today would answer “Clearly God does love even those who spurn His tender mercy, but it is a different quality of love, and different in degree from His love for His own.”

But brother David went into the sanctuary of God where God Himself gave Him the truth. The truth is that God really does not love the reprobate. Their health, wealth, and prosperity, was given to them as a deception. It was their slippery place/slope so they should fall and break their own neck. God all the while had determined their destruction and desolation. But Piper, Sproul, MacArthur and the rest of these false messengers insist God loves them.

**Lordship Salvation**

Let’s look into MacArthur’s teaching on “Lordship Salvation”. What are the main issues in this whole “Lordship” squabble? I’ll try to break this down a bit as to what I perceive the real, relevant, underlying issues are. Then we can elaborate on them.
Before doing so, let me offer a little background. I have been contending for the past 25 years or more that mainstream, non-Roman Catholic, Evangelical, Pentecostal/Charismatic and most Reformed branches of Protestantism are teaching variants of Tridentine (Augustine/Aquinas) Soteriology. However, these variants still reflect a core emphasis on the subjective moral inner renewal of man. This Protestant subjective emphasis today has evolved to even greater proportions of Roman error in that renewal, and in that which it produces: “a measure”, or “some measure” of (commitment, obedience, and perseverance) are now required for an alleged “final justification”. This differs with Rome in degree only, not in essence. Both are incorrect. As long as something “in man” becomes a determining factor in God’s mind to acquit that man, then Forensic, Judicial, and Extrinsic Justification is shattered and made void.

Let’s continue.

MacArthur: “The saved are justified by grace through faith in Christ alone.” Does this statement by MacArthur accurately reflect the Pauline view? NO! He took the time to add “alone” after Christ, but left it out after “grace” and “faith”. Why would he do that??

Rome and the devil hate the concept of “faith alone” directed and relying solely on the imputed justice of Christ alone. Likewise, within the “Lordship Camp”, they are vilifying those who contend for “faith alone” without works for their Justification.

So let’s get to the heart of the matter and the real disagreements, starting with a brief examination of Tridentine soteriology. This is crucial to our understanding.

CANON IX. - If any one saith, that by faith alone the impious is justified; in such wise as to mean, that nothing else is required to co-operate in order to the obtaining the grace of Justification, and that it is not in any way necessary, that he be prepared and disposed by the movement of his own will; let him be anathema.

To Rome and the Lordship crowd, faith alone is not enough. They both demand that something else is required in order to attain final justification, such as a measurable level of post regenerative commitment, obedience, conduct and perseverance.

CANON X. - [If any one saith, that men are just without the justice of Christ,... whereby He merited for us to be justified;... [or that it is by that justice itself that they are formally just;] let him be anathema.

There are three parts to this canon, which I have bracketed. Rome and the Lordship camp despise most vehemently the third bracket. They despise the very
idea that an extrinsic, alien justice in and of itself declares the unregenerate, unbelieving, filthy, rotten, depraved, elect sinner righteous and not subject to the wrath of God.

CANON XI. - If any one saith, that men are justified, either by the sole imputation of the justice of Christ, or by the sole remission of sins, to the exclusion of the grace and the charity which is poured forth in their hearts by the Holy Ghost, and is inherent in them; or even that the grace, whereby we are justified, is only the favour of God; let him be anathema.

Canon 11, like canon 10, expresses Rome’s (and her daughter’s) hatred of Alien righteousness. To them this righteousness is only a legal fiction and doesn’t amount to a hill of beans. Both Rome and her Protestant daughters require not only a “regenerative union” that produces faith, but also faith that must commit, obey, repent and turn from all acts and types of sin, persevere, and do all kinds of good works for justification. Thus they ground the total and final acceptance/salvation of man in both Christ’s work “for us”, and Christ’s work “in us”, and therefore have synthesized justification and sanctification.

CANON XII. - If any one saith, that justifying faith is nothing else but confidence in the divine mercy which remits sins for Christ’s sake; or, that this confidence alone is that whereby we are justified; let him be anathema.

Rome and the Lordship crowd hate the idea that faith alone is nothing else but divine confidence (assurance) in Christ’s work “for us” and that through faith alone the sinner sees and receives his justification, thus claiming this as his only basis of assurance.

We will discuss more on “assurance” later, but here are a few brief snippets from MacArthur showing his true Catholic mentality. He starts with some truths and descends into error.

MacArthur: “The moment someone trusts Christ for salvation, that person who embraces Christ has a real sense of their own faith and they know that the Bible promises that you are saved by grace through faith so they therefore know that based on the promise of the Word of God they are saved. Calvin was right. There is in faith itself a component of assurance.”

“If I believe the Bible enough to change my view about myself, see myself not as a righteous person but as a sinner, if I believe what the Bible says about my condition, the wickedness of my heart, the condemnation that awaits me, alienation from God, all of that, if I now instead of thinking good about myself see myself as evil, see myself as wretched, miserable, naked, blind, cut off from God, separated, doomed, damned to hell, and all of that, the reason that I've come to that conviction is because I understand and believe the Bible’s diagnosis, right? ‘But as many as received Him, to them He gave the right to be called the children
of God,’ if I believe that and I receive Him, then there is assurance in that faith based upon the same Scripture that caused me to act in faith. I embraced Christ because the Bible said He’s my only hope.”

“Calvin was right and I believe that’s exactly what Calvin was saying that there is in the essence of faith a component of assurance.”

“So when you trust Him, put your faith in Him, coming along with that is the promise that you have eternal life. There is that essential assurance in the very act of faith because it’s based upon what Scripture says is true.”

“And yet there is essential assurance in faith, and yet it has limits.”

“That...I’ll say it again, that assurance that we have in the act of faith comes from the promise of Scripture. He says it so I believe it so I am assured it is so. That’s a sort of cognitive assurance, sort of a cognitive assurance........And therein is that cognitive assurance.” .... “It’s not perfect assurance, ......It’s not a full assurance.”

“There’s that cognitive element that comes right out of the promises of Scripture. And secondly, there’s that subjective element of assurance that comes by the witness of the Holy Spirit...the witness of the Holy Spirit in us. And there’s a third element, there’s what I’ll call the behavioral assurance that comes because we see how we live our lives. In a sense, it starts in the mind, it moves to the emotions, senses, and then it goes to the life. All three of those contribute to a full assurance.”

“There is no assurance of salvation without sanctification. There is no assurance of salvation without sanctification. It isn’t enough to know in your mind that the Bible promises that if you put your trust in Jesus Christ, you’re going to be saved and you can have a measure of assurance there but that’s sort of minimal. That’s sort of entry-level assurance. Full assurance is connected to sanctification. And where there is in your life a lack of sanctification, a lack of holiness, there will be with it a lack of assurance.”

So you can read for yourself. According to MacArthur and the Lordship (neo – Papist) crowd, full assurance of salvation can only be attained through good works, the quality of commitment, obedience, and perseverance. MacArthur’s conclusions are in full agreement with essence of Trent.

He maintains the Roman error of some philosophical head/heart dichotomy. According to MacArthur the initial cognitive act of believing on Christ’s imputed merits alone for salvation only gives some temporary assurance due to the fact that he sees this as only a mere cognitive assent to these truths. He calls this “imperfect assurance”. What makes assurance full, according to MacArthur, is sanctification, i.e. the works “in us”, thus confounding root with fruit.
He infers that in the first part of his Papist threefold plan for assurance, an individual can cognitively assent (which is synonymous with belief and trust) to the objective Gospel without full assurance due to lack of the Holy Spirit witness. How in the world can a person truly confess Jesus is Lord apart from the effectual working of the Holy Spirit? There is a separation he makes (first part - second part) in the volitional mental act of believing. However they are one act! More on this later.

CANON XIII. - If any one saith, that it is necessary for every one, for the obtaining the remission of sins, that he believe for certain, and without any wavering arising from his own infirmity and disposition, that his sins are forgiven him; let him be anathema.

Rome and the Lordship advocates agree. According to Rome and her daughters, no one can believe for certain that his sins are forgiven due to faith alone in Christ alone. They must also take into consideration their ongoing inward disposition (sanctification) as a basis for assurance.

CANON XIV. - If any one saith, that man is truly absolved from his sins and justified, because that he assuredly believed himself absolved and justified; or, that no one is truly justified but he who believes himself justified; and that, by this faith alone, absolution and justification are effected; let him be anathema.

Again, it is not by faith alone in Christ alone according to Rome and MacArthur, but by a faith that looks at the results that faith brings: i.e. Sanctification.

CANON XV. - If any one saith, that a man, who is born again and justified, is bound of faith to believe that he is assuredly in the number of the predestinate; let him be anathema.

According to MacArthur and Rome, the only way for one to be assured of his election and predestination is by some arbitrary measure of works. Tridentine soteriology is 100% subjective. The whole alleged formula designed by Rome for sinful men ever having any hope to embrace the Beatific vision is grounded in man's actual sinless perfection. A perfection that is possible when men cooperate with Grace. Only at that point of inherent sinlessness can God declare this man righteous (just) and open the gate of Heaven. Hence the moral intrinsic quality of that individual is the only ground of acceptance before God. Regeneration is seen as the start of the “whitening” process and must continue until absolute whiteness is achieved.

On the other hand, the Pauline soteriological Justification of man is 100% objective. The whole formula designed by God for sinful men ever having any hope to embrace the Beatific vision is grounded in Christ's actual sinless perfection. Only at that point of Imputation can God declare a man righteous.
(just) and open the gate of Heaven. Hence the legal extrinsic verdict of Christ’s actual sinless perfection is imputed to that individual and is the only ground of acceptance before God.

The elect sinner, from regeneration to the consummation of all things, will need just as much of that 100% imputation from start to finish. When God clothes a man with His own Robe of Righteousness (100% imputation), that Robe is the only thing God sees in our relation to and acceptance by Him; and that Robe of Christ is the only thing we assent (trust/believe) on. The activity that takes place under the Robe (our inherent nature) via the work of the Holy Spirit, and all it does or doesn’t perform, is not meritorious, earns no special reward in heaven, and is not a factor toward determining our final justification or any justification at all!

The work that God does “in us” in general, is for our benefit, peace, and strength to cope with the evils of this world and our own very flesh. It is purely an existential help for us in this temporary earthly life. I liken the inward work of the Holy Spirit helper, as our “New Schoolmaster” who continues to keep us yearning for the manifestation of the new heaven and earth in which we will see our Lord Jesus face to face at His second coming.

The fatal errors of “Lordship Gospel” advocates are that they have confounded (synthesized) root and fruit. Synthesized that which Christ has done “for us”, which is Christ’s work of the Gospel, with that of which the Holy Spirit does “in us”, i.e. the fruits and benefits of the Gospel. This synthesis unites them with Rome.

The Issues

The issues themselves that lead to these errors are an improper understanding of:

1. The nature and essence of saving faith.
2. The nature and essence of repentance.

Wrongly understanding these two, leads to more errors:

1. The role of good works.
2. Assurance of salvation.

It is no wonder that Catholic theologians are in some agreement with Lordship advocates John MacArthur, James White, John Piper, R.C. Sproul, J.I. Packer, Paul Washer, and so on.

Roman Catholic apologist Robert Sungenis wrote:
“MacArthur spent almost all of his 300 page work [TGAJ] exegeting passages from the Gospels, systematically going through many of the teachings of Jesus which specified that works indeed play a large part in our standing and relationship with God.... This is not surprising. Catholic theology has always maintained that the Gospels deny faith alone theology most emphatically” (Robert Sungenis, Not by Faith Alone, pg. 597).

What Constitutes Saving Faith and Repentance?

The Lordship advocates suggest that works should be understood as an essential element (synthesis) of faith rather than a fruit or result that flows from faith itself. MacArthur also tends to confuse repentance with the fruits of repentance. He confuses “saving faith”, which takes place in a moment of time, with discipleship, which is a lifelong renewing of the mind and conforming to truth. Furthermore, every elect regenerate child of God grows at different rates and stages in their individual lives. Not all of Christ’s sheep are at the same level of maturity and knowledge as compared to others within the same Body of Christ. So we should never judge a brother in Christ by the standards of our own individual growth, knowledge, and maturity. We are all equals in the Body by way of imputation only!

Ep. 1:13 “In him you also, when you heard the word of truth, the gospel of your salvation, and believed in him, were sealed with the promised Holy Spirit.”

The sealing of the Holy Spirit is God’s divine testimony to our hearts that indeed we have trusted the Gospel alone, through faith alone. Faith alone in Christ’s gospel alone is assurance! The gospel is Christ’s work “for us”.

Lordship salvation advocates rightly insist upon repentance, but wrongly include a change of behavior In Order To Be Saved. No one questions (except radical and extreme antinomians, Pelagians, and semi-Pelagians) that God effectually causes a sincere change of mind, a turning from oneself to the Savior. However Lordship advocates attempt to make behavior and fruit essential ingredients of saving faith, rather than evidences of saving faith.

MacArthur defines “repentance” as turning from your sins (Faith Works, p. 74). He also states that true repentance “inevitably results in a change of behavior” (Faith Works, p. 75). However, is not one’s turning from sins a change of behavior, a result or evidence of saving faith and repentance? MacArthur is confounding the results of repentance with repentance itself. He is confounding the fruit with the root.

MacArthur: “Now I think all of that is simply to say repentance is a critical matter. It is an essential part of the saving work of God. It is a call for a turning from sin. If I were
to just pull together the basic linguistic *metanoia*, is the word, linguistic treatments of that word, that predominant word, and some of the theological things that have been used to describe the meaning of that word, this is what you would come up with. Here’s a basic understanding of what repentance means. It is by all those who define both the word and its theological meaning, a radical turning, a radical conversion, a transformation of nature, a definitive turning from evil, a resolute turning from evil toward God, a commitment to move from unrighteousness to righteousness, from disobedience to obedience. And this conversion is once for all. There can be, says one writer, no going back, only advance in responsible movement along the way now taken. It is a life-altering event, this repentance. It affects the whole man. First and basically it affects the center of personal life, then logically from the center it begins to impact all the conduct and the thought life, all situations, all actions. The whole proclamation of Jesus then is a proclamation of a once-for-all, complete, unconditional turning from sin to God...unconditional from all that is against God to all that honors Him. It is not just turning from what we could say is a downright wickedness, it is even turning from those things that are not God-honoring. It is total surrender. It is total commitment to the will of God and the Word of God. It embraces the whole life of a person. One writer says it embraces the whole walk of the new man who is claimed by the divine Lordship. It carries with it the founding of a new personal relation between a man and God. It awakens joyous obedience for a life lived according to God's will."

"It is not just to change your mind about who Jesus is. It is not just to change your mind about your circumstances and decide to try something else. It is a whole new life that emerges out of self-denial. It is to deny yourself and your sin and to commit yourself unreservedly to Christ. Its importance, unless you repent, Jesus said, you’ll perish...you’ll perish."

http://www.gty.org/resources/sermons/90-288/the-doctrine-of-repentance

Everything that MacArthur stated above is a confounding of the fruits of repentance and not repentance itself. This must be understood. However all these actions on the part of man (albeit Grace induced), have been made conditions that define true repentance by the Lordship advocates. This is nothing new. This is the heart of Roman soteriology. If one does not measure up to these conditions then one will perish. Why do you think the penitent Roman Catholic must daily, weekly, monthly, yearly confess his or her individual sins to the priest? If there are any unrepentant individual sins in their life, then according to Rome, Pentecostals, Methodists, and now the Lordship advocates, there is no real “turning from sin”, “no real obedience”, “no definitive turning from evil”, “no real commitment to move from unrighteousness to righteousness, from disobedience to obedience.” Lordship advocates confound root with fruit once again, like their mother. But more so, can a regenerate elect believer completely, perfectly, and totally fulfill all the requirements that MacArthur places on the souls of his penitent flock perfectly?
What is the Gospel message according to MacArthur?

MacArthur: “Let me just say simply, that when you present the gospel, all of this Lordship discussion aside, a presentation of the gospel is simply this: **you are calling on someone to turn from their sin and follow Jesus Christ.** That’s it! Turn from your sin and follow Jesus Christ!... That is all we are asking: **TURN FROM YOUR SIN AND FOLLOW JESUS CHRIST.**... What you talk to an adult about is the same thing you tell a child, you need to turn from your sin and follow Jesus Christ.”

MacArthur’s emphasis is upon “**what man does**” rather than upon what “**Jesus has done.**” His emphasis is upon “**man’s commitment**”, (turn and follow) rather than upon the “**Person and work of Jesus Christ**”, and faith alone’s response to that Person and to His work.

His emphasis is upon doing something. A true gospel proclamation should emphasize what Christ has done. It is not our commitment, obedience and perseverance that saves us. It is Jesus Christ’s commitment that saves us. Following Christ is a result of salvation, not a condition of salvation. Before we **follow** Christ in discipleship we must first **believe alone on Christ alone** for salvation. The term “**believe**” is synonymous with “**assent alone, trust alone, and faith alone**” and does not mean “**turn from sin and follow Christ**”, which are the results and fruits of **faith alone**. Faith alone means: **fully trust, rely upon, resting one’s own soul upon the worth, Word and work of Jesus Christ alone.** We must not re-define saving faith to make it some kind of a “work-requirement” to trust or rest our assurance upon for salvation. Justification and the whole of Salvation is for the person who “worketh not, but believeth” (Ro. 4:5). **“And to the one who does not work but believes in him who justifies the ungodly, his faith is counted as righteousness.”**

An emphasis, necessity, and reliance on good works is the Roman church’s prescription for Salvation, and obviously is MacArthur’s prescription also. It was also the strategy of Paul’s opponents, historically shown through the writings of the Judaizers (Ebionites, Nazarenes, and the letter named James). Sadly, most (not all) of non-Roman professed Christendom has fallen into this same attack upon the Pauline doctrine of “**imputation received through faith alone without all works.**”

We never want to misstate the Lordship Salvation debate. Lordship Salvation advocates **do not** put the cart (works) before the horse (salvation through faith).

The Lordship position is: that they do not teach works before salvation, at least not explicitly. Every Lordship teacher denies the heresy of salvation by works. However I argue that they are fork-tongued when they attach the conditions of inherent sanctification to faith alone. They deny works before salvation, but
scream to the top of their lungs that **good works and obedience are a basis for assurance and final justification.**

The Lordship advocates, like their mother Rome, misunderstand the Pauline (Faith alone advocates) position by suggesting that we detach the cart from the horse. Our position holds that good works follow salvation through faith alone (Tit. 2:11-12). This conclusion is based on the Scripture, the nature of regeneration, the work of the indwelling Holy Spirit, and the life-changing power of effectual grace.

However, we contend that good works are not always **visible or measurable** in a believer's life. It is possible for believers to persist in some sins. But more importantly, all of our good works are tainted with sin and human imperfections no matter how strong a desire we have for serving Christ. Our works are still filthy rags compared to Christ's sinless life and perfect works. Additionally, we insist that sanctification, whether progressive or not, should not be synthesized with justification, or with the volitional act of “faith alone” that rests on Christ alone. When Lordship teachers fail to make this distinction, they mix works with faith. In effect, they put the cart’s wheels on the horse, making it the Trojan horse of Trent.

We maintain that there is an **essential relationship** between sanctification and justification, but that there is also a vital **distinction** between the two. Justification is God’s declaration of His righteousness imputed to us. Through faith alone, when we believe, we assent to that objective righteousness. Sanctification is God’s work **in us** of renewing our minds to the realities of truth as stated in Scriptural promises and propositions. Justification is the starting point and the ending point in our earthly lives. We live “**from faith to faith**”. Sanctification or inherent moral renewal, according to the Lordship advocates, is no guarantee that results will be seen to the satisfaction of those who desire to measure them, let alone as a basis for any assurance, as MacArthur teaches.

**We should rest on Christ alone, for therein is peace and full assurance.**

It is common for believers in Jesus Christ to give abundant evidence (fruit) of their faith through their good works. But how can works be accurately measured? Which one of us (unless we become God) can accurately determine the crossover point from non-Christian to Christian? Faith alone in God’s provision - Jesus Christ, the Gospel, and promises alone - is the only objective criterion by which salvation can be determined. There are only two persons who know for sure that an individual is truly saved; that is God, and the saved individual himself.

Lordship’s Trojan horse destroys assurance, freedom, and growth as documented from the writings of MacArthur, Piper, etc. This Roman horse is surely not welcomed within the walls of **“Faith Alone”** advocates.
Two very devout religious people, one a Baptist, and the other a Pentecostal, many years ago told me I was not saved because I was not a member of a church, did not tithe, and smoked cigarettes. These attitudes are the result of the Roman Trojan horse.

**Essence of Saving Faith**

He. 11:6 “But without faith it is impossible to please him: for he that cometh to God must believe that he is, and that he is a rewarer of them that diligently seek him.”

He. 11:1 “Now faith is the substance of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen.”

Ro. 4:3-25 “3 For what saith the scripture? Abraham believed God, and it was counted unto him for righteousness. 4 Now to him that worketh is the reward not reckoned of grace, but of debt. 5 But to him that worketh not, but believeth on him that justifieth the ungodly, his faith is counted for righteousness. 6 Even as David also describeth the blessedness of the man, unto whom God imputeth righteousness without works, 7 Saying, Blessed are they whose iniquities are forgiven, and whose sins are covered. 8 Blessed is the man to whom the Lord will not impute sin. 9 Cometh this blessedness then upon the circumcision only, or upon the uncircumcision also? for we say that faith was reckoned to Abraham for righteousness. 10 How was it then reckoned? when he was in circumcision, or in uncircumcision? Not in circumcision, but in uncircumcision. 11 And he received the sign of circumcision, a seal of the righteousness of the faith which he had yet being uncircumcised: that he might be the father of all them that believe, though they be not circumcised; that righteousness might be imputed unto them also: 12 And the father of circumcision to them who are not of the circumcision only, but who also walk in the steps of that faith of our father Abraham, which he had being yet uncircumcised. 13 For the promise, that he should be the heir of the world, was not to Abraham, or to his seed, through the law, but through the righteousness of faith. 14 For if they which are of the law be heirs, faith is made void, and the promise made of none effect: 15 Because the law worketh wrath: for where no law is, there is no transgression. 16 Therefore it is of faith, that it might be by grace; to the end the promise might be sure to all the seed; not to that only which is of the law, but to that also which is of the faith of Abraham; who is the father of us all, 17 (As it is written, I have made thee a father of many nations,) before him whom he believed, even God, who quickeneth the dead, and calleth those things which be not as though they were. 18 Who against hope believed in hope, that he might become the father of many nations, according to that which was spoken, So shall thy seed be. 19 And being not weak in faith, he considered not his own body now dead, when he was about an hundred years old, neither yet the deadness
of Sarah’s womb: 20 He staggered not at the promise of God through unbelief; but was strong in faith, giving glory to God; 21 And being fully persuaded that, what he had promised, he was able also to perform. 22 And therefore it was imputed to him for righteousness. 23 Now it was not written for his sake alone, that it was imputed to him; 24 But for us also, to whom it shall be imputed, if we believe on him that raised up Jesus our Lord from the dead; 25 Who was delivered for our offences, and was raised again for our justification."

Ga. 3:14 “That the blessing of Abraham might come on the Gentiles through Jesus Christ; that we might receive the promise of the Spirit through faith.”

2 Co. 4:13 “We having the same spirit of faith, according as it is written, I believed, and therefore have I spoken; we also believe, and therefore speak.”

Ro. 9:32 “Wherefore? Because they sought it not by faith, but as it were by the works of the law. For they stumbled at that stumblingstone.”

Ga. 2:16 “Knowing that a man is not justified by the works of the law, but by the faith of Jesus Christ, even we have believed in Jesus Christ, that we might be justified by the faith of Christ, and not by the works of the law: for by the works of the law shall no flesh be justified.”

For the Lordship advocates and for Rome, full assurance of salvation must be grounded in at least a measure of sanctification. Justification as a result of regeneration (their erroneous position) is seen as only an entry point and must be maintained (buttressed) through good works, commitment, obedience, and perseverance, hence a “final justification”, and even the totality of salvation is determined not only based upon Christ’s imputed righteousness but also upon an infused righteousness. This is a synthesis of Christ’s work for us, and a work in us, with the conclusion that there is a dual focus (object) that faith must rest upon. Imputation alone is thus destroyed.

This amounts to a New Testament legalism (neo-nomianism) that is antithetical to Pauline soteriology when dealing with the object and essence of faith itself.

The initial, primary, and first act (evidence) of saving faith manifests itself in a belief in God. Not any god, but the God who has revealed Himself throughout history in and through His Son, Jesus Christ.

The inspired Scriptures are a testimony to the revelation of the one true God. So in dealing with Scriptural propositions, our operation of understanding (intellect) is that by which it joins concepts and propositions by affirmation.

Since saving faith is directly attributed to the efficacy of the Holy Spirit, this gift of saving faith is of divine substance itself (1 Co. 2:10-14), and our seal of
assurance.

Through Spiritual regeneration, the soul, intellect, and will are powerfully transformed from a state of unbelief to belief. As the Holy Spirit is always one in essence with the Father, and cannot doubt its very own essence, saving faith is always in agreement with the Triune God and all God has promised and does, both “good” and “bad”.

Job 1:20-22: “20 At this, Job got up and tore his robe and shaved his head. Then he fell to the ground in worship 21 and said: ‘Naked I came from my mother’s womb, and naked I will depart. The Lord gave and the Lord has taken away; may the name of the Lord be praised.’ 22 In all this, Job did not sin by charging God with wrongdoing.”

Even in our own wrongdoing as believers, saving faith that assents to truth acts to convict our hearts of wrongdoing and conforms our mind to that which is holy, righteous and true. One who has not assent (saving faith) to truth will never experience conviction in his heart, for how is he able to discriminate between truth and falsehood unless initially consenting to that which is true?

Assent is found in that operation of our understanding, for we do not assent to anything unless we hold it as true. We hold God to be true (Ro. 3:4). Likewise, one who doubts does not have assent, because he does not hold to the one true God. Also, one who has an opinion does not give assent, because his acceptance of God/Jesus Christ and His promises are not founded upon a sure firm foundation, but rather human opinion unaided by the Holy Spirit. The one who understands via illumination that God is true gives assent, because he holds with great certainty the proposition. In the very act of relating principles, concepts, and propositions to their conclusions he also assents to the conclusions through deductive reasoning. Thus he assents, and the assent brings thought to rest. We thus have rest because we believe the One who gives us rest (Mt. 11:28-29) without good works.

In saving faith, assent, intellect, and the will are moved by the Holy Spirit toward one object: i.e. God. For assent is not caused through unregenerate thought, but by the will of the One who effectually causes all the elect's faculties to act in harmony and unison. Mind, soul, intellect, heart, and that which constitutes man’s unseen being are all moved to act as one in saving faith alone. It’s all or nothing that separates “saving faith” from “unbelief”. “For as he thinketh in his heart, so is he.” As God is at oneness with Himself, the regenerate man is brought to oneness in his constituent being. A regenerate man cannot believe in his mind that God is true, and deny him in his heart. This is untrue. The whole of man either believes or does not believe. The regenerate mind still thinks (reasons) and inquires about the things which it believes to gain a deeper understanding, even though its assent to them is unwavering. “Bringing into captivity every understanding...” (2 Cor. 10:5).
Saving, justifying faith is consent, assent, belief in God and what God says without denial, and requires nothing (no works, or tangible results). Faith trusts the promises of God, for faith believes God. The will of man is so motivated and caused by God to act upon the renewed intellect that it assents to the knowledge of God.

A[90x612]ssent properly belongs to the intellect, because it means an absolute adherence to that to which assent is given: toward the very being of God. But as stated, assent is properly motivated by the will of God. The will, heart, and mind act responsively as one essential renewed soul in saving faith. “To believe with the mind is to believe with the heart”, “To believe with the heart is to believe with the will”, “To believe with the will is to believe with mind” for they are one soul.

Certitude is firmness of adherence, faith is certain, assent of faith is certain. It is the evidence of that to which assent is given. Assent believes the promise because it believes the source (God).

“Now faith is the substance of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen.”

Paul gives us Abraham as the arch-typical example of faith. Abraham’s faith represents every elect believer’s faith; “Father of all them that believe,” past, present and future. The essence of faith is the same in all of us. Faith alone is of the same essence prior to the Mosaic Law, during, and after the Mosaic Law. And it is still by faith alone post-Christ.

Lordship advocates and works activists want to impregnate faith with works. However, it is not strictly the Old Testament Mosaic requirements (although some have added a few of these) that have been infused with faith, but New Testament admonitions and submissiveness to them are now requirements that define the essence of saving faith. This they call good works, or New Testament evangelical obedience. However, Paul uses Abraham as an example that it was never of works, or of inherent progressive sanctification. In fact, Paul contrasts faith and works as antithetical to one another.

The issue of saving faith in the Lordship controversy is whether its volitional aspect involves only trust and confidence in God/Christ, or an alleged deeper commitment added that includes surrender and personal obedience. Lordship Salvation assumes the latter position. Faith, according to them, must rest in Christ’s work for us + Christ’s work in us (sanctification, moral renewal etc.).

Lordship Advocates argue that there are different kinds of faith; one that is merely intellectual and cannot save, and one that is volitional and saves. Even though intellectual assent to the propositions of Scriptures are seen as a real
volitional trust and reliance upon God, still this falls short of saving faith according to the Lordship activists.

To “believe on the Lord Jesus Christ,” involves more than knowledge, assent and trust (reliance) in God’s promises, according to them. To believe on the Lord Jesus Christ means more than to believe that He is Lord, and more than to rely on Him to give eternal life. "It also means to receive Christ as one’s own Lord, the ruler of one’s own life." However, what they understand by those words in bold type is progressive sanctification. Thus, if one supposedly does not embrace their view of commitment, obedience, and perseverance as a basis for assurance, or rejects works as a condition for final justification, he can now be labeled as one who is rejecting Christ as Lord and ruler of his life. This is clever sophistry at its finest hour.

The debate, then, is not solely over the object of faith, Christ, but focuses instead on the kind or essence of faith, that, for them, looks in both directions simultaneously: one, to Christ’s work objectively in the Gospel that is only preparatory, and two, to Christ’s work of sanctification in the believer that is synthesized to faith. To them there is a kind of faith that does not fully save and give full assurance. This they call empty faith, or dead faith. This inadequate kind of faith is said to be only intellectual acquiescence, or an acceptance/assent to the facts regarding Jesus Christ and His Gospel.

I ask then, if simple trust and confidence in God/Christ alone does not save and justify the ungodly, then what kind of faith does? They suggest faith + results (works) alone, Paul the apostle teaches faith alone.

What did Abraham believe (assent to, trust in) that is now so demeaned?

God told Abraham “he made him the father of many nations.” That’s a proposition, promise, and fact, because God spoke it. Faith alone agrees with God despite the fact that Abraham and Sarah were well beyond childbearing capabilities. In fact, Sarah’s womb was dead. So the actual manifestation or outcomes of the promise are not a necessary factor in determining or defining the essence of faith. However, faith alone does have evidence, but it is an evidence in things (promises) not yet fulfilled. Because God spoke it, His word is all the evidence that is necessary. When one believes God he also believes in the propositions/promises. This very act of faith alone is reckoned (imputed) as righteousness. Nothing else is needed in the act of saving faith. No works, no commitment to do good works, no obedience, etc. These actions are a result of faith and never a component of saving faith.

“As it is written, I have made thee a father of many nations, before him whom he believed, even God, who quickeneth the dead, and calleth those things which be not as though they were.”
When God states a fact, it is a fact to be believed because God said it.

God calls the elect righteous even though they are not inherently righteous. We assent to this by faith alone.

God laid on Christ the sins of the elect and judged Christ on the cross as guilty although Christ was innocent and the sinless Lamb of God without spot, blemish and wrinkle inherently. We assent to this by faith alone.

We believe the Gospel through faith alone! Imputation is realized through faith alone! Assurance is grounded in Christ alone, through faith alone. To claim as MacArthur claims, that this is only an imperfect assurance, and that full assurance requires some reality of good works, obedience, repentance and commitment is false. To be consistent, Abraham would then have to wait upon actually physically holding his children, seeing nations in existence and so forth. That’s not hope. That’s not justifying faith.

“Being not weak in faith, he considered not his own body now dead.”

The believing elect never consider the quality or substance of their good works or evangelical obedience as some determining factor for their salvation, but are strong in faith resting (not working) on Christ’s perfection. Abraham did not consider his own body as some basis to believe God.

“Fully persuaded that, what he had promised, he was able also to perform.”

I’m fully persuaded in the Gospel. That’s all that matters. I have complete assurance through faith alone like my brother Abraham who believed God at His own word. Who shall lay any charge to God’s elect?

Ro. 4:24-25 “24 But for us also, to whom it shall be imputed, if we believe on him that raised up Jesus our Lord from the dead; 25 Who was delivered for our offences, and was raised again for our justification.”

MacArthur, Piper, Sproul, J.I. Packer, Papists, modern day evangelicals, Arminians, Pelagians, semi-Pelagians, and so forth, all stumble.

Ro. 9:32 “Wherefore? Because they sought it not by faith [alone], but as it were by the works of the law. For they stumbled at that stumblingstone.”

Ro. 1:15-17 “15 So, as much as in me is, I am ready to preach the gospel to you that are at Rome also.16 For I am not ashamed of the gospel of Christ: for it is the power of God unto salvation to every one that believeth; to the Jew first, and also to the Greek.17 For therein is the righteousness of God revealed from faith to faith: as it is written, The just shall live by faith.”
The Gospel and nothing but the Gospel is the only avenue for Righteousness and full assurance, from faith to faith.

From start to finish, we the just shall live by faith alone!

As previously mentioned, Lordship Salvation teachings have an inevitable effect upon the assurance of the believer. Whether they are neo-Calvinist, Arminian, Orthodox, or Papist. Assurance derived from faith alone in the objective promises of God alone appears to retreat in importance to the subjective assessment of a quality of faith in the one professing faith, that is subjective evaluation of visible fruits of obedience in one’s life. This tends to make absolute assurance impossible in this life, as taught by Rome and her daughters.

It can also be shown how Lordship Salvation’s false interpretation of what constitutes the Gospel and the very nature and essence of saving faith has shaped the “Church growth movements”, “the Emergent Church”, “the New Perspective on Paul”, etc. The inclusion of discipleship and lordship obedience (progressive sanctification) to the gospel of salvation has significantly altered methods of evangelism and has escalated social concerns over and beyond the Scriptural mandate to proclaim the Gospel as the only remedy for sinful man. No longer is the emphasis on the gospel proclamation of “salvation from sin, and eternal life” through faith alone in Christ’s imputed righteousness alone, but it is also believed the gospel itself demands that people and societies be brought under the lordship of Christ through postmillennial, dominion reconstructionism.

This false gospel gives impetus to some in the Lordship position for concerns of Christian influence in the social and political arena. Those committed to a social agenda can conveniently advocate a Lordship gospel in which the gospel not only offers salvation from sin, but also from sinful social structures. To the dominionist/reconstructionist, the gospel demands social commitment because Christ is Lord of all and those who are His disciples [the churchly institution] will carry Christ’s lordship into society, as their mother Rome has done in the past a la Constantine with horrifying results. To these false gospel preachers, a gospel that fails to bring people into the struggle for social change is a false gospel.

One must, by way of investigation, fully inquire into all the false theological implications that can be concluded from the Lordship Gospel advocates. There are many more, but this should suffice.

**Essence of Repentance**

Mk. 1:14-15 “14 Now after that John was put in prison, Jesus came into Galilee, preaching the gospel of the kingdom of God, 15 And saying, The time is
fulfilled, and the kingdom of God is at hand: repent ye, and believe the gospel.”

Ro. 1:15-17 “15 So, as much as in me is, I am ready to preach the gospel to you that are at Rome also. 16 For I am not ashamed of the gospel of Christ: for it is the power of God unto salvation to every one that believeth; to the Jew first, and also to the Greek. 17 For therein is the righteousness of God revealed from faith to faith: as it is written, The just shall live by faith.”

Throughout the history of Christendom there has always been confusion as to what constitutes repentance. How are we to define, and what is contained in the word, “metanoia”?

From beginning to end, the inspired revelation of God proclaims two main themes: 1. God is Righteous. 2. Man is unrighteous. This is the great antithesis between God and Man.

Because man is dead in his sins, the only cure for his soul rests in the imputed Righteousness of Jesus Christ. The Gospel of Jesus Christ is the zenith point of God’s manifestation toward His people.

When the very Son of God, our Lord Jesus Christ, appeared upon the scene in His public ministry, He came preaching repentance and faith.

As stated previously, there has been a lot of misunderstanding and confusion over what the words “repent/repentance” mean. When the word “repent” is used in the Word of God in its salvific context, it is referring to a God-caused, Spirit-led change of heart/mind/will toward God’s righteousness and simultaneously an abandonment of one’s own self-righteousness. Repentance therefore is a 180-degree turnabout in one’s soul.

Regenerate man no longer faces/trusts: South/himself/self-righteousness, but has been turned/converted to face/trust: North/Jesus Christ/Imputed righteousness. That’s it! Nothing else is to be added to repentance and faith in its primary foundational and initial volitional act.

Ac. 3:19 “Repent ye therefore, and be converted, that your sins may be blotted out....”

The greatest need for any elect sinner is to have his sins blotted out. However, a self-righteous man will never have the pardon of sin while he is in love with his own self-righteousness/good works. There must be a loathing of self-righteousness, a turning from it. Repentance is an attitude of the soul, the whole man, i.e. heart/mind/will. Self-righteousness has become exceedingly sinful in the eyes of the sinner.
Repentance from self-righteousness and Faith alone toward Christ’s imputed righteousness are one effectually caused act.

Repentance and faith are not two distinct, disconnected, mutually exclusive, and separate volitional actions/decisions of the heart/mind/will. Repentance and faith are opposite sides of the same coin, not two separate coins.

Example: Picture a coin. On side A, the coin reads, “God is sovereign”, “Christ is God”, “Christ is Righteous”, “Christ’s imputed righteousness justifies”, “believe this”. Side B reads: “men are sovereign”, “men are like gods”, “men are righteous”, “mans’ self-righteousness justifies”, “believe this”.

Justifying repentance and faith is not a matter of turning from bad works, specific sins, fully committing, rededicating your life, changing your behavior, doing good works, attending church, giving money, etc. according to the Lordship advocates. Justifying repentance and faith is a matter of a changed mind as to where your righteousness is derived from. That’s all! When God flips the coin over in the mind of the elect soul, that soul only believes/assents/sees side A, and in seeing side A, it is implicit that he rejects/repents of side B.

Repentance without faith is nothing more than remorse or regret. Even the reprobate and heathens display that kind of repentance, which is counterfeit. There must be a work of repentance and faith upon the sinner’s heart before salvation can be seen as a reality. Repentance is caused by the working of the Holy Spirit, who takes the Sword of the Spirit and slays the sinner’s self-righteousness, self-goodness, self-decency, self-esteem, and causes him to cry out: “…God be merciful to me a sinner,” (Lu. 18:13), and “…what must I do to be saved?” (Ac. 16:30).

The Jews of Christ day were not lacking any sort of “works”, they had plenty, and those very works served to condemn them. What they were lacking was true righteousness. When Christ and the Apostles commanded men to repent, they were not asking for men to first clean up their act, change their daily behavior, give up specific sins, commit their lives in more faithful adherence to Moses, commit to live holier lives, become more religious, etc., and the same with Paul to the Gentiles. They were commanding men (Jew and Gentile) to abandon themselves/repent and believe the Gospel! This is the only way one can enter the Kingdom of Heaven/God. When Jesus said the Kingdom of God/Heaven was at hand, He was proclaiming the Gospel was at hand. Abandon self-righteousness and trust in Christ’s imputed righteousness alone.

The Papists, MacArthur and the Lordship advocates make repentance and faith an ongoing progressive sanctification process, thus confounding root and fruit once again.
MacArthur:
“As metanoia is used in the New Testament, it always speaks of a change of purpose, and specifically a turning from sin” (TGAJ p. 162).

“Repentance is not merely being ashamed or sorry over sin, although genuine repentance always involves an element of remorse. It is a redirection of the human will, a purposeful decision to forsake all unrighteousness and pursue righteousness instead” (Ibid, p.163).

MacArthur’s understanding of repentance, “metanoia”, is bloated. He inflates its meaning by adding moral action/cooperation (sanctification) into the act. There is no longer a root and fruit distinction but they have become one necessary condition that must be fulfilled to validate repentance. And even more horrific, MacArthur teaches that men must trust in their sanctification as an additional means of assurance.

Repentance is caused in salvation no doubt, however repentance is defined as “changing the mind”.

With regard to salvation, the lost sinner’s mind is changed about:

22. Sin: Sin is truly offensive to God and he has offended God by his sin and self-righteousness.
23. Salvation: He cannot save himself, thus abandons all efforts to earn and/or maintain God’s favor.
24. The Savior: Only by trusting in Christ’s substitutionary death on the cross and imputed righteousness can he truly be justified.

There is a connection/overlap in the semantic range of meaning between the terms “faith” and “repentance”. They are two sides of the same coin as stated earlier. John the Apostle does not use the term “repentance/metanoia” in his gospel because to John, the terms “faith/believe” carry all the necessary elements of “repentance”. When one assents to the gospel through faith alone, it is implicit that he repented, i.e. changed his mind.

Scripture views repentance as included in the volitional act of believing and not as an additional and separate condition to faith. Sinners who have trusted Christ’s imputed righteousness alone have changed their minds regarding Him and abandoned their self-righteousness.

True repentance is a change of mind about Jesus Christ and the gospel of imputed righteousness. Sinners can weep, sinners can resolve to turn from their past sins and become “promise keepers”, but those things in themselves cannot justify. The only kind of repentance that saves anyone, anywhere, anytime is a change of mind about Jesus Christ and His Gospel. Sin and sorrow because of
sin may arise in one’s mind, conscience, and emotions so that he or she realizes the need for a Savior, but if there is no change of mind, “repentance”, about the imputed righteousness of Jesus Christ, justification will not be realized. It’s a change of mind about the whole of Christ, both His person and His work. These cannot be separated.

Holy Spirit repentance draws man away from himself and causes him to rely on Christ’s imputed righteousness alone.

Pseudo-Christian repentance draws men deeper into themselves and the quality of their religious life/experience consisting of forsaking sins, moral rehabilitation, contrition, and penances.

If one takes the time to look deeper into this matter of Lordship salvation and all that is taught, preached, and implied about repentance and faith, the answer will read something like this:

Ac. 16:30 “...What must I do to be saved?” Answer: “You must turn away from all sins”, “abandon stubborn disobedience”, “change your behavior”, “purpose to fully obey God”, “stop sinning”, and “do a measurable amount of good works.”

Is that the Gospel???
Chapter 35
John Hagee: Anti-Christ preacher of an Anti-Christ Gospel
Spearheading the Fifth Column Political “Pseudo-Christian Zionist” Propaganda Machine in the USA

1 Co. 16:22 “If any man love not our Lord Jesus Christ, let him be anathema, maranatha.”

The Talmudic Jews today hate Jesus Christ. The Messianic and Nazarene Jews have another/different Jesus, another Gospel, and they hate Paul the Apostle. The Muslims reject the deity of Jesus Christ and say He was just another prophet in the chain of prophets that finally led to Mohammad. The pseudo-Christians never had the true Gospel and have a false Christ/gospel even to this day. A Christ that is animated in flour, water, and wine, and then cannibalized in their superstitious sacrament in the manner of the church fathers, a practice continued through pope Luther in Germany and pope Calvin in Geneva.

These three major evil religions: Talmudic Judaism, Islam, and Pseudo-Christianity, have shed each others blood (and their own people’s) for centuries as previously discussed. But have they learned?? NO! Why not? Because they were ordained and predestined to their very end to be evil and blind. Only Christ’s elect throughout the centuries that heard the voice of the Lord Jesus and believed the true Gospel “came out from among them.”

You must understand, that within these three satanic religions that claim Abraham as their father, there are levels of loyalty.
1. There is the nominal religionist.

This poor soul was born into his or her religion, whatever that may be from the above three, was sprinkled with some magic water, or whatever brainwashing ceremonies the different religions partake of. This soul was catechized and really does not believe enough in his false religion to enforce his beliefs or convert others through the use of the sword or death.

2. There is the semi-pacifist religionist.

This poor soul believes the lies of his or her religion with passion and practices fervently, but cannot bring himself to murder in the name of his false God. He may not talk to others of a different religion or sect, but shows some tolerance and restraint toward murdering them.

3. There is the hard-core zealot activist.

This poor soul is a psychopathic religionist. He will murder, rape, steal, bomb, and do whatever his Rabbis, Priests, Pastors, Ministers, or Mullahs command him. You know, like the same idiot Irish Catholic and Protestant terrorists who killed and bombed at the behest of their respective clergymen. Women and children destroyed.

We have discussed these animals/terrorists previously. You know, the ones who thought nothing of burning people at the stake, crazed witch-hunters, swimming the witch, Protestants, Orthodox, Papist, Moslems, Jews, etc. History is full to the brim of blood and violence all done in the name of their false god. We have previously discussed the Papal and Protestant tyrants.

So in all cases, and in all three of the evil religions, we have varying degrees of loyalty.

As a man of God, I do not want to slander, be bigoted, or stereotype ALL within these groups as “terrorists”. They are not. Only group number three should really concern the elect of God. You notice I said concern the elect of God and not the USA with its reprobates. When Christ returns to destroy this evil world and establish His New World Order (not George Bush senior's New World Order of Fascist tyranny), there will be no United States or any other flag that is worthy, only Christ and His people in His Kingdom.

The elect will always be strangers and pilgrims on this earth, including in this USA. No different than our brother Abraham and all His elect seed in Christ.

Contained within group number three are Zionists, Papist/Protestants, and Muslims.
Neo-con Jewish Zionists, and the Neo-Con religious right wing ecumenical (pope included) Christian Zionists are allied and control the Government of America.

This unholy alliance uses our industrial military apparatus to fight this current day (medieval) crusade against Islam.

Corrupt politicians and corrupt clergymen always make good bedfellows.

Our early forefathers warned us not to entangle our nation in foreign religious battles, and we are doing the exact opposite. This crusade against Islam at the behest of the Papacy and Zionists is only going to cause the nominal and semi-pacifist Muslim to turn into a Zealot to protect their religion and way of life against Western, Zionist imperialistic political aggression. Or, another way of stating it: King George’s political colonization of Islamic countries. Nobody wins in these religious and political wars but God alone. For Christ sets the reprobates against themselves to kill themselves. We the elect do not have to fight with carnal weapons. “For we wrestle not against flesh and blood.” God does the killing and vengeance for us by having these three evil religions and their sects kill and bomb one another.

Ga. 1:8-9 “8 But though we, or an angel from heaven, preach a gospel to you besides that which we have preached to you, let him be anathema. 9 As we said before, so now I say again: If any one preach to you a gospel, besides that which you have received, let him be anathema.”
In John Hagee’s book, “In Defense Of Israel”, this is what he says:

“In Defense Of Israel’ will shape Christian theology. It scripturally proves that the Jewish people as a whole did not reject Jesus as Messiah. It will also prove that Jesus did not come to earth to be the Messiah. It will prove that there was a Calvary conspiracy between Rome the High Priest and Herod to execute Jesus as an insurrectionist too dangerous to live. Since Jesus refused by word and deed to claim to be the Messiah, how can the Jews be blamed for rejecting what was never offered?”

Even an unregenerate atheist who objectively and semi-honestly read the New Testament Gospels and Epistles would not come to the above conclusions.

Pilate acquitted Jesus no less than four times saying, “I find not fault in this man.” Consider his statement about Jesus not coming to earth to claim to be the Messiah that was prophesied of Old. Hagee flat out LIES through his warped and darkened mind. The Jews are not to be blamed??? You talk about an agenda? This heretic Hagee has one, no doubt.

The below preacher in the YouTube clip will have none of John Hagee.

http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=a-W-iPDG50w

But there is even a more sinister backdrop to this Zionist Israel cult obedience, and it sure did not start with Hagee. Hagee just reaffirms what the last few Popes have been slinging since Vatican II, but it started centuries earlier as we will discuss in upcoming segments. Hagee defends the current country of Israel based on religious issues and premises, not only political ones, and tries to defend the indefensible with false prophetic hermeneutics. Now allied with racist, ethnic cleansing, apartheid, Talmudic Jewish Zionist Christ-haters, these current pseudo-Christian Zionists give them (the Talmudic haters of God) a free pass to all sorts of wickedness, exempting them from the need of salvation through faith alone in Christ alone. You talk about Judases?
These heretic betrayers of the Gospel of Christ have fallen into the pit.

http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=aSIMhFENs1A

Even since Vatican II, the liberal wing of the Catholic Church with its new Jesuit impetus on “syncretism” has developed language and belief that the Jews are not required to believe in Jesus for salvation and can find salvation through their own evil Talmud.

There are no more true Torah Mosaic Jews of today! In fact, there was only a small remnant remaining when Christ was here on this earth.

All of this religious rhetoric and Zionist pro Israel cult obedience has been made a political issue, thus shaping political platforms. Being pro-Talmudic Zionist Israel and pro-Catholic is the litmus test every politician must pass in order for him to survive in the now Papal/Zionist controlled political machinery of Amerika, and also to get the BIG $$$ from AIPAC and, of course, Mitt’s $50 million contribution from Adelson the Zionist Jew. There is no free money. There are always strings attached. I guess supporting racist fascist Israel and legalization of homo/lesbian marriages are more important than banning the abortion death mills, among other evils and injustices in our country.

http://www.huffingtonpost.com/2012/0...n_1873683.html

http://www.policymic.com/articles/11...s-jewish-money

As God caused Old Testament Israel’s enemies to destroy Israel and bring them into captivity for sodomy, worship of pagan deities, sacrificing their children to Molech the false pagan god, and much more, God is bringing judgment on the USA, not only for our own wickedness within our nation, but politically and militarily entangling our country into the religious affairs (proxy wars) on behalf of Christ hating Papists and Zionists worldwide. These interventions on the part of the Papal/Zionist controlled USA have done nothing but inflame the radical Islamic followers. And it is these Islamic zealots God has raised up to bring judgment upon the USA and Israel’s allies, and rightly so. God is in control and is
no respecter of nations or peoples. God owes nothing to the USA or any other
country for His Kingdom is not of this world.


We the elect are ambassadors for Christ and His Kingdom. Our flag is Christ’s
robe dipped in His own blood. Our King is Jesus alone. As the Jews cried out
“we have no king but Ceaser”, we the elect cry out “we have no King but
Jesus Christ.”

It sickens me every time I hear people getting angered when attempts are made
to remove “In God we Trust” from our fiat monopoly money. Who cares?? What
God are they referring to? Is it the masonic “all seeing eye” that sits atop the
Babylonian mystery masonic pyramid on the back of your dollar bills? Or perhaps
it’s the god of Kabbalah. Or maybe it’s the false god of Arminians, Papists, and
apostate Protestants. Maybe Allah? Which God should we trust in? Maybe the
devil himself, who is the god and the father of reprobate Jews according to
Jesus. Why not lobby the Zionist owned and controlled FED to print “IN JESUS
CHRIST ALONE BY FAITH ALONE WE TRUST” on all our money? Try that on
for size!

Please don’t tell me this is a Christian nation anymore. It’s not! And if you believe
it is, well than I pray your slumbering eyes will be opened. You’re probably a
follower of Pat Robertson, the late Jerry Falwell, John Hagee, and all the other
nutcases previously mentioned. Patriots of all stripes and flags will be in hell.
Only Patriot Saints of Christ’s Kingdom will be at peace in His Kingdom.

If I were a regenerate elect German during the days of the third Reich, as an
ambassador of Christ’s Kingdom I would speak out against my country’s evil
rulers, just like the prophets of old spoke out against the wicked Jews and were
stoned for it. The same holds true for any country or any flag that we elect
prophets of God reside in.

Can you imagine Isaiah, Jeremiah, and Habakkuk preaching judgment and
impending doom on their country for the outright rebellion against God almighty,
while simultaneously the evil, stiff-necked, rebellious, God-hating Jews are
singing “God bless Israel” at halftime? The reprobate Jews stoned and killed the
prophets. They may have even told them, “You’re unpatriotic”, “Either love it or
leave it”, you know, the same garbage that blind loyalists to the USA or Nazi
Germany would say to anyone who dared to criticize their respective corrupt
government’s involvement with Christ hating Israel. Or perhaps the stiff-necked
rebellious Jews would have said to Isaiah, “Come on Isaiah, we have an
economic advantage by being allied to the nations that God forbade we unite
with.” You know, the same logic idiots have used to rationalize sending your sons
and daughters to shed their blood to protect a heathen and Christ-rejecting
Israel. Sending billions of dollars we don’t have to Israel, but borrowing from
those same Jews who run the fiat printing presses. We as a nation constitutionally should coin our own money and not have to borrow fiat currency from the heathen Jews.

Stupid Americans sing “God bless America” to a god they do not know nor believe in only because of tradition. Then, after the song, they scream discrimination when they see the Ten Commandments on a public facility. “Nero fiddled while Rome burned,” and so is America, living a hedonistic lifestyle while God is sending judgment upon their baby killing, sodomite lifestyle, wall street crooking, pornography soaked, Hollywood heathen, false gospel, ecumenical land. The nation’s housing industry balloon has busted. We see record setting foreclosures, record high unemployment, soaring and never ending federal debt, corruption at all levels of government. Baby killing, Drug cartels, illegal aliens destroying California, Arizona, and other states. False preachers plague the land like locusts, deceiving the gullible, while offering them false hopes for a PRICE $$$ while they live in the lap of luxury. These hucksters and snake oil salesmen don't give a crap about you. Just send them your SEED $$$ and wait for the miracle.

Would you sacrifice your life and country to defend Islam? Then why sacrifice your life and country to defend Zionistic/Judaism? They are both equally evil. Would you sacrifice your life and country to defend the Papacy and the Papal Vatican state? Then why would you sacrifice your life to fight their religious wars?

Go ahead Hagee and you bunch of false Jews and Christians. Stoke the fires of hate against Islam. Blame it all on them. America’s woes are all their fault, and only if we the USA support the “apple of God’s eye” (you know, the Christ-hating, Christ-cursing Talmudic racists over there in that God forsaken land), will the USA be blessed again. Keep up the sodomy, the abortion mills, and the false gospels. As long as you support Israel you will be fine? How dare these Muslims even consider warring against the Papacy and Zionist Israel: God’s Red, White and Blue Judeo-Christian Holy Land of the USA.

Fools! It is God that has brought them against you as a judgment on your evil and adulterous land.

http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=oIvbC...eature=related

John Hagee is the senior pastor of Cornerstone Church in San Antonio, Texas, and a disciple of Oral Roberts University. In other words, he is your typical Semi-Pelagian, Arminian, Pentecostal, Charismatic, free-will heretic.

I would like to comment on an article by Hagee in response to Pope Benedict’s visit to the USA in 2008. Hagee’s quotes are in Blue unless otherwise stated.

Hagee: "But when it comes to his moral vision for America and the world I have
one thing to say in response to the Pope’s visit: Amen.”

This is typical ecumenical language no doubt. Moral vision for America? Who is he kidding?

Hagee: “I and many other evangelical leaders believe that our faith must not be confined to our churches on Sunday mornings. We maintain that our Christian values and compassion can be powerful tools for helping build a more just and humane nation.”

Social reconstructionism and social engineering in the hands of religious tyrants never worked in the past and will never work EVER! Hagee’s sucking up to the Pope shows he has no clue of what he is saying or what he is up against.

Benedict XVI said, “Any tendency to treat religion as a private matter must be resisted,” and called for Christian participation “in the exchange of ideas in the public square.”

Popes and their minions do not exchange ideas in the public square. They dictate the climate and attempt to control the outcomes. Hagee just follows the leader.

“The pope likewise voiced all of our concerns when he recognized the threats posed by secularism and materialism not only to our morality but to our happiness.”

Without the true Gospel of Jesus Christ, secularism and materialism are irrelevant. The social Marxist gospel never saved one lost soul.

“As people of faith, our concerns go well beyond the borders of our country. After the horrors of the Nazi Holocaust, we joined our Jewish brothers in saying ‘Never Again!’ For me, this commitment means never again allowing the Jewish people to be massacred or persecuted and thus helps to motivate my strong support for the State of Israel. But we also take from the Holocaust a universal ‘Never Again,’ which means that we must never again allow genocide to be perpetrated against any of God’s children anywhere in the world.”

As people of faith? What faith? What Gospel?

Our Jewish Brothers? Snyncretism and universalism at their finest hour.

Jesus our Lord said in Mt. 12:48-50 “48 But he answering him that told him, said: Who is my mother, and who are my brethren? 49 And stretching forth his hand towards his disciples, he said: Behold my mother and my brethren. 50 For whosoever shall do the will of my Father, that is in heaven, he is my brother, and sister, and mother.”
Jn. 6:40  “And this is the will of my Father that sent me: that every one who seeth the Son and believeth in him may have life everlasting. And I will raise him up in the last day.”

It is true that the Christ rejecting Jews, the Papists, and Hagee are all brothers. Brothers in arms against the LIVING CHRIST AND HIS GOSPEL.

God’s children?? All Christ rejectors will be in Hell. That includes Talmudic Jews, Muslims, Papists and all her ecumenical allies, and all who teach a false Christ and False Gospel. Talk about Jewish fairy tales and Papal/Zionist propaganda, Hagee should be awarded the Joseph Goebbels award for lifetime achievement in deceiving the masses.

"Thus all of our hearts cheered when Pope Benedict stood before the United Nations and stated so forcefully that when states fail to protect the basic human rights of their citizens, ‘the international community must intervene.’ Likewise, all people of faith applauded his comment in the same speech that it is religion’s ‘recognition of the transcendent value of every man and woman’ which provides the powerful source of our commitment to resist genocide and terrorism.”

Hagee is in step with the Pope, Vatican II’s impetus on syncretism, and current corrupt globalist political visionaries who all insist the international community (UN) must correct the evils of the world. They cannot correct their own evils, let alone others. What a hypocritical statement, Hagee. However, Hagee the evangelical false prophet of doom never talks about Palestinian women and children who are being robbed, raped, tortured, murdered, their homes and land being stolen by the racist Zionists.

You can read the complete article here.


Hagee is also one of those false prosperity preachers who teaches that in order to be financially prosperous you must first give $$$ to God before God can give financial prosperity back to you.

Hagee, in league with John Avanzini, Morris Cerullo, and the rest of the “Positive” faith confessors, falsely teaches that Christians can speak physical realities into existence as long as the believer exercises enough faith to accompany his or her verbal confession. He states, “There is a relationship between your soul and physical and financial prosperity.”

Hagee is nothing other than a Zionist and Papal pimp, who spews out one heresy after another.
Hagee has been given the “Humanitarian of the Year” award by the San Antonio B’nai B’rith Council. Hagee has also been bestowed the “ZOA Israel Service Award” by the Zionist Organization in Dallas, and honored with the “Henrietta Szold Award” by the Texas Southern Region of Hadassah.

Hagee’s zeal for the Talmudic Jewish Christ haters has caused him to commit the greatest of doctrinal errors concerning salvation, teaching that salvation for the Jews does not require an acceptance of Jesus Christ alone, through faith alone in His Gospel alone.

Trying to convert Jews is a “waste of time,” says Hagee, “Everyone else, whether Buddhist or Baha’i, needs to believe in Jesus, but not Jews. Jews already have a covenant with God that has never been replaced with Christianity.”

Since Talmudic Judaism and their extreme Zionist branch of Jews hate and reject Jesus Christ, a strange “dual covenant” has entered the realm of religion. Zionists promulgate that God has a separate covenant with Israel and another for the Gentile Church.

Hagee reaffirms Talmudic theology and Papal theology stating to the Houston Chronicle that he believes Jews have a special covenant with God and do not need to come to the cross for salvation. According to Hagee, Jews don’t need the Gospel.

Hagee: “I believe that every Jewish person who lives in the light of the Torah, which is the word of God, has a relationship with God and will come to redemption” (Houston Chronicle, April 30, 1988).

The sad part about Hagee’s above statement is that there are no Jews who follow the Torah. The Talmud has replaced the Torah. But even if there were Torah practicing Jews, that LAW could not save them.

Hagee: “I’m not trying to convert the Jewish people to the Christian faith... In fact, trying to convert Jews is a waste of time. Jews already have a covenant with God and that has never been replaced by Christianity” (Houston Chronicle, April 30, 1988, sec. 6, pg. 1).

From the beginning of these essays that started over a year ago, my main goal was to show the apostasy that confronted all of Christ’s elect throughout the history of man.

My main concern in writing is for the sake of the elect and the elect alone. The reprobates will always be blinded and hostile to the truth.

What we have witnessed in the past, and now up to this very day in our history, is
the never-ending repetition of blood and violence. How can mankind ever embrace religion as an answer to his or the world’s problems? It is religion that is the basic root of the problem. It is the unity of religious clerics and the apparatuses and machinery of governments that shed blood on this earth.

Next, we will address the theological origins and development of this current day Pseudo-Christian Zionism.
EVANGELICAL NEWS
It is better to be at Satan’s right hand
than to be in His path

PRAISE HIM

Dec 2014 issue NOW ON SALE!

DIE FOR ISRAEL
All praise JEWS and their ATROCITIES
The symbol of Christianity for regular Christians

The symbol of Christianity for Evangelical Christians

Christian Zionists about to be executed for their treason and depravity...

Don't worry. Satan has a place reserved for us near his throne.

Glory to Satan!
“My opinion of Christian Zionists? They’re scum.

But don’t tell them that. We need all the useful idiots we can get right now.”

Binyamin Bibi Netanyahu
An Amillennial Understanding of the Kingdom of God

Nicholas A. Laurienzo

Chapter 36
The Evolution of Futurism: Premillennialism, and Premillennial Dispensationalism

The basic premise for the theories above is founded upon an incorrect understanding of the Gospel with all its implications. We have shown this in many of the previous chapters.

If the true Israel of God is ALL the elect, from ALL ethnic nations, throughout ALL the world, then the universal Body of Christ (True Israel) is without a literal blood type and a literal nation with geographical borders. Furthermore, the conflict between the Elect and Reprobate takes on a spiritual dimension that bypasses culture, nation, and tongue. Israel of old did not grasp this spiritual dimension.

Paul the Apostle was the clearest teacher of what it meant to be considered a true Jew and part of the covenants, heritage, and Body of Christ. The opposition to Paul was those ethnic Jews who still saw the literal land of Israel and Torah observance as critical factors in maintaining Jewish roots and identity.

As previously discussed, the Ebionite and Nazarene (the major groups) communities never completely let go of Moses (law). They maintained that circumcision, which is a sign of submission to the law, was necessary for Gentiles to be incorporated into the distinctly Jewish church.

We cannot call these Torah adhering Jewish Christians full-blown dispensationalists, like the breed of our current day, but they both share some similarity. The early Jewish Christians, James to name just one, only appeased Paul and limited the Gentiles to only a few adherences of Moses. This was, no doubt, a compromise and quite paradoxical, however the basic underpinnings were still that the Gentile in some way or fashion must pay minimal homage to Moses while simultaneously professing belief and acceptance of Jesus Christ. James did not understand the Gospel.

Today, this ethnic Jewish homage has been more radical, in that salvation for the Jew can be achieved without faith and belief in Jesus Christ, which is neither Nazarene nor Ebionite. So we can attribute the basic errors as starting with the Torah adhering Christian Jews post ascension, and pre destruction of 70 AD. The basic question has always been, “who are God’s chosen people?” This question is the litmus test and line of demarcation that separates the sheep from goats. For contained in that question, is the Gospel of Jesus Christ alone.
If the Elect are God’s chosen people, and they are, then all of these futuristic, premillennial, dispensational theories can be flushed down the toilet, for they address the wrong people!

For the most part, even within the pseudo-Christianity of the heretical church fathers, they themselves did see the church of Jesus Christ as the New Israel. However their description of what constituted both the “Church” and the Pauline “Gospel” of imputation was at best faulty and heretical.

The main historical precedence post 70 AD that started to erode this “New Israel of God,” was penned by Jesuit Francisco Ribera (1537-1591).

Rather than listing the chronology of men and what they taught starting with Ribera to this day, I have supplied a link that is very informative showing the progression of Ribera’s futuristic theology to this day. The link also touches upon Preterism and its Jesuit roots.

**Disclaimer:** Although I agree with much of the original Historic Reformed Protestant School of prophetic interpretation, I differ with the literal date setting and confining of Anti-Christ forces strictly to the Papacy. With our present historical situation, and hindsight back to the reformation days, I cannot limit the Anti-Christ forces strictly to the Papacy, although I believe the Papacy and her ecumenical daughters are major players in apostasy and wickedness along with Talmudic Jews, Messianic Jews, and Islam. This will be addressed in upcoming segments.

http://www.aloha.net/~mikesch/antichrist.htm
Chapter 37
A Brief Comparison Of Present Tense Amillennialism, Postmillennialism, And Futuristic Premillennialism

Assuming one has taken the time to view the link supplied in the previous section and to read its articles, I will supply a brief summary as to how one would ascertain certain subjects that are relative to the elect of God.

When stating the term “Present Tense Amillennialism”, I want to make clear that this is not a denial of future aspects within the inter-advental period, such as an ever increasing hostility between the elect and reprobate, increasing tribulation, increasing apostasy, increasing persecution, increasing world conflicts and wars, etc., however this future increase is a matter of degree and not of spiritual conceptual origins as proposed in the Jesuitical system of Futurism as a whole. To cite one example: The Antichrist forces of evil have always been hostile to the Elect of God since the first Advent of our Lord, and are not limited to some past singular figure in history (Preterism) or to some future singular figure in the historical future (Futurism). Also, the errors of both Futurists and Preterists deal primarily with seeing Ethnic Jew Israel as the central focus of Eschatology, and not seeing the True Jew, New Israel, God’s elect people in Christ as the central focus of Eschatology.

Although the greatest rise of Futuristic and Preterist thought was written and promulgated ferociously by the Jesuits, there were a few early heretics, Cerinthus, Papias, Iranaeus, and Justin Martyr that had premillennial aspirations that were minimal at best and attracted no wide audiences.

Due to Jesuit influences and writings (counter-reformation), these heretical writings were advanced through the Anabaptists, Fundamentalists (19th century), and Dispensationalists (20th century).

The Jesuit writings further took root on Protestant soil through John Piscator (16th century), Joseph Mede (17th century), J. Brookes (19th century), and J.B. Payne (20th century). These men, along with those others previously listed in the supplied links, show the growth of apostasy from the reformation days. This is not saying that apostasy did not exist already from the days of the Apostles, but is showing the rapid decline of New Testament (Pauline) Amillennialism in favor of Jesuitical theology.

http://www.biblicalstudies.org.uk/pd...al/06-1_03.pdf
The Scriptures teach that:

1. The Old Testament prophets saw one singular linear coming of the Messiah on the future horizon in terms of the restoration of Israel.

2. The New Testament prophets separate this coming into two: First Advent (Inauguration) and Second Advent (Consummation).


Therefore, why should we expect the NT prophecy to be fulfilled with two future comings? This would mean a rapture (2nd coming), then a 1000-year reign of Christ in literal Jerusalem, then a third coming. The NT only speaks of the second coming in terms of a single, undivided event, sudden, cosmic, and eternal. It doesn’t call us to hope in these two alleged post-Calvary comings.

Part of the fault originates in apostate Judaistic assumptions due to extreme literalism: The Jews contended if the prophets spoke in earthly terms, they should expect earthly fulfillment; totally disregarding the spiritual dimensions as Christ our Lord so repeatedly railed against them in His parables.

Mt. 13:13 “Therefore speak I to them in parables: because they seeing see not; and hearing they hear not, neither do they understand.”

Mt. 13:34-35 “34 All these things spake Jesus unto the multitude in parables; and without a parable spake he not unto them, 35 That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophet, saying, I will open my mouth in parables; I will utter things which have been kept secret from the foundation of the world.”

Such Judaistic/Zionistic literalism leads to absurd conclusions such as that Jesus is not the fulfillment of the restored temple, thus the need for future sacrifices in some allegedly rebuilt Jewish Temple in a restored Land of Israel.

Staunch Judaistic literalism denies there is a true progression in spiritual revelation by refusing to allow the NT (Jesus Christ, The Apostles, Paul, Luke, etc.) to be our guides in how we read and understand the OT. The NT and Jesus interpret OT prophecy as being fulfilled in Christ’s Body. Hence any denial of the apostolic witness is Anti-Christ, and such were the reprobate Jews.

Our current day dualistic theories, being advanced by the Jesuits and John Hagee to name a few, promulgate two distinct and unrelated eschatological paths, one for the Jew and one for the Gentile. This embraced abrupt division is a major victory for the reprobate Jews. These stiff-necked, Christ-hating Jews can now gloat in their Zionist folly, justifying their acceptance of Barabbas and
rejection of Christ. **“Crucify Him!”** They are now absolved from any need of Jesus Christ. Hardly the truth, would you not agree? The Christ hating reprobate Jews will always have Christ’s blood upon them. That’s for sure!

Lu.12:42 **“And the Lord [God the Father] said, Who then is that faithful and wise steward [Jesus Christ], whom his lord [Father] shall make ruler over his household, to give them [the Elect] their portion of meat in due season?”**

On the other hand, the heretical post-millennialists envision a “Golden Age” in this temporal world whereby they see the Institutional Church ruling throughout the social and political tapestry of this world, along with most people that have been “Churched” or brought into submission through the use of political force or coercion. One would be hard pressed to find any such notion in the NT. Like the apostate Jews, the heretical Reconstructionist and the heretical dominionist must rely heavily in stark literalistic hermeneutics of the OT prophets. The only difference being which earthly utopia would be God honored. Earthly restored physical Israel (pre-mil), or the earthly institution of the Church (post-mil)?

Only the new creation can change this shadow world, not more social action, more evangelism, etc.

Postmillennialists are pseudo-optimist in that their future provisional Golden Age hope that still includes a world with sin, sinners, and evil is hardly a Golden age at all.

The NT teaches us the Kingdom of God/Heaven gradually adds the elect souls to the Kingdom of Heaven, but does not promise most people in the world will be converted. In fact, very few will be saved in contrast to the whole of mankind.

Mt. 7:14 **“Because strait is the gate, and narrow is the way, which leadeth unto life, and few there be that find it.”**

Mt. 20:16 **“So the last shall be first, and the first last: for many be called, but few chosen.”**

Jesus sums it up in a Kingdom parable while talking to the wicked Jews. These words have a spiritual application that includes not only Christ-rejecting religious Jews, but also false gospel preaching professed Christians.

Lu. 13:23-30 **“23 Then said one unto him, Lord, are there few that be saved? And he said unto them, 24 Strive to enter in at the strait gate: for many, I say unto you, will seek to enter in, and shall not be able. 25 When once the master of the house is risen up, and hath shut to the door, and ye begin to stand without, and to knock at the door, saying, Lord, Lord, open unto us; and he shall answer and say unto you, I know you not whence ye are: 26**
Then shall ye begin to say, We have eaten and drunk in thy presence, and thou hast taught in our streets. 27 But he shall say, I tell you, I know you not whence ye are; depart from me, all ye workers of iniquity. 28 There shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth, when ye shall see Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, and all the prophets, in the kingdom of God, and you yourselves thrust out. 29 And they shall come from the east, and from the west, and from the north, and from the south, and shall sit down in the kingdom of God. 30 And, behold, there are last which shall be first, and there are first which shall be last.”

Let’s analyze a few more:

1. Is there a future provisional Kingdom?
   Pre-mil: Yes, Israel will reign for 1000 years with Christ.
   Post-mil: Yes, The Churchly institution will reign spiritually with a greater measure of the Holy Spirit.
   Amil: No, we are reigning now in the provisional era.

2. Is there an Eschatological dualism?
   ○ Pre-mil: Yes, the Church now, and Israel later.
   ○ Post-mil: Yes, weak Church now, strong Church later.
   ○ Amil: No, good and evil persist together.

3. Is there an eternal state after the millennium?
   13. Pre-mil: Yes.
   15. Amil: Yes, because we are in the millennium now.

4. Is there triumphalism in this world?
   ○ Pre-mil: Yes, Jesus will rule with a Rod of Iron from literal Israel.
   ○ Post-mil: Yes, Church will have dominion over culture.
   ○ Amil: No, it will be like the days of Noah. However, Christ does rule over the reprobate and all things because He is Sovereign.

5. Are things going to get better?
   25. Pre-mil: Yes, when Christ comes physically after the Rapture to establish a Jewish 1000-year Kingdom.
   27. Amil: No, wheat and tares and sheep and goats will remain until the end. Darkness, hardness of heart, and wickedness on this earth will increase in rebellion against Christ and mankind.

Many more such contrasts can be mentioned. However, reading the NT, you cannot honestly make a case for Pre-mil, Post-mil, or Full preterism.

Next, a brief history of the Jews, from their origins to 70 AD, to our present day.
Introduction:

Jn. 7:13 “Yet no man spoke openly of him, for fear of the Jews.”

Jn. 19:38 “And after these things, Joseph of Arimathea (because he was a disciple of Jesus, but secretly for fear of the Jews), besought Pilate that he might take away the body of Jesus. And Pilate gave leave. He came therefore and took away the body of Jesus.”

Jn. 20:19 “Now when it was late the same day, the first of the week, and the doors were shut, where the disciples were gathered together, for fear of the Jews, Jesus came and stood in the midst and said to them: Peace be to you.”

Ac. 4:18 “And calling them, they charged them not to speak at all, nor teach in the name of Jesus.”

Ac. 5:40 “And calling in the apostles, after they had scourged them, they charged them that they should not speak at all in the name of Jesus. And they dismissed them.”

Fear is a great motivational tool wielded in the hands of reprobates both ecclesiastical and political. Fear causes men both regenerate and unregenerate to act in ways that are contrary to their own consciousness of right and wrong. Fear’s evil grip over the consciousness of men cause them to look the other way, willfully deny or ignore facts, follow the crowd, become flag worshipers of
nationalistic pride, and to not completely stand in the gap and say “enough is enough, I am a man of God/Christ and must speak forth the truth.”

What does mankind fear? Numerous things: loss of life, loss of liberty, loss of family relations, loss of friends, loss of job, loss of assets, loss of status, being falsely stereotyped, being slandered, being imprisoned, etcetera. Or better yet, being smeared as an “anti-Semite”. These fears thus stifle the lips hence silencing the light of truth on their behalf.

Most of mankind feels more comfortable burying their heads in the sand, listening to and obeying their political and clerical priests, dreaming all is going to be OK, thinking that if tribulation has not affected them personally, then it does not exist, or thinking why should I be concerned?

It takes a special kind of people to stand in the gap and thunder forth truth against evil governments and religions. These people are created and fashioned by a Sovereign God. They are driven and equipped by the Holy Spirit to overcome their fears in times of great need and urgency, selling all, picking up the Cross/Gospel and following Jesus Christ into the battle between light and darkness.

In the past, speaking God’s word against the reprobate Jews meant death, imprisonment, or exile.

When the reprobate Jew is in control he is the most reprehensible and vile creature ever created by God and put upon the face of this earth.

We as God’s elect must be thankful for the destruction of Israel in 70 AD, for that destruction temporarily broke the evil power, influence, and authority of Christ-hating, reprobate Israel, and showed the Gentile world God’s disposition toward a Christ-rejecting nation and cursed people.

Currently the Western world once again has been deceived/beguiled by these evil Christ-hating people. They have gained ascendancy into the very threads of civil and religious fabric in parts of the world and particularly the USA. These evil Jews have silenced the majority of pulpits and politicians. Hence we are living in an age where many will not speak out against them “for fear of the Jews.”
The LORD'S Old Testament Words against the reprobate Jews/Hebrews

De. 4:32-40  "32 Ask of the days of old, that have been before thy time from the day that God created man upon the earth, from one end of heaven to the other end thereof, if ever there was done the like thing, or it hath been known at any time, 33 That a people should hear the voice of God speaking out of the midst of fire, as thou hast heard, and lived: 34 If God ever did so as to go, and take to himself a nation out of the midst of nations by temptations, signs, and wonders, by fight, and a strong hand, and stretched out arm, and horrible visions according to all the things that the Lord your God did for you in Egypt, before thy eyes. 35 That thou mightest know that the Lord he is God, and there is no other besides him. 36 From heaven he made thee to hear his voice, that he might teach thee. And upon earth he shewed thee his exceeding great fire, and thou didst hear his words out of the midst of the fire, 37 Because he loved thy fathers, and chose their seed after them. And he brought thee out of Egypt, going before thee with his great power, 38 To destroy at thy coming very great nations, and stronger than thou art, and to bring thee in, and give thee their land for a possession, as thou seest at this present day. 39 Know therefore this day, and think in thy heart that the Lord he is God in heaven above, and in the earth beneath, and there is no other. 40 Keep his precepts and commandments, which I command thee: that it may be well with thee, and thy children after thee, and thou mayst remain a long time upon the land, which the Lord thy God will give thee."

De. 7:7-11  "7 Not because you surpass all nations in number, is the Lord joined unto you, and hath chosen you, for you are the fewest of any people: 8 But because the Lord hath loved you, and hath kept his oath, which he swore to your fathers: and hath brought you out with a strong hand, and redeemed you from the house of bondage, out of the hand of Pharaoh the king of Egypt. 9 And thou shalt know that the Lord thy God, he is a strong and faithful God, keeping his covenant and mercy to them that love him, and to them that keep his commandments, unto a thousand generations: 10 And repaying forthwith them that hate him, so as to destroy them, without further delay immediately rendering to them what they deserve. 11 Keep therefore the precepts and ceremonies and judgments, which I command thee this day to do."

A few observations: Reprobate Jew Israel among the nations of this world have witnessed the supernatural hand of the Creator more than any other people on the face of this earth. Not only witnessing God’s mighty hand, but also His very words and truths as spoken and written by His elect ones. No other people/nation collectively can make this claim. However, resting in their egotistical, national, ethnic, and religious pride, they failed to understand that God only chose them not because they were some superior race of men --- or some holy people --- but God chose them because of an oath and love He had for their fathers Abraham,
Isaac, and Jacob. An oath that was made good in and through Jesus Christ the Messiah alone!! That’s all! Nothing more!

The reprobate Jews failed to grasp God’s purpose and reason for choosing them! And to this very day these wicked ones still are and will forever be blinded by Christ, along with the people, governments, and religions that support and donate money to them.

We the elect in Christ (true Jews) should NEVER succumb to peer pressures, some politically correct mentality, some churchian mentality, but should speak the Word of God against these evil people. And this we will do in this section. It’s their turn now.

I recall around 1985 while then residing in Northeast Ohio, my wife Elaine and I were visiting one of the metro parks around our area. We loved seeing the trees, the forests, the streams, the ponds filled with Canadian geese and ducks, the birds, squirrels and chipmunks, and hiking on the trails. By one of the duck ponds there were a group of Hasidic/Talmudic Jews. As we walked by these religious fanatics (you can spot them a mile away - hyperbole), we offered to give them a Gospel tract entitled “Jesus the Messiah of the Jews”. We carried many such tracts on us to give to people when the Lord led us to do so. You had to be there to see the look on their faces. These Jews were turning red with hate and started speaking in Hebrew, or probably Yiddish, I don’t know. But when they did start to speak English to us, they said, “we don’t want your Jesus,” “we don’t need your Jesus.” One of them, who did take the tract from me, threw it on the ground and stepped on it. They walked away in anger and started babbling again in their language. Of course not to litter the grounds in the park as these Jews did, we picked up the tracts. These and such other similar experiences that Christ has given to my wife and I are priceless.

How does God view the reprobate Jew? This is really all that matters, at least to me. Since Christ is of God, and we are of Christ, and we are in Christ, we share the same mind as Christ/God. God uses many different words to reveal the character and treachery of these evil ones. Let’s look at a few.

**Stiff-necked:** This term originated in ancient Israel. The farmers would plow their fields by using oxen. If the ox didn’t want to follow the guidance of the farmer it would stiffen the muscles in its neck. This would make it impossible to guide the ox where it needed to go. When one is described as “stiff-necked” in the Scriptures it means that they refuse to follow the guidance of the Lord. Read God’s own words in the below link.

http://www.biblestudytools.com/search...ps=10&s=Bibles

**Harlot:** This word has one essential meaning and is used in many different contexts. Its basic meaning is whoredom and unfaithfulness. It can describe a
singular person, a group, or a nation as a whole, such as Israel the Harlot.

Je. 3:1 “They say, If a man put away his wife, and she go from him, and become another man’s, shall he return unto her again? shall not that land be greatly polluted? but thou (Israel) hast played the harlot with many lovers; yet return again to me, saith the LORD.”

The LORD raises a few interesting points. Since God’s marriage to Israel was strictly and only based on a Law covenant, the LORD was inferring to these wicked ones that when He divorces Israel any attempt for reconciliation after the divorce would only serve to pollute the land because of their defilement. Once a legal bill of divorcement is enforced the parties are no longer wedded.

Je. 3:6 “The LORD said also unto me in the days of Josiah the king, Hast thou seen that which backsliding Israel hath done? she is gone up upon every high mountain and under every green tree, and there hath played the harlot.”

Je. 3:8 “That because the rebellious Israel had played the harlot, I had put her away, and had given her a bill of divorce: yet her treacherous sister Juda was not afraid, but went and played the harlot also herself. 9 And by the facility of her fornication she defiled the land, and played the harlot with stones and with stocks. 10 And after all this, her treacherous sister Juda hath not returned to me with her whole heart, but with falsehood, saith the Lord. 11 And the Lord said to me: The rebellious Israel hath justified her soul, in comparison of the treacherous Juda.”

Je. 3:20 “But as a woman that despiseth her lover, so hath the house of Israel despised me, saith the Lord.”

Israel played the harlot with everyone, every thing, every foul occult pagan religion, every foul philosophy, and every pagan thought. Then and now. Her only salvation was through Jesus Christ alone. But these devils would not have Him, finally saying, “Crucify Him.”

Jeremiah 3 is a chapter that pre-mil and Jew lovers don’t like. So they twist its meaning.

Eze. 16:28 “Thou hast played the whore also with the Assyrians, because thou wast unsatiable; yea, thou hast played the harlot with them, and yet couldest not be satisfied.”

Eze 23:5 “And Aholah/Oolla played the harlot when she was mine; and she doted on her lovers, on the Assyrians her neighbours.”

Who is Aholah/Oolla?
Eze. 23:1 “The word of the LORD came again unto me, saying, 2 Son of man, there were two women, the daughters of one mother: 3 And they committed whoredoms in Egypt; they committed whoredoms in their youth: there were their breasts pressed, and there they bruised the teats of their virginity. 4 And the names of them were Aholah the elder, and Aholibah her sister: and they were mine, and they bare sons and daughters. Thus were their names; Samaria is Aholah, and Jerusalem Aholibah.”

Eze. 23:44 “Yet they went in unto her, as they go in unto a woman that playeth the harlot: so went they in unto Aholah and unto Aholibah, the lewd women.”

God likens both Samaria and Jerusalem as whores! That parcel of real estate over there in that land called Israel, with those people called Jews today are nothing but a nation of whores!


Ho. 2:5 “For their mother hath played the harlot: she that conceived them hath done shamefully: for she said, I will go after my lovers, that give me my bread and my water, my wool and my flax, mine oil and my drink.”

Read the whole chapter: [http://www.biblestudytools.com/rhe/hosea/2.html](http://www.biblestudytools.com/rhe/hosea/2.html)

The end of Hosea chapter 2 foretells of the glorious restoration of “True Israel” in Christ the Messiah for both Jew and Gentile, for we are one in Christ.

**Devil Worshipers:** This is another description God uses to reveal the nature of these vermin reprobate Jews.

De. 32:17 “They sacrificed unto devils, not to God; to gods whom they knew not, to new gods that came newly up, whom your fathers feared not.”

2 Chr. 11:15 “And he ordained him priests for the high places, and for the devils, and for the calves which he had made.”

Ps. 106:37 “Yea, they sacrificed their sons and their daughters unto devils.”

Talk about hardening. Here is a stiff-necked, whoring, harlot people to whom the all powerful, ever Holy Creator of the universe manifested Himself. And yet they did the unspeakable! They became devil worshipers and murdered their own children! Talk about gratitude from being freed from the yoke and bondage of Egypt. A dog shows more kindness and loyalty to its master than reprobate Jews have shown to God Almighty.

Let all these Jew/Zionist lovers chew on that nut for a while. What fools the pew
warmers have become. What fools our modern day preachers are. They see
their minister, pastor, and priest with their certificates of ordination, their pretty
clothing, styled hair, manicured nails, fancy suits, and say with open mouths and
groveling lips, “teach us, oh man of God” and when they are taught they become
twice blind and children of Hell.

The LORD in the OT had many more such harsh words to describe these
infamous reprobate Jews and their wicked, foul, abominable, cursed nation.

**Idolatrous**

2 K. 23:5 “And he put down the idolatrous priests, whom the kings of Judah had
ordained to burn incense in the high places in the cities of Judah, and in the
places round about Jerusalem; them also that burned incense unto Baal, to the
sun, and to the moon, and to the planets, and to all the host of heaven.”

**Foolish and Sottish**

Je. 4:22 “For my people is foolish, they have not known me; they are sottish
children, and they have none understanding: they are wise to do evil, but to do
good they have no knowledge.”

**Evil People**

Je. 13:10 “This evil people, which refuse to hear my words, which walk in the
imagination of their heart, and walk after other gods, to serve them, and to
worship them, shall even be as this girdle, which is good for nothing.”

**Mischievous**

Ps. 38:12 “They also that seek after my life lay snares for me: and they that seek
my hurt speak mischievous things, and imagine deceits all the day long.”

**No Understanding**

Is. 27:11 “When the boughs thereof are withered, they shall be broken off; the
women shall come, and set them on fire; for it is a people of no understanding:
therefore he that made them will not have compassion upon them, and he that
formed them will show them no favor.”

**Deceitful**

Ps 119:118 “Thou hast trodden down all them that err from thy statutes: for their
deceit is falsehood.”
Je. 8:5 “Why then is this people of Jerusalem slidden back by a perpetual backsliding? they hold fast deceit, they refuse to return.”

Treacherous

Zep. 3:4 “Her (false) prophets are light and treacherous persons: her priests have polluted the sanctuary, they have done violence to the law.”

Murderers

Is. 1:21 “How is the faithful city become an harlot! it was full of judgment; righteousness lodged in it; but now murderers.”

False Prophets

Je. 14:14 “Then the LORD said unto me, The prophets prophesy lies in my name: I sent them not, neither have I commanded them, neither spake unto them: they prophesy unto you a false vision and divination, and a thing of nought, and the deceit of their heart.”

Lam. 2:14 “Thy prophets have seen vain and foolish things for thee: and they have not discovered thine iniquity, to turn away thy captivity; but have seen for thee false burdens and causes of banishment.”

Blind

Is. 56:10 “His watchmen are blind: they are all ignorant, they are all dumb dogs, they cannot bark; sleeping, lying down, loving to slumber.”

Lam. 4:14 “They have wandered as blind men in the streets, they have polluted themselves with blood, so that men could not touch their garments.”

Zep. 1:17 “And I will bring distress upon men, that they shall walk like blind men, because they have sinned against the LORD: and their blood shall be poured out as dust, and their flesh as the dung.”

Uncircumcised Heart

Je. 6:10 “To whom shall I speak, and give warning, that they may hear? behold, their ear is uncircumcised, and they cannot hearken: behold, the word of the LORD is unto them a reproach; they have no delight in it.”

Je. 9:26 “Egypt, and Judah, and Edom, and the children of Ammon, and Moab, and all that are in the utmost corners, that dwell in the wilderness: for all these nations are uncircumcised, and all the house of Israel are uncircumcised in the heart.”

439
Cursed People

Read Deuteronomy 28.

Hardhearted Israel

Eze. 3:7 “But the house of Israel will not hearken unto thee; for they will not hearken unto me: for all the house of Israel are impudent and hardhearted.”

Impudent, Rebellious, Stiff-hearted People

Eze. 2:1-10 “1 And he said unto me, Son of man, stand upon thy feet, and I will speak unto thee. 2 And the spirit entered into me when he spake unto me, and set me upon my feet, that I heard him that spake unto me. 3 And he said unto me, Son of man, I send thee to the children of Israel, to a rebellious nation that hath rebelled against me: they and their fathers have transgressed against me, even unto this very day. 4 For they are impudent children and stiffhearted. I do send thee unto them; and thou shalt say unto them, Thus saith the Lord GOD. 5 And they, whether they will hear, or whether they will forbear, (for they are a rebellious house,) yet shall know that there hath been a prophet among them. 6 And thou, son of man, be not afraid of them, neither be afraid of their words, though briers and thorns be with thee, and thou dost dwell among scorpions: be not afraid of their words, nor be dismayed at their looks, though they be a rebellious house. 7 And thou shalt speak my words unto them, whether they will hear, or whether they will forbear: for they are most rebellious. 8 But thou, son of man, hear what I say unto thee; Be not thou rebellious like that rebellious house: open thy mouth, and eat that I give thee. 9 And when I looked, behold, an hand was sent unto me; and, lo, a roll of a book was therein; 10 And he spread it before me; and it was written within and without: and there was written therein lamentations, and mourning, and woe.”

Adulterers

1 Chr. 5:25 “But they forsook the God of their fathers, and went astray after the gods of the people of the land, whom God destroyed before them.”

Baal Worshipers

Jud. 2:13 “And they forsook the LORD, and served Baal and Ashtaroth.”

2 K. 17:16 “And they left all the commandments of the LORD their God, and made them molten images, even two calves, and made a grove, and worshipped all the host of heaven, and served Baal.”

Zep. 1:4 “I will also stretch out mine hand upon Judah, and upon all the
inhabitants of Jerusalem; and I will cut off the remnant of Baal from this place, and the name of the Chemarims with the priests;"

There are many more such words, terms, and phrases that our LORD God used in the OT Scriptures to depict the true nature of the reprobate Jew.

If one is led by the Holy Spirit to witness or discuss the Gospel of Jesus Christ to a Jew, you must remember one thing. The Jew does not accept the New Testament at all. So quoting passages from the NT will be difficult. It is best to show these unregenerate Christ haters what God from the Old Testament says about them and their religious ancestors. This would be a better approach, though still difficult, because these devils don’t fully believe that either. What matters to them most is the Talmudic interpretation of the Torah, which is Satanic at best. That is their final authority. We will discuss Talmudic origins in upcoming segments.

Don’t ever be afraid of these Jewish devils. Don’t be intimidated by their looks: "be not afraid of their words, nor be dismayed at their looks.” To them you are nothing but Goyim trash, pigs, and dogs.

These Christ hating devils would have not one shred of sympathy if you were tortured or crucified. And please, dear brother and sister in Christ, don’t fall into the trap and guilt trip of being called an “anti-semitic”. That is a false term invented by these devils to silence the truth of God/Christ against them and their evil activities. These parasites think they’re infallible, beyond and above reproach. You can thank the pseudo-Christian fools starting from Great Britain and plagued in this USA for the past 150 years by false gospel preachers who helped to sanitize a Christ hating people with their Christ hating religion. Now the Western world grovels and worships the JEW/Israel. What fools they have become.

Currently there are Evangelical and Pentecostal churches that display flags and banners with the occult Star of David in front of their church buildings. They even have Christ hating Rabbis get behind the pulpit and speak their foulness. Why not? These false Christians allow Catholic priests behind their pulpits, too.

One thing is for sure, foul birds of a feather stick together. “And he cried mightily with a strong voice, saying, Babylon the great is fallen, is fallen, and is become the habitation of devils, and the hold of every foul spirit, and a cage of every unclean and hateful bird.”

We will continue to look at what God says about these Christ hating devils from the New Testament witness of the Holy Spirit.
Malachi 4:1-6 “1 For, behold, the day cometh [first advent], it burneth as a furnace; and all the proud, and all that work wickedness, shall be stubble; and the day that cometh shall burn them up, saith Jehovah of hosts, that it shall leave them [National Israel] neither root nor branch [cursing of the fig tree Israel]. 2 But unto you [elect] that fear my name shall the sun of righteousness [Jesus Christ] arise with healing in its wings; and ye shall go forth, and gambol as calves of the stall. 3 And ye [elect] shall tread down the wicked [reprobate]; for they shall be ashes under the soles of your feet in the day that I make, saith Jehovah of hosts. 4 Remember ye the law of Moses my servant [Moses spake of Christ], which I commanded unto him in Horeb for all Israel, even statutes and ordinances. 5 Behold, I will send you Elijah the prophet [John the Baptist] before the great and terrible day of Jehovah come [Jesus Christ’s first advent]. 6 And he [Jesus] shall turn the heart of the fathers to the children, and the heart of the children to their fathers; lest I come and smite the earth with a curse.”

Read the whole book of Malachi (only 4 chapters).

These words of the LORD written in the book entitled Malachi were recorded around 458 to 433 B.C.

This was a period of great wickedness in Israel. This evil and wickedness grew to greater proportions by the time John the Baptist and Jesus arrived on the scene. The prophet addresses the total breakdown, collapse, and rebellion against Mosaic ceremonial admonitions and the Mosaic covenant in general, such as offering polluted sacrifices, polluting the Temple, swindling the people, etc. The Levitical priesthood was thoroughly corrupt and degenerate. It was similar to our modern day clergy/clerics/pastors/leaders, etc. The people were corrupt. They were similar to our modern day pew warmers. Jews were intermarrying with foreign wives, and more wickedness in Israel’s very bowels. Israel had become the cancer on the earth and still is to this very day.

But there was hope on the horizon for God’s elect Jews who dwelt amongst the reprobate Jews who had seized control over every thread and facet of Israel’s society. The people were living under tyranny due to their religious and political oppressors. This is similar to our current day lying, false-gospel, religious peddlers and corrupt politicians. No difference! Same evil, another time.
When God silenced His voice against these reprobates for over 400 years, the reprobate Jews and their leaders thought they had gained victory over God. Their ethnic pride swelled, thinking in their hardened hearts that if God was silent they must be in good standing. However they were in for a rude awakening. No more human prophets after “the Baptist” will be sent.

GOD, THE CREATOR OF THE UNIVERSE, WILL COME HIMSELF IN THE PERSON OF JESUS CHRIST AND CONDEMN THESE INFIDEL, WICKED, BLASPHEMING, CHILDREN OF THE DEVIL JEWS.

In that day, there was blessing and cursing: blessing for the elect, and cursing for the reprobate. Especially the curse of the destruction of that wicked nation, Israel.

Mt. 1:21 “And she shall bring forth a son, and thou shalt call his name JESUS: for he shall save his [elect] people from their sins.”

Jn. 1:11-13 “11 He came unto his own [ethnic Israel], and his own [ethnic Israel] received him not. 12 But as many [elect] as received him, to them [elect] gave he power to become the sons of God, even to them [elect] that believe on his name: 13 Which were born, not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God.”

Mt. 10:6 “But go rather to the lost sheep [elect] of the house of Israel.”

Mt. 15:24 “But he answered and said, I am not sent but unto the lost sheep [elect] of the house of Israel.”

Mt. 18:11 “For the Son of man is come to save that [elect] which was lost.”

Lu. 15:4 “What man of you, having an hundred sheep [elect], if he lose one of them, doth not leave the ninety and nine [elect] in the wilderness, and go after that [elect] which is lost, until he find it?”

Lu. 15:6 “And when he cometh home, he calleth together his friends and neighbours, saying unto them, Rejoice with me; for I have found my [elect] sheep which was lost.”

Lu. 19:10 “For the Son of man is come to seek and to save that [the elect] which was lost.”

Jn. 17:12 “While I was with them in the world, I kept them in thy name: those that thou gavest me [elect] I have kept, and none of them [elect] is lost, but the [reprobate] son of perdition; that the scripture might be fulfilled.”
Jn. 18:9 “That the saying might be fulfilled, which he spake, Of them [elect] which thou gavest me have I lost none.”

Jesus our Lord was a man on a mission. He is the God/Man who received His orders directly from His Father. He is a man determined to do the will of His Father and His Father’s will alone. He is a man who was given a list of beloved elect people from His father. And it was these elect people alone for whom this King would come. He is a man who poured out His life to defend His father’s honor, and raised Himself from the dead to vindicate His elect from their sins. He is a man who set up His Kingdom in the midst of the evil kingdoms of Rome and Israel. He is a God/Man that will come again not to be spat upon, reviled, mocked, beaten, slandered, and crucified, but a King who is coming again to thoroughly crush the wicked reprobates and destroy this evil shadow world. He is a King and Savior that will establish the real and true garden of paradise where no reprobates will be admitted.

Let the battle begin! We shall see what God continues to say about these Jews.

Mt. 3:7 “But when he [John the Baptist] saw many of the Pharisees and Sadducees come to his baptism, he said unto them, O generation of vipers, who hath warned you to flee from the wrath to come?” (cf. Lu. 3:7).

“...offspring of vipers,”
“You snakes!”
“...brood of vipers,”
“Generation of adders,”

Mt. 12:34 “O generation of vipers, how can ye, being evil, speak good things? for out of the abundance of the heart the mouth speaketh.”

Mt. 23:23 “Ye serpents, ye generation of vipers, how can ye escape the damnation of hell?” They cannot.

The Holy Spirit [the Spirit that indwells Christ’s elect regenerate Saints] speaking through John the Baptist conveys some very important principles to God’s elect Saints.

The “viper” Viperidae is a family (brood, generation) of venomous snakes found all over the world. Such as the reprobate Jews were then, and more so after their dispersion, and especially today throughout the world and in that cursed land and people called Israel.

In the Scriptures, the usages of “viper” are addressed to cunning, malignant, and wicked men who spread their deadly venom through lies, distortion, and false religion. The Scriptures use this term alluding to that arch deceiver, “the serpent” Satan, in the Garden of Eden.
All reprobates have their origin in Satan, and forever will be damned and cursed. They were created by God to be vessels of dishonor, wrath and destruction.

The reprobate Jews, along with their reprobate Christ-hating clergy, are such devils, snakes and vipers. Then and today.

“Being evil”

The reprobate, Christ-rejecting Jew is an evil, demonic being. He is not a “chosen one” as many blind men are and were so misled to believe. All reprobates have been consigned to evil. The Hebrew word “ra” and its NT counterparts not only speak of evil doings and actions, but speak of the actual essence of evil “ra” as a created entity/substance. “Ra” is a created darkness in contrast to created light. All reprobates are consigned to outer darkness, the “damnation of hell.”

Mt. 3:10 “And now also the axe is laid unto the root of the trees: therefore every tree which bringeth not forth good fruit is hewn down, and cast into the fire.”

What is the axe in relation to the one who wields the axe?

Is.10:15 “Shall the axe boast itself against him that heweth therewith? or shall the saw magnify itself against him that shaketh it? as if the rod should shake itself against them that lift it up, or as if the staff should lift up itself, as if it were no wood.”

In John’s day, and in context, the individual Jew was likened as a tree [figures of speech]. If that Jew rejected Jesus Christ, the Gospel, Christ’s Kingdom, His Kingship, His Messiah-ship, and entrance into the true Israel of God through faith alone in Christ alone, the axe wielder, Jesus Himself, would cut that tree down and cast it into the fire [hell] (cf. Mt. 7:17-19).

Mt. 8:8-12 “8 The centurion answered and said, Lord, I am not worthy that thou shouldest come under my roof: but speak the word only, and my servant shall be healed. 9 For I am a man under authority, having soldiers under me: and I say to this man, Go, and he goeth; and to another, Come, and he cometh; and to my servant, Do this, and he doeth it. 10 When Jesus heard it, he marvelled, and said to them that followed, Verily I say unto you, I have not found so great faith, no, not in Israel. 11 And I say unto you, That many [gentiles] shall come from the east and west, and shall sit down with Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, in the kingdom of heaven. 12 But the children of the kingdom [ethnic Jew Israel] shall be cast out into outer darkness: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth (cf. Lu. 7:2-10).
Let's look at my brother the Centurion.

The backbone of the Roman army was the centurion. The centurions were legionaries and they were clearly noticed because they wore a special helmet, and a more ornate harness of much better quality. They carried a short vinewood staff as a symbol of rank. They worked their way up the ranks as soldiers, and were promoted for their dedication and courage. They were the veteran soldiers who commanded 100 men each, within a legion of 6,000. There were thus 60 centuries in a legion, each under the command of a centurion. During the time of Augustus there were 28 legions.

The centurion received pay that amounted to more than 20 times the ordinary soldier’s pay, about 5,000 denarii per year. There were actually five senior centurions in a legion that received 10,000 denarii per year, and the chief centurion (the first javelin) received 20,000 denarii in pay annually. The common soldier received around 200-300 denarii per year.

During the time of Jesus, the headquarters of the Roman army in Judea was located at Caesarea, on the Mediterranean coast.

Here is a man with honor, rank, prestige, economic substance, and respect. A man according to the self-righteous vile Satanic Jews who would be considered a “Goy”, “Heathen”, “Cattle”, “Beast”, and “Cuthean”.

However, here was a man who met Jesus. A man in the Roman world’s eyes who was considered a worthy man. But he was a man who was given “eyes to see and ears to hear”, and considered himself an unworthy man compared to Jesus Christ. He was a man who understood authority and where authority is
derived from. He was a man that believed Jesus’ authority was from GOD Himself. And here was a man that Jesus said to His Jewish followers, a man who possessed great faith and would sit in the Kingdom of Heaven with Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob.

This brother in Christ was unlike Israel according to Jesus. He possessed a faith that reprobate Israel did not have. A FAITH IN JESUS CHRIST!! Jesus made sure He drove that point home very deeply saying, “12 But the children of the kingdom [ethnic Jew Israel] shall be cast out into outer darkness: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.”

Unlike the pseudo-Christian ordained pulpit pimps today, who are more concerned with their salaries, pension and health plans, prestige, honor, status, following, and clerical rank, this one Centurion would have risked it all for Jesus and truth. And like the reprobate Jewish devils these [false gospel preaching, Jew/Israel lovers] will not submit to Jesus for fear of loss and/or “fear of the Jews.”

When Jesus healed the man with palsy and forgave his sins, certain of the scribes said within themselves, This man blasphemeth.

When Jesus cast out a devil from a dumb man, the Pharisees said, He casteth out devils through the prince of the devils.

These wicked self-righteous Jews, then and today, take pleasure in associating Jesus the Holy One of Israel, the Awesome and Mighty Creator, as being a blasphemer and compatriot of devils. Only the reprobate Jews have gone to such extreme measures in their open rebellion against God and His Christ.

If there ever was a people created by God to manifest the height of total depravity within mankind and a God hardened people it would be the reprobate Christ hating Jew. The reprobate Jew along with Jew/Israel lovers and supporters partake in the same depravity and blindness.

Mt. 9:36 “But when he [Jesus] saw the multitudes, he was moved with compassion on them, because they fainted, and were scattered abroad, as sheep having no shepherd.”

Oh how true! The only perfect Shepherd for the elect sheep is Jesus Christ. The reprobate Jews had no true shepherds. The ones they had, they killed, suppressed, or exiled. The reprobate pseudo-Christians have no true shepherds, other than their blind false-gospel preaching clergy/pastors.

“Behold, I send you forth as sheep in the midst of wolves: be ye therefore wise as serpents, and harmless as doves” (Mt. 10:16).
Reprobate Israel is likened unto wolves.

“Beware of false prophets, which come to you in sheep’s clothing, but inwardly they are ravening wolves” (Mt. 7:15).

Our beloved brother Paul had this to say:

Ac. 20:16-38 “16 For Paul had determined to sail by Ephesus, lest he should be stayed any time in Asia. For he hasted if it were possible for him, to keep the day of Pentecost at Jerusalem. 17 And sending from Miletus to Ephesus, he called the ancients of the church. 18 And when they were come to him and were together, he said to them: You know from the first day that I came into Asia, in what manner I have been with you, for all the time. 19 Serving the Lord with all humility and with tears and temptations which befell me by the conspiracies of the Jews: 20 How I have kept back nothing that was profitable to you, but have preached it to you, and taught you publicly, and from house to house, 21 Testifying both to Jews and Gentiles repentance towards God and faith in our Lord Jesus Christ. 22 And now, behold, being bound in the spirit, I go to Jerusalem: not knowing the things which shall befall me there: 23 Save that the Holy Ghost in every city witnesseth to me, saying: That bands and afflictions wait for me at Jerusalem. 24 But I fear none of these things, neither do I count my life more precious than myself, so that I may consummate my course and the ministry of the word which I received from the Lord Jesus, to testify the gospel of the grace of God. 25 And now behold, I know that all you, among whom I have gone preaching the kingdom of God, shall see my face no more. 26 Wherefore I take you to witness this day that I am clear from the blood of all men. 27 For I have not spread to declare unto you all, the counsel of God. 28 Take heed to yourselves and to the whole flock, wherein the Holy Ghost hath placed you bishops, to feed the assembly of God that He acquired through His own blood, 29 I know that after my departure ravening wolves will enter in among you, not sparing the flock. 30 And of your own selves shall arise men speaking perverse things, to draw away disciples after them. 31 Therefore watch, keeping in memory that for three years I ceased not with tears to admonish every one of you, night and day. 32 And now I commend you to God and to the word of his grace, who is able to build up and to give an inheritance among all the sanctified. 33 I have not coveted any man’s silver, gold or apparel, as 34 You yourselves know. For such things as were needful for me and them that are with me, these hands have furnished. 35 I have shewed you all things, how that so labouring you ought to support the weak and to remember the word of the Lord Jesus, how he said: It is a more blessed thing to give, rather than to receive. 36 And when he had said these things, kneeling down, he prayed with them all. 37 And there was much weeping among them all. And falling on the neck of Paul, they kissed him, 38 Being grieved most of all for the word which he had said, that they should see his face no more. And they brought him on his way to the ship.”
The reprobate Jews hated Paul. The Jews conspired against Paul to overthrow his ministry and turn people away from his Gospel. Paul knew the hatred that awaited him in Jerusalem. A city that was supposed to be a “City of Peace” was turned into a den of thieves, harlots, murderers, and the very synagogue of Satan. But Paul my brother feared none of those things, or the Christ hating Jews. For Paul, the only thing that mattered was to declare the Gospel of Grace alone, to feed and protect the elect of God, and to expose and warn Christ’s flock of false religious clerics.

Paul knew that after his departure ravening false-Jewish Christians and Jew wolves would come to pervert his message/Gospel by preaching a justification by good works.

Paul knew the wickedness of the religious clergy whose chief concern was to extort money from their ignorant followers.

Paul knew the nature of the religious clergy, who are nothing other than a lazy bunch of parasites and leeches that could not give a hoot about their flock, deceiving the flock into supporting them. But Paul taught by word and example, coveting nothing from man and furnishing his sustenance with his own hands. In this way true men of God cannot be bought with money like corrupt politicians are.

And how true Paul our brother was in warning Christ’s elect loved ones about the wolves who were to come. Those of James, the Ebionites, the Nazarenes, the pseudo, heretical church-fathers, the Orthodox, the Papists, the ecumenical apostate Protestants, Evangelicals, Pentecostals and Charismatic mystics.

Then and to this day the elect of God have been plagued and burdened with false-Christians and Christ-hating Jews all around us.

There was love and loyalty amongst true brothers in Christ. They wept for Paul, and Paul wept for them. This was unlike the Jews who hated Paul and those who even to this very day call Paul a “self hating Jew”, along with the Messianic Jews who call Paul a false prophet, and other vile and filthy crap.

“But beware of men: for they will deliver you up to councils, and in their synagogues they will scourge you” (Mt. 10:17).

“It is enough for the disciple that he be as his teacher, and the servant as his lord. If they have called the master of the house Beelzebub, how much more them of his household!” (Mt. 10:25).

These vermin Jews called Jesus Beelzebub, meaning Satan, the prince of evil spirits. Is it any wonder that a true Gospel preaching/teaching elect child of God should be treated otherwise?
Mt. 11:18-19 “18 For John came neither eating nor drinking, and they [reprobate Jews] say, He hath a demon. 19 The Son of man came eating and drinking, and they [reprobate Israel] say, Behold, a gluttonous man and a winebibber, a friend of publicans and sinners! And wisdom is justified by her works.”

The reprobate Jew is the blindest of all bats. Their hatred for God, Christ, and the elect of God are self-evident. Only a fool would consider earthly National Israel as a “Holy Land” and “God’s chosen people.”

Mt. 11:20-24 “20 Then began he to upbraid the cities wherein most of his mighty works were done, because they repented not. 21 Woe unto thee, Chorazin! woe unto thee, Bethsaida! for if the mighty works had been done in Tyre and Sidon which were done in you, they would have repented long ago in sackcloth and ashes. 22 But I say unto you, it shall be more tolerable for Tyre and Sidon in the day of judgment than for you. 23 And thou, Capernaum, shalt thou be exalted unto heaven? thou shalt go down unto Hades: for if the mighty works had been done in Sodom which were done in thee, it would have remained until this day. 24 But I say unto you that it shall be more tolerable for the land of Sodom in the day of judgment, than for thee.”

How wicked were Tyre, Sidon, and Sodom? Why did Jesus our Lord use these cities as comparative examples of Israel?

Tyre itself was the ancient capital of Tyre and Sidon, or Phoenicia, today Lebanon. Tyre was the World’s greatest trading capital in its day, capital of Phoenicia. The Phoenicians were great traders and sailors and sailed all over the known world with their mighty fleets.

Tyre’s major problem was the institutional practice of human “King Deification”. This horribly wicked self-deification of Tyre’s kings was directly related to the satanically induced rebellion of mankind in the matter of the construction of the Tower of Babel, where such humanistic self-deification began. Tyre was a perfect example of the same thing. Only men who think they’re gods, would dare to call Jesus Christ a devil and blasphemer, as such were the reprobate Jews, even to this very day.
Sidon: There were many things in Sidon that called for the judgments of God against them, not the least of which was Jezebel’s outrageous establishment of the entire apparatus of Baal worship in the very heart of Israel itself. Today in the hardness and impenitence of their hearts the Jews continue to worship false gods.

Sodom: This wicked city, like Israel, practiced all forms of vile and abominable carnal lusts of the flesh: homosexuality, lesbianism, etc. The Jews today are the largest owners and traffickers in the porn and sex industry.

In Jesus Christ’s day, ethnic Israel had totally departed from the God of their fathers; and, as spelled out by Paul the apostle in the first two chapters of Romans, the hardening of this apostate reprobate people Israel had become final.

Jesus, by comparing Israel to these wicked cities, was effectively saying ISRAEL IS WORSE THAN THEM!! Israel’s destruction was nothing compared to what will be completed in the torments of Hell itself.

Graciously from the racial/ethnic stock of the old Israel, Jesus Christ rescued only a small elect remnant, establishing a nucleus for the New Israel, that is, the Ekklesia of Jesus Christ that was launched at Pentecost with the life-giving gospel and indwelling of the Holy Spirit in this “New Dispensation” ratified by Grace alone, through faith alone, in Christ alone.

Reprobate false religions have one main characteristic in common. They hate TRUTH. Jesus is the truth. His gospel is the truth. If a religion hates the Gospel, they hate Christ. Religious institutions fear true followers of Christ. Why? We pose a threat to their false authority. The Gospel sets men free. The religious hate free men and prefer to keep their people in bondage. They are easier to control this way. Jesus Christ was a threat to the Satanic religion (establishment)
and control of the Pharisees. They wanted Him dead!

“But he answered and said unto them, An evil and adulterous generation seeketh after a sign; and there shall no sign be given it but the sign of Jonah the prophet” (Mt. 12:39).

The reprobate Jew cannot ever have faith. Their whole history was filled with the supernatural workings of God. Christ performed supernatural acts right before their very eyes! Still they did not believe. Christ arose from the dead and these wicked ones still did not believe.

“He answered and said unto them, ‘Because it is given unto you to know the mysteries of the Kingdom of Heaven, but to them it is not given’” (Mt. 13:11).

The reprobate Jew will never understand the truths of God. The reprobate Jew is unable to have true faith. There is no free will in all of this. The Holy Spirit reveals truth and knowledge only to His elect ones. The rest are blinded!

“For this people’s [reprobate Jews] heart has waxed gross, and their ears are dull of hearing, and their eyes they have closed” (Mt. 13:15).

Mt. 15:6-9, 12-14 “6 Thus you [Pharisees] nullify the word of God for the sake of your tradition. 7 You hypocrites! Isaiah was right when he prophesied about you: 8 ‘These people honor me with their lips, but their hearts are far from me. 9 They worship me in vain; their teachings are merely human rules.’ 12 Then the disciples came to him and asked, ‘Do you know that the Pharisees were offended when they heard this?’ 13 He replied, ‘Every plant that my heavenly Father has not planted [reprobate Jew] will be pulled up by the roots. 14 Leave them; they [Pharisees] are blind guides. If the blind lead the blind, both will fall into a pit.’”

Jesus Christ attacked these wicked Jews with the truth. Jesus used some very harsh rhetoric to describe them. False and humanistic based religion should be condemned and exposed every moment available by us His people. We as Christ’s mouthpieces should never give one inch of credibility to a false gospel preaching and Christ-hating people; not only Christ-hating Israel, but all false religions.

Mt. 16:6 “‘Be careful’, Jesus said to them. ‘Be on your guard against the yeast of the Pharisees and Sadducees.’”

Today, religious mankind has been deceived into thinking that their clergy/pastors are the mediators [go-betweens] between God and man. Religious leaders capitalize on this falsehood. The people have become so subservient to this ruling class of clergymen that they have surrendered their abilities to discriminate between truth and falsehood. The leaven or yeast of clergy/clerics
has poisoned the minds of men.

These clergy/ clerics have constructed the most deceptive labyrinth of controlling
the individual soul from the cradle (paedo-baptism, dedications, etc.) to the grave
(last rites), and all in between.

Mt. 17:17-18 “17 ‘You unbelieving and perverse generation,’ Jesus replied,
‘how long shall I stay with you? How long shall I put up with you? Bring the boy
here to me.’ 18 Jesus rebuked the demon, and it came out of the boy, and he
was healed at that moment.”

Jesus Christ alone is the only person that can heal the desperate soul.
Unregenerate mankind cannot believe this, hence are forced to use human
mediators. We as Christ’s elect must always strive to ground and point our
brothers and sisters in and to Christ alone.

Religious institutions have established various departments to ease and provide
false comfort to the troubled soul such as professional counselors, psychologists
(psycho-babblers), self-help groups, group therapy, meditation, confessional
systems, liturgies, etc., etc. At best these men and techniques only provide
temporary relief. If one has not found true rest and peace for his soul in Christ
alone, through faith alone, then he has found none.

Israel’s only hope, peace and rest was in and through Jesus Christ. A person
whom they hated! Then and today.

Mt. 18:6-7 “6 If anyone causes one of these little ones—those who believe in me
—to stumble, it would be better for them to have a large millstone hung around
their neck and to be drowned in the depths of the sea. 7 Woe to the world
because of the things that cause people to stumble! Such things must come, but
woe to the person through whom they come!”

Religious leaders and their blind followers will say, teach, and do everything
within their power to draw people away from Jesus Christ and the true Gospel.

Mt. 21:13b “but you are making it ‘a den of robbers.’”

If only the blind were awakened as to how false religion has robbed them, both
spiritually and economically! And the premillenialists want to reconstruct this
very temple of thieves and robbers.

Mt. 21:31-32 “31 Jesus said to them, ‘Truly I tell you, the tax collectors and
the prostitutes are entering the kingdom of God ahead of you. 32 For John
came to you to show you the way of righteousness, and you did not believe him,
but the tax collectors and the prostitutes did. And even after you saw this, you
did not repent and believe him.’”
These cursed reprobate Jews just don’t understand Grace! Neither does the institution called Christianity.

Mt. 21:38-41 “38 But when the tenants [reprobate Israel] saw the son [Jesus], they said to each other, ‘This is the heir. Come, let’s kill him and take his inheritance.’ 39 So they took him and threw him out of the vineyard and killed him [Calvary]. 40 Therefore, when the owner [God the Father] of the vineyard comes, what will he do to those tenants? 41 ‘He will bring those wretches to a wretched end,’ they replied, ‘and he will rent the vineyard to other tenants [the ekklesia], who will give him his share of the crop at harvest time.’”

National Israel was and is finished for good. They are useless.

Mt. 21:43-44 “43 Therefore I tell you that the kingdom of God will be taken away from you [National Israel] and given to a people [the ekklesia] who will produce its fruit. 44 Anyone [the elect] who falls on this stone will be broken [repentance and faith] to pieces; anyone on whom it falls [hardheartedness - the reprobate] will be crushed.”

The reprobate Jew is crushed for all eternity.

Mt. 21:45-46 “45 When the chief priests and the Pharisees heard Jesus’ parables, they knew he was talking about them. 46 They looked for a way to arrest him, but they were afraid of the crowd because the people held that he was a prophet.”

The reprobate Jews, in the hardness of their hearts then and today, have done everything in their power to discredit Jesus Christ, and turn the Jews against Christ. They brainwash their children from birth to believe in the Satanic Talmud, and to hate Jesus Christ.

Matthew 22

1 And Jesus answering spoke again in parables to them, saying:
2 The kingdom of heaven/God is likened to a king [God the Father], who made a marriage for his son [Jesus]
3 And he sent his servants [elect prophets], to call them [National Israel] that were invited to the marriage; and they would not come.
4 Again he sent other servants [more elect prophets], saying: Tell them that were invited, Behold, I have prepared my dinner; my beeves and fatlings are killed, and all things are ready: come ye to the marriage.
5 But they neglected, and went their own ways, one to his farm, and another to his merchandise.
6 And the rest laid hands on his servants, and having treated them contumeliously, put them to death.
7 But when the king [LORD] had heard of it, He was angry, and sending his armies, he destroyed those murderers, and burnt their city [Destruction of Israel].
8 Then he saith to his servants [elect messengers]: The marriage indeed is ready; but they [reprobate Israel] that were invited were not worthy. [Imputed righteousness is the only real worth in God’s sight].
9 Go ye therefore into the highways [Samaritans and Gentiles]; and as many as you shall find, call to the marriage.
10 And his servants going forth into the ways, gathered together all that they found, both bad and good: and the marriage was filled with guests.
11 And the king went in to see the guests: and he saw there a man who had not on a wedding garment [Christ’s Robe of Righteousness].
12 And he saith to him: Friend, how camest thou in hither not having a wedding garment? But he was silent.
13 Then the king said to the waiters: Bind his hands and feet, and cast him into the exterior darkness: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.
14 For many are called, but few are chosen.

The King only clothes His elect with Christ’s wedding garment of righteousness. The reprobate Jews and all reprobates in the now cursed land of Israel and throughout the world will be in outer darkness for eternity, with no hope and no way out. They will be bound to everlasting darkness.

But Jesus knowing their [reprobate Jews] wickedness, said: Why do you tempt me, ye hypocrites?

Matthew 23

1 Then Jesus said to the crowds and to his disciples:
2 “The teachers of the law and the Pharisees sit in Moses’ seat.
3 So you must obey them and do everything they tell you. But do not do what they do, for they do not practice what they preach.”

Since the Law of Moses (Mosaic administration) was to be obeyed by the Nation of Israel, the law as written was the final authority. Jesus warned the Jews not to follow the corrupt interpretation of the law (oral traditions that led to the written Talmud) as practiced by the corrupt clergy.

4 “They tie up heavy loads and put them on men’s shoulders, but they themselves are not willing to lift a finger to move them.”

The evil activity of the clergy is self evident not only in Judaism, but also in Islam, and pseudo-Christianity.

5 “Everything they do is done for men to see: They make their phylacteries [boxes containing Scripture verses, worn on the forehead and arm] wide and the tassels on their garments long;
6 they love the place of honor at banquets and the most important seats in the synagogues;
7 they love to be greeted in the marketplaces and to have men call them ‘Rabbi’.

Where do you think the church fathers, the Orthodox, Papists, Protestants, and evangelicals get their showmanship? The clergy today are no better than the evil clergy of Judaism. They love human worship and self-aggrandizement.

8 “But you are not to be called ‘Rabbi’, for you have only one Master and you are all brothers.”

We are all EQUALS in the body of Christ. No clerical classes of men.

9 “And do not call anyone on earth ‘father,’ for you have one Father, and he is in heaven.
10 Nor are you to be called ‘teacher,’ for you have one Teacher, the Christ.
11 The greatest among you will be your servant.
12 For whoever exalts himself will be humbled, and whoever humbles himself will be exalted.”

The ignorant masses love their clergy. When I WAS a Roman Catholic many moons ago we were taught to address the pagan priest as FATHER. Protestants are no better.

13 “Woe to you, teachers of the law and Pharisees, you hypocrites! You shut the kingdom of heaven in men’s faces. You yourselves do not enter, nor will you let those enter who are trying to.”

The Pharisees and their children the pseudo-Christians and Islam all preach a false gospel thus shutting up the kingdom of heaven. Because they are damned to hell they want to drag their followers with them.
15 “Woe to you, teachers of the law and Pharisees, you hypocrites! You travel over land and sea to win a single convert, and when he becomes one, you make him twice as much a son of hell as you are.”

Missionary societies that preach a false gospel are the equivalent of these Phariasaical hypocrites. They are sons of hell!

16 “Woe to you, blind guides!”
19 “You blind men!”
23 “Woe to you, teachers of the law and Pharisees, you hypocrites! You give a tenth of your spices—mint, dill and cummin. But you have neglected the more important matters of the law—justice, mercy and faithfulness. You should have practiced the latter, without neglecting the former.”

Those that preach tithing is mandatory for a true Christian are students and ministers of the false gospel. Even when it was lawful to tithe as in the Mosaic administration alone, these wicked Jews were blinded to grace, mercy and forgiveness. False religionists are only concerned with money, control, power, authority, and deceiving the masses. If someone attempts to convince me otherwise, he is barking up the wrong tree.

24 “You blind guides! You strain out a gnat but swallow a camel.
25 Woe to you, teachers of the law and Pharisees, you hypocrites! You clean the outside of the cup and dish, but inside they are full of greed and self-indulgence.
26 Blind Pharisee! First clean the inside of the cup and dish, and then the outside also will be clean.”

In the below YouTube clip, you will see samples of modern day reprobates and Pharisees.

http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=6Gx66...eature=related

27 “Woe to you, teachers of the law and Pharisees, you hypocrites! You are like whitewashed tombs, which look beautiful on the outside but on the inside are full of dead men’s bones and everything unclean.
28 in the same way, on the outside you appear to people as righteous but on the inside you are full of hypocrisy and wickedness.”

How in the world can anyone claim that reprobate Jews are God’s chosen people? How in the world can anyone claim that the Papacy, the World Council of Churches, the National Council of churches, and ALL ecumenists-syncretists are God’s children? Only fools and degenerates would claim it so!

29 “Woe to you, teachers of the law and Pharisees, you hypocrites! You
build tombs for the prophets and decorate the graves of the righteous.
30 And you say, 'If we had lived in the days of our forefathers, we would not have taken part with them in shedding the blood of the prophets.'
31 So you testify against yourselves that you are the descendants of those who murdered the prophets.
32 Fill up, then, the measure of the sin of your forefathers!”

Blood and violence is the only source of nutrition for devils. From Israel, and carried through the church fathers, the catholic church [East/West], Protestantism, and to this very day, the elect of God have always suffered at the hands of the wicked.

33 “You snakes! You brood of vipers! How will you escape being condemned to hell?”

They won't. These Jew snakes and vipers will be in hell with the Popes, all clergymen, and all pew warmers who hold hands with these devils.

34 “Therefore I am sending you prophets and wise men and teachers. Some of them you will kill and crucify; others you will flog in your synagogues and pursue from town to town.
35 And so upon you will come all the righteous blood that has been shed on earth, from the blood of righteous Abel to the blood of Zechariah son of Berekiah, whom you murdered between the temple and the altar.
36 I tell you the truth, all this will come upon this generation.”

Jesus Christ was not a “seeker sensitive’ preacher. Jesus was not part of the “church growth movement”. Jesus was not some evangelly-fish like the false prophet Billy Graham. Jesus was a man who was not fearful of the Jews. Jesus was a man of truth and righteousness. All those who reject Him reject the Father in heaven and thus will be damned.

37 “O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, you who kill the prophets and stone those sent to you, how often I have longed to gather your children together, as a hen gathers her chicks under her wings, but you were not willing.
38 Look, your house is left to you desolate.
39 For I tell you, you will not see me again until you say, ‘Blessed is he who comes in the name of the Lord.’”

Israel is surely desolate, then and now. They are spiritually bankrupt and children of hell.

Matthew 24:45-51

45 “Who then is the faithful and wise servant [true preachers of Christ], whom the master [Christ/God] has put in charge of the servants [the elect flock] in his
household to give them their food [the Gospel and truth] at the proper time?

46 It will be good for that servant whose master finds him doing so when he returns.

47 Truly I tell you, he will put him in charge of all his possessions.

48 But suppose that servant is wicked [false teachers/reprobates/impostors] and says to himself, ‘My master [false claim] is staying away a long time,’

49 and he then begins to beat his fellow servants and to eat and drink with drunkards.

50 The master of that servant will come on a day when he does not expect him and at an hour he is not aware of.

51 He will cut him to pieces and assign him a place with the hypocrites, where there will be weeping and gnashing of teeth.”

From the beginning of the great apostasy, many false prophets both from Jewish and Gentile stock engineered the most deceptive counterfeit forms of alleged Christianity in the world.

It has been almost two thousand years since Jesus our Lord ascended unto His and our Father. These false religionists really don’t believe the truth at all, and are not cognizant of Christ’s return. They don’t care! They are only concerned with feeding their own corrupt belly, ego and pride. They beat their servants with falsehoods, false gospels, and death, while they themselves eat and drink with devils and desire to live in the lap of luxury and ease, all financed from the toils and labors of their laity. A rude awakening awaits them. Christ will cut them to pieces and assign them all a place with Jewish and Gentile hypocrites, where there will be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

Matthew 25

5 And the bridegroom tarrying, they all slumbered and slept.

8 And the foolish said to the wise: Give us of your oil, for our lamps are gone out.

10 Now whilst they went to buy, the bridegroom came: and they that were ready, went in with him to the marriage, and the door was shut.

12 But he answering said: Amen I say to you, I know you not.

30 And the unprofitable servant cast ye out into the exterior darkness. There shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

33 And he shall set the sheep on his right hand, but the goats on his left.

41 Then he shall say to them also that shall be on his left hand: Depart from me, you cursed, into everlasting fire which was prepared for the devil and his angels.

46 And these shall go into everlasting punishment: but the just, into life everlasting.

Jesus our Lord describes activities of the sheep and goats during the inter-advental period using figures of speech, parables and metaphorical language.
The goats have always been religious impostors, both in Judaism and pseudo-Christianity. Christ likens these goats to religious fools who slumber, sleep and are void of true reality because they do not possess the Holy Spirit, the eternal oil that cannot ever fail to produce light and life.

These goats live in a facade of reality. The oil in their lamps is the oil of Satan, and will not cause their wicks to burn forever. Their lamps will forever be extinguished. The door (Jesus Christ) is shut to them. Christ never knew these wicked ones. Into the “outer darkness” they are consigned to, their lamps will not provide light for them. For Jesus alone is the only true LIGHT, a light they HATE, and a light that will condemn them forever.

All false religious reprobates (the Jew first, and then the Greek) will be reserved to a place created and prepared by God for the devil and his messengers for everlasting punishment.

Mt. 26:24 “The Son of man indeed goeth, as it is written of him: but woe to that man by whom the Son of man shall be betrayed: it were better for him, if that man had not been born.”

Spiritual truths and principles have no historical time barriers. As Christ is the same yesterday, today and forever, so is the Holy Spirit and truth.

When discussing Christ betrayers, Jesus uses a rather sobering figure of speech. Why is it better if a reprobate was never born, Judas being a good example for reprobate Jews?

Since God is the Sovereign cause of ALL things both good and evil, elect and reprobate, when God determines to create an individual soul He then determines the outcome of that soul. If that soul is earmarked to be a vessel of dishonor there is no changing of course. The end for that reprobate soul is to be consigned to outer darkness. All things created in this shadow world have an end. The elect end up in and with Christ in the new creation, while the reprobate end up in the abyss of hell. Surely it would be better for a reprobate to not have been born/created for he would have never existed. There is no free will in all of this.

Mt. 27:25 “And the whole people answering, said: His blood be upon us and our children.”

The reprobate Jew is the vilest of all God’s human creation. They are proud that they killed Jesus. To them, Christ’s blood came from his mother Mary whom they consider a whore.

Sanhedrin 106a says Jesus’ mother was a whore: “She who was the descendant
of princes and governors played the harlot with carpenters.” Also in footnote #2 to Shabbath 104b of the Soncino edition, it is stated that in the “uncensored” text of the Talmud it is written that Jesus’ mother, “Miriam the hairdresser”, had sex with many men.

A passage from Sanhedrin 106 gloats over the early age at which Jesus died: “Hast thou heard how old Balaam (Jesus) was?--He replied: It is not actually stated but since it is written, Bloody and deceitful men shall not live out half their days it follows that he was thirty-three or thirty-four years old.”

The Talmud (Babylonian edition) records other sins of “Jesus the Nazarene”:

1) He and his disciples practiced sorcery and black magic, led Jews astray into idolatry, and were sponsored by foreign, gentile powers for the purpose of subverting Jewish worship (Sanhedrin 43a).
2) He was sexually immoral, worshipped statues of stone (a brick is mentioned), was cut off from the Jewish people for his wickedness, and refused to repent (Sanhedrin 107b; Sotah 47a).
3) He learned witchcraft in Egypt and, to perform miracles, used procedures that involved cutting his flesh, which is also explicitly banned in the Bible (Shabbos 104b).

The reprobate Jew then and today will never accept the true reason for their destruction. The Holy Scriptures both Old and New so overwhelmingly speak out against these heathen people.

Using Luther’s quotes below from “Von den Juden und Ihren Lugen” does not imply I am a Lutheran, however I do agree with his sentiments as pertaining to the Jewish problem itself.

“I had made up my mind to write no more either about the Jews or against them. But since I learned that these miserable and accursed people do not cease to lure to themselves even us, that is, the Christians, I have published this little book, so that I might be found among those who opposed such poisonous activities of the Jews who warned the Christians to be on their guard against them. I would not have believed that a Christian could be duped by the Jews into taking their exile and wretchedness upon himself. However, the devil is the god of the world, and wherever God’s word is absent he has an easy task, not only with the weak but also with the strong. May God help us. Amen.” (Martin Luther).

“Theyir breath stinks for the gold and silver of the heathen; since no people under the sun always have been, still are, and always will remain more avaricious than they, as can be noticed in their cursed usury. They also find comfort with this: ‘When the Messiah comes, He shall take all the gold and silver in the world and distribute it among the Jews.’ Thus, wherever they can direct Scripture to their
insatiable avarice, they wickedly do so.

Therefore know, my dear Christians, that next to the Devil, you have no more bitter, more poisonous, more vehement an enemy than a real Jew who earnestly desires to be a Jew. There may be some among them who believe what the cow or the goose believes. But all of them are surrounded with their blood and circumcision. In history, therefore, they are often accused of poisoning wells, stealing children and mutilating them; as in Trent, Weszensee and the like. Of course they deny this. Be it so or not, however, I know full well that the ready will is not lacking with them if they could only transform it into deeds, in secret or openly (Martin Luther).

The below YouTube clip shows the utter hatred and disrespect for Jesus Christ by Jews.

To be clear, using this video is no endorsement on my part of the orthodox religion, Nathanael Kapner’s religious beliefs, etc., but only to show Jewish venom against our Lord.

http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=yle_qeeOIMA

Mt. 27:62-64 “62 The next day, the one after Preparation Day, the chief priests and the Pharisees went to Pilate. 63 ‘Sir,’ they said, ‘we remember that while he was still alive that deceiver [Jesus Christ] said, “After three days I will rise again.” 64 So give the order for the tomb to be made secure until the third day. Otherwise, his disciples may come and steal the body and tell the people that he has been raised from the dead. This last deception will be worse than the first.’”

The reprobate Jews always attempt to cover their tracks, then and today. In their hatred for Christ and His disciples, they wanted to make sure that Christ did not come out of that tomb. However, these devils figured out a plan that if Jesus did rise from the dead, they would lie and say the disciples stole the body and perpetuated a hoax. By saying the “last deception will be worse than the first” they fully acknowledged that Jesus Christ, in their belief, was a fraud from the beginning. The reprobate Jews still believe this, then and today. What is even more astounding is that the ignorant and blind still call these vermin Jews “God’s chosen people”, thus we and other nations must at all costs support Israel today! How awful, how sick a plight the devil has perpetuated on mankind.

Mt. 28:11-15 “11 While the women were on their way, some of the guards went into the city and reported to the chief priests everything that had happened. 12 When the chief priests had met with the elders and devised a plan, they gave the soldiers a large sum of money, 13 telling them, ‘You are to say, “His disciples came during the night and stole him away while we were asleep.”’ 14 If this report gets to the governor, we will satisfy him and
keep you out of trouble.’ 15 So the soldiers took the money and did as they were instructed. And this story has been widely circulated among the Jews to this very day.”

The guards knew what happened at the tomb. “The guards were so afraid of him that they shook and became like dead men.” They knew the disciples did not steal away Jesus from the tomb. However the reprobate Jews in their hardness resorted to lies and bribery. This is the same as they have always done, then and today.

The Jews still perpetuate their lies “to this very day.”

1Th. 2:13-16 “13 And for this cause we also thank God without ceasing, that, when ye received from us the word of the message, even the word of God, ye accepted it not as the word of men, but, as it is in truth, the word of God, which also worketh in you that believe. 14 For ye, [Gentile] brethren, became imitators of the [Jewish believing] churches of God which are in Judaea in Christ Jesus: for ye [Gentile believers] also suffered the same things of your own [unbelieving Gentile] countrymen, even as they [Jewish believers] did of the [unbelieving] Jews; 15 who [unbelieving Jews] both killed the Lord Jesus and the prophets, and drove out us, and pleased not God, and are contrary to all men; 16 forbidding us [Jewish Apostles] to speak to the Gentiles that they may be saved; to fill up their [unbelieving Israel] sins always: but the wrath is come upon them [unbelieving Israel] to the uttermost.”

Paul our brother in Christ spoke the truth. The term uttermost is all but overlooked by our modern day ecumenical, syncretistic, and Zionist Israel lovers. God’s wrath is upon reprobate Israel forever. Just like all reprobates, the reprobate Jews are especially “contrary to all men.”

The Christ event is the pinnacle point in history that set the course for all events that were to follow. The world of the unregenerate and reprobate attempt to soften the force of Jewish hatred against the Creator God/Jesus, simultaneously attempting to deceive mankind that their [Jew] religion and ethnicity still can be claimed as favorable and acceptable in God’s sight. Nothing can be further from the truth. However, no amount of “spinning” and Scripture contorting will ever be accepted by the elect of God. The truth always wins. The Jews and politicians will never silence preachers and teachers of the truth.

We often wonder how the “clay” could think of himself or herself as more powerful than God the “potter” who molds the clay.

What manner of men would dare to hate the ALL POWERFUL creator of the universe? How can man muster up this amount of hatred and indignation from within him? He can’t! It is God who hardens the heart of man to be evil and blind.
It is God who hardened and reprobated National Israel to be His enemies, then and today.

We have thus far looked at God’s statements from the Old Testament and the Gospel according to Matthew that indict and condemn the Jews. Let’s continue.

Why the Jewish hatred? A few reasons among many:

Christ claimed Kingship (Jn. 18:33-37; Jn. 19:12-22).
Christ spoke the truth about Himself (Lu. 4:21-29; Jn. 8:40).
Christ healed on the Sabbath (Mt. 12:9-14; Jn. 5:16).
Christ was envied (Mt. 27:18; Mk. 15:10).
Christ was accused of blasphemy for forgiving sins and claiming equality with God the Father (Mt. 27:18; Mk. 15:10; Mt. 26:59-66; Mk. 14:61-64; Jn. 10:25-33; 19:7).

Reprobate mankind in general, and especially reprobate Jews, hate God and everything about God. They hated Jesus Christ the most without a cause, and hate Christ’s true elect people for our allegiance to Him, then and today.

The Jews slandered Christ and accused Him of:

Bad and unlawful associations (Mt. 9:10-11).
Being derived from poor common stock and a lowly laborer (Mk. 6:3).
Being possessed with Beelzebub (Mk. 3:22).
Not being the Messiah because He was from the wrong area (Jn. 7:41, 52).
Being a deceiver and a hypocrite (Jn. 7:10-13).
Being an unlearned man. In other words, Christ was not brainwashed from their religious schools (Jn. 7:14-15).
Being demon possessed, having a persecution complex, and full of the devil (Jn. 7:20; 10:20; 8:48, 52).
Being a provoker to anger (Jn. 7:23).
Being a divider of the people (Jn. 7:43).
Being unpopular, not recommended by rulers, unrecognized by leaders (Jn. 7:45-49 [v. 48]).
Being a false prophet (Jn. 7:50-52).
Being a liar, falsifier (Jn. 8:13).
Being a bastard and not from God (Jn. 8:19).
Being suicidal (Jn. 8:22).
Being a half-breed and demon possessed (Jn. 8:48).
Being dishonorable (Jn. 8:49).
Being a boaster, false representative of God, impostor, self-made man (Jn. 8:53).
Being ungodly, and coming not from God (Jn. 9:13-16).
Being a sinner (Jn. 9:13-16).
Being crazy, insane, and demon possessed (Jn. 10:20).
Being perplexing and causing doubt (Jn. 10:22-24).
Being a blasphemer (Jn. 10:31-33).

These Jews never cease in their mischievousness against Jesus Christ, then and today.

**Jewish hatred of Christ and murder attempts on our Lord's life:**

As a child Herod tried to kill Him (Mt. 2:16).

Pharisees held a council with the Herodians to discuss destroying Jesus because He healed a man on the Sabbath day (Mt. 12:14; Mk. 3:06).

Attempted to throw Him off the hill because of His sermon (Lu. 4:28-30).

The Jews persecuted Jesus and sought to kill Him for healing the impotent man on the Sabbath day (Jn. 5:16).

Jews sought to kill Jesus because He claimed equality with God (Jn. 5:18).

The Jewish plot to arrest Jesus with intent to kill Him for claiming He was from God (Jn. 7:30-32).

It was common knowledge that the Jews sought to kill Jesus (Jn. 7:25).

Some people desired to arrest Jesus with intent to kill Him (Jn. 7:40-44).

Jews attempted to kill Jesus by stoning Him for claiming that He was God (Jn. 8:59).

The Jews again attempt to kill Jesus by stoning for claiming His Deity (Jn. 10:31).

The Jews sought to take Jesus for proving His Deity (Jn. 10:39).

The chief priests and Pharisees plot against Jesus (Jn. 11:47).

The Jews make a determined effort to kill Jesus (Jn. 11:53-54).

The Jews sought Jesus even at the Passover Feast (Jn. 11:55-57).

The Jews desired to kill Lazarus because of their hatred for Jesus, to conceal that Lazarus was raised from the dead, and turn away the Jews from believing in Christ (Jn. 12:9-11).

Jesus was arrested by Jewish soldiers, not Roman (Jn. 18:3, 10, 12).

Wicked Jewish leaders who had already decided on his guilt by using trumped up
charges tried Jesus. Kangaroo court (Jn. 18:13-14).

Jesus acknowledges that it was the Jews who would kill Him (Jn. 18:36).

The Jews were adamant in their desire to kill Jesus (Jn. 18:38-40; 19:1-7, 12-15).

Jesus acknowledges a greater sin committed by those vermin Jews, those who condemned Him to death (Jn. 19:11).

The Jews led Jesus away to be crucified (Jn. 19:16-18).

These reprobate cursed Jews have done a marvelous con-job on ignorant false professors of Christ. The Jews now have been absolved of their treachery against our Holy Jesus and have been sanitized, re-packaged, and sold to the world as innocent God fearing/loving victims of anti-Semitism who do not need Jesus for salvation. What a deception!!

The same holds true for the Papal and Protestant demons of hate, violence and blood. The world sees the Pope as some holy man of God, and the Protestants suck this all up in the name of religious unity.

Is it any wonder why the Scriptures teach us that Satan is the master deceiver? Boy has the world been sold a bill of goods.

Mk. 7:6-13 “6 And he said unto them, Well did Isaiah prophesy of you hypocrites, as it is written, This people honoreth me with their lips, But their heart is far from me. 7 But in vain do they worship me, Teaching as their doctrines the precepts of men. 8 Ye leave the commandment of God, and hold fast the tradition of men. 9 And he said unto them, Full well do ye reject the commandment of God, that ye may keep your tradition. 10 For Moses said, Honor thy father and thy mother; and, He that speaketh evil of father or mother, let him die the death: 11 but ye say, If a man shall say to his father or his mother, That wherewith thou mightest have been profited by me is Corban, that is to say, Given to God; 12 ye no longer suffer him to do aught for his father or his mother; 13 making void the word of God by your tradition, which ye have delivered: and many such like things ye do.”

The doctrines and precepts, or traditions of God/Christ hating men have always been antagonistic and more so antithetical towards the truths of Scripture and especially the Gospel of Jesus Christ. Jesus constantly warned the Jewish leaders about their false teachings.

When did these Jewish traditions/fables start?

The reprobate leaders of Old Testament Israel, initially within the Northern Kingdom and eventually in Judah, took it upon themselves to re-invent the wheel
(Moses), so to speak, and conjure up all manner of false rules and regulations that either added or detracted from the original intent and meaning of the Mosaic requirements. Mostly oral tradition at that time, but later these false traditions were grouped together and codified from the 3rd to the 6th centuries C.E. into two main Talmudic bodies/schools, i.e. the Palestinian and the Babylonian Talmud. (Talmud means “teachings” or “instruction”). Depending on the context, the word “Talmud” can also mean the study or practice of Jewish religion. However, Jesus condemned all these falsehoods as mere inventions of men.

Those who believed and practiced Judaism felt that the Talmud was equal to the Torah as a source of authority and instruction pertaining to their false religion. Every effort to set forth religious teachings and duties was based on Talmudic false interpretations of the Old Testament. The Papists stole a page from their religious whore mother Israel, inventing the Magisterium and false traditions, which they also claim are equal in authority to the Holy Scriptures and binding on the conscience of their ignorant followers. The Papacy, Orthodoxy, and ecumenical allies are nothing other than a Judaized form of false Christianity and should be denounced at all costs for their falsehoods.

To learn more about Talmudic origins please refer to the below Jewish website. This is a short helpful orientation for a better understanding of Talmudic history.

http://www.jewishencyclopedia.com/articles/14213-talmud

Below, more Scriptures listed in the Gospels of Mark, Luke, and John showing God’s disposition against the unbelieving Jews.

Mark 8:15; 10:5.


John 8:44 “You are of your father the devil, and the desires of your father you will do. He was a murderer from the beginning, and he stood not in the truth; because truth is not in him. When he speaketh a lie, he speaketh of his own: for he is a liar, and the father thereof.”
Chapter 39
The Reprobate Jews From Christ to 70 AD (Peter and Paul: Acts through Galatians)

In the Acts of the Apostles you will find more of the same Jewish hatred against Christ and His elect. However, the Holy Spirit moved on His people to speak words against the reprobate Jews, thus warning all future generations of Christ’s elect to be on guard against the Jews and their lies.

Acts

Ac. 2:22-23 “22 Ye men of Israel, hear these words: Jesus of Nazareth, a man approved of God among you, by miracles, and wonders, and signs, which God did by him, in the midst of you, as you also know: 23 This same being delivered up, by the determinate counsel and foreknowledge of God, you by the hands of wicked men have crucified and slain.”

Peter, falsely alleged as the first Pope by Papists, surely does not remotely reflect the Popes. So much for Papal infallibility and Apostolic succession. What a scam!

Ac. 2:36 “Therefore let all the house of Israel know most certainly, that God hath made both Lord and Christ, this same Jesus, whom you [the Jews] have crucified.”

The Holy Spirit through Peter does not employ clever subterfuge. Peter puts the blame directly on the reprobate Jews for killing Christ our Lord. Rome was only used as a tool in Jewish hands. Rome could not care less about the Jews and their religious beliefs. As long as the Jews paid their tribute and submitted to Caesar all was fine. Rome possessed enough false gods to satisfy her own pagan lusts. Then and today.

Ac. 3:13-15 “13 The God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob, the God of our fathers, hath glorified his Son Jesus, whom you [the Jews] indeed delivered up and denied before the face of Pilate, when he [Pilate] judged he should be released. 14 But you denied the Holy One and the Just, and desired a murderer to be granted unto you. 15 But the author of life you killed, whom God hath raised from the dead, of which we are witnesses.” (Peter)

No doubt about it. God the Holy Spirit puts the blame directly on the Jews. Let
the Vatican II Papists, John Hagee, Pro-Israel Protestant apologists, politicians, and the Jews of today in that cursed land called Israel break their teeth on that for a while.

Ac. 4:10 “Be it known to you all, and to all the people of Israel, that by the name of our Lord Jesus Christ of Nazareth, whom you crucified, whom God hath raised from the dead, even by him this man standeth here before you whole.” (Peter)

Ac. 5:30 “The God of our fathers hath raised up Jesus, whom you put to death, hanging him upon a tree.” (Peter)

Ac. 6:11-14 “11 Then they [the Jews] suborned [induced to commit perjury] men to say, they had heard him speak words of blasphemy against Moses and against God. 12 And they stirred up the people, and the ancients, and the scribes; and running together, they took him, and brought him to the council. 13 And they set up false witnesses, who said: This man ceaseth not to speak words against the holy place and the law. 14 For we have heard him say, that this Jesus of Nazareth shall destroy this place, and shall change the traditions which Moses delivered unto us.”

These Jews never quit. They never cease in their lies and falsehoods. Then and today. See below link:

On the Jews and Their Lies by Martin Luther - Title Page

Ac. 7:51-60 “51 Ye stiffnecked and uncircumcised in heart and ears, ye do always resist the Holy Spirit: as your fathers did, so do ye. 52 Which of the prophets did not your fathers persecute? and they killed them that showed before of the coming of the Righteous One; of whom ye have now become betrayers and murderers; 53 ye who received the law as it was ordained by angels, and kept it not. [They were too busy creating more Talmudic fables.] 54 Now when they heard these things, they were cut to the heart, and they gnashed on him with their teeth. [These reprobates are going to be gnashing their teeth for an eternity in Hell.] 55 But he, being full of the Holy Spirit, looked up steadfastly into heaven, and saw the glory of God, and Jesus standing on the right hand of God, 56 and said, Behold, I see the heavens opened, and the Son of Man standing on the right hand of God. 57 But they cried out with a loud voice, and stopped their ears, and rushed upon him with one accord; [I can just picture these devils foaming at the mouth, seething in their hatred.] 58 and they cast him out of the city, and stoned him: and the witnesses laid down their garments at the feet of a young man named Saul. 59 And they stoned Stephen, calling upon the Lord, and saying, Lord Jesus, receive my spirit.”
I can’t wait to see my brother Stephen in Christ’s New World Order. Stephen did not fear the Jews as today’s professional pulpit/puppet masters and politicians do.

Ac. 9:23-25 “23 And when many days were fulfilled, the Jews took counsel together to kill him [Paul]: 24 but their plot became known to Saul. And they watched the gates also day and night that they might kill him: 25 but his disciples took him by night, and let him down through the wall, lowering him in a basket.”

After Paul’s conversion, a man zealous for the law was being broken and nurtured to be a man zealous for Grace. The Jews hate Paul, then and today, calling him a self-hating Jew that was bewitched by Christ and His disciples. They wanted Paul dead also. What a bunch of murderers the reprobate Jews are. Then and today.

Ac. 9:29 “[Paul] preaching boldly in the name of the Lord: and he spake and disputed against the Grecian Jews; but they were seeking to kill him.”

Even the Hellenistic Jews wanted Paul dead!

Ac. 12:1-5 “1 Now about that time Herod the king put forth his hands to afflict certain of the church. 2 And he killed James the brother of John with the sword. 3 And when he saw that it pleased the Jews, he proceeded to seize Peter also. And those were the days of unleavened bread. 4 And when he had taken him, he put him in prison, and delivered him to four quaternions of soldiers to guard him; intending after the Passover to bring him forth to the people. 5 Peter therefore was kept in the prison: but prayer was made earnestly of the church unto God for him.”

The line of “Herods” was Edomite in origin. They were practicing Jews (proselytes) but not Jewish ethnically.

To please the reprobate Jews and gain their support $$, politicians only need to fight against Israel’s enemies. That will surely please the Jews! Then and today.

The Jew is not concerned if Gentiles send their sons and daughters to shed their blood and die fighting “Jew Wars”. The blood of a gentile in their warped mentality is not human.

Ac. 12:11 “And when Peter was come to himself, he said, Now I know of a truth, that the Lord hath sent forth his angel and delivered me out of the hand of Herod, and from all the expectation of the people of the Jews.”
The expectations of the Jews have not changed one iota. Their ultimate goal is to silence (by whatever means) all those whom they deem are against Jewry. Then and today.

Ac. 13:6 “And when they had gone through the whole island, as far as Paphos, they found a certain man, a magician, a false prophet, a Jew, whose name was Bar-jesu:”

Acts 13:8 “But Elymas [Bar-jesu] the magician (for so his name is interpreted) withstood them, seeking to turn away the proconsul from the faith.”

Acts 13:10-11 “10 [Paul] Said: O full of all guile, and of all deceit, child of the devil, enemy of all justice, thou ceasest not to pervert the right ways of the Lord. 11 And now behold, the hand of the Lord is upon thee, and thou shalt be blind, not seeing the sun for a time. And immediately there fell a mist and darkness upon him, and going about, he sought some one to lead him by the hand.”

There were Jewish synagogues scattered all over the Gentile world (then and now.) Paul and Barnabas often went into these synagogues of Satan to spread the good news of Christ’s Gospel. But one day they ran into the Jew Bar-Jesu called Elymas who was a sorcerer, magician, and false prophet. Very similar in essence to the likes of false gospel preachers Benny Hinn, Kenneth Hagan, Jimmy Swaggart, and the rest of Pentecostal/Charismatic, superstitious and mystical frauds.

Paul pulls no punches in rebuking Elymas for his treachery. The vile Jews of today in an attempt to protect and exonerate this Jew, Elymas, claim this whole story in Acts is fictitious. See below.

http://www.jewishencyclopedia.com/ar...2469-bar-jesus

Ac. 13:26-29 “26 Men, brethren, children of the stock of Abraham, and whosoever among you fear God, to you the word of this salvation is sent. 27 For they [the laity Jews] that inhabited Jerusalem, and the rulers [wicked clergy] thereof, not knowing Him, nor the voices of the prophets, which are read every sabbath, judging Him have fulfilled them. 28 And finding no cause of death in him, they desired of Pilate, that they might kill him. 29 And when they had fulfilled all things that were written of him, taking him down from the tree, they laid him in a sepulchre.”

Paul, like Peter, accused the Jews of killing Christ as a fulfillment of prophecy. But why should the Jews believe Paul? These wretched Jew people don’t even believe their own prophets sent by God. In fact they killed most of them. The Jews are God/Christ-haters period, along with all those foolish people who support Jews today. You know, the Israel firsters gang. They are all anti-Christ.
Ac. 13:38-39 “38 Be it known therefore to you, men, brethren, that through him [Jesus Christ] forgiveness of sins is preached to you: and from all the things, from which you could not be justified by the law of Moses. 39 In him every one that believeth, is justified.” (Paul)

Paul emphatically denies Moses as a viable source for justification. The Jews, the Popes, and the Hageeites are liars and serpents.

Ac. 13:45-46 “45 And the Jews seeing the multitudes, were filled with envy, and contradicted those things which were said by Paul, blaspheming. 46 Then Paul and Barnabas said boldly: To you it behoved us first to speak the word of God: but because you reject it, and judge yourselves unworthy of eternal life, behold we turn to the Gentiles.”

The Jews hate Paul. Then and today. Jesus said, “If they hated me they will hate you.” When a professing Christian is loved by the world of Jews, Papists, and ecumenists, most assuredly that loved one is a purveyor of falsehoods.

Ac. 13:50-52 “50 But the Jews stirred up religious and honourable women, and the chief men of the city, and raised persecution against Paul and Barnabas: and cast them out of their coasts. 51 But they, shaking off the dust of their feet against them, came to Iconium. 52 And the disciples were filled with joy and with the Holy Ghost.”

Then and today, the Jews find ways to castigate true followers of Christ. But this animosity is not limited to the Jews alone. Their pseudo-Christian daughters have always been antagonistic of Christ’s true followers.

Speaking for myself, I find great pleasure in the Holy Ghost when I am reviled for teaching the true Gospel of Jesus Christ.

Ac. 14:1-6 “1 And it came to pass in Iconium, that they entered together into the synagogue of the Jews, and so spoke that a very great multitude both of the Jews and of the Greeks did believe. 2 But the unbelieving Jews stirred up and incensed the minds of the Gentiles against the brethren. 3 A long time therefore they abode there, dealing confidently in the Lord, who gave testimony to the word of his grace, granting signs and wonders to be done by their hands. 4 And the multitude of the city was divided; and some of them indeed held with the Jews, but some with the apostles. 5 And when there was an assault made by the Gentiles and the Jews with their rulers, to use them contumeliously, and to stone them: 6 They understanding it, fled to Lystra, and Derbe, cities of Lycaonia, and to the whole country round about, and were there preaching the gospel.”
The Jews invent and find ways to subvert the Gospel. They worm their way and spin their web of deceit into every society they have touched their evil feet upon. They never cease attempting to extinguish the truth of Christ to justify their reprobation.

Ac. 14:18 “Now there came thither certain Jews from Antioch, and Iconium: and persuading the multitude, and stoning Paul, drew him out of the city, thinking him to be dead.”

The individual reprobate Jew is a puny little wimp standing alone. They, like the hyena, travel in packs to devour their prey. They employ the art of deceptive persuasion through their control of Finance, Media, and Politics to rally others to aid and abet their cause against Christ and His disciples. Then and today.

Ac. 17:4-8 “4 And some of them [Gentiles] believed, and were associated to Paul and Silas; and of those that served God, and of the Gentiles a great multitude, and of noble women not a few. 5 But the Jews, moved with envy, and taking unto them some wicked men of the vulgar sort, and making a tumult, set the city in an uproar; and besetting Jason’s house, sought to bring them out unto the people. 6 And not finding them, they drew Jason and certain brethren to the rulers of the city, crying: They that set the city in an uproar, are come hither also; 7 Whom Jason hath received; and these all do contrary to the decrees of Caesar, saying that there is another king, Jesus. 8 And they stirred up the people, and the rulers of the city hearing these things.”

Ac. 17:13 “And when the Jews of Thessalonica had knowledge that the word of God was also preached by Paul at Berea, they came thither also, stirring up and troubling the multitude.”

These envious Jews will enlist the most wicked and vulgar/base sorts of people to do their bidding. Thugs, thieves, terrorists and robbers like themselves. Then and today. That is why money, power and control are so important to the Jew. Their gods are the gods of gold and silver. They will stop at nothing, causing riots, upheaval, and mayhem to further their goals in society. They will bribe and pay the devil [their father] himself if necessary to thwart the Gospel of Jesus Christ, all the while duping the Gentile Goy public that they are a Holy chosen people.

Ac. 18:5-6 “5 And when Silas and Timothy were come from Macedonia, Paul was earnest in preaching, testifying to the Jews, that Jesus is the Christ. 6 But they [wicked Jews] gainsaying and blaspheming, he shook his garments, and said to them: Your blood be upon your own heads; I am clean: from henceforth I will go unto the Gentiles.”

As Paul our beloved brother was sent to the Gentiles, he made every effort to bring the Gospel to the Jews living in Gentile lands. But it was the Jews who
were most vehement toward Paul and the rest of the disciples. The Jews, then and today attempt to blame everyone but themselves for their woes. The Jews are incapable of self introspection. Paul the Apostle puts their blood and woes squarely on themselves for rejecting Christ. Thus they hate God and Goy mankind.

Ac. 18:12-17 “12 But when Gallio was proconsul of Achaia, the Jews with one accord rose up against Paul, and brought him to the judgment seat, 13 Saying: This man persuadeth men to worship God contrary to the law. 14 And when Paul was beginning to open his mouth, Gallio said to the Jews: If it were some matter of injustice, or an heinous deed, O Jews, I should with reason bear with you. 15 But if they be questions of word and names, and of your law, look you to it: I will not be judge of such things. 16 And he drove them from the judgment seat. 17 And all laying hold on Sosthenes, the ruler of the synagogue, beat him before the judgment seat; and Gallio cared for none of those things.”

Sound familiar? Gallio did not cave in to Jewish pressure, as did Pontius Pilate. The Jews always attempt to subvert governments and pressure politicians to do their evil bidding. Then and today.

What was Paul's alleged crime according to these parasitic reprobate Jews? 
“This man persuadeth men to worship God contrary to the law.” In other words, PAUL PREACHED THE GOSPEL OF GRACE ALONE, THROUGH FAITH ALONE, IN CHRIST’S IMPUTED RIGHTEOUSNESS ALONE! That is the Apostle Paul's ultimate crime according to the Devil, the Jews, the Papists, and all the devil's false gospel children.

Before Paul could even open his mouth in defense of himself, God moved on Gallio to correct these Jew Christ-haters. Gallio drove the Jews out! It is shame the clergy, pulpit impostors, and politicians in the USA have no courage to resist the venom of the Jews. But even this lack of resistance is the will of God to further destroy the USA.

The Jews do not respect or care for Gentile governments, they still resorted to violence in beating a man to spite Gallio. How corrupt!

Ac. 19:13-16 “13 Now some also of the Jewish exorcists who went about, attempted to invoke over them that had evil spirits, the name of the Lord Jesus, saying: I conjure you by Jesus, whom Paul preacheth. 14 And there were certain men, seven sons of Sceva, a Jew, a chief priest that did this. 15 But the wicked spirit, answering, said to them: Jesus I know, and Paul I know; but who are you? 16 And the man in whom the wicked spirit was, leaping upon them, and mastering them both, prevailed against them, so that they [the Jews] fled out of that house naked and wounded.”
Because the Jews then and today teach and believe Jesus was a sorcerer, a practitioner of the dark arts Christ allegedly learned in Egypt, these Jew sons of Sceva thought they could invoke the name of Jesus for their own personal benefit. Typical. However, they received a literal ass-kicking from the man. Devils know God’s elect people who are born of the Holy Spirit, for devils cannot ultimately overcome God’s elect.

**But who are you?** That’s right! Who are these reprobate and Christ-hating Jews? They are nothing in God’s sight but rather members of the Synagogue of Satan.

The seven sons of Sceva should remind us of all those Pentecostal/Charismatic wackos who are obsessed with driving out demons in their services. They can’t even overcome their own demons let alone the demons of others. But this, too, is all part of God’s plan to further deceive reprobate mankind.

Ac. 23:2-5 “2 Paul looked straight at the Sanhedrin and said, ‘My brothers [ethnic statement], I have fulfilled my duty to God in all good conscience to this day.’ 2 At this the high priest Ananias ordered those standing near Paul to strike him on the mouth. 3 Then Paul said to him, ‘God will strike you, you whitewashed wall! You sit there to judge me according to the law, yet you yourself violate the law by commanding that I be struck!’ 4 Those who were standing near Paul said, ‘You dare to insult God’s high priest?’ 5 Paul replied, ‘Brothers, I did not realize that he was the high priest; for it is written: “Do not speak evil about the ruler of your people.”’

Paul, in essence, was conveying to these wicked Jews that they were a bunch of hypocrites, that God would strike them Himself as He has and always will. But here it gets more interesting. Some were rebuking Paul because he had the audacity to insult their alleged God ordained High Priest. But Paul is no dummy. He cited Exodus 22:28 back at them. Paul was in essence saying he did not realize (meaning recognize/submit to) the authority of this Jewish High Priest. For Christ is the only High Priest of His people, inferring the Jews were guilty of speaking evil about Christ the ruler and true High Priest.

Oh, if there were only more men in this world who would exhibit bravery on behalf of Christ our King.

Ac. 23:12-15 “12 The next morning the Jews formed a conspiracy and bound themselves with an oath not to eat or drink until they had killed Paul. 13 More than forty men were involved in this plot. 14 They went to the chief priests and elders and said, ‘We have taken a solemn oath not to eat anything until we have killed Paul. 15 Now then, you and the Sanhedrin petition the commander to bring him before you on the pretext of wanting more accurate information about his case. We are ready to kill him before he gets here.’”
The reprobate Jews are nothing but a conniving bunch of murdering hypocrites. Then and today. Oh, how pious they are by fasting until they attempt to murder Paul. The Jews are the masters of conspiracies and false flag operations then and today.

Ac. 23:27-30 “27 This man [Paul] was seized by the Jews and they were about to kill him, but I came with my troops and rescued him, for I had learned that he is a Roman citizen. 28 I wanted to know why they were accusing him, so I brought him to their Sanhedrin. 29 I found that the accusation had to do with questions about their law, but there was no charge against him that deserved death or imprisonment. 30 When I was informed of a plot to be carried out against the man, I sent him to you at once. I also ordered his accusers to present to you their case against him.”

When a government ceases to become neutral in religious affairs, then we the elect must be on guard. It was pagan Rome who protected Paul from murderous religious Jews! But today is a different story. In the West, men are be imprisoned for being critical of the Jews and Israel.

Ac. 24:5-9 “5 ‘We [the Jews] have found this man to be a troublemaker, stirring up riots among the Jews all over the world. He is a ringleader of the Nazarene sect 6 and even tried to desecrate the temple; so we seized him. 8 By examining him yourself you will be able to learn the truth about all these charges we are bringing against him.’ 9 The Jews joined in the accusation, asserting that these things were true.”

Troublemaker? Stirring up riots? Ringleader? Tried to desecrate the temple?

The Jews tried to paint Paul as a terrorist. This they do today for anyone who is critical of Israel. However the Scriptures prove the opposite. It is the reprobate Jews who have repeatedly fulfilled the accusations themselves. These blind people will stop at nothing in their hatred for God. Their foul temple was desecrated centuries before Christ condemned them. It was the reprobate Jews who desecrated and defiled God’s Holy Temple. It is fitting the “Dome of the Rock” stands in the center of Jerusalem as a testimony against these wicked Christ hating people.
Ac. 25:1-3 “1 Three days after arriving in the province, Festus went up from Caesarea to Jerusalem, 2 where the chief priests and the Jewish leaders appeared before him and presented the charges against Paul. 3 They requested Festus, as a favor to them, to have Paul transferred to Jerusalem, for they were preparing an ambush to kill him along the way.”

The Jews knew that according to Roman Law Paul would not be found guilty. The Jews are not champions for justice. Sorry ADL, ACLU, Southern Poverty Law Center [Jew started Organizations]. They plotted to kill Paul and raised a jurisdiction issue as a phony pretext to hide their murderous plot. Typical Jewry.

Ac. 25:4-7 “4 Festus answered, ‘Paul is being held at Caesarea, and I myself am going there soon. 5 Let some of your leaders come with me, and if the man has done anything wrong, they can press charges against him there.’ 6 After spending eight or ten days with them, Festus went down to Caesarea. The next day he convened the court and ordered that Paul be brought before him. 7 When Paul came in, the Jews who had come down from Jerusalem stood around him. They brought many serious charges against him, but they could not prove them.”

You see, the Jews always blow off a lot of steam and have their critics imprisoned when anyone dares to criticize or disagree with them. Even though they could not prove the trumped up charges against Paul, it did not matter to these infidels. The real underlying motive is that Paul, a Jew ethnically speaking, was a follower of Jesus Christ the true King. ALL that followed Jesus were deserving of death according to the reprobate Jews. These cursed Jewish people still believe this. Then and today.

Ac. 25:8 “Then Paul made his defense: ‘I have done nothing wrong against the Jewish law or against the temple or against Caesar.’”

This is not hard to understand if one knows the Scriptures and the Gospel. According to the Scriptures, Jesus is the fulfillment of both LAW and TEMPLE. So in reality Paul by preaching Christ in no way desecrated the Temple nor violated the Law. If anything, Paul only condemned the falsehoods of the Jews, but not the essence of Mosaic truth. And as for Caesar, Paul was not attempting to overthrow the Roman establishment. Quite the contrary, it was the reprobate Jews who for centuries were attempting to overthrow their Roman masters.
Give us Barabbas they shouted!

Barabbas was a freedom fighter in the Jewish resistance against the Romans. In fact he was an important rebel leader amongst many. A true Zionist.

Ac. 25:14-19 “14 Since they were spending many days there, Festus discussed Paul’s case with the king. He said: ‘There is a man here whom Felix left as a prisoner. 15 When I went to Jerusalem, the chief priests and the elders of the Jews brought charges against him and asked that he be condemned. 18 When his accusers got up to speak, they did not charge him with any of the crimes I had expected. 19 Instead, they had some points of dispute with him about their own religion and about a dead man named Jesus who Paul claimed was alive.’”

Ac. 25:23-25 “23 The next day Agrippa and Bernice came with great pomp and entered the audience room with the high-ranking military officers and the prominent men of the city. At the command of Festus, Paul was brought in. 24 Festus said: ‘King Agrippa, and all who are present with us, you see this man! The whole Jewish community has petitioned me about him in Jerusalem and here in Caesarea, shouting that he ought not to live any longer. 25 I found he had done nothing deserving of death, but because he made his appeal to the Emperor I decided to send him to Rome.’”

Why is it that most of the world pities the Jew? Because God has blinded Jew sympathizers.

We have shown thus far from the Old Testament, the four Gospels, and now in Acts what God says about these cursed people. We can readily see the ongoing pattern inherently etched in their soul of hate, murder, deception, treachery, malice, greed, and almost everything that defines depravity and reprobation. The
Jews are the quintessential representatives of Satan and his minions. They are of their father the devil. To deny this, one must throw the whole of the Holy Scriptures in the garbage, and believe in Jewish fables and lies.

When we see Pagan Rome found no guilt in Jesus, and none in Paul, that should be evidence enough of the ultimate hardness and crass intrinsic to the Jew mentality.

Ac. 26:19-23 “19 So then, King Agrippa, I [Paul] was not disobedient to the vision from heaven. 20 First to those in Damascus, then to those in Jerusalem and in all Judea, and then to the Gentiles, I preached that they should repent and turn to God and demonstrate their repentance by their deeds. 21 That is why some Jews seized me in the temple courts and tried to kill me. 22 But God has helped me to this very day; so I stand here and testify to small and great alike. I am saying nothing beyond what the prophets and Moses said would happen 23 that the Messiah would suffer and, as the first to rise from the dead, would bring the message of light to his own people and to the Gentiles.”

You see! Paul defends himself with the truth and nothing but the truth. And we too, defeat the wicked Jews, Papists, Protestants, ecumenists, syncretists, and all false religions with the Gospel and nothing but the Gospel and truth of Scripture.

Paul did not need to retain some crooked lawyer in his defense. The Holy Spirit was His advocate.

Ac. 28:25-28 “25 They disagreed among themselves and began to leave after Paul had made this final statement: ‘The Holy Spirit spoke the truth to your ancestors when he said through Isaiah the prophet: 26 “Go to this people and say, ‘You will be ever hearing but never understanding; you will be ever
seeing *but never perceiving.* 27 *For this people’s heart has become calloused; they hardly hear with their ears, and they have closed their eyes.* Otherwise they might see with their eyes, hear with their ears, understand with their hearts and turn, and I would heal them.” 28 Therefore I want you to know that God’s salvation has been sent to the Gentiles, *and they will listen!*”

The reprobate Jew will NEVER find salvation. Neither the reprobate Gentile.

We will now look into the Epistles to learn further what God has to say about the Jews.

**Romans**

Ro. 1:16-18 “16 *For I am not ashamed of the gospel:* for it is the power of God unto salvation to every one that believeth; *to the Jew first, and also to the Greek.* 17 *For therein [the Gospel] is revealed a righteousness of God from faith unto faith:* as it is written, But the righteous shall live by faith. 18 *For the wrath of God is revealed from heaven against all ungodliness and unrighteousness of men,* who hinder the truth in unrighteousness;”

Ro. 2:11 “*for there is no respect of persons with God.*”

Ro. 2:17 “*But if thou bearest the name of a Jew,* and restest upon the law, *and gloriest in God,“*

Ro. 2:24 “*For the name of God is blasphemed among the Gentiles because of you [Jews], even as it is written.*”

Paul in Romans chapter one lays the foundation, the gospel of Jesus Christ as the *only* avenue of righteousness. Continuously Paul impresses upon his readers the targets “*to the Jew first, and also to the Greek.*” This target also is established for condemnation “*to the Jew first, and also to the Greek.*”

In chapter one, with a stunning and sobering discourse, Paul shows the evilness of all mankind. Paul uses chapter one as his premise to further reveal in Romans, inherently, there is no difference between the Jew [with law] and Gentile [without law].

There is one attitude that stands out the most within the Jew, that being his egotistical, ethnic, and racist pride, gloating that he is a Jew. Meaning to him, he is a higher class of being in God’s sight than the Gentile. Then and today.

Paul’s letter to the Romans dismisses, overthrows and dissects this Jewish arrogance piece-by-piece, premise-by-premise, and strikes back at the Jew from Paul’s usage of the Old Testament and the very Gospel of Christ.
This arrogant wall of separation between Jew and Gentile is still with us today. In fact this wall has been reinforced by the likes of the Jesuits, Premillennialists, Papists, and Jews themselves.

The Jews were given the oracles of God [Moses], however they themselves could not keep the laws but became hypocrites blaspheming the name of God among the Gentiles.

Ro. 3:9-10 “9 What then? Are we better than they? No, in no wise: for we before laid to the charge both of Jews and Greeks, that they are all under sin; 10 as it is written, There is none righteous, no, not one;”

Ro. 3:22-23 “22 even the righteousness of God through faith in Jesus Christ unto all them that believe; for there is no distinction [between Jew and Gentile]; 23 for all have sinned, and fall short of the glory of God;”

Ro. 3:28-30 “28 We reckon therefore that a man is justified by faith apart from the works of the law. 29 Or is God the God of Jews only? Is he not the God of Gentiles also? Yea, of Gentiles also: 30 if so be that God is one, and he shall justify the circumcision [Ethnic Jew] by faith, and the uncircumcision [Ethnic Gentile] through faith.”

Paul continues to further show that in essence, ALL mankind is the same! Jew and Gentile alike.

The reprobate Jews have won the battle that they have for almost 2,000 years been waging against the pseudo-Christian world. The Jews have now been exempted from any need of Jesus Christ. In fact, if one of us [elect] tries to share the Gospel with a Jew, we are now smeared as Anti-Semites, which you know is patently false.

Ro. 8:29-33 “29 For whom he foreknew, he also foreordained to be conformed to the image of his Son, that he might be the firstborn among many brethren: 30 and whom he foreordained, them he also called: and whom he called, them he also justified: and whom he justified, them he also glorified. 31 What then shall we say to these things? If God is for us, who is against us? 32 He that spared not his own Son, but delivered him up for us all, how shall he not also with him freely give us all things? 33 Who shall lay anything to the charge of God’s elect? It is God that justifieth;”

Paul, after destroying the wall between Jew and Gentile, introduces and builds the true wall concept that defines who God’s chosen people are; through the doctrine of Election and Reprobation.
ALL false religions in this world hate this doctrine, even the Infralapsarians that plague the reformed pseudo-Christian world.

Ro. 9:6-8 “6 But it is not as though the word of God hath come to nought. For they are not all [true] Israel, that are of [ethnic/Mosaic] Israel: 7 neither, because they are Abraham's [physical] seed, are they all [true] children: but, In Isaac shall thy [true] seed be called. 8 That is, it is not the children of the [ethnic/biological] flesh that are children of God; but the children [Jew and Gentile] of the promise are reckoned for a [true] seed.”

In this world of false religions we have the syncretists who tell us, “All of humanity are children of God.” The pseudo-Christian ecumenists tell us, “all those who believe in Jesus Christ,” no matter how they define Christ or the Gospel, are children of God. We have the premillennialists, Papists, and dispensationalists, who claim the Jews are the “chosen people”, and therefore are the children of God. However, Paul the Apostle constricts and narrows the children of God as those of the elect only in Christ alone.

Ro. 9:18 “So then he hath mercy on whom he will [the elect Jew and Gentile], and whom he will he hardeneth [the reprobate Jew and Gentile].”

It is the very erosion of the Pauline doctrine of election and reprobation that aided and abetted our current day cult worship of the alleged (chosen people) Jews and their bogus Holy Land called Israel today. The world has gone mad!

Ro. 9:27 “And Isaiah crieth concerning [Mosaic] Israel, If the number of the children of [Mosaic] Israel be as the sand of the sea, it is the [elect] remnant that shall be saved:”

Ro. 9:31-33 “31 but Israel, following after a law of righteousness, did not arrive at that law. 32 Wherefore? Because they [reprobate Israel] sought it not by faith, but as it were by works. They stumbled at the stone of stumbling; 33 even as it is written, Behold, I lay in Zion a stone [Jesus Christ] of stumbling and a rock of offence [Jesus Christ]: And he that believeth on him [Jesus Christ] shall not be put to shame.”

If only the pew warmers would get alone with God, pray, read, and study the Scriptures, rather than swallow everything their pulpit/puppet masters shove down their throats, they would be better off hopefully.

Ro. 10:3-4 “3 For being ignorant of God’s righteousness, and seeking to establish their own, they [the Jews] did not subject themselves to the righteousness of God. 4 For Christ is the end of the law unto righteousness to every one that believeth [to the Jew first, and also to the Greek].”

Ro. 10:12 “For there is no distinction between Jew and Greek: for the same...
Lord is Lord of all, and is rich unto all that call upon him.”

Ro. 10:19-21 “19 But I say, Did [ethnic/Mosaic] Israel not know? First Moses saith, I will provoke you to jealousy with that which is no nation [Gentiles], With a nation void of understanding will I anger you. 20 And Isaiah is very bold, and saith, I was found of them [Gentiles] that sought me not; I became manifest unto them [Gentiles] that asked not of me. 21 But as to [National] Israel he saith, All the day long did I spread out my hands unto a disobedient and gainsaying people.”

God has blinded all the Jews today and their religious allies. How such a Christ hating, God dishonoring, disobedient and gainsaying people could have gained the pity and support of most of the Western world is beyond imagination. Only through the providential hardening and blinding of God can mankind so misunderstand Paul the apostle in his letter to the Romans.

The world has gone mad!

Ro. 11:7-11 “7 What then? That which [National] Israel seeketh for, that he [Israel] obtained not; but the election obtained it, and the rest were hardened: 8 according as it is written, God gave them a spirit of stupor, eyes that they should not see, and ears that they should not hear, unto this very day. 9 And David saith, Let their table be made a snare, and a trap, And a stumblingblock, and a recompense unto them: 10 Let their eyes be darkened, that they may not see, And bow thou down their back always. 11 I say then, Did they stumble that they might fall? God forbid: but by their fall salvation is come unto the Gentiles, to provoke them to jealousy.”

You see! To Paul, it is all about election in Christ. That’s all!

Paul cites the OT against the reprobate Jews. The reprobate Jews possess:
Hardening
Spirit of stupor
Blind eyes
Deaf ears

Their Satanic religion is:

A snare and trap.
A stumbling-block.
A recompense unto them.

Their eyes are darkened, undo this very day.

Ro. 9:28 “As touching the gospel, they [reprobate Jews] are enemies for your sake: but as touching the election, they [elect Jews] are beloved for the fathers’ sake.”

Again, Paul constantly reiterates the theme: It is all about election in Christ: the Jew first, then the Greek/Gentile.

The Pauline doctrines of Election and Reprobation are all but missing and/or misunderstood in most of Christen-dumb today. But one thing is for sure, those of us who proclaim/uphold these truths in their purity, are most hated in the religious world. Both reprobate Jews and reprobate Christians hate this teaching with a passion.

Ro. 14:17-18 “17 for the kingdom of God is not eating and drinking, but righteousness and peace and joy in the Holy Spirit. 18 For he that herein serveth Christ is well-pleasing to God, and approved of men.”

To the reprobate Jew first, and then all reprobates, the Kingdom of God according to them is some earthly utopia that must be constructed by whatever means necessary. But unless one is born via the Holy Spirit, he or she shall never enter/see the Kingdom of God/Heaven. A Christ hater/rejecter is surely not pleasing to God. Jew and Gentile both.

1 Corinthians

1 Co. 1:22-24 “22 Seeing that Jews ask for signs, and Greeks seek after wisdom: 23 but we preach Christ crucified, unto Jews a stumblingblock, and unto Gentiles foolishness; 24 but unto them that are called [the elect], both Jews and Greeks, Christ the power of God, and the wisdom of God.”

Paul, our brother and Apostle in Christ, reiterates the same underlying premise as he taught in Romans. Inherently, there is no difference between Jew and
Gentile in relation to depravity, sin, and Gospel rejection. Only the elect of God, both from Jews and Greeks, will understand that Jesus Christ is the power and the wisdom of God.

As we have discussed numerous times, the Scriptures boldly attest to the fact that the elect alone are considered God’s chosen people. The elect alone constitute the Ekklesia, the Body of Christ, the true Israel of God.

Jesus Christ will always be a stumbling block to the reprobate Jews. And likewise, Jesus Christ will always be foolishness to reprobate Gentiles.

To Paul, all of history centers and revolves around the being/person of Jesus Christ, Immanuel, God with us. Individuals and the world collectively will be judged according to belief or rejection of the Gospel of Jesus Christ.

2 Corinthians

2 Co. 3:1-3 “1 Are we beginning again to commend ourselves? or need we, as do some, epistles of commendation to you or from you? 2 Ye are our epistle, written in our hearts, known and read of all men; 3 being made manifest that ye are an epistle of Christ, ministered by us, written not with ink, but with the Spirit of the living God; not in tables of stone, but in tables that are hearts of flesh.”

Paul uses many comparisons to explain the difference/contrast between Law and Grace in his epistles. Paul now shows this contrast and the effect it has on the soul. Comparing Moses/Law/external and Gospel/Grace/internal.

2 Co. 3:4-6 “4 And such confidence have we through Christ to God-ward: 5 not that we are sufficient of ourselves, to account anything as from ourselves; but our sufficiency is from God; 6 who also made us sufficient as ministers of a new covenant; not of the letter, but of the spirit: for the letter killeth, but the spirit giveth life.”

The reprobate Jew, and all reprobates, pride themselves with the external Do’s and Don’ts of their respective false religions. In context though, Paul uses the prime example of the Mosaic administration as an administration of death.

2 Co. 3:7-9 “7 But if the ministration of death, written, and engraven on stones, came with glory, so that the children of Israel could not look stedfastly upon the face of Moses for the glory of his face; which glory was passing away: 8 how shall not rather the ministration of the spirit be with glory? 9 For if the ministration of condemnation hath glory, much rather doth the ministration of righteousness exceed in glory.”
Paul raises three important principles:

*Ministration of death/Moses = Glorious
*Ministration of life/Holy Spirit/Gospel = Exceeding Glory
*Moses/Law = Passing away.

So much can be said about these.

How can an administration of death be glorious?

The world of christen-dumb and the Jew cannot fathom a God who receives glory, both in the election unto life of a soul, and the reprobation unto death of a soul.

To Paul, both Law and Grace are glorious instruments/means to bring about God’s good pleasure and purposes. It is the glorious Law that brings destruction upon the reprobates. How so? Because they have been barred access from the Tree of Life/Christ. The reprobate Jew/Gentile have been consigned to a life of LAW/DEATH adherence. There is no free-will/choice on their part. Furthermore, God receives glory in their destruction.

The exceeding glory rests in the fact that Grace, Justification, and Life in the Holy Spirit are granted to the elect of God alone. The glorious Law shows the elect their depravity and need of the Glorious Gospel of Jesus Christ our Lord. God effectually works in the hearts of His people alone.

For the elect alone, the glorious Law has passed away. For the reprobate, that glorious Law will condemn them forever. The reprobate Jews/Gentiles cannot escape their law-based religions.

2 Co. 3:10-11 “10 For verily that which hath been made glorious hath not been made glorious in this respect, by reason of the glory that surpasseth. 11 For if that [Law] which passeth away was with glory, much more that which remaineth is in glory.”

The Gospel of Grace does not make and or remove the glorious nature of the LAW. The glorious LAW still today has a vital and necessary function. The Law’s vital purpose is to condemn the reprobate. Jew and Gentile alike.

2 Co. 3:12-15 “12 Having therefore such a hope [Grace], we use great boldness of speech, 13 and are not as Moses [Law], who put a veil upon his face, that the children of Israel should not look steadfastly on the end of that which was passing away: 14 but their [the Jews] minds were hardened: for until this very day at the reading of the old covenant the same veil remaineth, it not being revealed to them that it is done away in Christ. 15 But unto this day,
whenever Moses is read, a veil lieth upon their heart.”

God hardened the minds of the reprobate Jews, even to this very day and forever. The Jews today in their denial of Christ still wear the veil of darkness and death. God has not revealed to them the glorious nature of Christ and the Gospel. Again, there is no free-will/choice in all of this.

2 Co. 3:16 “But whenever it shall turn to the Lord, the veil is taken away.”

Only when God grants a Jew repentance and faith, the veil will be removed.

2 Co. 3:17 “Now the Lord is the Spirit: and where the Spirit of the Lord is, there is liberty.”

In context, only those who are born of the Spirit of God are free, free indeed! The Gospel alone sets the captives free.

The reprobate Jews in that cursed land called Israel today can beat their heads all day long on the Wailing Wall. It will not remove the veil of death.

2 Co. 3:18 “But we all [elect], with unveiled face beholding as in a mirror the glory of the Lord, are transformed into the same image from glory to glory, even as from the Lord the Spirit.”

2 Co. 4:1 “Therefore seeing we have this ministry, even as we obtained mercy, we faint not.”

2 Co. 4:3-4 “3 And even if our gospel is veiled, it is veiled in them that perish: 4 in whom the god of this world hath blinded the minds of the unbelieving, that the light of the gospel of the glory of Christ, who is the image of God, should not dawn upon them.”

Satan, the god of this world, is a means, a tool God directly controls to bring about His predetermined, preordained purposes. Unless God/Christ binds this strongman, the soul (Jew and Gentile) will be forever hopelessly lost in unbelief for eternity.

2 Co. 5:17-18 “17 Wherefore if any man [Jew and Gentile-context] is in Christ, he is a new creature: the old things are passed away; behold, they are become new. 18 But all things are of God, who reconciled us to himself through Christ, and gave unto us the ministry of reconciliation;”

The Jews today, now championed with the help of pseudo-Christians, do not desire to be “new creatures”. They’re told, “you do not need Christ for Salvation.” These devils continue to desire the “old things”. They love the “old wineskins”.

487
“12 But what I [Paul] do, that I will do, that I may cut off occasion from them that desire an occasion; that wherein they glory, they may be found even as we. 13 For such men are false apostles, deceitful workers, fashioning themselves into apostles of Christ.”

Who are these men Paul refers to as, “them and they”?

We know so far that Paul describes them as “false apostles, deceitful workers, fashioning themselves into apostles of Christ.”

We can conclude that these men claim to be followers of Christ. Are they Gentile or Jew? We shall see.

2 Co. 11:14 “And no marvel; for even Satan fashioneth himself into an angel of light.”

Paul equates these pseudo-Christians on par to Satan himself. The same as we, the current day elect equate pseudo-Christians on par with Satan. Thank God for the continuous and cooperating work of the Holy Spirit in the lives of His elect.

2 Co. 11:15 “It is no great thing therefore if his [Satan's] ministers also fashion themselves as ministers of righteousness, whose end shall be according to their works.”

Paul gives us more truth about these reprobates. These false-gospel preachers teach a works based salvation that they will themselves be judged with.

However, earlier in this chapter, Paul states:

2 Co. 11:4 “For if he that cometh preacheth another Jesus, whom we did not preach, or if ye receive a different spirit, which ye did not receive, or a different gospel, which ye did not accept, ye do well to bear with him.”

Another Jesus?
Different Spirit?
Different Gospel?

The world of christen-dumb runs away from any attempt in defining doctrinally the objective Gospel, the historical Jesus, and the true effectual working of the Holy Spirit. They tell us that the Gospel is shrouded in mystery and paradox. What fools!

2 Co. 11:16-21 “16 I say again, let no man think me foolish; but if ye do, yet as foolish receive me, that I also may glory a little. 17 That which I speak, I speak not after the Lord, but as in foolishness, in this confidence of glorying. 18 Seeing that many glory after the flesh, I will glory also. 19 For ye bear with the foolish
gladly, being wise yourselves. 20 For ye bear with a man, if he bringeth you into bondage, if he devoureth you, if he taketh you captive, if he exalteth himself, if he smiteth you on the face. 21 I speak by way of disparagement, as though we had been weak. Yet whereinsoever any is bold (I speak in foolishness), I am bold also.”

Our brother Paul is a master at revealing and defeating his opponent’s “Ad hominem” arguments. From verses 16-21, Paul shows the influence these pseudo-christians had over the minds of these Corinthians.

A few hints into their deception were:

* Persuading the Gentile Corinthians that Paul was foolish.
* Persuading to glory in the flesh.

Paul was criticizing the Corinthians for being duped by these false apostles who brought bondage with their false Gospel. The Corinthians were being devoured by these false prophets who exalted themselves.

Who are these false men? For the most part, none other than the JEWS THEMSELVES.

2 Co. 11:22 “Are they Hebrews? so am I. Are they Israelites? so am I. Are they the seed of Abraham? so am I.”

Paul continues to challenge the Corinthians by comparing himself, a true Jew and true apostle of our Lord, with those who claim to be messianic gospel perverting Jews.

2 Co. 11:23 “Are they ministers of Christ? (I speak as one beside himself) I more; in labors more abundantly, in prisons more abundantly, in stripes above measure, in deaths oft.”

Paul now tells the Corinthians how deadly the Jews are against the true Gospel, and other troubles he experienced as a true minister of the Gospel. The ethnic Law loving Jew, whether they profess Christ or not, is a bearer of bad tidings.

2 Co. 11:24-33 “24 Of the Jews five times received I forty stripes save one. 25 Thrice was I beaten with rods, once was I stoned, thrice I suffered shipwreck, a night and a day have I been in the deep; 26 in journeyings often, in perils of rivers, in perils of robbers, in perils from my countrymen, in perils from the Gentiles, in perils in the city, in perils in the wilderness, in perils in the sea, in perils among false brethren; 27 in labor and travail, in watchings often, in hunger and thirst, in fastings often, in cold and nakedness. 28 Besides those things that are without, there is that which presseth upon me daily, anxiety for all the churches. 29 Who is weak, and I am not weak? who is caused to stumble,
and I burn not? 30 If I must needs glory, I will glory of the things that concern my weakness. 31 The God and Father of the Lord Jesus, he who is blessed for evermore knoweth that I lie not. 32 In Damascus the governor under Aretas the king guarded the city of the Damascenes in order to take me: 33 and through a window was I let down in a basket by the wall, and escaped his hands.”

No doubt about it. The Jews were Paul’s greatest enemies even among his Gentile enemies. Then and today.

Jewish pride and arrogance is unrelenting. Then and today. Law/Moses and Grace/Gospel are antithetical to one another.

False religions including so-called Christian religions/septs, require some form of Law, works, obedience, and human performance to gain entrance through the “pearly gates”.

Paul’s letter to the Galatians continues to expose these Jewish fantasies of law adherence, and the detrimental effects it has on the pristine Gospel of Grace alone.

Galatians

1:6-10 “6 I marvel that ye are so quickly removing from him that called you in the grace of Christ unto a different gospel; 7 which is not another gospel only there are some [?] that trouble you, and would pervert the gospel of Christ. 8 But though we, or an angel from heaven, should preach unto you any gospel other than that which we preached unto you, let him be anathema. 9 As we have said before, so say I now again, if any man preacheth unto you any gospel other than that which ye received, let him be anathema. 10 For am I now seeking the favor of men, or of God? or am I striving to please men? if I were still pleasing men, I should not be a servant of Christ.”

Understanding that there is only ONE true, bona-fide, correct, revealed, proclaimed Gospel is a matter of life and death, sheep and goat, wheat and tare. The Gospel is not shrouded in mystery or paradox, but has been fully revealed in the person of Jesus Christ, and fully articulated by Paul the Apostle. The Holy Spirit Himself causes us, the regenerate elect, to understand Gospel revelation, but to those who are perishing, the Gospel is hidden from them.
To the Jew first and then the Greek, any attempt to pervert this one True Gospel is under the Anathema of God.

It really does not matter if one is a full-blown Christ-rejecting Orthodox/Talmudic Jew, Messianic Jew, Gentile pseudo-Christian, (Orthodox-Roman Catholic-Protestant-Evangelical) or even an angel popping out of the heavens. If that false messenger adds only one speck/element of LAW into the Gospel, it then becomes a false Gospel. The Gospel is a white or black issue alone, with no gray areas.

Paul understood that proclaiming the “True Gospel” would not add any points to his reputation status. Unregenerate and reprobate mankind despises the true Gospel by their very own corrupt inherent nature. But Paul did not care. He was only concerned with pleasing God and not men. The Jew first, then Gentile ministers of false gospels strive to please men and are not servants of Christ. So for us elect, who understand the True Gospel, it becomes an easy task to point out false gospel teachers who are not servants of Christ.

Ga. 1:13-17 “13 For ye have heard of my manner of life in time past in the Jews’ religion, how that beyond measure I persecuted the church of God, and made havoc of it: 14 and I advanced in the Jews’ religion beyond many of mine own age among my countrymen, being more exceedingly zealous for the traditions of my fathers. 15 But when it was the good pleasure of God, who separated me, even from my mother’s womb, and called me through his grace, 16 to reveal his Son in me, that I might preach him among the Gentiles; straightway I conferred not with flesh and blood: 17 neither went I up to Jerusalem to them that were apostles before me: but I went away into Arabia; and again I returned unto Damascus.”

Paul, after first upholding the integrity of the True Gospel and warning the Galatians of those who would attempt to pervert the Gospel, now moves to share his background as one who came from Jewish lineage, hatred, and bigotry. Why would he do this? It's quite simple. Sharing his background as a Jew lends him more credibility as he moves forward to attack his very own Jew kinfolk. This also helps to dismiss any attempts by the Jews to discredit Paul based on specious grounds of prejudice. Furthermore, his very own conversion to Christ and the Gospel shows there can never be a synthesis of Judaism/Law and the Gospel. To Paul, Judaism is the path to hell.

Messianic Judaism is just as corrupt and foul as Torah/Talmudic Judaism. When the principle of LAW in general, or Mosaic in detail, is synthesized with Grace, the Gospel is then made void and becomes another Gospel under the Anathema of God. This was stressed by Jesus Christ our Lord when He said, “the new wine cannot be poured into old wineskins” and “No man seweth a piece of raw cloth to an old garment: otherwise the new piecing taketh away from the old, and there is
made a greater rent.” The synthesis of law and grace makes the Gospel a sham.

As we have previously shown with the likes of Aquinas, J.I. Packer, Piper, and MacArthur, to name a few, the Gospel/Justification they teach is based on law adherence to one degree or another. Thus, Paul lumps them all together as false teachers/prophets.

Ga. 2:1-4 “1 Then fourteen years later I went up again to Jerusalem with Barnabas, and took Titus with me also. 2 And I went up by revelation, and communicated unto them that Gospel which I preach among the Gentiles, but privately to those who were of reputation, lest by any means I should run, or had run, in vain. 3 But neither was Titus, who was with me, being a Greek, compelled to be circumcised; 4 and that because false brethren were brought in by stealth, who came in privily to spy out our liberty which we have in Christ Jesus, that they might bring us into bondage.”

Paul moves forward in his letter to the Galatians, sharing how Judaizers/Jews attempt to thwart the Gospel of Grace alone without any law adherence.

The phrase “compelled to be circumcised” is not to be understood as only one specific act of obedience to the Law of Moses, but that the very act of circumcision encompasses and represents an entire submission to LAW in general.

These false Jew brethren were brought in by stealth (secretly, or imperceptibly) to spy out the Gentile Galatians’ liberty that the true Gospel brings. Their evil goal however was to corrupt Christ’s/Paul’s gospel, and bring the Gentile believers under their very own bondage of law-based salvation/justification.

Ga. 2:5 “To them we gave place by submission not even for an hour, that the truth of the Gospel might continue with you.”

Paul and his children in the Gospel would have none of that nonsense.

Ga. 2:6 “But of those who seemed to be something (whosoever they were, it maketh no difference to me: God accepteth no man’s person) — those who seemed to be somewhat in consultation added nothing to me;”

The arrogant Jew thinks he is some big deal. “Look at me, I am a Jew, I am one of God’s chosen people.” But to Paul (a true Jew) all this ethnic and religious Jew/Israel crap was meaningless to him. It added nothing to him. For God accepteth no man’s person.

Ga. 2:7-10 “7 but contrariwise, when they saw that the Gospel to the Uncircumcision [Gentile] was committed unto me, as the Gospel to the Circumcision [Ethnic Jew] was unto Peter 8 (for He [Christ] that wrought
effectually in Peter to the apostleship of the Circumcision, that Same [Christ] was mighty in me toward the Gentiles), 9 and when James, Cephas and John, who seemed to be pillars, perceived the grace that was given unto me, they gave to me and Barnabas the right hands of fellowship, that we should go unto the heathen and they unto the Circumcision. 10 Only they would that we should remember the poor, the same as I also was eager to do.”

Paul's usage of the word “seemed” can in no way be construed as an absolute guarantee that what is seemed to be true, is in fact true. The word “seemed” leaves room for doubt, as in the case of Judas. Judas was chosen as one of the twelve original disciples. In all appearances to the other eleven disciples, Judas “seemed” to be a true believer in Christ. However, he was later shown to be a reprobate.

It is my personal conviction that eventually Peter and John are shown to be true pillars, but not James. James and those disciples of James were Paul’s greatest antagonists. They even stumbled Peter for a while with their false Gospel of law/works.

Ga. 2: 11-13 “11 But when Peter came to Antioch, I withstood him to his face, because he was to be blamed. 12 For before certain ones came from James, he ate with the Gentiles; but when they had come, he withdrew and separated himself from them, fearing those who were of the Circumcision [Jews]. 13 And the other Jews dissembled likewise with him, so much that Barnabas also was carried away by their dissimulation.”

Why so much fear? Paul did not fear the Jews. The influence of the crass Jew mind is a powerful force in society. Then and today. How dare a Jew eat with the “Goy”. That is unthinkable! James’ disciples were ruthless and zealous for the Law. Even Barnabas and other Jews were stumbled by these law loving, works mongers from James.

Paul worked so hard at tearing down this wall of separation (Iron Curtain) between Jew and Gentile, only to run up against the likes of those who so desired to reinforce it. The Jews are relentless. Then and today.

Ga. 2:14 “But when I saw that they walked not uprightly according to the truth of the Gospel, I said unto Peter before them all, ‘If thou, being a Jew, livest after the manner of Gentiles and not as do the Jews, why compellest thou the Gentiles to live as do the Jews?’”

Peter our brother was grasping the implications of Paul's gospel. Peter was living as a free man in the Gospel, like other Gentile believers. However the strong and fearful influences from the Jews caused Peter to become a hypocrite, in which Paul addressed him sharply face to face.
Galatians 2:15-16 “15 We who are Jews by nature, and not sinners of the Gentiles, 16 knowing that a man is not justified by the works of the law, but by the faith of Jesus Christ, even we have believed in Jesus Christ, that we might be justified by the faith of Christ, and not by the works of the law; for by the works of the law shall no flesh be justified.”

Any teacher that promotes a Justification by works, whether Grace induced (Messianic Jews/Augustine/Aquinas/Trent/Pseudo-Christianity/Protestantism) or out of pure human free will (Pelagians/Semi-Pelagians/Arminians) unaided by Grace, is a false prophet and under the Anathema of God.

Galatians 2:17-18 “17 But if, while we seek to be justified by Christ [through faith alone], we ourselves also are found sinners [by attempting to Justify ourselves by law adherence], is Christ therefore the minister of sin [a false Gospel]? God forbid! 18 For if I build again the things which I destroyed [law based Justification], I make myself a transgressor [and a false prophet].”

Paul our brother teaches us elect, that if law adherence could bring Justification, as the Jews alleged was in fact true, then Christ and the Gospel are false.

Galatians 2:19-21 “19 For I through the law am dead to the law, that I might live unto God. [Law adherence spells death. Faith alone is life.] 20 I am crucified with Christ, nevertheless I live; yet not I, but Christ liveth in me. And the life which I now live in the flesh, I live by the faith of/in the Son of God, who loved me and gave Himself for me. 21 I do not frustrate the grace of God; for if righteousness come by the law, then Christ is dead in vain.”

Since the commencement of the “Great Gospel Apostasy” that was seeded by the Jew Judaizers during the lives of the Apostles and has grown to become the gigantic monster it is today in Christen-dumb, law-based justification adherents show Christ as dying in vain. However Christ has blinded them to the reality of their own rebellion.

Galatians 3:1 “O foolish Galatians, who did bewitch you, before whose eyes Jesus Christ was openly set forth crucified?”

Let’s list an analysis of Paul’s statements thus far in Galatians.

The Problem:

* Different gospel.
* Not another gospel.
* Perversion of the gospel.

Purveyors of the problem:
*False brethren - Jews
*Certain came from James - Jews

How they purveyed the problem:

* Through Law adherence - Jews

Effects of the problem:

* Trouble you – troublemakers - Jews
* Bring us into bondage - Jews
* Carried away with their dissimulation - Jews

Their attitude:

*They walked not uprightly according to the truth of the Gospel - Jews

Their curse:

* Let him be anathema

Paul calls the activity of the Jews “bewitching”.

G940 - baskainō : 1. to speak ill of one, to slander, traduce him 2. to bring evil on one by feigning praise or an evil eye 3. to charm, to bewitch.

Law-loving, false-gospel purveyors (Jew first, then Greek) will stop at nothing to destroy or silence ministers and people of the true Gospel. Because these devils are in bondage to their works based justification, they desire to drag Christ’s elect down to the abyss with them. However that will never happen.

Ga. 3:2 “This only would I learn from you. Received ye the Spirit by the works of the law, or by the hearing of faith?”

In Paul’s soteriology there is no synthesis of Law and Grace that leads to Justification. To Paul, it is either Grace alone through faith alone, OR works of the law, but never a combination of the two. The former being the true Gospel, and the latter being Jewish pipe dreams. And today, pseudo-Christian pipe dreams.

Paul continues in chapter three by showing Abraham as the prime example of Justification through faith alone without all works.

He concludes:

Ga. 3:28-29 “28 There can be neither Jew nor Greek, there can be neither
bond nor free, there can be no male and female; for ye all are one man in Christ Jesus. 29 And if ye are Christ’s, then are ye Abraham’s seed, heirs according to promise.”

The elect alone in Christ, no matter where they come from in life, are Abraham’s true seed and heirs according to the promises of God. This Pauline understanding is very stumbling to the Jew. This was also very stumbling for the law loving Jew, James, and his disciples also.

Ga. 4:4-11 “4 but when the fulness of the time came, God sent forth his Son, born of a woman, born under the law, 5 that He might redeem them that were under the law, that we might receive the adoption of sons. 6 And because ye are sons, God sent forth the Spirit of his Son into our hearts, crying, Abba, Father. 7 So that thou art no longer a bondservant, but a son; and if a son, then an heir through God. 8 Howbeit at that time, not knowing God, ye were in bondage to them that by nature are no gods: 9 but now that ye have come to know God, or rather to be known by God, how turn ye back again to the weak and beggarly rudiments, whereunto ye desire to be in bondage over again? 10 Ye observe days, and months, and seasons, and years. 11 I am afraid of you, lest by any means I have bestowed labor upon you in vain.”

Paul reinforces his case for Grace alone, by showing Christ came to redeem His elect, both Jew and Gentile, from the bondage of LAW.

Paul cites an example as to the effects these Judaizers had on them by their practice of observing days, and months, and seasons, and years.

Historically, both within Mosaic Judaism and Gentile Paganism, this calendar worship was required as a matter of law. It was salvific for them. The Papists and Orthodox pagans call this: “Holy days of obligation”. The Jews call it “Sabbath keeping and more”. The Protestant cults call this “Sabbitarianism”. Whether Saturday or Sunday is irrelevant. The concept behind all of this calendar worship is the same. It is LAW based.

Paul refutes any form of Law based calendar worship; regardless of it having Jew or Gentile origins. Paul sees these weak and beggarly elements as producing bondage to the soul, thus negating the Gospel of Jesus Christ.

Ga. 4:16 “So then am I become your enemy, by telling you the truth?”

Paul did not cease to identify the problems that the Jew Judaizers were causing throughout the Gentile world. Then and today.

Ga. 4:17 “Those [Jew] people are zealous to win you over, but for no good. What they want is to alienate you from us, so that you may be zealous for them.”
Typical Jewry! Then and today.

However, the Jewish problem/attitude and its effects is evident within all of pseudo-Christianity.

I have met or conversed with many persons who worked hard at destroying my message of the Gospel. They have used slander and every form of character assassination to divert people away from the True Gospel. I'm not talking about the “un-churched” Atheists, but PROFESSED CHURCH MEMBERS!

I have witnessed brothers in Christ on Predestinarian.net who proclaim the pure pristine Pauline Gospel uphold and defend God’s absolute Sovereignty, only to be maliciously assaulted by works mongering false Christians. But this is our reward in Christ for being faithful to our calling.

Ga. 4:22-31 "22 For it is written, that Abraham had two sons, one by the handmaid, and one by the freewoman. 23 Howbeit the son by the handmaid is born after the flesh; but the son by the freewoman is born through promise. 24 Which things contain an allegory: for these women are two covenants; one from mount Sinai, bearing children unto bondage, which is Hagar. 25 Now this Hagar is mount Sinai in Arabia and answereth to the Jerusalem that now is: for she is in bondage with her children. 26 But the Jerusalem that is above is free, which is our mother. 27 For it is written, Rejoice, thou barren that bearest not; Break forth and cry, thou that travailest not: For more are the children of the desolate than of her that hath the husband. 28 Now we, brethren, as Isaac was, are children of promise. 29 But as then he that was born after the flesh persecuted him that was born after the Spirit, so also it is now. 30 Howbeit what saith the scripture? Cast out the handmaid and her son: for the son of the handmaid shall not inherit with the son of the freewoman. 31 Wherefore, brethren, we are not children of a handmaid, but of the freewoman."

I know this was discussed in earlier chapters/segments, however, since we are now discussing the Jew problem, this must be discussed again.

The aromatic foul stench of the Jew has so permeated pseudo-Christianity it is sickening. The above ten verses alone should dispel all of cultic Premillennialism and their cult Dispensational daughters.

* EARTHLY JERUSALEM-ISRAEL THAT IS NOW, IS IN BONDAGE!

* ISRAEL AND HER CHILDREN ARE DESOLATE!

* ISRAEL AFTER THE FLESH WILL ALWAYS PERSECUTE THE TRUE ISRAEL WHO IS FREE IN CHRIST!
Cast out the handmaid and her son APOSTATE ISRAEL: for the son of the handmaid shall not inherit with the TRUE ISRAEL son of the freewoman.

What more can be said? Are the children of the handmaid “God’s chosen people”? Hell no! So please stop calling those people in that cursed land called Israel, with all those Christ hating Jews, “God’s chosen people!”

The Jews attempted to destroy Paul’s theology. Not for the elect though. We hear Paul.

Ga. 5:1 “It is for freedom that Christ has set us free. Stand firm, then, and do not let yourselves be burdened again by a yoke of slavery.”

Christian False -Gospel Religion                        True Gospel Faith

The reprobate Jew Judaizing law lovers never understood Jesus Christ when our Lord said:

“If the Son therefore shall make you free, ye shall be free indeed.”

Free from what? We the elect have been freed from LAW/works Justification, sin and death. The Son of God did this for us! However, these Jews were vehement against the true Gospel. Because they are enslaved with the yoke of slavery, they cannot fathom in their evil heart a man who has been set free by Christ and the true Gospel.

Ga. 5:2-3 “2 Mark my words! I, Paul, tell you that if you let yourselves be circumcised, Christ will be of no value to you at all. 3 Again I declare to every man who lets himself be circumcised that he is obligated to obey the whole law.”

As stated before, circumcision was a token of submission to ALL the law. Paul confirms this by his above statement. Those who attempt to seek or maintain righteousness through law or good works repudiate the Gospel. Christ/Gospel is
of no value to them.

The pseudo-Christian heretical church fathers installed water baptism to replace circumcision as the alleged initial means of justification. They even went further, attaching with this water administration the mystical animism that was prevalent among the Pagan and Heathen cults; thus calling water baptism a “sacramental mystery”.

Ga. 5:4-6 “4 You who are trying to be justified by law have been alienated from Christ; you have fallen away from grace. 5 But by faith [alone] we eagerly await through the Spirit the righteousness for which we hope. 6 For in Christ Jesus neither circumcision nor uncircumcision has any value. The only thing that counts is faith [alone] expressing itself through love.”

Law lovers who attempt to justify themselves are alienated from Christ. Whether one is circumcised or not, water baptized or not, these outward ceremonial liturgies will not save them one bit. They possess no salvific value whatsoever. There are no guarantees attached with the “fleshly cut”, “the drip”, “the sprinkle”, or “the dunk”.

Ga. 5:7 “You were running a good race. Who cut in on you and kept you from obeying the truth?”

Paul uses many rhetorical questions in his Epistles. Paul already knew who his Jew enemies were. He uses such questions to provoke his readers to THINK for themselves.

Pew warmers discard their brains in the lobbies of their church buildings before entering into their sanctuaries only to become lemmings.

Ga. 5:8 “That kind of persuasion does not come from the one [Christ] who calls you.”

Amen brother Paul! Law Justification comes from the pit of Hell and not from Christ/God.

Ga. 5:9 “A little yeast works through the whole batch of dough.”

Paul uses our Lord’s very own words. Jesus specifically said this leaven/yeast was from the law loving Pharisees and Sadducees.

Ga. 5:10 “I am confident in the Lord that you will take no other view. The one who is throwing you into confusion will pay the penalty, whoever he may be.”

That’s correct! Those Jew instigators that are spewing out their false gospel will
surely pay for their crimes against the Holy One of Israel, through the stumbling of these Gentile believers. We also must remember that in the context of Galatians, Paul is mainly exposing false-Gospel professing Jews or in other words, Messianic Jews.

Ga. 5:11 “Brothers, if I am still preaching circumcision, why am I still being persecuted? In that case the offense of the cross has been abolished.”

Christ/Gospel haters come from all religious backgrounds, whether Judaism, so-called Christian, Muslim, etc. The cross of our Justification will always be an offense to these legalists. For sure, these Christ haters will always persecute those who love and defend the Gospel.

Ga. 5:12 “As for those [Jew] agitators, I wish they would go the whole way and emasculate themselves!”

Harsh? No way. Paul was so adamant against these LAW loving, Gospel hating “flesh cutters” that he wished they would go all the way and castrate themselves.

Similar to saying, “I wish all these folks who teach ‘water baptism is necessary for salvation’, would go all the way by drowning in the deepest body of water on God’s created earth.”

Hyperbole has a way of getting the message across. Christ and Paul used it quite often.

Ga. 6:11-13 “11 See with how large letters I write unto you with mine own hand. 12 As many [Jews] as desire to make a fair show in the flesh, they [Jews] compel you to be circumcised; only that they [Messianic Jews] may not be persecuted for the cross of Christ. 13 For not even they [Jews] who receive circumcision do themselves keep the law; but they desire to have you circumcised, that they may glory in your flesh.”

Hypocrisy is hypocrisy whether it is cloaked with Christian terminology or Judaic terminology.

These Messianic Jews that fought Paul were not at all concerned with the Gospel, what was important to them was submission to Moses. The messianic Jew (alleged believers in Christ) attempted to create a gray religion, a compromised Gospel, which Paul states is NO Gospel at all. They wanted a Jewish Messiah that they could mold/sew into the Mosaic fabric. However, Paul taught the Gospel is a radical and total departure from ALL LAW period, Moses included.

Works mongers hate the Gospel. They hate Christ. They hate Christ’s people that are “free indeed”. 
Ga. 5:14 “But far be it from me to glory, save in the cross of our Lord Jesus Christ, through which the world hath been crucified unto me, and I unto the world.”

If only the Messianic Jews and pseudo-Christians would have understood Paul, there would have never been the creation of the Judaized-Christian institution that has plagued the world to this very day. But this also was ordained by God/Christ to further deceive the masses.

Ga. 5:15-18 “15 For neither is circumcision anything, nor uncircumcision, but a new [Gospel] creature [is what matters]. 16 And as many [elect Jew and Gentile] as shall walk by this rule [the Gospel alone], peace be upon them [elect], and mercy [upon them elect], and upon the [elect Jew and Gentile] [true and real] Israel of God. 17 Henceforth, let no [law loving works mongering] man trouble me; for I bear branded on my body the marks of Jesus. 18 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with your spirit, brethren. Amen.”
An Amillennial Understanding of the Kingdom of God

Nicholas A. Laurienzo

Chapter 40
The Reprobate Jew From Christ to 70 AD (Paul: Other Epistles)

One Elect People in Christ vs. Jew and Gentile Wall of Separation

Ephesians

Ep. 2:11-22  “11 Wherefore remember, that once ye, the Gentiles in the flesh, who are called Uncircumcision by that which is called Circumcision [Jew], in the flesh, made by hands; 12 that ye were at that time separate from Christ, alienated from the commonwealth of Israel, and strangers from the covenants of the promise, having no hope and without God in the world. 13 But now [!] in Christ Jesus ye that once were far off are made nigh in the blood of Christ. 14 For he is our peace, who made both one, and brake down the middle wall of partition, 15 having abolished [circumcision] in the flesh the enmity, even the law of [Moses] commandments contained in ordinances; that he [Christ] might create in himself of the two [Jew and Gentile] one new man, so making peace; 16 and might reconcile them both [Jew and Gentile] in one body unto God through the cross, having slain [destroyed-abolished] the enmity thereby: 17 and he [Christ] came and preached [Gospel] peace to you [Gentiles] that were far off, and [the same Gospel] peace to them [Jews] that were nigh: 18 for through him [Christ] we both [Jew and Gentile] have our access in one Spirit unto the Father. 19 So then ye [Gentiles] are no more strangers and sojourners, but ye are fellow-citizens with the saints, and of the household of God, 20 being built upon the foundation of the apostles and prophets, Christ Jesus himself being the chief corner stone; 21 in whom each several building, fitly framed together, growth into a holy temple in the Lord; 22 in whom ye also are builded together for a habitation of God in the Spirit.”
Paul in Ephesians reiterates the same themes over and over and over again when dealing with the Jewish problem.

As stated many, many times, the Jews in their hardness and crass would not submit to the true Gospel of Jesus Christ. By doing so, they would need to relinquish their ethnic prejudice, and bigoted pride.

The Jew today thinks he is some special kind of chosen person. After almost 2,000 years of Jewish propaganda, Jews have won their battle by conning the pseudo-Christians into rebuilding, accepting and reinforcing the wall of partition that Christ destroyed via His death and resurrection, and Paul’s theology of the cross.

Paul the Apostle asserts:

*We are one in Christ.
*One New Man.
*No more enmity between Jew and Gentile in Christ.
*We together enjoy One Holy Spirit in Christ.
*We together are fellow-citizens in Christ.
*Jesus alone is our Chief Cornerstone, Head of the Ekklesia.
*We, the elect Ekklesia, Jew and Gentile, are the Holy Temple in Christ.
*We, the elect Jew and Gentile, were built for a habitation of God in the Holy Spirit.

The Jews, most pseudo-Christians with their corrupt theologians, and most politicians have made vast fortunes ($$$) reconstructing this wall politically and theologically between Jew and Gentile since 1948. Not only increased monetary debt and the ever increasing interest on that debt, but this Jew problem has caused blood, violence, misery, and suffering for mankind throughout the world, and many a death of U.S soldiers. Over what? God says the reprobate Jews are a cursed and nothing people.
John Hages and a legion of Protestant preachers similar to him, insist that Christians must support today’s Talmudic and Zionist “Jews” because God declared to Abraham in Genesis 12:3, “I will bless them that bless thee, and curse them that curse thee.” This is the “proof-text” for the claim that Christians must stand up for Israel’s and Judaism.

But Jesus declared to the Jewish Pharisees, whose ideological descendants today are the rabbis of Orthodox Judaism: “If you were Abraham’s children, you would be doing the works Abraham did, but now you seek to kill me, a man who has told you the truth that I heard from God.” (John 8:39-40).

Why didn’t Jesus speak as the leaders of Fundamentalist Protestantism do, and acknowledge the Pharisees on the basis of their flesh, and their racial prestige? He did not, because Jesus was not a racist. He rejected the doctrine of salvation by race. Jesus taught that the children of Abraham are those who do the works of Abraham.

By Our Lord’s definition, the spiritual heirs of those who have built a religion on the refusal to accept Jesus as the Messiah of Israel, are most certainly not the children of Abraham. Protestant fundamentalists reject Jesus Christ’s criteria for Abrahamitic authenticity. (Roman Catholics under the modern popes are guilty of this as well).

These alleged Christians obstinately continue to disseminate the same error as the Pharisees, that the racial prestige of “Jews,” whether of the first or the twenty-first century, is sufficient to qualify them as heirs of the promises which God made to Abraham in Genesis 12:3.

This race pride is the actual basis of the Protestant Fundamentalist myth that Christians who reject Talmudic Judaism, or the murderous Israeli state, are therefore cursed by God.

Race pride is an evil common to the Masonic Ku Klux Klan and Hitler’s wicked Nazis. How can God Almighty be engaged with race pride? Such a delusion is of the Babylonian Talmud, not the Bible.

How can it be said that God blesses carnal, counterfeit Israel and will curse the true Israel of Christ, if Christians repudiate the religion of the Talmud, and the violence of the Israelis in their conquest and occupation of Palestine?

Who do you honestly think is actually cursed by God — those who believe the truth which was taught by Our Savior Jesus Christ in John 8:38-40 concerning the identity of Abraham’s children, or those who preach that today’s so-called Jews (Rev. 3:9) qualify as Abraham’s children, according to the flesh?

In fact, God curses those who refuse to love the Truth of His Word (2 Thess. 2:10-12). God blesses those who confite lies and dispel confusion sown by hirelings and modern Herods who claim to worship Jesus (Matt. 7:9).

Authentic Christians who accurately hear witness to Jesus Christ’s Gospel Truth are the blessed ones. Satan’s spiritual children include all humans of every race and ethnicity who refuse Jesus and promote the hellish, man-made traditions of the racially proud Pharisees, which seek to overthrow the Word of God (Mark 7:15).

On which side of the divide will you be found on judgment day?

— Michael Hoffman

If one is not elect in Christ, then he is NO JEW at all, let alone a chosen person.

Ep. 3:1-12 “1 For this cause I Paul, the prisoner of Jesus Christ for you Gentiles, 2 If ye have heard of the dispensation of the grace of God which is given me to you-ward: 3 How that by revelation he made known unto me the mystery;
(as I wrote afore in few words, 4 Whereby, when ye read, ye may understand my knowledge in the mystery of Christ) 5 Which in other ages was not made known unto the sons of men, as it is now revealed unto his holy apostles and prophets by the Spirit; 6 That the Gentiles should be fellow heirs, and of the same [one] body, and partakers of his promise in Christ by the gospel: 7 Whereof I was made a minister, according to the gift of the grace of God given unto me by the effectual working of his power. 8 Unto me, who am less than the least of all saints, is this grace given, that I should preach among the Gentiles the unsearchable riches of Christ; 9 And to make all [Jew and Gentile] men see what is the fellowship of the mystery, which from the beginning of the world hath been hid in God, who created all things by Jesus Christ: 10 To the intent that now unto the principalities and powers in heavenly places might be known by the church [ekklesia] the manifold wisdom of God, 11 According to the eternal purpose which he purposed in Christ Jesus our Lord: 12 In whom we have boldness and access with confidence by the faith of him.”

What is this mystery that Paul is writing about?

In context, it is the very Gospel of Grace alone that unites the Jew and Gentile into one ekklesia in Christ Jesus alone.

Summary:

*Dispensation of Grace forever - Jews and pseudo-Christians hate this!
*The Mystery has been fully revealed - Jews and pseudo-Christians deny this!
*We can understand this mystery - Jews and pseudo-Christians reject this!
*Elect Gentiles are fellow heirs with elect Jews only in the Gospel - Jews and pseudo-Christians deny this!
*Both are partakers of the promises through Christ alone and His Gospel alone - Jews and pseudo-Christians deny this!
*Unsearchable riches in Christ - Jews and pseudo-Christians have no clue!
*Paul wrote to teach elect men the now unveiled mystery - Jews and pseudo-Christians deny this!
*The establishment of the elect Ekklesia both Jew and Gentile was “According to the eternal purpose which He [the Father] purposed in Christ Jesus our Lord” - Jews and pseudo-Christians have no clue and also deny God’s sovereign predestination of ALL things.

God hath continued, to this very day, blinding the reprobate Jews of all spiritual reality. God hath also blinded the pseudo-Christians: Premillennialists and their daughters the dispensationalists especially.

Jewish fables and fairy tales (among many) are now the normative teachings in Christen-dumb. The Jews succeeded what they set out to accomplish. That was to fully destroy true Gospel representation in the world, and rebuilding the
hostility between Jew and Gentile. The effects of their treacherous activities have plagued the world with blood, violence, and political deception.

The Roman Catholic Church along with all that are ecumenically united with Rome have bowed their knee and now worship this “Golden Calf” called Israel.

Ep. 3:21 “to Him, [is] the glory in the assembly in Christ Jesus, to all the generations of the age of the ages. Amen.”
Philippians

Ph. 1:7 “It is right for me to feel this way about all of you, since I have you in my heart and, whether I am in chains or defending and confirming the gospel, all of you share in God’s grace with me.”

Ph. 1:12-14 “12 Now I want you to know, brothers and sisters, that what has happened to me has actually served to advance the gospel. 13 As a result, it has become clear throughout the whole palace guard and to everyone else that I am in chains for Christ. 14 And because of my chains, most of the brothers and sisters have become confident in the Lord and dare all the more to proclaim the gospel without fear.”

This letter to the Philippians was written during Paul’s imprisonment in Rome. Read Acts 28 for historical circumstances surrounding his imprisonment.

Paul’s greatest enemies were the Jews, both Messianic and Christ rejecting.

Paul asserts to his Philippian brothers and sisters that his imprisonment was the DIRECT result of preaching the Gospel of Jesus Christ. A gospel that ALL law loving Jews hate. A gospel that ALL law loving false Christians hate.

Paul, the great predestinarian that he is, reassured his brothers and sisters in Christ that his troubles would serve Christ’s greater purposes by strengthening confidence and creating a more daring approach in proclaiming the Gospel without fear. Fear of whom?

No Gospel loving elect child of Christ should ever fear the Jews, in context, or their false gospel spiritual children, the false-Christians.

Ph. 1:15-18 “15 It is true that some [Jews] preach Christ out of envy and rivalry, but others [true elect Jews] out of goodwill. 16 The latter do so out of love, knowing that I am put here for the defense of the gospel. 17 The former [Messianic Jews] preach Christ out of selfish ambition, not sincerely, supposing that they can stir up trouble for me while I am in chains. 18 But what does it matter? The important thing is that in every way, whether from false motives or true, Christ is preached. And because of this I rejoice.”

Paul, our brother in Christ, most assuredly does not condone those who would pervert the Gospel of Grace alone, through faith alone, in Christ alone. However Paul, thinking from God’s sovereign perspective, sees that even their Gospel perverting falsehoods would serve Christ in the damnation of reprobate souls. And because of this, Paul rejoices.

When reading any letter from Paul, we must take the whole of his premises to determine what he means. We can never isolate one passage from Paul to make
him contradict a premise that he has already established in other letters.

Many a false Christian uses the above passage to exonerate, lend credence, and justify their pulpit false prophets. Billy Graham, as an example, preaches in the name of Jesus Christ. Just by using the name Jesus Christ has two effects. One: deceiving the reprobate to believe in the false Jesus Graham represents, and Two: By God’s sovereign determination, the elect are drawn by the name of Jesus to further seek the true Jesus Christ as taught in the Scriptures. Thus by lifting Jesus Christ up to the world, God sees fit to damn and bless. False prophets are ordained and sent by God to further His purposes.

Ph. 1:27-30 “27 Whatever happens, conduct yourselves in a manner worthy of the gospel of Christ. Then, whether I come and see you or only hear about you in my absence, I will know that you stand firm in the one Spirit, striving together as one for the faith of the gospel 28 without being frightened in any way by those who oppose you. This is a sign to them that they will be destroyed, but that you will be saved and that by God. 29 For it has been granted to you on behalf of Christ not only to believe in him, but also to suffer for him, 30 since you are going through the same struggle you saw I had, and now hear that I still have.”

Paul was encouraging his brethren that we stand in One Spirit, Faith, and Gospel, and not to be frightened by the Jews who oppose Christ’s elect children.

Ph. 2:3-4 “3 Do nothing out of selfish ambition or vain conceit [like the Jews were exhibiting]. Rather, in humility value others above yourselves, 4 not looking to your own interests [As the Jews were doing] but each of you to the interests of the others.”

Ph. 2:14-15 “14 Do everything without grumbling or arguing, 15 so that you may become blameless and pure, children of God without fault in a warped and crooked generation.”

Jesus and Paul describe Jewish animosity as a warped and crooked generation.

Ph. 2:20-21 “20 I have no one else like him, who will show genuine concern for your welfare. 21 For everyone looks out for their own interests, not those of Jesus Christ.”

Ph. 3:1-4 “1 Further, my brothers and sisters, rejoice in the Lord! It is no trouble for me to write the same things to you again, and it is a safeguard for you. 2 Watch out for those dogs, those evildoers, those mutilators of the flesh. 3 For it is we who are the circumcision, we who serve God by his Spirit, who boast in Christ Jesus, and who put no confidence in the flesh 4 though I myself have reasons for such confidence. If someone else [Jews] thinks they have reasons to put confidence in the flesh, I have more.”
If there was any doubt in the Philippian mind as to whom Paul was referring to, he enlightens his audience by describing the Jews as “dogs”, “evildoers” and “mutilators of the flesh”. Which is another way of saying, “Those of the Circumcision.”

Paul goes even further by contrasting himself against these false Jew alleged brethren in the matter of law adherence. He shows the Philippians how he once was a better law-loving self-righteous Jew in verses 5 and 6.

Ph. 3:5-9 “5 circumcised on the eighth day, of the people of Israel, of the tribe of Benjamin, a Hebrew of Hebrews; in regard to the law, a Pharisee; 6 as for zeal, persecuting the church; as for righteousness based on the law, faultless. 7 But whatever were gains to me I now consider loss for the sake of Christ. 8 What is more, I consider everything a loss because of the surpassing worth of knowing Christ Jesus my Lord, for whose sake I have lost all things. I consider them garbage, that I may gain Christ and be found in him, not having a righteousness of my own that comes from the law, but that which is through faith in Christ the righteousness that comes from God on the basis of faith.”

What is Paul’s conclusion to the matter?

He considered LAW adherence a loss. For the sake of the Gospel, he ditched the LAW in the garbage. To Paul, Justification/righteousness only comes through faith in/by Christ’s imputation. Christ Himself alone, who is the ONLY righteousness that ever came from God, and the ONLY righteousness that God will ever accept. The elect are hid in Christ, thus clothed with His righteousness. “Who shall lay any charge against Christ’s elect?”

Ph. 3:17-19 “17 Join together in following my example, brothers and sisters, and just as you have us as a model, keep your eyes on those who live as we do. 18 For, as I have often told you before and now tell you again even with tears, many [Jews] live as enemies of the cross of Christ. 19 Their [Jew] destiny is destruction, their [Jew] god is their stomach, and their [Jew] glory is in their shame. Their [Jew] mind is set on earthly things.”

If only more folks would read, understand, believe, and follow the teachings of Paul the Apostle, rather than follow their professional, false Gospel preaching, Christ hating, pulpit wizard, clergy ministers they may learn of the true Christ and the true Gospel.

Colossians

Col. 2:8-11 “8 See that no one shall be carrying you away as spoil through
the philosophy and vain deceit, according to the deliverance of men, according to the rudiments of the world, and not according to Christ, 9 because in him doth tabernacle all the fulness of the Godhead bodily, 10 and ye are in him made full, who is the head of all principality and authority, 11 in whom also ye were circumcised with a circumcision not made with hands, in the putting off of the body of the sins of the flesh in the circumcision of the Christ,”

Col. 2:16-23 “16 Let no one, then, judge you in eating or in drinking, or in respect of a feast, or of a new moon, or of sabbaths, 17 which are a shadow of the coming things, and the body [is] of the Christ; 18 let no one beguile you of your prize, delighting in humble-mindedness and [in] worship of the messengers, intruding into the things he hath not seen, being vainly puffed up by the mind of his flesh, 19 and not holding the head, from which all the body -- through the joints and bands gathering supply, and being knit together may increase with the increase of God. 20 If, then, ye did die with the Christ from the rudiments of the world, why, as living in the world, are ye subject to ordinances? 21 thou mayest not touch, nor taste, nor handle 22 which are all for destruction with the using, after the commands and teachings of men, 23 which are, indeed, having a matter of wisdom in will-worship, and humble-mindedness, and neglecting of body, not in any honour, unto a satisfying of the flesh.”

Col. 3:11 “where there is not Greek and Jew, circumcision and uncircumcision, foreigner, Scythian, servant, freeman, but the all and in all Christ.”

The Gentile world prior to Christ’s first coming was plagued by religious Paganism, Heathenism, false philosophers and even apostate Judaism. There were pagan temples for worship and Jewish synagogues. When the Gentile was proselyted, he entered an apostate Jew religion that was more deplorable than his previous one. Jesus said he became twice the son of Hell. Apostate Judaism is a foul religious stench that saw fit to murder Jesus Christ. Then and today.

Paul’s main antagonists were not the heathen and pagan Gentile cults, although they did pose a problem for Christ’s elect people, but the Jews pressed Paul the most and were vigilant, attempting to destroy the Gospel that Paul preached.

These stiff-necked Jews with their corrupt oral tradition (Talmud) were considered by Paul to be a people that did not teach Christ and the gospel.

When at war, the victor takes the spoils of war as a conqueror. Paul warned his people in the Gospel, that the Jews were attempting to overthrow the Gospel “through the philosophy and vain deceit, according to the deliverance of men, according to the rudiments of the world, and not according to Christ.” Paul gave us a pretty good definition of Talmudic Judaism.
If the Jews accomplished their goals, the very people of Colossae would have become spoil for the Jews. However, Paul makes very certain to teach his beloved disciples that they were the true (Jew) circumcision not made with hands, the very elect who were circumcised by Christ Himself.

The Jewish clergy railed upon Christ for not keeping their foolish, ungodly, man-made traditions. Paul warns his beloved in the Gospel to be on guard for the same treatment and deception from the Jews. Then and today.

These anti-gospel law lovers threw all kinds of stumbling-blocks in the way of God's true chosen people; “eating and drinking” requirements, “respect of feast days” requirements, “or a new moon” requirement, or “sabbath day” requirements. Paul calls these things a shadow reality. There is no substance in a shadow. It is useless, with no salvific content at all.

Paul warns the elect not to be beguiled into losing our prize, the Gospel of Christ Himself, through the use of will worship; stupid man-made regulations.

Paul reiterates the same theme over and over again. In Christ and through the Gospel, there is not Greek and Jew, circumcision and uncircumcision, foreigner, Scythian, servant, freeman, but the all and in all Christ.

Christen-dumb, some reformed traditions also, still practice these stupid forms of anti-gospel will-worship to this very day as in Sabbatarianism, to name just one.

1 Thessalonians

1 Th. 2:13-15 “13 Because of this also, we -- we do give thanks to God continually, that, having received the word of hearing from us of God, ye accepted, not the word of man, but as it is truly, the word of God, who also doth work in you who believe; 14 for ye became imitators, brethren, of the assemblies of God that are in Judea in Christ Jesus, because such things ye suffered, even ye, from your own countrymen, as also they from the Jews, 15 who did both put to death the Lord Jesus and their own prophets, and did persecute us, and God they are not pleasing, and to all men [are] contrary,”

As we have witnessed thus far from Paul’s epistles, Paul continuously expands God’s very own sentiments toward the Jews, paralleling as God spoke against these devils in the Old Testament. Paul also draws upon Jesus’ very own words, reiterating that the Jews killed their own God-sent prophets, also putting our Holy One to death.

Paul NEVER for one moment allows the Jews to get off the hook for their treachery. Then and today.
The Jews according to Paul are persecutors of Christ and His true elect people. They will NEVER be pleasing to God in any way or in any fashion. They ALWAYS will be contrary to mankind, especially to the elect of God.

1 Th. 2:16 “forbidding us to speak to the nations that they might be saved, to fill up their sins always, but the anger did come upon them -- to the end!”

The reprobate Jew is forever damned. In their damnation and hatred for Jesus Christ, the Holy One of Israel, the King of His true Jews, these devils persisted in finding ways to thwart the Gospel message to the Gentile nations. Paul sees this animosity toward Christ and the Gospel as a continuous filling of sin that will always bring the anger and the wrath of God upon the Jews. Then and today.

1 Th. 2:17-18 “17 And we, brethren, having been taken from you for the space of an hour -- in presence, not in heart -- did hasten the more abundantly to see your face in much desire, 18 wherefore we wished to come unto you, (I indeed Paul,) both once and again, and the Adversary did hinder us;”

The word Adversary is also translated as Satan in other versions of Scripture.

G4567=Satanas

* Adversary = One who opposes another in purpose or act, the name given to the prince of evil spirits, the inveterate adversary of God and Christ.

* He incites apostasy from God and to sin.

* He circumvents men by his wiles.

Paul correlates verse 16, which directly speaks to the evil activities of the Jews, with verse 18, as being the activity of Satan. Paul equates Jewish animosity directly with the activity of Satan, the chief (top dog) Anti-Christ. The reprobate Christ hating Jews, and false gospel teaching Messianic Jews are Satan’s children and minions. Then and today.
1 Timothy

1Ti. 1-7 “1 Paul, an apostle of Christ Jesus by the command of God our Savior and of Christ Jesus our hope, 2 To Timothy my true son in the faith: Grace, mercy and peace from God the Father and Christ Jesus our Lord. 3 As I urged you [Timothy] when I went into Macedonia, stay there in Ephesus so that you may command certain men not to teach false doctrines any longer 4 nor to devote themselves to myths [fables] and endless genealogies. These promote controversies rather than God’s work, which is by faith. 5 The goal of this command is love, which comes from a pure heart and a good conscience and a sincere faith. 6 Some have wandered away from these and turned to meaningless talk. 7 They [the Jews] want to be teachers of the law, but they do not know what they are talking about or what they so confidently affirm.”

Paul, writing to Timothy, urges him to stay in Ephesus and war against certain men (Jews) who were teaching false doctrine. Refer back to Ephesians, please.

Not only were the Jews vehement against Paul and the Gospel, but also the Jews used many different approaches to confuse the main issues in relation to the Gospel. Paul raises three points (cf. Tit. 1:14; 3:9; 2 Pe. 1:16):

* Myths/fables
* Endless genealogies
* Law

Paul concludes these falsehoods are nothing but meaningless talk and only serve to promote controversies and confusion.

The Jews, both Christ rejecting and Messianic, knew exactly what Paul and His gospel would mean to them. The Gospel broke down the wall of separation between Jew and Gentile forever. This is the main underlying hatred on their
part. The Jews, then and today in their egotistical ethnic and religious pride, cannot bear this thought.

One tactic of the Jews was to major in minor irrelevant matters. The warning, both to Timothy and Titus was not to get caught up in arguments over silly things that serve no purpose in advancing Gospel doctrine. The Jews were famous for spending countless hours arguing over minor details in their attempts to stumble Gentile believers. Wherever Paul journeyed, these Jewish devils followed. The Jews don’t quit. Then and today.

Adam Clarke makes mention of this in his commentary:

“We are told that Herod destroyed the public registers; he, being an Idumean, was jealous of the noble origin of the Jews; and, that none might be able to reproach him with his descent, he ordered the genealogical tables, which were kept among the archives in the temple, to be burnt (see Euseb. H. E., lib. i. cap. 8). From this time the Jews could refer to their genealogies only from memory, or from those imperfect tables which had been preserved in private hands; and to make out any regular line from these must have been endless and uncertain.”

One of the false teachings that sprang up during this era was Gnosticism. It was based on a belief that there was secret/esoteric knowledge not available to most people. One aspect of this was the use of genealogies to prove various ideas or doctrines. Paul is alluding to the early disputes that gave rise to Gnosticism.
Jamieson, Faucett, and Brown state concerning these genealogies:

“Not merely such civil genealogies as were common among the Jews, whereby they traced their descent from the patriarchs, to which Paul would not object, and which he would not as here class with ‘fables’, but Gnostic genealogies of spirits and aeons, as they called them, ‘Lists of Gnostic emanations’ [ALFORD]. So TERTULLIAN [Against Valentinian, c. 3], and IRENAEUS [Preface]. The Judaizers here alluded to, while maintaining the perpetual obligation of the Mosaic Law, joined with it a theosophic ascetic tendency, pretending to see in it mysteries deeper than others could see. The seeds, not the full-grown Gnosticism of the post-apostolic age, then existed. This formed the transition stage between Judaism and Gnosticism. ‘Endless’ refers to the tedious unprofitableness of their lengthy genealogies cf. Titus 3:9.”

Within Messianic Judaism, Jews deceived Gentile people, telling Gentiles that they [Jews] are really Jews because of their names also telling Gentiles that there are two different covenants in effect. Those who are Jewish are supposed to adhere to the Mosaical Law administration and the Gentiles are allegedly supposed to keep Christ’s Law.

Christen-dumb, Catholic, Evangelical, Pre-mil, Dispensational Pre-mil and others have bought into these Jewish lies, now teaching this same heretical dual covenant. One for the Jews and another for the Gentiles, both law based and heretical.

Whether we are talking about Jewish legitimate genealogical tables or Gnostic imaginary lineages, the point remains the same: Paul the Apostle tells Timothy, Titus, and us Christ's elect that they are useless and meaningless talk.

I will comment in [parenthesis] the next few passages within their historical context, the context of this letter, and in context of Paul's overall theology.

1 Ti. 2:1-8 “I urge, then, first of all, that requests, prayers, intercession and thanksgiving be made for everyone 2 for kings and all those in authority, that we may live peaceful and quiet lives in all godliness and holiness. 3 This is good, and pleases God our Savior, 4 who wants all [elect] men [Jew and Gentile] to be saved and to come to a knowledge of the truth. 5 For there is one God and one mediator between God and [elect Jew and Gentile] men, the man Christ Jesus, 6 who gave himself as a ransom for all [elect Jew and Gentile] men the testimony given in its proper time. 7 And for this purpose I was appointed a herald and an apostle, I am telling the truth, I am not lying, and a teacher of the true faith to the Gentiles. 8 I want [elect Jew and Gentile] men everywhere to lift up holy hands in prayer, without anger or disputing [over myths/fables, endless genealogies, and Mosaic Law; in context].
1 Ti. 4:1-5 “The Spirit clearly says that in latter times [inter-advental period] some [reprobates] will abandon the faith and follow deceiving [Jewish] spirits and things taught by [Jewish] demons. 2 Such teachings come through hypocritical [Jewish] liars, whose consciences have been seared as with a hot iron. 3 They [the Jews] forbid people to marry [outside of their ethnic genealogical blood line] and order them [Gentiles] to abstain from certain foods [forbidden in Moses], which God created to be received with thanksgiving by those who believe and who know the truth [of the Gospel]. 4 For everything God created is good, and nothing is to be rejected if it is received with thanksgiving, 5 because it is consecrated by the word of God and prayer.”

I already know this passage of Scripture has been widely applied to the Papists. Forbidding marrying within the priesthood, and Rome’s abstinence of certain meats on Fridays and Holy days of obligation. However, in context, Paul applies his statements directly to the Jewish problem that existed in his day.

By expansion of this Jewish spiritual heresy, it can be applied to all other religious cults who hold to this idiocy, but the context directly is a Jewish problem that existed and still exists today.

1 Ti. 4:10 “for this [destroying Jewish fables, myths, and law adherence] we both labor and are reproached, because we hope on the living God, who is Saviour of all [elect Jew and Gentile] men, especially of those believing [regenerate elect].”

1 Ti. 6:20-21 “Timothy, guard what has been entrusted to your care. Turn away from godless chatter and the opposing [Jewish] ideas of what is falsely called [gnosticism] knowledge, 21 which some [false believers] have professed and in so doing have wandered from the faith.”

2 Timothy

2 Ti. 1:1 “Paul, an apostle of Jesus Christ, by the will of God, according to the promise of life, which is in Christ Jesus.”

At this point we must ask ourselves, why does Paul in his epistles continuously reassure his Gentile disciples in Christ of his calling as being from the express will of God? We will answer this shortly.

2 Ti. 1:2-4 “2 To Timothy my dearly beloved son, grace, mercy, and peace, from God the Father, and from Christ Jesus our Lord. 3 I give thanks to God, whom I serve from my forefathers with a pure conscience, that without ceasing, I have a remembrance of thee in my prayers, night and day. 4 Desiring to see thee, being mindful of thy tears, that I may be filled with joy,”
Although miles apart from Timothy, Paul our brother in Christ displays a brotherly bond with Timothy in the Body of Christ. Timothy wept for Paul because of Paul's imprisonment at Rome. Paul alludes to the fact that he truthfully served his elect Jewish ancestors by teaching Christ and the Gospel as a fulfillment of all Israel's hopes. For that, the reprobate Jews despised him and were the instrumental cause for his imprisonment. Typical Jewry.

2 Ti. 1:7-9 “7 For God hath not given us the spirit of fear: but of power, and of love, and of sobriety. 8 Be not thou therefore ashamed of the testimony of our Lord, nor of me his prisoner: but labour with the gospel, according to the power of God, 9 Who hath delivered us and called us by his holy calling, not according to our works, but according to his own purpose and grace, which was given us in Christ Jesus before the times of the world.”

As previously discussed, fear takes hold of men in different ways. Within the historical context of this letter, extreme persecution was exhibited against Paul and the Gentile converts. The evil Jews spearheaded this persecution.

We, Christ's elect, should not succumb to fear when the true Gospel is at stake. For God has not given us the spirit of fear, but of power, and of love, and of sobriety. Nor are we ashamed of the testimony of Christ and the Gospel. Paul was telling Timothy not to be ashamed of him like other so-called converts were ashamed of Paul.

1 Ti. 1:10-11 “10 But is now made manifest by the illumination of our Saviour Jesus Christ, who hath destroyed death, and hath brought to light life and incorruption by the gospel: 11 Wherein I am appointed a preacher, and an apostle, and teacher of the Gentiles.”

Paul again reiterates the Gospel of Jesus Christ and his calling by the will of God.

1 Ti. 1:12 “For which cause I also suffer these things: but I am not ashamed. For I know whom I have believed, and I am certain that he is able to keep that which I have committed unto him, against that day.”

Paul asserts that the cause of his imprisonment was directly the result of his preaching and teaching the Gospel of Jesus Christ to the Gentiles.

1 Ti. 1:13-14 “13 Hold the form of sound words, which thou hast heard of me in faith, and in the love which is in Christ Jesus. 14 Keep the good thing committed to thy trust by the Holy Ghost, who dwelleth in us.”

Paul continues to encourage Timothy, to hold the teachings of Paul that were committed to him by the Holy Spirit Himself.
1 Ti. 1:15-18 “15 Thou knowest this, that all they who are in Asia, are turned away from me: of whom are Phigellus and Hermogenes. 16 The Lord give mercy to the house of Onesiphorus: because he hath often refreshed me, and hath not been ashamed of my chain: 17 But when he was come to Rome, he carefully sought me, and found me. 18 The Lord grant unto him to find mercy of the Lord in that day: and in how many things he ministered unto me at Ephesus, thou very well knowest.”

As to the first question raised, a person is either going to believe Paul as one sent by God, a teacher of truth, or he is not. If one were to believe Paul, would they not naturally stand by Paul at least in prayer, due to his imprisonment?

Due to the Jewish conspiracy against Paul and his Gentile followers, hence subsequent persecution of Gentile believers and Paul's imprisonment, many Gentiles were abandoning the person of Paul, also Paul's teachings which enraged the Jewish devils. Paul names only two, Phigellus and Hermogenes, within Asia who abandoned Paul, but there were many distancing themselves from Paul and the true faith for fear of the Jews, and Jewish instigated Roman persecution. As it is today. Many a weak and fearful professed Christian want to distance themselves from their brothers in Christ who speak against and are critical of the Jews and their phony entity called “The Nation of Israel”. These weak so-called brethren fear the reprisal of the Jews trying to protect themselves against smear campaigns, loss of employment, being labeled as an anti-Semite, and more. These weak impudent so-called brothers in Christ would no doubt have also abandoned and distanced themselves from Paul.

Jesus, Paul, the Apostles, and the rest of the disciples were not Zionists and Pro-Israel firsters [Hageeites]; and neither should Christs' elect be either.
Paul compliments Onesiphorus for his love, devotion and bravery, risking his own life entering Rome to seek, find, and comfort Paul.

**Phigellus and Hermogenes**, deserted Paul at the time of his second imprisonment at Rome. The meaning however, may be that the turning away of Phygelus and Hermogenes from Paul took place not in Rome, but in Asia itself.

The times during and immediately following the Neronic persecution were more horrific than one can easily contemplate. The temptation was very strong to forsake Paul, Christ, and the true Gospel. Many indeed did forsake Christ and Paul's teachings in a wholesale fashion.

Persecution was so great, that for a mere mention of Jesus Christ many suffered death and imprisonment. However, by denying the Lord, men were set free from persecution, the loss of property, home, and from death.

Nero, a Roman and Jewish [proselyted] convert persecuted Christians. Nero was an asset and great ally to the wicked Jews. Today is no different. The USA, Canada, Great Britain, Rome and most of the Western nations are great assets and allies to these evil Talmudic Christ haters, and if you speak the truth of the Gospel and against the Jews, our modern day Neros' will persecute you also.

http://www.jewishencyclopedia.com/articles/11445-nero

Paul, in his epistles as previously discussed, reported that it was the Jews who stirred up the Romans and incited such fierce animosity of nations against Gentile believers. Historians record that Emperor Nero, after marrying a Jewess, converted to apostate Judaism and immediately became a persecutor of true followers of Jesus Christ. Demonically inspired by his new found apostate Jewish faith, the psychopath Nero fed many to the lions at the Colosseum, sawed others in half, and sentenced many others to be crucified. This activity pleased the Jews.

Like the fanatical Rabbis [children of the devil] in the Jerusalem Sanhedrin that demanded the crucifixion of Jesus, Nero invented evil techniques to persecute
his adversaries. Nero was a cold-blooded persecutor of Christ's followers similar to the Spanish Jesuit devils, Torquemada and Loyola.

Nero and the Christ hating Jews of his era were only imitating the deviltry carried out by leaders of this same Jew cult since the founding of Judea. Centuries before Nero's Jew inspired crimes, the Jew Queen Esther and her wicked power hungry cousin, Mordecai, persuaded the King of Persia to massacre 75,000 enemies of the Jews. Esther, a whorish consort who influenced the monarch by her feminine wiles and physical beauty, even had the ten sons of Haman hung twice.

Oh, how the Jews of then and today love this book of Esther, for it gives the Zionist Jews all the necessary deceitful ingredients to destroy their enemies.

In addition to the temptation to deny Christ's name, also to go back to heathenism or to Judaism, which would most assuredly please the Jews, there was also another temptation which pressed upon some of the ekklesia; the temptation to repudiate the authority of Paul. Many passages in the NT show how the name of Paul was sometimes very lightly esteemed, and how his authority was repudiated by persons in Corinth, and in the churches of Galatia. So you will find in Paul's epistles the constant reminders to his readers of his calling, his apostleship, his revelation of the Gospel, and most importantly, Paul tells his disciples this was all by the express WILL OF GOD.

Among the Christians of proconsular Asia, i.e. of Ephesus and the churches in the valley of the Cayster, there was a widespread defection from that loyalty to Paul, a defection that should not have been expected from those Gentiles who were given the priceless knowledge of Christ's salvation.

"All that are in Asia turned away from me; of whom are Phygelus and Hermogenes." On the whole, all the necessary conditions of these words are satisfied by a reference to Rome and to Paul's imprisonment there. All to the liking and satisfaction of the evil JEWS.

2 Ti. 2:1-3 “1Thou therefore, my child, be strengthened in the grace that is in Christ Jesus. 2 And the things which thou hast heard from me among many witnesses, the same commit thou to faithful men, who shall be able to teach others also. 3 Suffer hardship with me, as a good soldier of Christ Jesus.”

In the heat of fierce persecution against Paul and the Gentile believers, Paul is most encouraging to Timothy, his child in Grace, prompting Timothy to carry forward the truths of the Gospel and commit the truth to faithful men who in turn teach others. Paul knew full well that maintaining the truth of Christ and the Gospel is a war against the dark forces of evil. In context, it is a war against the Christ hating Jews and Nero their ally.
2 Ti. 2:6-7 “6 The husbandmen that laboreth must be the first to partake of the fruits. 7 Consider what I say; for the Lord shall give thee understanding in all things.”

Laboring for the truth of the Gospel will most definitely bring the fruits of hardship and suffering. Jesus said, “if they hated me they will hate you also.” But in times of distress and persecution, our Lord stands by us and gives His elect great understanding.

2 Ti. 2:8-10 “8 Remember Jesus Christ, risen from the dead, of the seed of David, according to my gospel: 9 wherein I suffer hardship unto bonds, as a malefactor; but the word of God is not bound. 10 Therefore I endure all things for the elect’s sake, that they also may obtain the salvation which is in Christ Jesus with eternal glory.”

The greatest comfort for all Christ's elect in every age is to know that our efforts are not in vain. We, Christ's elect, no matter how much suffering, hardship, pain and death, have a great hope, for we will be resurrected from physical death unto a glorious life with Christ our Lord.

Their's and our battles are not in vain. Paul said, “And if Christ be not risen, then is our preaching vain, and your faith is also vain” (1 Co. 15:14).

The hope, strength, and comfort for us His elect lies in the FACT that Christ is raised, and so shall we be.

Reprobates, both religious and political, risk and give their lives fighting for temporal and fleeting advantages in this life. Without hope of an afterlife, they are committed to defending their falsehoods unto death. Paul encourages Timothy; we have a nobler cause, a greater and everlasting hope. To Paul, defending the Gospel is the greatest calling an elect man is granted. Our love for Jesus Christ is not measured by the stupid works churchianity has developed, but by our very allegiance to upholding the GOSPEL ALONE!

2 Ti. 2:11 “Faithful is the saying: For if we died with him, we shall also live with him:”

What an encouragement!

2 Ti. 2:12 “if we endure, we shall also reign with him...

What a blessing for the elect!

“...if we shall deny him, he also will deny us:”

In the end, the reprobates will have proven themselves to be Christ deniers.
2 Ti. 2:13 “if we are faithless, he abideth faithful; for he cannot deny himself.”

If there were no elect souls created by God, and Jesus Christ Himself was the only living man on earth to believe in the Father, His testimony would be valid and true. God does not need mortal men to validate Himself. God Himself through Christ alone is all that is necessary.

2 Ti. 2:14 “Of these things put them in remembrance, charging them in the sight of the Lord, that they strive not about words, to no profit, to the subverting of them that hear.”

Paul again reiterates the nonsense that the Jews and others were perpetuating among the Gentile believers.

2 Ti. 2:15 “Give diligence to present thyself approved unto God, a workman that needeth not to be ashamed, handling aright the word of truth.”

Context, context, context! If there ever was a serious encroachment on a verse of scripture, this is one of them. The pre-mil/dispensationalists use this scripture as their slogan, inferring that they are the “masters” at interpreting Paul and eschatology. Nothing can be further from the truth. The context of “2 Timothy” along with “1 Timothy” indicates the lies, fables, and falsehoods promulgated by the Jews and others, in their efforts to deceive, stumble, and turn away Gentiles from Paul and the truth of the Gospel.

Paul exhorts Timothy not to be ashamed of the Gospel in times of persecution. Also, to continue in presenting Paul's Gospel without blemish as was taught to him.

2 Ti. 2:16 “But shun profane babblings: for they will proceed further in ungodliness,”

We also should avoid the vain babblings of the Jews, the now Zionist loving Zio-christians, and all false Gospel proponents. But more importantly, Paul will identify a most demonic heresy next.

2 Ti. 2:17-18 “17 and their word will eat as doth a gangrene: or whom is Hymenaeus and Philetus; 18 men who concerning the truth have erred, saying that the resurrection is past already, and overthrow the faith of some.”

In battle, the greatest weapon is a psychological one. In context, if enemies of the Gospel can deceive these Gentile followers of Paul, and the Gospel, into thinking that the resurrection has already taken place, then why continue in the
struggle? Why would you still risk your lives and suffer reproach or death? For what?

Hymenaeus was already exposed in 1 Timothy as an enemy of Paul and the Gospel.

1Ti. 1:18-20 “18 This charge I commit to thee, child Timotheus, according to the prophesies that went before upon thee, that thou mayest war in them the good warfare, 19 having faith and a good conscience, which certain having thrust away, concerning the faith did make shipwreck, 20 of whom are Hymenaeus and Alexander, whom I did deliver to the Adversary, that they might be instructed not to speak evil.”

When Paul uses the phrase “concerning the faith” he is talking about the Gospel and all the consequences of the Gospel, which includes the resurrection. Paul's further phrasing I did deliver to the Adversary is a strong affirmation which was intended to leave no room for doubt that Hymenaeus should be shunned and expelled from the faithful community. Hymenaeus was an emissary of the Devil and his teachings should be avoided at all costs.

Philetus, like Hymenaeus, was entrenched with the false notion that the resurrection was a past reality. But what resurrection were they teaching? Was it the actual second coming of Christ, as Jesus, Paul and the true Apostles of our Lord taught, or Gnostic views?

Gnosticism existed before Christ, dating back to the last centuries before Christ as a philosophy incorporating the Greek philosophy of Plato and others along with the Persian philosophy of Zoroaster. The apostate Jews also fell sway to its influences, as did the Hellenists. Not long after, sects of Gnostic influences bombarded Paul’s Gentile converts, living in a Hellenistic world. The Gnostics began to incorporate Christ into their satanic philosophy.

Many Gnostic groups, following after the dualism of flesh and spirit of Plato, accepted the idea of Jesus Christ but not that Christ came to earth in the form of a man. Gnostics believed that Christ came in the appearance of a man, a hologram so to speak, but could not have possibly humiliated Himself to the point of flesh, becoming human. However, Paul affirms this very thing in Ph. 2:5-10 that most Gnostics would deny.

Another demonstration of Gnosticism becomes an apparent possibility concerning Hymenaeus and Philetus.

There were many forms of Gnosticism that viewed “resurrection” occurred at the moment an individual recognized his mortality and thus transcended it. It could very well be that Hymenaeus and Philetus accepted this Gnostic belief and were heavy promoters of it. The Gnostic view should not be confused with the
scriptural view of regeneration that is equated with the spiritual new birth. I lean toward the view that Hymenaeus and Philetus were teaching the Gnostic view due to the dating of this letter. Paul wrote 2 Timothy before the destruction of the temple of 70 AD.

Either way, whether the Gnostic view or the much later heresy full Preterist view of a fulfilled past resurrection by Christ supposedly coming in some mystical form of judgment, they are both damnable doctrines from hell. “*Their word will eat as doth a gangrene.***”

2 Ti. 2:19 “Howbeit the firm foundation of God standeth, having this seal, The Lord knoweth them that are his: and, Let every one that nameth the name of the Lord depart from unrighteousness.”

In context, depart from false teachings.

2 Ti. 2:23-25 “23 But foolish and ignorant questionings refuse, knowing that they gender strifes. 24 And the Lord’s servant must not strive, but be gentle towards all, apt to teach, forbearing, 25 in meekness correcting them that oppose themselves; if peradventure God may give them repentance unto the knowledge of the truth,”

We as Christ's Gospel stewards will always have our task before us. Whether unregenerate men will someday believe the true Gospel or not, it is up to God in granting them repentance and knowledge of the truth.

2 Ti. 2:26 “and they may recover themselves out of the snare of the devil, having been taken captive by him unto his will.”

Jews, Gnostics, and all false gospel proponents have been ensnared by the Devil.

2 Ti. 3:1-7 “1 But know this, [Timothy] that in the last [inter-advental] days grievous times shall come. 2 For men shall be lovers of self, lovers of money, boastful, haughty, railers, disobedient to parents, unthankful, unholy, 3 without natural affection, implacable, slanderers, without self-control, fierce, no lovers of good, 4 traitors, headstrong, puffed up, lovers of pleasure rather than lovers of God; 5 holding a form of godliness, but having denied the power therefore. From these also turn away. 6 For of these are they that creep into houses, and take captive silly women laden with sins, led away by divers lusts, 7 ever learning, and never able to come to the knowledge of the truth.”

Paul in one swoop characterizes the depraved nature of man. But more specifically as indicated in verse 7, Paul is pinning the enemies of Christ/Gospel as reprobates.
The list of sinful actions on the part of man are nothing new, or are supposedly going to manifest themselves in some crazy futuristic scheme. The evil activities of men will always be an ever-present reality till the consummation.

“The grievous times shall come.” The difference?

The activities of the reprobates [Jews] have realigned/shifted themselves against Christ and His Gospel children, in contrast to the God hating activities exercised by the Jews of the Old Testament era. A warring against Christ and His elect true Jews, spearheaded by the reprobate Jews, that was gaining momentum. However, Paul adds a religious dimension to their motives. Their Jew, Gnostic, Hellenistic, Messianic, etc. false religion only holds a form of godliness but nonetheless is a hoax, a sham. Thus they/we as Christ's elect are to, at all costs avoid.

Religion is a damnable clerical enterprise that seeks to anesthetize mankind with false hopes. Living Gospel faith and religious faith are antithetical to one another. Paul addresses a sinister motive behind their treachery in verse 6.

2 Ti. 3:8-9 “8 And even as Jannes and Jambres withstood Moses, so do these also withstand the truth. Men corrupted in mind, reprobate concerning the faith. 9 But they shall proceed no further. For their folly shall be evident unto all men, as theirs also came to be.”

Paul is no friend of the Gospel hating Jews, and more so, no friend of the law loving Messianic Jew deceivers of both Ebionite and Nazarene sects.

http://www.jewishencyclopedia.com/articles/1393-nazarenes

Paul introduces Jannes and Jambres who played an important role as adversaries of Moses. Paul parallels their deception with contemporary Jewish animosity and persecution against Christ, who is the true Moses/Deliverer.


2 Ti. 3:10-11 “10 But thou [Timothy] didst follow my teaching, conduct, purpose, faith, longsuffering, love, patience, 11 persecutions, sufferings. What things befell me at Antioch, at Iconium, at Lystra; what persecutions I endured. And out of them all the Lord delivered me.”

Christen-dumb today does not follow in Paul's teachings, conduct, purpose, faith, long-suffering, love, patience, and persecution. These devils occupying the pulpits have gutted the very offense of the Gospel. They have molded a phony Christ and a false gospel in their own depraved image that is palatable to the world and the Jews.
2 Ti. 3:12 “Yea, and all that would live godly in Christ Jesus shall suffer persecution.”

This statement is as relevant then as it is now. The degree and manner of persecution is not the issue. The issue is ARE WE CONTENDING FOR THE TRUE GOSPEL? If we are, then most assuredly we will experience persecution however it may manifest.

Speaking for myself, my greatest antagonists over the years were not those Atheists, lukewarm Agnostics, or even some Muslims that I know. The very ones who have been a thorn in my side, get blazing mad at me when attempting to explain the true Gospel to them, are those faithful pew warming, Wednesday and Sunday [twice] church goers. Like Paul, and adhering to Paul's admonition to Timothy, I have finally learned to avoid them.

2 Ti. 3:13 “But evil men and impostors shall wax worse and worse, deceiving and being deceived.”

Preaching and teaching the true Pauline Gospel of Jesus Christ has its effects. The reprobate Jews and their children, the pseudo-christians and Muslims, are law-loving Christ hating impostors. God will forever harden them.

To be clear, Islam and pseudo-christianity both speak very highly of Jesus Christ, and Mary His biological mother. Unlike the Jews who blaspheme Jesus Christ, teaching He was a sorcerer and was possessed with demons. And of course, the Jews teach that the Virgin Mary was a whore and a prostitute. However neither of these religious bodies accept the Pauline Gospel, thus are cursed.

2 Ti. 3:14-17 “14 But abide thou in the things which thou hast learned and hast been assured of, knowing of whom thou hast learned them. 15 And that from a babe thou hast known the sacred writings which are able to make thee wise unto salvation through faith which is in Christ Jesus. 16 Every scripture inspired of God is also profitable for teaching, for reproof, for correction, for instruction which is in righteousness. 17 That the man of God may be complete, furnished completely unto every good work.”

All that God/Christ intends for His people to know has been manifested in the Holy Scriptures, that we may become complete in Christ and the Gospel. Amen!

2 Ti. 4:1-2 “1 I charge thee, [Timothy] before God and Jesus Christ, who shall judge the living and the dead, by his coming, and his kingdom: 2 Preach the word: be instant in season, out of season: reprove, entreat, rebuke in all patience and doctrine.”

Let's recap the enemies of the Gospel; what Paul and Timothy were up against in their day.
* Christ denying apostate Jews who killed our Holy Jesus Christ, and used Nero as their political pawn to persecute true followers of Christ and His Gospel. Typical Jewry, then and today.

* Messianic Torah Jew Judaizers [Ebionite-Nazarene, the main groups] who were spewing out their false Gospel and warring against Paul. Especially James and his law-cult followers who insisted Justification and assurance came by/through faith and works. Rejecting imputation of rightness through faith alone as Paul clearly taught.

* Hellenistic Gnostics, who taught a false Christ, and rejected a bodily resurrection, among other Gnostic heresies.

* The Pagan world in general with their pantheons of multiple, mystical, and occult gods that were worshiped and idolized by their Pagan priests and religious followers.

Paul charges Timothy [and us] to stand in the gap. Preach the word/Gospel with all its implications as Paul taught. Reprove these unfruitful works of darkness. Rebuke with patience using sound Pauline doctrine, not ecumenical dialog.

2 Ti. 4:3 “For there shall be a time, when they will not endure sound doctrine; but, according to their own desires, they will heap to themselves teachers, having itching ears:”

As it was then and also today, the world of false religions and more so, pseudo-Christianity [christen-dumb] will not endure sound doctrine. Through their own personal religious lusts and desires they did not want the Christ/Gospel Paul preached, henceforth raised up false teachers, Gnostics, law-loving Messianic Jews, church-fathers, to mold a Christ [Golden Calf] in their own depraved image to be adored.

2 Ti. 4:4 “And will indeed turn away their hearing from the truth, but will be turned unto fables.”

The religious world at large, especially the Jews and their allied christen-dumbs, have made a mockery of Jesus Christ, inventing all sorts of fables, myths, superstitions, etc.; that blasphemes the very truth of Christ and the Gospel.

2 Ti. 4:5 “5 But be thou vigilant, labour in all things, do the work of an evangelist, fulfil thy ministry. Be sober.”

True soldiers for Christ, are we going to compromise the Gospel? Are we about to silence the truth of Christ that condemns the Jews, for fear of the Jews? Have we become so weak and fearful that we may be labeled an “anti-Semite” by these devils? Have we become so weak when we have been given the very
power and authority of the Holy Spirit to assault the dark forces of evil? Are we to cower in the face of pseudo-Christians when they tell us “judge not lest ye be judged”, a verse they use out of context and misinterpret to silence the truth against themselves, those false gospel teaching devils?

2 Ti. 4:6-7 “6 For I am even now ready to be sacrificed: and the time of my dissolution is at hand. 7 I have fought a good fight, I have finished my course, I have kept the faith.”

There is the man Paul! Paul, a man so in love with Christ, truth, and the Gospel, that he was uncompromising even to his own very death.

Jesus Christ our Lord kept the faith unto death. Paul kept the faith unto death. The true Apostles kept the faith unto death. They all kept the faith as a testimony against the wicked self-righteous, God hating, Christ killing Jews. And likewise should not ALL of Christ's elect keep the faith till our last dying breath?

Even today within the USA where there is no outright persecution as in Paul's day, so-called “believers” so easily dismiss defining the true Gospel, claiming this is a trivial matter. These false people would rather spend all their wasted time on social issues and altruistic good works [which are not bad], but all these works and deeds without a true Gospel are fruitless.

Let's not kid ourselves. The wolves have been masquerading as sheep for too long now. The likes of Orthodox, Papists, Evangelicals, Pentecostals, Charismaniacs, Christian Zionists [Zidiots], Protestants of all stripes, and all those who would dare name and equate the living Christ with their false gospels, let them all be Anathema!
2 Ti. 4:8 “As to the rest, there is laid up for me a crown of justice, which the Lord the just judge will render to me in that day: and not only to me, but to them also that love his coming. Make haste to come to me quickly.”

There’s our victory, our blessing! Not the stupid health, wealth, and prosperity that the devils have been teaching. Not the economic and/or financial ease we work for in this life. For we have the highest honor and calling in this life that one can imagine. BEING AMBASSADORS FOR THE KINGDOM OF CHRIST AND HIS GOSPEL!

2 Ti. 4:9 “For Demas hath left me, loving this world, and is gone to Thessalonica:”

“Love not the world, neither the things that are in the world. If any man love the world, the love of the Father is not in him” (1 Jn. 2:15).

2 Ti. 4:14-15 “14 Alexander the coppersmith hath done me much evil: the Lord will reward him according to his works: 15 Whom do thou also avoid, for he hath greatly withstood our words.”

Who is this adversary, Alexander, whom Paul said to avoid?

Alexander was an Ephesian false Christian impostor that Paul cast off as a reprobate (1Ti. 1:20), having together with Hymenaeus put from him faith and a good conscience, and so made shipwreck concerning the true Gospel faith which includes a bodily resurrection at the time of consummation.

Alexander’s heresy, like Hymenaeus and Philetus, was incipient Gnosticism. We discussed this previously, however it is worth mentioning again. Hymeneus is associated with Philetus. What they taught is described by Paul as “profane babblings,” leading to more ungodliness “as doth a gangrene.” Their heresy consisted in saying that the resurrection was past already. The heresy, gaining momentum, had overthrown the faith of some. The heretical doctrine of these three heretical teachers, Hymeneus, Alexander and Philetus was accordingly one of the early forms of Judeo/Christian Gnosticism. Its premise was that matter was originally and essentially evil; for this reason the body was not an essential part of human nature; that the only resurrection was that of each man as he awoke from the death of sin to a righteous life. Hence in the case of everyone who has repented of sin, “the resurrection was past already”. Also, the physical body did not participate in the blessedness, renewal, and transformation in the future life, but salvation consisted only in the soul’s/spirit’s complete deliverance from all contact with a material world and a material body.

So pernicious and devilish were the teachings of incipient Gnosticism among the Gentile flock that they quickly spread like gangrene.
The overall implications of this heresy are:

* A denial of the future resurrection of the physical body
* The denial of the bodily resurrection of Christ, and even the fact of Christ's incarnation

The way in which Paul the apostle dealt with those who taught such deadly error, [and so should we] was that he resorted to the same measures as he had utilized in the case of the immoral person at Corinth. Paul delivered Hymeneus and Alexander to Satan, that they might learn not to blaspheme.

We as Christ's elect should imitate and follow Paul's example by [spiritually] rounding up all false gospel purveyors, Christ's deity deniers, putting them in a box, and personally delivering them also to Satan where they belong. "Cast off the bond woman and her children" - the false gospel preachers and teachers.

2 Ti. 4:16-18  "16 At my first answer no man stood with me, but all forsook me: may it not be laid to their charge. 17 But the Lord stood by me, and strengthened me, that by me the preaching may be accomplished, and that all the Gentiles may hear: and I was delivered out of the mouth of the lion. 18 The Lord hath delivered me from every evil work: and will preserve me unto his heavenly kingdom, to whom be glory for ever and ever. Amen."

Paul's metaphorical figure of speech “mouth of the lion” is reminiscent of our brothers Sampson, David, and Daniel; how God delivered them all from their adversaries. And we also whom are among Christ's elect shall be delivered from our adversaries who hate the offense of the Gospel.

2 Ti. 4:19-22  "19 Salute Prisca and Aquila, and the household of Onesiphorus. 20 Erastus remained at Corinth. And Trophimus I left sick at Miletus. 21 Make haste to come before winter. Eubulus and Pudens, and Linus and Claudia, and all the brethren, salute thee. 22 The Lord Jesus Christ be with thy spirit. Grace be with you. Amen."

Titus

Tit. 1:1-4, 10 "1 Paul, a servant of God, and an apostle of Jesus Christ, according to the faith of God’s elect, and the knowledge of the truth which is according to godliness, 2 in hope of eternal life, which God, who cannot lie, promised before times eternal; 3 but in his own seasons manifested his
word in the message, wherewith I was intrusted according to the commandment of God our Saviour; 4 to Titus, my true child after a common faith: Grace and peace from God the Father and Christ Jesus our Saviour. 10 For there are many unruly men, vain talkers and deceivers, specially they [Messianic Jews] of the circumcision,”

Paul, our brother in Christ, in the opening of his letter to Titus reasserts his apostleship and calling. Paul’s apostleship and calling he stated was from the direct commandment of God/Christ our Saviour.

* A Servant
* An Apostle
* Faith of God’s elect both of Jew and Gentile stock
* Knowledge of the truth, which Christ had given Him
* The Gospel of eternal life
* God cannot lie
* Promised from Eternity
* Paul was entrusted the Gospel by the direct command and revelation of Christ

Historical conclusion? Either the Messianic Jews, more specifically and mainly over in relevance to Jew and Gentile gnostic persuasions in Crete, were going to believe Paul’s claims, or they were not; a rather simple proposition.

Unfortunately, the staunch, unwavering Messianic Jews of Paul’s day eventually denied Paul claims and became his greatest enemies. Not only his enemies, but enemies of the very Gospel itself.

*Messianic Torah Jew Judaizers [Ebionite-Nazarene, the main groups] were spewing out their false Gospel and warring against Paul, especially James and his law-cult followers who insisted justification and assurance came by/through faith and works. Rejecting imputation of rightness through Faith alone as Paul clearly taught.

Today, like the past, Messianic Jewish anti-Pauline animosity is alive and well. There are many groups and even websites at our disposal to verify this. Below is just one:

http://www.justgivemethetruth.com/problem.htm

One of the great lies [among many] promulgated within professed Christianity, both Papal and Protestant, is teaching that Paul and James were not enemies, thus, both shared the same understanding of justification, Christ, views on law adherence in general, and more specifically, Mosaic law. They allege Paul and James see the same Gospel from two different perspectives. Not only is this admission a denial of historical records themselves, but also a denial of the truth
as Paul wrote in his very own epistles, contrasted to the thoroughly Jewish character and anti-Pauline letter named James.

As a result, incorporating the teachings of this Messianic Jewish letter, led to the establishment of “anti-Pauline”, “false gospel” forms of “analytical justification”. We have shown the deadly effects of its venom throughout the growth of pseudo-Christianity, and even throughout the teachings of Protestantism promulgated through the likes of current day John MacArthur, John Piper, and RC Sproul to name just a few among MANY other protestant heretics. Along with J.I. Packer, and Gerstner.

Please view links.

http://jewishencyclopedia.com/articl...ral-epistle-of

In the below link, the writer makes the case that the letter of James was written for legal evidence to be used against Paul, as would be in a Jewish trial proceeding. He does raise some valid points to consider. Both the writer and myself agree that the letter named James is antagonistic toward Paul and Paul’s teachings. To be clear though, I fully reject the letter named James as would I reject the apocryphal books and Gnostic writings based on other grounds, not necessarily the trial view. There is absolutely no Gospel of a Justification by and through good works in any sense, and on our part.

http://www.jesuswordsonly.com/books/115-chapter-11jwo.html

Tit. 1:11 “whose mouths must be stopped; men who overthrow whole houses, teaching things which they ought not, for filthy lucre’s sake.”

In Paul’s day, there were no “Church” buildings with stained glass windows, steeples, bells, etc. These buildings later were erected as a result of the great apostasy, inspired by the so-called church fathers to mirror the synagogues of the apostate Jews and Pagan temples. The ekklesia met and worshiped in and from their homes.

Paul's love for his flock, the truth, and the Gospel, caused him to make some rather bold statements. “Whose mouths must be stopped”. Of course Paul is not saying to cut out their tongues, murder, or gag them, rather Paul uses a figure of speech indicating the seriousness and necessity of teaching sound doctrine, and to stop listening to these devils altogether.

Tit. 1:12-14 “12 One of themselves, a prophet of their own, said, Cretans are always liars, evil beasts, idle gluttons. 13 This testimony is true. For which cause reprove them sharply, that they may be sound in the faith, 14 not giving heed to Jewish fables, and commandments of men who turn away from the truth.”
Paul many times used statements from his adversaries to prove a point.

Please read and refer to Acts 17:22-34 at this time.

We all know that Paul was no dummy. Although the Jews did not highly esteem Paul, Paul was a well-educated man, trained by the highly respected Jewish teacher, Gamaliel (Ac. 22:3; 5:34).

Paul was knowledgeable not only in Jewish Scripture and literature, but also in classical Greek literature. While discoursing with a group of Epicurean and Stoic philosophers in Acts 17:22-34, Paul, in verse 28, quotes from Epimenides’ Cretica, “For in him we live and move and have our being”, and Aratus’ Phaenomena, “For we are also his offspring”. Paul used these two pagan poets to make a point. In 1 Co.15:33, Paul quoted from Menander’s comedy Thais, “Evil company corrupts good habits”. When Paul spoke to Titus concerning his mission on the island of Crete, Paul quotes the Cretan poet Epimenides: One of themselves, a prophet of their own, said, “Cretans are always liars, evil beasts, idle gluttons.” Paul says of Epimenides’ statement, “This testimony is true.”

Epimenides was a poet. Poets, playwrights, and other writers sometimes use a literary technique known as hyperbole, which is a deliberate exaggeration used to make a point. I quite often use hyperbole. Our Lord Jesus used hyperbolic phrases. We mentioned this in previous segments. To state in hyperbolic phrasing, “Cretans are always liars, evil beasts, idle gluttons,” is to say that the Cretan society as a whole was immoral and decadent, not necessarily that every single individual in that society was a liar, evil beast, or lazy glutton.

Epimenides had made a hyperbolic statement regarding the conduct of the people of Crete, hence Paul was agreeing with him in order to point out to Titus the difficulty that faced him and Christ’s flock.

Paul was following the common mood of Greek philosophers to substantiate his point. Once again I cannot stress enough the importance of understanding scripture within its historical context. Paul at times used his enemies’ statements against themselves, and concluded in the next verse.

Tit. 1:16 “They profess that they know God; but by their works they deny him, being abominable, and disobedient, and unto every good work reprobate.”

Paul is no friend of the Christ hating Jews, Messianic Jews, Gnostics, Gnostic Christians, etc. To Paul, if the Gospel is in any way compromised or tainted, it then becomes a false Gospel placed under the Anathema of God.
Hebrews

He. 1:1-4  “1 In the past God spoke to our ancestors through the prophets at many times and in various ways, 2 but in these last days [inter-advental] he has spoken to us by his Son, whom he appointed heir of all things, and through whom also he made the universe. 3 The Son is the radiance of God’s glory and the exact representation of his being, sustaining all things by his powerful word. After he had provided purification for sins, he sat down at the right hand of the Majesty in heaven. 4 So he became as much superior to the angels as the name he has inherited is superior to theirs.”

From the close of the Apostolic era to this day, there has been much debate, struggle, argument, and pain for those who attempt to dogmatically ascribe authorship of this letter. For myself, I refrain from laboring over this point. The Christocentric content and nature of the letter is what matters to me.

We have already identified the historical situation that was prevalent, contemporaneously to Paul’s day.

The people that found it most difficult to embrace Jesus Christ were not from Gentile [goyim] stock, but rather the Jews themselves. “Crucify Him,” they shouted.

The letter of Hebrews not only dismisses Mosaic Judaism as an administration of the past, completely fulfilled in and through the person of Jesus Christ, the living son of God, but also Messianic Judaism, with their evil attempts to pour the NEW WINE [Christ] into OLD WINESKINS [Moses]. The letter of Hebrews also dismisses [in principle] our current day Judaized forms of pseudo-Christianity promulgated by the so-called “fathers”.

Although the letter of Hebrews can be a helpful and convincing argument to persuade Christ denying Jews; in my understanding, this letter was written and aimed specifically towards both Messianic Jews and Christ rejecting Jews who would not let go of Moses. In fact, law-loving Messianic Jews took no back seat in their animosity towards Paul’s theology and the Gentile flock.

The writer opens with, “In the past God spoke to our ancestors through the prophets,”

This statement alone strongly infers the target audience as being Jews, along with the usage of the word “our” defining the writer as of Jewish lineage himself.

“…but in these last days [inter-advental] he has spoken to us by his Son.”

The writer clearly expresses and exalts Jesus Christ as the ultimate prophet sent by God to the Jews. The writer asserts Jesus is the voice that should be
wholeheartedly listened to and believed upon. The writer also tells how Christ had provided and completed the atonement, henceforth ascended to Heaven seated at the right hand of the Father.

The writer alludes specifically to at least 43 passages from the Old Testament to my count. There may be more that were missed, however the writer uses these passages to show that what came from the Mosaic administration was completely fulfilled in Jesus Christ forever. No turning back, no more practice, no more homage and or lip service is to be paid to Moses. It is now Christ and Christ alone.

Have the Messianic Jews learned? NO! Have they abandoned their false Gospel? NO! Have the Pseudo-Christians learned? NO! Have they abandoned their false Gospel? NO! Then there is no paradox as to why pseudo-christians would support the Jews and their bogus nation of Israel.

The empty shadows of the Mosaic administration are still embraced by these Messianic Jews. There are many different Messianic Jew movements. There are Pentecostal/Charismatic Messianic Jews. There are Messianic Jews who lean towards Protestantism, along with the strict Ebionite and Nazarene sects etc. However, the main underlying tenet within Messianic Judaism is that for a Gentile to be complete in Christ, the Gentile must be grafted into Messianic persuasions who hold to the Mosaic Torah. The sects within Messianic Judaism only differ as to the degree, manner, variance of law and ceremonial adherence found in Moses. But all submit to the Torah as their guide.


Refer to link for a better understanding of how messianic Judaism attempts to maintain the wall of separation between Jew and Gentile.

http://tjcii.org/

In their “About Us” section they state:

“Who We Are

Toward Jerusalem Council II” is an initiative of repentance and reconciliation between the Jewish and Gentile segments of the Church. The vision is that one day there will be a second Council of Jerusalem that will be, in an important respect, the inverse of the first Council described in Acts 15. Whereas the first
Council was made up of Jewish believers in Yeshua (Jesus), who decided not to impose on the Gentiles the requirements of the Jewish law, so the second Council would be made up of Gentile church leaders, who would recognize and welcome the Jewish believers in Yeshua without requiring them to abandon their Jewish identity and practice.”

The point that all these Messianic Jews and their Gentile counterparts miss is that Jesus Christ broke down the wall of separation between Jew and Gentile. The elect body of Christ is one NEW MAN! One NEW CREATION! One DISTINCT BODY!

These Jews by maintaining “their Jewish identity and practice”, nullify the Gospel of Jesus Christ. For the dumb “goyim” who agree with this, it just reveals how apostate Christendom has become.

In the next link you will see a stricter sect of Messianic Judaism. Click especially the section entitled Challenging “NT-only, grace-only” theology.

http://www.therefinersfire.org/

Friends, brothers and sisters, this Jew problem will not go away. Paul and his Gentile followers were plagued with the Jew problem, and likewise are we today. Does this make me an “anti-Semite?” “Am I therefore become your enemy, because I tell you the truth?” (Ga. 4:16).

Do Messianic Jews today as in Paul’s day believe they should keep the law of Moses?

Quotes are from Messianic Judaism: Questions and Answers is adapted from a booklet written by Rabbi David Chernoff with the same title. It answers some of the questions frequently asked about Messianic Judaism.

Quote “…it is impossible to keep all the laws of the Mosaic Covenant today. In addition, most Jews live outside of Israel, and many of the laws only apply to life within Israel. Nevertheless, the laws that are part of the covenant mediated by Moses are still valuable and relevant.”

Does this statement accurately reflect Pauline theology? What this Jewish Rabbi would have us believe is that although it is impossible to keep ALL the laws, the law is still relevant only wherein it can be obeyed.

Paul: “Behold, thou art called a Jew, and restest in the law, and makest thy boast of God, …..Thou that makest thy boast of the law, through breaking the law dishonourest thou God?”
According to Paul, Moses required complete submission in every aspect, even sacrificial. If one point of the law was broken, then ALL the law was broken. You cannot pick and choose.

Quote: “The Torah continues to inform and guide the life of the Jewish people. It teaches us the right things to do and gives us a good way to live. It helps us live an authentic Jewish lifestyle. It helps us remain part of the Holy People. The early Messianic Jews had a favorable view of the Torah, and many were zealous to live in accordance with it (see Acts 21:20-26). History documents that Messianic Jews continued to live a distinctly Jewish, Torah-based lifestyle for centuries after the arrival of Messiah Yeshua. There is no incompatibility with being “zealous for the Torah” and being a Messianic Jew.”

His above statement is absolute nonsense!

Paul: “But Israel, which followed after the law of righteousness, hath not attained to the law of righteousness. Wherefore? Because they sought it not by faith, but as it were by the works of the law. For they stumbled at that stumblingstone.... For Christ is the end of the law for righteousness to every one that believeth. For Moses describeth the righteousness which is of the law, that the man which doeth those things shall live by them.”

Quote: “I am pro-Torah, recognizing that all Believers are in some sense to fulfill the Law (Romans 8:4), but that not all of us are obligated to fulfill the same requirements of the Law (for example, Gentiles need not be circumcised).”

Pictured above is a Rabbi performing a circumcision ceremony wherein he sucks the blood out of the infants penis.
More nonsense and barbaric Talmudic occult practices! Jews need not be physically circumcised either according to the Gospel. For when one is born into Christ then he possesses the true circumcision! And that of the heart!

Paul: “For circumcision verily profiteth, if thou keep the law: but if thou be a breaker of the law, thy circumcision is made uncircumcision.”

These Messianic Jews admit they cannot completely follow all the law, but still endeavor to make circumcision binding on the Jews only. It's OK for them to dismiss blood sacrifices, but not flesh-cutting and penis sucking. Talk about blindness! The Messianic Jews like their brothers the Christ hating Jews are still blinded. They never did like nor listen to Paul. That's an historical FACT and a scriptural one also!

There are many other quotes to substantiate the FACT that Messianic Jews of today are just as abominable as their heretical Jewish Christ hating ancestors. Sickening as it is, christen-dumb and the USA supports [$$] and exalts these Jews. The dumb Goyim even die for them through Jewish proxy wars for “Greater Israel”. How awful!

Before we examine our brother Peter's attitude toward the Jews, I want to share some experience that occurred many years ago while still attending different “church groups”. This was after, of course, my wife and I departed for good one of Satan's masterpieces, the Roman Catholic institution.

Not only was I lied to and brainwashed from my youth as a “Roman Catholic” concerning Peter’s role as the first Pope in the continued unbroken line of alleged Popes, but in non-catholic circles also I heard Peter spoken of in disrespectful ways that really bothered me.

These haughty and self-righteous pulpit-men took pleasure in putting Peter down on many occasions and in many different ways; as if they were so much stronger, more courageous, more bold, more faithful, etc., than Peter himself. While doing thus, the pew warmers all laughed and giggled right along with their ignorant false gospel preaching pastor.

Oh how they loved to always bring up how Peter denied Christ thrice, as if they themselves under those same fearful circumstances would not have been tempted to do so themselves. How Peter at times disagreed with the Lord as if they themselves always agree, but they really don't, spreading their false gospel. And listening to one sermon after another entitled “Impetuous Peter” and “Peter the Showoff”.

These fools never take into consideration what it was like mentally for our brother Peter, transitioning not only from Moses, but also from the oral Talmudic lies and false traditions that Peter was influenced with from his youth. This was similar to my own situation transitioning from the falsehoods of Rome and apostate Protestantism. Yes, Peter had his faults like I and others of God’s elect have, but these faults only prove our need for Christ’s imputed righteousness, and the necessity of the ongoing work of the Holy Spirit in our lives, to illumine us to the deeper and fuller truths of Christ and the Gospel. The whole package was not all at once downloaded into the mind [hard drive] of Peter. Peter, like us, needed to grow in the Grace and knowledge of our Lord Jesus Christ, both intellectually and experimentally.

So in defense of Peter, my brother in Christ, this segment is to show the effects evil Messianic Judaism can have on the mind.

Both Peter and Paul had difficult tasks cut out for them.

Setting the historical scene

* You have Paul’s mission/calling to the Gentiles/uncircumcision, on one end
* You have Peter’s mission/calling to the Jews/circumcision, caught in the middle
* You have James the Netzarim Messianic Jew instigator, stumbler of Peter, and enemy of Paul on the other end

Let’s listen to Paul’s story.

Ga.1:1 “Paul, an apostle, not of men, neither by man, but by Jesus Christ, and God the Father, who raised him from the dead,”

Paul claims an Apostleship that was not ordained from the consensus of men, but rather from God/Christ Himself. Thus, we must listen and obey Paul’s teachings.

The problem

Ga. 1:6-12 “6 I wonder that you are so soon removed from him that called you into the grace of Christ, unto another gospel. 7 Which is not another, only there are some that trouble you, and would pervert the gospel of Christ. 8 But though we, or an angel from heaven, preach a gospel to you besides that which we have preached to you, let him be anathema. 9 As we said before, so now I say again: If any one preach to you a gospel, besides that which you have received, let him be anathema. 10 For do I now persuade men, or God? Or do I seek to please men? If I yet pleased men, I should not be the servant of Christ. 11 For I give you to understand, brethren, that the gospel which was preached by me is not according to man. 12 For neither did I receive it of man, nor did I learn it; but by the revelation of Jesus Christ.”
Paul emphasizes there is only one correct understanding of the Gospel/Justification, and Paul’s understanding is the correct one because it came directly from God/Christ Himself. Paul did not learn his Gospel through a seminary, some pious ceremonial/liturgical cult ordination, or by hanging around the flesh cutting “chosen people”.

Paul mentions there are SOME that trouble you with a false Gospel. Who are the SOME? We shall see.

Ga. 1:15-20 “15 But when it was the good pleasure of God, who separated me, even from my mother’s womb, and called me through his grace, 16 to reveal his Son in me, that I might preach him among the Gentiles; straightway I conferred not with flesh and blood: 17 neither went I up to Jerusalem to them that were apostles before me: but I went away into Arabia; and again I returned unto Damascus. 18 Then after three years I went up to Jerusalem to visit Cephas, and tarried with him fifteen days. 19 But other of the apostles saw I none, save James the Lord’s brother. 20 Now touching the things which I write unto you, behold, before God, I lie not.”

When Paul was called by our very God and Saviour Jesus Christ, he straightway/immediately journeyed to Arabia then Damascus.

Paul did not learn the Gospel from the Apostles!

After three years of God given revelation, Paul went to Jerusalem to visit Peter and stayed with Peter fifteen days. During those fifteen days can you imagine what Paul talked about?

Paul then mentions the only other person he saw at that time was James the Lord’s brother.

James the unjust

Paul is introducing the characters in his story for an extremely important reason. Reading the letter of Galatians, one can get the sense that Paul was really ticked off at those SOME, thus saying “let him be anathema.”
“Now touching the things which I write unto you, behold, before God, I lie not.”

Paul is imploring his Gentile brothers to believe and pay close attention to his story, exclaiming; before God, I lie not.

Paul continues to tell his story:

Ga. 2:1-2 “1 Then after the space of fourteen years I went up again to Jerusalem with Barnabas, taking Titus also with me. 2 And I went up by revelation; and I laid [communicated] before them the gospel which I preach among the Gentiles but privately before them who were of repute [reputation], lest by any means I should be running, or had run, in vain.”

After fourteen years of preaching his Christ revealed Gospel to the Gentiles, Paul visits Jerusalem and has a private meeting with the men of repute, to communicate the Gospel to them also. The reasoning behind Paul doing this was to show the Jewish men of repute, that his Gospel was not only for the Gentiles, but also for them to understand. If Paul's [no more Moses’] Gospel was only for the Gentiles, then indeed, Paul would have run his fourteen years in vain. Paul would have been no better than a dual covenant Gospel heretic with one gospel for the Jews and another Gospel for the Gentiles.

Reputation: Gr.1380 “dokeō” Opinion; seemed to be; thus in question; supposedly.

Communicated: Gr. 394 “anatithēmi” to set forth (in words), communicate”

What is the point Paul is driving at?

Ga. 2:3 “But not even Titus who was with me, being a Greek, was compelled to be circumcised:”

As stated in previous segments, there are different sects within Messianic Judaism. Some do not require Gentiles to be circumcised, and there are the more radical groups who demand it. However for the JEW, it is a token for Torah observance and a must. This is a problem for Paul. Paul throws out circumcision for both Jew and Gentile. Paul never compelled anyone to be circumcised. That’s why the Messianic Jews dislike him and even distort his Gospel message.

Ga. 2:4 “and that because of the false brethren privily brought in, who came in privily to spy out our liberty which we have in Christ Jesus, that they might bring us into bondage.”

To Paul, a Justification that needed works was a false Gospel. These false brethren who sneaked into a rather private gathering were Jew spies. Their evil
motive was to bring Paul and his followers into the bondage of law, in which circumcision was its token.

Ga. 2:5 “to whom we gave place in the way of subjection, no, not for an hour; that the truth of the gospel might continue with you.”

Remember, Paul is telling the Galatians his story/experience he had with the Jews. Paul would not even subject himself to these false Gospel Messianic Jews. NO! NOT FOR AN HOUR. Hyperbole again meaning NOT AT ALL! And neither should we subject ourselves to false Gospel preachers, nor even lend them credence.

Ga. 2:6 “But from those who were reputed [seemed] to be somewhat (whatesoever they were, it maketh no matter to me: God accepteth not man’s person)-- they, I say, who were of repute imparted nothing to me:”

Somewhat: Gr.5100 “tis” a certain, a certain one.

From those Jewish men who seemed to be somethings, Paul could not care less, and neither does God accept the Jew because of his personage/lineage. Paul reiterates, they imparted nothing to him in the way of the true Gospel, for he had not learned it from those Jews or any man, but from Christ Himself!

Ga. 2:7-8 “but contrariwise, when they saw that I had been intrusted with the gospel of the uncircumcision, even as Peter with the gospel of the circumcision 8 (for he that wrought for Peter unto the apostleship of the circumcision wrought for me also unto the Gentiles);”

Please notice above that Paul exempts James from authority. It was Paul to the Gentiles, and Peter to the Jews. However, over time, James the usurper, the Netzarim Messianic Jew instigator, cause of Peter’s stumbling, and enemy of Paul, finally gained ascendancy to the throne of the early Jerusalem flock.

Ga. 2:9, 11 “9 and when they perceived the grace that was given unto me, James and Cephas and John, they who were reputed [seemed?] to be pillars, gave to me and Barnabas the right hands of fellowship, that we should go unto the Gentiles, and they unto the circumcision [Jews];….. 11But when Peter was come to Antioch, I withstood him to the face, because he was to be blamed.”

Why was Peter to be blamed?

Ga. 2:12-14 “12 For before that certain came from James, [These are the Messianic culprits] he did eat with the Gentile: [nothing wrong here, according to Paul’s Gospel] but when they [the James gang] were come, he withdrew and separated himself, [very hypocritical] fearing them which were of the
circumcision. [why should Peter fear?] 13 And the other Jews dissembled likewise with him; [compromising the gospel has serious effects] insomuch that Barnabas also was carried away with their dissimulation. 14 But when I saw that they walked not uprightly according to the truth of the gospel, I said unto Peter before them all, If thou, being a Jew, livest after the manner of Gentiles, and not as do the Jews, why compellest thou the Gentiles to live as do the Jews?”

Compel: Gr.315 “anagkazō” to necessitate, compel, drive to, constrain by force, threats, etc. by permission, entreaties, etc. and/or by other means.

Peter was starting to grasp Paul’s Gospel by initially eating with the Gentiles, which was strictly forbidden for a Jew. This took place in Antioch, Gentile land. Peter and other Jews were living after the manner of the Gentiles. It was only after the Messianic Jews from James arrived, out of fearing the bogus authority of James that he withdrew. Peter’s actions spoke louder than any words. He stumbled here and indirectly suggested by his actions that Gentiles should live under the law, although Peter never formally taught that.

That is why I placed Peter in the middle of this tug-o-war between Paul’s true Gospel, and James’ false gospel.

Ga. 2:16-21 “16 Knowing that a man is not justified by the works of the law, but by the faith of Jesus Christ, even we have believed in Jesus Christ, that we might be justified by the faith of Christ, and not by the works of the law: for by the works of the law shall no flesh be justified. 17 But if, while we seek to be justified by Christ, we ourselves also are found sinners, is therefore Christ the minister of sin? God forbid. 18 For if I build again the things which I destroyed [Moses], I make myself a transgressor. 19 For I through the law am dead to the law [Moses], that I might live unto God [faith alone in the Gospel of Christ alone]. 20 I am crucified with Christ: nevertheless I live; yet not I, but Christ liveth in me: and the life which I now live in the flesh I live by the faith of the Son of God, who loved me, and gave himself for me. 21 I do not frustrate the grace of God: for if righteousness come by the law, then Christ is dead in vain.”

What Paul just stated to the Galatians is what Messianic Judaism and most of Christen-dumb hates.

“O foolish Galatians, who hath bewitched you [James did], that ye should not obey the truth, before whose eyes Jesus Christ hath been evidently set forth, crucified among you?” (Ga. 3:1).

“They [the Messianic Jews] zealously affect you, but not well; yea, they would exclude you, that ye might affect them” (Ga. 4:17).

“Stand fast therefore in the liberty wherewith Christ hath made us free, and be
not entangled again with the yoke of bondage [Moses]. Behold, I Paul say unto you, that if ye be circumcised, Christ shall profit you nothing. For I testify again to every man that is circumcised, that he is a debtor to do the whole law. Christ is become of no effect unto you, whosoever of you are justified by the law; ye are fallen from grace” (Ga. 5:1-4).

“Ye did run well; who did hinder you that ye should not obey the truth? [The Messianic Jews did.] This persuasion cometh not of him that calleth you. A little leaven leaveneth the whole lump” (Ga. 5:7-9).

“For neither they [the Jews] themselves who are circumcised keep the law; but desire to have you circumcised, that they may glory in your flesh” (Ga. 6:13).

As long as Jews, Messianic Jews, and the whole of Christendom embraces the letter named James, they will forever be hopelessly in bondage attempting to justify themselves by and through good works.

They will painstakingly rack their brains and pull out their hair trying to reconcile Paul and James. All that they have accomplished from their frustrations is to align with James and refute Paul.

One apostate theologian concluding from laboring in his attempts to reconcile Paul and James, states (bold and underlined added):

“The apostles do not oppose each other, but work together to combat the enemy on different fronts. Paul stresses the initial justification of a sinner by grace through faith without works, whereas James stresses the continuing justification of a believer by grace through faith which issues in works” (ROBERT V. RAKESTRAW- Criswell College, Dallas, TX).

Continuing Justification??? Heresy!!

To the Jews and Rome Rakestraw must go. Let him be anathema!
1 Peter

1 Pe. 1:1 “Peter, an apostle of Jesus Christ, to the elect who are sojourners [parepidēmos] of the Dispersion in Pontus, Galatia, Cappadocia, Asia, and Bithynia,”

Gr. 3927 “parepidēmos” 1) one who comes from a foreign country into a city or land to reside there by the side of the natives; 2) a stranger; 3) sojourning in a strange place, a foreigner.

Peter’s primary calling was to those of the circumcision, the Jews. The letter entitled 1Peter reflects the more mature Peter and presupposes the strong influence of Paul’s theology. Peter’s greater knowledge of the Pauline Gospel [no more Moses; no more dividing wall; Christ alone is the fulfillment of Israel] was ever growing and reached the pinnacle after he left Jerusalem, per our Lord’s admonition to flee persecution.

James, the usurping, law loving, Messianic Jew had already at this time gained the “bishopric” in Jerusalem, still promulgating hostility towards Paul’s Gospel. Peter and some other Jews who embraced Christ had already fled Jerusalem under Nero’s persecution that was only some few years before the final destruction of Jerusalem.

The letter was written for the dispersed, believing Jews living in Gentile land, and also has relevance for the Hellenistic Jews who were living in Gentile land for many decades prior. As with ALL of the divinely inspired Scriptures, spiritual truths are relevant for ALL of God’s elect whether letters are addressed to a specific or general audience.

There has been debate about whether Peter actually wrote the letter with his own hand, or if Peter had it written for him by another who was more schooled in the cultural Greek language. The content of the letter, as always, is all I’m concerned about for this segment.

We already can see from the first sentence Peter’s usage of the word “Elect”. The only others who used or spoke this term in the NT were Jesus our Lord, Paul, and John the Beloved. As we progress we will see that Peter understands the “elect people” or “chosen people” identically to Paul.
1 Pe. 1:2 “According to the foreknowledge of God the Father, in sanctification
of the Spirit, unto obedience and sprinkling of the blood of Jesus Christ:
Grace to you and peace be multiplied.”

Sounds like Paul, doesn’t it? An election according to the foreknowledge of God
the Father in and through Jesus Christ our atoning sacrifice. It was Paul who was
given the “full corn” Gospel and its implications via revelation. Peter’s greater
learning and knowledge did not come from hanging around James or those from
James [the flesh-cutters], but from Paul’s influence and the Holy Spirit working in
both their lives.

1 Pe. 1:3 “Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who
according to his great mercy begat us [the Jews] again unto a living hope
by the resurrection of Jesus Christ from the dead,”

“begat” us again”, Gr.313 “anagennaō” 1) to produce again, be born again,
born anew; 2) metaph. to have one’s mind changed so that he lives a new life
and one conformed to the will of God

1 Pe. 1:4 “unto an inheritance incorruptible, and undefiled, and that fadeth
not away, reserved in heaven for you,”

Does Peter sound like a Jew who is looking for the reestablishment of the nation
of Israel? An earthly Israel that is corrupt, defiled, and will most definitely fade
away like today’s wicked nation of Israel?

1 Pe. 1:5-9 “5 who by the power of God are guarded through faith unto a
salvation ready to be revealed in the last time. 6 Wherein ye [true Jews] greatly
rejoice, though now for a little while, if need be, ye have been put to grief in
manifold trials [persecution], 7 that the proof of your faith, being more precious
than gold that perisheth though it is proved by fire [persecution-testing], may be
found unto praise and glory and honor at the revelation of Jesus Christ: 8
whom not having seen ye love; on whom, though now ye see him not, yet
believing, ye rejoice greatly with joy unspeakable and full of glory: (cf.Jn.20:29)
9 receiving the end of your faith, even the salvation of your souls.”

Peter, like Paul, now understands the spiritual implications of the Gospel.
Whereas of old, the Jews were looking for a “glorified” earthly national Israel with
a Davidic Messianic King sitting upon the throne, Peter expresses the Messiah
as a life changer who “begets” NEW LIFE in Christ, giving their souls a living
hope via the resurrection of Jesus Christ.

Peter also stresses the elect believer is kept/guarded through a faith that is
affected by the power of God alone. These elect Jews, like us, have not seen
Christ face to face in the flesh, however we together rejoice, and love our Lord
with unspeakable joy.
1 Pe. 1:10-12 “10 Of this salvation the prophets have inquired and searched diligently, and have prophesied of the grace that should come unto you, 11 searching what, or what manner of time, the Spirit of Christ who was in them had signified when He testified beforehand of the sufferings of Christ and the glory that should follow. 12 Unto them it was revealed that they ministered, not unto themselves, but unto us the things which are now reported unto you by those who have preached the Gospel unto you, with the Holy Ghost sent down from Heaven — things which the angels desire to look into.”

Peter, from verse 10 further, magnifies and explains this salvation in contrast to the Mosaic administration and also in terms of fulfillment.

Peter, like Paul, sees:

* The prophets spoke of this salvation
* Christ Himself inspired the prophets
* Salvation is of Grace alone

1 Pe. 1:13 “Therefore gird up the loins of your mind; be sober and hope to the end for the grace that is to be brought unto you at the revelation of Jesus Christ.”

Gird up the loins of your mind through faith alone in Christ, as opposed to carnal practice/will-worship of Mosaic customs.

1 Pe. 1:14 “As obedient children, do not fashion yourselves according to the former lusts in your ignorance,”

Do not fashion yourselves according to the former lusts in your ignorance. In context, these former lusts were attempts by the Jews to gain righteousness through law adherence. Messianic Jews like James, are no better either.

1 Pe. 1:15-17 “15 but as He who hath called you is holy, so be ye holy in all manner of living, 16 because it is written: ‘Be ye holy, for I am holy.’ 17 And if ye call on the Father, who without respect of persons judgeth according to every man’s work, pass the time of your sojourning here in fear.”

Like God, there is no respect of a person’s ethnic, cultural, racial, or religious background, etc.

Peter admonishes his elect Jewish brethren living in Gentile land to reverence God’s instructions, the Gospel, and to look upon elect Gentile believers as equals in Christ.
1 Pe. 1:18 “For ye know that ye were not redeemed with corruptible things, such as silver and gold, from your vain way of living which ye received by tradition from your fathers,”

Read through Leviticus to get an idea of what silver and gold corruptible things are; the corruptible things are the very Temple with all the sacrificial trimmings.

1 Pe. 1:19-20 “19 but with the precious blood of Christ, as of a lamb without blemish and without spot, 20 who verily was foreordained before the foundation of the world, but was manifest in these last times for you [the elect].”

Peter, like Paul, finally grasps the full weight and implications of Paul’s Gospel. Peter now sees that Moses, with all its carnal sacrificial temple imagery, is nothing but a vain and corruptible way of living. To Peter, it is all about the precious blood of our sinless, spotless Lamb of God, Jesus Christ.

These words from Peter thus far are not the words of a law-loving, false gospel preaching, Messianic Jew devil. These words reflect a man who understands Paul’s Gospel.

The tug-o-war is over! Paul wins Peter over, thus Christ wins Peter over to the true Gospel. James and his gang of law-loving, self-righteous, false gospel preaching heretics finally could no more stumble and win Peter over to their damned cause.

1 Pe. 1:21-23 “21 By Him [God] ye believe in God, who raised Him up from the dead and gave Him glory, that your faith and hope might be in God. 22 Seeing ye have purified your souls in obeying the truth through the Spirit unto unfeigned love of the brethren, see that ye love one another with a pure heart fervently, 23 being born again, not of corruptible seed, but of incorruptible, by the Word of God which liveth and abideth for ever;”

Peter reiterates again! The Jew is not born again from the corruptible seed of Mosaic Law adherence, but like the Gentile, the Jew must be born anew by the very Word of God, Jesus Christ, Who is the Gospel, and lives and abides forever.

1 Pe. 1:24 “for ‘all flesh is as grass, and all the glory of man as the flower of grass. The grass withereth, and the flower thereof falleth away;’”

Peter correlates and continues to parallel Moses with the carnal flesh, and uses grass as imagery. All that carnal men can produce [their flowers] will all vanish away. Their self-righteousness is fleeting.

1 Pe. 1:25 “…but the Word of the Lord endureth for ever.’ And this is the Word which by the Gospel is preached unto you.”
Amen, brother Peter! Moses is finished.

There is no way in hell that a Messianic Jew [then or today] would ever tolerate Peter’s harsh language/treatment against the Law of Moses. Try telling a Christ rejecting Jew, or even a Messianic Jew, that Moses/Torah is a corruptible thing. See what happens. Or better yet, tell a Jew his written Talmud is of the devil. I hope you wear body armor.

Peter’s emphasis on the Gospel as superior to Moses is true not only in the general sense that the dispersed Jewish believers [readers] are no longer to be concerned about the problem of the fulfillment of the Law, but also in the special sense that, as in Paul, the death of Jesus has atoned for the sins of His elect people, both Jew and Gentile, and has accomplished justification on their behalf (1 Pe. 1:18).

1 Pe. 2:1 “Therefore, **rid yourselves** of all malice and all deceit, hypocrisy, envy, and slander of every kind.”

Peter shows brotherly concern for the elect believing Jews in that they are no longer to share the bigoted and prideful attitudes that MOST Jews both Christ rejecting and Messianic exhibit toward the Goyim.

1 Pe. 2:2-3 “2 Like **newborn babies**, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may grow up in your salvation, 3 now that **you have tasted that the Lord is good**.”

Peter equates the elect believing Jews as to newborn babes. This is interesting. Here are a people that possessed a national existence for thousands of years. However, in the Gospel, their national, religious, and ethnic identity is meaningless to Peter. They are become a new people, **newborn babies** in Christ (cf. 2 Co. 5:17).

1 Pe. 2:4-10 “4 As you come to him [Christ], the living [temple] Stone [Christ], rejected by humans [Jews] but chosen by God and precious to him 5 you also, like living stones [temple], are being built into a spiritual house [the new and real temple] to be a holy priesthood [Aaron and Levi are no more], offering spiritual sacrifices [not the blood sacrifices of Levi or of the unbloody mass] acceptable to God through Jesus Christ. 6 For in Scripture it says: ‘See, I lay a stone in Zion, a chosen and precious cornerstone, and the one who trusts in him will never be put to shame’ [Is. 28:16]. 7 Now to you who believe, this stone is precious. But to those who do not believe, ‘The stone the builders rejected has become the cornerstone’ [Ps. 118:22], 8 and, ‘A stone that causes people to stumble and a rock that makes them fall’ [Is. 8:14]. They stumble because they disobey [unbelief] the message, which is also what **they were destined for**. 9 But you [elect believing Jews in Christ alone, like the elect Gentiles] are a chosen
people, a royal priesthood, a holy nation, God’s special possession [God’s new Israel], that you may declare the praises of him who called you out of darkness [apostasy in Moses] into his wonderful light [of the Gospel].

10 Once you were not a people, but now you are the people [true Israel] of God; once you had not received mercy, but now you have received mercy [in and through Christ alone].”

Does Peter think and teach like a premillennial dispensationalist and/or a dual covenant heretic? Absolutely not!

Peter uses the imagery of the Mosaic administration as a backdrop to those Jews who are in Christ.

Being in Christ, the Jewish believer is now identified as a real, bona-fide valid people. Peter even goes as far as to say that in Moses, as contrasted to Christ and the Gospel, THE JEWS WERE NOT A PEOPLE AT ALL!! And to this very day, the Jews who reject Christ and/or preach a Messianic false dual [LAW] covenant Gospel are NO PEOPLE AT ALL, let alone can claim to be God’s chosen people as they and Christen-dumb insist. Christen-dumb has gone mad through God’s effectual blinding.

The hardening and unbelief of national Israel was predestined according to Peter!

Reading Peter is like reading Paul and Hebrews. There is not one premillennial dispensational heresy to be found in Peter, our brother.

There can be no doubt, at least to myself; “1 Peter” stands in the line of succession of Pauline theology. What was scarcely conceivable for the younger Peter, who at the time of Galatians 2:11 was able in only a very unsure way to follow Paul’s basic principle of freedom from the Mosaic Law for Gentile believers, Peter has now grown into a fuller understanding of the implications of the Gospel of Jesus Christ.

1 Pe. 2:25 “For ye [elect Jews] were going astray like sheep; but are now returned unto [Jesus Christ] the Shepherd and Bishop of your souls.”

1 Pe. 5:4 “And when the chief Shepherd [Jesus Christ] shall be manifested, ye shall receive the crown of glory that fadeth not away.”

Peter and Paul rely heavily on interpreting the OT in the light of the Gospel of Jesus Christ. Both our brothers use Moses as a backdrop in their understanding of Christ’s complete fulfillment and restoration of Israel.

Peter exalts Jesus Christ as the “Chief [arch] Shepherd”.

550
Gr. 750 “archipoimēn” chief principal; extreme; most fully embodying the qualities of the kind

Peter and his dispersed followers, unlike the Netzarim Jews, have fully broken away from the chains/shadows of Judaism. Jesus, to Peter, is the lively head cornerstone that supports this new temple in new Israel, and is the “archipoimēn” and Bishop of God’s elect souls.

Peter has likened OT Israel to:

* Corruptible things
* A vain way of living
* Corruptible seed
* All Jewish/Mosaic flesh is as grass; it fades away
* Christ rejectors, rejecting the lively stone Christ, and true temple Jesus Christ
* Reprobate Jew Israel were NO people of God

What about James? Does James now see eye to eye with Paul and Peter?

James called “the Just” was the oldest brother of Jesus and through usurpation became the leader of the early Jewish Messianic community in Jerusalem.

This usurpation was in flagrant denial of Christ’s own words. Paul’s calling was to the uncircumcision [Gentiles], and Peter’s calling was to the circumcision [Jews].

Jn. 21:15-17 “15 So when they had eaten breakfast, Jesus said to Simon Peter, ‘Simon, son of Jonah, do you love Me more than these?’ He said to Him, ‘Yes, Lord; You know that I love You.’ He said to him, ‘Feed My lambs.’ 16 He saith to him again the second time, ‘Simon, son of Jonas, lovest thou me?’ He saith unto him, ‘Yea, Lord; thou knowest that I love thee.’ He saith unto him, ‘Feed my sheep.’ 17 He saith unto him the third time, ‘Simon, son of Jonas, lovest thou me?’ Peter was grieved because he said unto him the third time, ‘Lovest thou me?’ And he said unto him, ‘Lord, thou knowest all things; thou knowest that I love thee.’ Jesus saith unto him, ‘Feed my sheep.’”

There is absolutely no mention of James, called “the Just” anywhere in Scripture that gives him any right at all to lead Christ’s flock. No, not by Jesus.

James was also known as “James the Righteous”. Both words, “just” and “righteous”, refer to his piety and strict ascetic practices. In other words, James was considered by the Messianic Jews “Just and Righteous” because of his virtuous and meritorious nature. This alone should raise a “red flag”.

Because of James’ importance in the early Jerusalem community, a letter attributed to him was included in the NT canon as the Epistle of James. However, his bogus leadership role put him in jeopardy during periods of persecution.
Although James never fled Jerusalem, he was eventually put to death in Jerusalem in 62 AD.

*For more information on James, the one called “the Just”, please read my article entitled “James the letter Exposed” which will be added as an addendum at the end of this book.

The Gospels first mention James [called the Just] in Mt. 13:55 and Mk. 6:3 where he is listed along with three other brothers of Jesus and some un-named sisters. According to Jn. 7:5, James and the other brothers didn’t approve of Jesus’ ministry. However, later they did become Messianic followers and were members of the early community of professed Jewish believers who lived in Jerusalem after Jesus ascended to His Father.

James and his faithful followers in Jerusalem, to the end, staunchly regarded themselves as Jews; in flagrant and vehement denial of Paul’s own Christ inspired words.

“There is neither Jew nor Greek, there is neither bond nor free, there is neither male nor female: for ye are all one in Christ Jesus” (Ga. 3:28).

“Where there is neither Greek nor Jew, circumcision nor uncircumcision, Barbarian, Scythian, bond nor free: but Christ is all, and in all” (Col. 3:11).

James and his minions worshiped regularly in the main Jewish Temple, and they continued to adhere to the old [shadows] Jewish religious laws.

Unlike Jesus our Lord, James and his Jew followers had no problems worshiping Judaism in the Temple.

But Jesus did!

“And he [Jesus] taught daily in the temple. But the chief priests and the scribes and the chief of the people sought to destroy him” (Lu. 19:47).

In fact, it was the very “temple” guards who came to arrest Jesus.

“Then Jesus said unto the chief priests, and captains of the temple, and the elders, which were come to him, Be ye come out, as against a thief, with swords and staves?” (Lu. 22:52).

The vile Jews even attempted to stone Jesus in the Temple.

“Then took they up stones to cast at him: but Jesus hid himself, and went out of the temple, going through the midst of them, and so passed by” (Jn. 8:59).
After Paul began to convert Gentiles to the faith as previously discussed, a dispute arose over whether these Gentile converts should follow the old Jewish religious laws and in particular, whether the males needed to be circumcised. Paul traveled to Jerusalem attempting to resolve the issue. According to Acts 15:19, it was James who made the final decision. James’ compromise allowed Gentile converts to remain uncircumcised, but deceptively required them to adhere to certain other traditional [shadows] Jewish laws. The fact that James made the final decision indicates that at this time he was the highest authority in the existing Jewish Messianic community. But again I ask, who gave James this authority?

Since we will not find any direct affirmation of James’ alleged given authority from the inspired Scriptures themselves, we must look to the heretical writings.

Historical evidence used to support the importance of James’ role is found in the Gospel of Thomas. According to Saying 12 of this heretical gospel, the alleged disciples said to Jesus [bold, coloring, and underlined added]:

“**We are aware that you will depart from us. Who will be our leader?**” Jesus answered: “No matter where you come from, it is to James the Just that you shall go, for whose sake heaven and earth have come to exist.”

WHAT?????????????????????????????

Paul: “He [Jesus Christ] is the image of the invisible God, the firstborn over all creation. For by Him all things were created that are in heaven and that are on earth, visible and invisible, whether thrones or dominions or principalities or powers. **All things were created through Him and for Him. And He [Christ] is before all things, and in Him all things consist. And He is the head of the body, the church, who is the beginning, the firstborn from the dead, that in all things He may have the preeminence**” (Col 1:15-18).

This gospel of Thomas' blasphemous passage indicates that Jesus designated James to take over the leadership of the Messianic Jewish community after Christ departed. Although the gospel of Thomas is not part of the NT, many blind scholars believe that it contains some authentic sayings of Jesus. I firmly believe that this letter was typical lying Jewish propaganda.

This happened because the number of Gentile converts in other cities grew rapidly, and soon far outnumbered the members of the original Messianic Jews in Jerusalem. Paul, our brother and apostle, founded many of the new ekklesia and remained in contact with their members, whereas James stayed in Jerusalem and had little direct communication with the Gentile converts in other areas. James was very tactical by acquiring intelligence through the use of his spies that were sent.
Most naturally these new Gentile converts tended to look to Paul, not James, for leadership. James was still regarded in cursed Jerusalem as an important leader at the time of his death in 62 AD.

The most complete description of “James the Just [unjust]” is found in Jerome’s *De Viris Illustribus*, which quotes from the fifth book of Hegesippus’ lost Commentaries:

“After the apostles, James the brother of the Lord surnamed the Just was made head of the Church at Jerusalem. Many indeed are called James. This one was holy from his mother’s womb. He drank neither wine nor strong drink, ate no flesh, never shaved or anointed himself with ointment or bathed. He alone had the privilege of entering the Holy of Holies, since indeed he did not use woolen vestments but linen and went alone into the temple and prayed in behalf of the people, insomuch that his knees were reputed to have acquired the hardness of camels’ knees.”

Oh how holy and pious James was. Oh how proud James was, in that he alone had the privilege of entering the Holy of Holies which our Lord said was a temple of thieves and robbers.

This passage confirms the idea that James was called “the Just” because of his piety and ascetic lifestyle. In other words, his self-righteousness.

Contrast this:

“For Christ is not entered into the holy places made with hands [the physical Temple], which are the figures of the true; but into heaven itself, now to appear in the presence of God for us” (He. 9:24).

James died in 62 AD, apparently as a result of conflicts with Jewish authorities in Jerusalem. According to the historian Josephus, a Jewish council condemned him “on the charge of breaking the law”, then had him executed by stoning. Josephus says that this action was very unpopular with many of the citizens of Jerusalem, and that many of them viewed it as a political murder.

Eusebius reported another account of James’ death. It says that the Pharisees, upset by his teachings, threw him from the summit of the Temple, stoned him, and then broke his skull with a fuller’s club.

Whatever account is more accurate is irrelevant. James stayed in Jerusalem. James was a law lover. James was self-righteous. James and his minions despised Paul, and cast many a stumbling block in Peter’s path.

Another ancient writing associated with James is the “Secret Gospel of James”, which is also called the “Apocryphon of James” [apocryphon is Greek for “secret
book”). This work is called a secret gospel because it claims to contain secret esoteric revelations that Jesus made to James after the resurrection. Pure Gnosticism! Most scholars believe that it is mostly a fictional work written by an unknown person who used James’ name and attempting to give James legitimacy. What great lengths reprobates have gone to elevate James!

We must thank our Jesus Christ, through the Holy Spirit, that Peter our brother was no more influenced by Judaistic pipe dreams. But we must also thank our Lord Jesus Christ that we too, Christ’s elect from all nations, tribes and tongues have and are being made aware and delivered from ALL the false gospel, Judaized forms of pseudo-Christianity that have plagued the world from the start of the “great apostasy”.

2 Peter

2 Pe. 1:1-2 “I Simon Peter, a servant and apostle of Jesus Christ, To those who through the righteousness of our God and Savior Jesus Christ have received a faith as precious as ours: 2 Grace and peace be yours in abundance through the knowledge of God and of Jesus our Lord.”

Peter spoke very hard against the reprobate Jews in his first epistle. But in his second epistle, he will hit these reprobate Jews with a heavier hammer. The audience of this letter is the same dispersed Jewish audience as in the first letter of Peter.

2 Pe. 3:1 “This second epistle, beloved, I now write unto you; in both which I stir up your pure minds by way of remembrance:”

Peter’s role as an apostle, like all true apostles and true ministers of the Christ/Gospel, is to serve and protect the flock of Christ. Serve, not lord over, protect not expose to ecumenical falsehoods and unequally yoked fellowship.

2 Pe. 1:12-15 “12 So I will always remind you of these things, even though you know them and are firmly established in the truth you now have. 13 I think it is right to refresh your memory as long as I live in the tent of this body, 14 because I know that I will soon put it aside, as our Lord Jesus Christ has made clear to me. 15 And I will make every effort to see that after my departure you will always be able to remember these things.”

Vigilance is very important to Peter, as it should be for all of Christ’s regenerate elect. Whether in periods of extreme persecution or not, Peter’s love for his flock causes him to continuously remind his followers, not only of Christ and the Gospel, but equally important, remind his flock of those enemies of Christ and all righteousness.
2 Pe. 1:16-19 “16 For we did not follow cleverly devised stories [cf. 1 Ti. 1:4; 4:7; 2 Ti. 4:4; Tit. 1:14] when we told you about the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ in power, but we were eyewitnesses of his majesty. 17 He received honor and glory from God the Father when the voice came to him from the Majestic Glory, saying, ‘This is my Son, whom I love; with him I am well pleased’ [cf. Mt. 17:5; Mk. 9:7; Lu. 9:35]. 18. We ourselves heard this voice that came from heaven when we were with him on the sacred mountain. 19 We also have the prophetic message as something completely reliable, and you will do well to pay attention to it, as to a light shining in a dark place, until the day dawns and the morning star rises in your hearts.”

Peter moves to set in stone an irrefutable precedence on his behalf. Peter’s eyewitness account of Jesus, along with hearing the voice of “The Father” makes Peter’s prophetic message completely reliable, thus it should be heeded; “pay attention to it!”

2 Pe. 1:20 “Above all, you must understand that no prophecy of Scripture came about by the prophet’s own interpretation of things. 21 For prophecy never had its origin in the human will, but prophets, though human, spoke from God as they were carried along by the Holy Spirit.”

Peter, after establishing the fact that he is a New Testament Gospel prophet, further supports the premise that his message, like that of all true prophets old and new, has its origin from God/Holy Spirit, as opposed to the human will.

Peter solidified the origin of truth, and also the messengers of that truth for a reason, a contrast, as we shall see. Peter will move to hammer the reprobate Jews into oblivion. And why not? Peter was deceived from his youth by apostate Jewish religious teachers. Peter was stumbled by the law loving James and his gang. Peter’s Christ given role as the Apostle to the circumcision was usurped by the self-righteous James. One’s love for Christ and the truth of the Gospel compels one to serve and protect the flock of Christ. Then and today.

These next verses are the most startling, comprehensive rebukes aimed at reprobate Israel by an Apostle that one could imagine.

2 Pe. 2:1-3 “1 But there were also [Jewish] false prophets among the [OT Jewish] people, just as there will be [Jewish] false teachers among you [the NT Israel of God]. They [these Jewish false teachers] will secretly introduce destructive heresies, even denying the sovereign Lord [despotēs] who bought [agorazō] them, bringing swift destruction on themselves. 2 Many will follow
their [Jewish] depraved conduct and will bring the way of truth into disrepute. 3 In their greed these teachers will exploit you with fabricated stories. Their [Jew] condemnation has long been hanging over them, and their [National existence] destruction has not been sleeping [nystazō].”

Gr. 1203 “despotēs” A master or lord, relates to a slave and or denotes absolute ownership and uncontrolled power.

Gr. 59 “agorazō “To be in the market place, to attend it; to do business there, buy or sell.

Gr. 3573 “nystazō “ To be negligent, careless of a thing, i.e. to linger, delay.

There has been much debate and confusion as to the meaning of “the Lord that bought them”.

Many Arminians, Amyraldians, and Calvinists of all stripes have attempted, using this verse as a basis, to extend the atonement of Jesus Christ in some fashion or sense to the reprobates (some Calvinists/neo-Calvinists) or all men (Arminians/Amyraldians), depending on the particular persuasions previously mentioned above.

To my understanding, I have boiled it down into two main possible premises.

One: This verse implies “a” or “some” salvific/redemptive soteriological content.

Two: This verse implies ownership from a sovereign creation viewpoint with no salvific/redemptive soteriological content at all implied in this verse.

I hold to the latter view, not only from the context of Peter’s letter, but more importantly, keeping the “L” in Limited Atonement intact, maintaining the strict separation of elect and reprobate, plus a host of other soteriological implications that would be too lengthy for me to explain for the purpose of this segment.

For one brief example of Peter’s allusion to this verse, let’s look at Deuteronomy 32:5-6 from four different translations.

H 7069 “qanah”, to get, acquire, create, buy, possess

DRA: “5 They [reprobate Israel] have sinned against him, and are none of his children in their filth: they are a wicked and perverse generation. 6 Is this the return thou makest to the Lord, O foolish and senseless people? Is not he thy father, that hath possessed [qanah] thee, and made thee, and created thee?”
NKJV: “5 They [reprobate Israel] have corrupted themselves; They are not His children, Because of their blemish: A perverse and crooked generation. 6 Do you thus deal with the Lord, O foolish and unwise people? Is He not your Father, who bought [qanah] you? Has He not made you and established you?”

ASV: “5 They [reprobate Israel] have dealt corruptly with him, they are not his children, it is their blemish; They are a perverse and crooked generation. 6 Do ye thus requite Jehovah, O foolish people and unwise? Is not he thy father that hath bought [qanah] thee? He hath made thee, and established thee.”

YLT: “5 It [reprobate Israel] hath done corruptly to Him; Their blemish is not His sons’. A generation perverse and crooked! 6 To Jehovah do ye act thus, O people foolish and not wise? Is not He thy father -- thy possessor [qanah]? He made thee, and doth establish thee.”

Two versions use the word “bought”, while the other two use “possess”. However, the context implies the notion of creation and establishment of the nation of Israel. And this is what Peter is alluding to.

Peter says these false Jewish teachers who were teaching among the elect were spewing out their destructive heresies. They were depraved. They were discrediting the truth of the Gospel. They were greedy exploiters spewing out their fabricated stories. Their heresies resulted in a denial of Christ, which is also a denial of God the Father, which is also a denial of the GOD that created/bought/possessed them as a people in the old covenant.

“Bought” does not always infer a salvific/redemptive principle!

Only theological pseudo-Christian heretics, that want to extend the atonement to the reprobates of this world, read into Peter that Christ bought reprobates in some Spiritual/Salvific/Redemptive sense.

Peter says their reprobate Jew Israel condemnation as of old was long overdue, hanging upon their heads. God has not slumbered [nystazō] or neglected to fulfill his wrath upon these wicked people.

God eventually destroyed the last vestige of these reprobate Jews.

God destroyed the Jerusalem Temple that was a den of thieves, robbers, and Christ killers.

Peter’s goal is to establish a list of three different groups for comparative purposes.

1. Reprobate Angels within the celestial realm.
2. Reprobate men within the Noaic period/realm.
3. Reprobate men within the Sodom and Gomorrah period/realm.

Peter, already in verse 1, compared the OT reprobate Jewish Prophets within Mosaic Israel to the NT reprobate Jewish false teachers that plagued the elect. Peter will now compare both false prophets (OT) and false teachers (NT) with the activities of the three God created reprobate groups listed above.

Before we go further, starting from 2 Peter 2:4, I want to elaborate a little more on the “Sovereign Creation View”, and also briefly discuss “Equal Ultimacy”. Both are views I firmly embrace.

**Equal Ultimacy** is a view that understands a complete, positive symmetrical balance between Election and Reprobation. God’s predestined purposes toward the Elect and Reprobate are positively and effectually performed in perfect symmetry. There is no “passing over” the reprobate in any sense.

God **positively** determined before the creation of all things to love and embrace an Elect number of Angelic celestial beings, along with an Elect number of mortal men.

God **positively** determined before the creation of all things to hate and not embrace a Reprobate number of Angelic celestial beings, along with a Reprobate number of mortal men.

This love and hate disposition on God’s part, **never** was a reactionary measure to anything foreseen that the creature performed (good or evil) or did not perform (good or evil). The ground of Election and Reprobation is never conditioned on the action of the creature, nor in man himself, rather, the ground for such action is to be found in God’s purposes alone.

As God **positively** creates and intensifies faith in the hearts of His elect people, He also **positively** creates and intensifies unbelief and hardness in the hearts of His created reprobate people.

As **Darkness** is considered the absence of Light, this void, this absence, this darkness, was still **positively** created by God as a viable realm to house and clothe the reprobate.

As **Unbelief** is considered the absence of Faith, this void, this absence, this unbelief, was **positively** created by God in the hearts of reprobate men as a viable instrument to damn the reprobate.

**ALL** things are positively created by God alone, and not left to the whims, abilities, or inabilities of the creature, nor some free and uncontrolled evolutionary process of the human will, nor some alleged permissive will possessed by God the Sovereign Creator.
Since God is the creator of All things, He also is the owner of All things. Because of His ownership of All created things, God alone reserves the right to actively, positively, at ALL times, and in ALL diverse manners, rule in the lives of All His creatures both Elect and Reprobate to engender ALL His good pleasure. The creature has absolutely no right nor privilege to impugn the motives of God the creator, for ALL that the creator performs is Holy, Righteous and without sin.

As All things (good and evil positively) work together for good to them (elect) that love God, to them (elect) who are the called according to His purpose, All things (good and evil positively) work together for retribution to them (reprobates) that love not God, to them (reprobates) who are not called, but have been created according to His purpose.

As God positively manifests all His mercies, love, kindness, and salvation in and through Jesus Christ alone toward His elect and elect alone, God positively withholds mercies, love, kindness, and salvation, but furthermore, positively exhibits wrath, hatred, and retribution toward the reprobate.

There is not one drop of love, mercy and kindness ever given or exhibited toward the reprobate. All things given or withheld to the reprobate in this temporal existence only serve to further harden their souls in unbelief against God the creator and the Gospel of His Son Jesus Christ.

Let's look more into the “Sovereign Creation View” as applied to 2 Peter 2:1.

A portion of this view will be taken from Gary D. Long’s study of this issue. The full study will be supplied in the link at the end of this segment.

Disclaimer: Supplying the link is not a complete endorsement of all that Long teaches, but only serves as information pertaining to the context of 2 Peter 2:1.

Long’s study will be in “blue” letters along with his notes. Any comments on my part will be in “black” (underlining and bolding added).

The Sovereign Creation View

The sovereign creation view interprets II Peter 2:1 non-redemptively as referring to the creation of the false teachers by Christ their sovereign Lord. There are at least four significant points that support this view. First, this interpretation gives proper significance to both the Greek Old and New Testaments’ usage of “Lord” (despotes) and “bought” (agorazō). Second, this view seeks to interpret this verse in the light of the context, historical background, and purpose of the epistle including Peter’s use of the Old Testament, especially Deuteronomy 32:5-6.
In II Peter 2:1, Peter intentionally alludes to the phrase “thy father that hath bought thee” in Deuteronomy 32:6. [13] Immediately following the phrase “thy father that hath bought thee” are the words “hath he not made thee, and established thee?” The three Hebrew words translated “bought,” “made” and “established” are significant in the sovereign creation view for, in the Hebrew, they mean, in context, “to acquire,” “to make” or “to constitute” and “to establish” a nation. The meaning of the Greek Septuagint translation of these three words is “acquire,” “make” and “establish” (“create” 14). Although the Greek word translated “bought” or “acquire” in Deuteronomy 32:6 is ktaomai and agorazō, a word study of these two terms reveals that they are closely related and are used interchangeably in both the Old and New Testaments. [15]. A strong case can be established, therefore, from a contextual word study, to substantiate that Peter’s allusion to Deuteronomy 32:6 is for the purpose of emphasizing that it is the pre-incarnate Jehovah, the sovereign Lord who owns the covenant nation Israel, because He bought (acquired), made and established them for the purpose of being a covenant and privileged people who were to be unto Him “a kingdom of priests, and an holy nation” (Exod. 19:6). The fact that in Peter’s use of Deuteronomy 32:6 he refers only to “bought,” the first of the three words in the phrase “bought, make and establish,” is explained by the manner in which New Testament writers commonly allude to Old Testament references without directly quoting them. Peter, therefore, only refers to the first word, “bought,” using it as a summary for all three words [16] to stress the idea of creating and acquiring Israel as a covenant nation as the context of Deuteronomy 32 teaches. Therefore, the point that Peter seems to be making in referring to Deuteronomy 32:6 in II Peter 2:1 is that “just as God had sovereignly acquired Israel out of Egypt (including ‘his [elect] children’ as well as the ‘spot’ among them which was ‘a perverse and crooked generation,’ [reprobates] Deut. 32:5) in order to make her a covenant nation spiritually and nationally because He had created her for this purpose, so Christ, the sovereign Lord, acquired the [reprobate] false teachers (spots and blemishes, II Pet. 2:13) in order to make them a part of the [Law only] covenant nation of God in the flesh because He had created them, within the mystery of His providence, for the purpose of bringing glory to Himself through their foreordainment unto condemnation (see II Peter 2:12; Jude 4)."

Therefore, in reply to the false teachers, Peter might well have repeated the words of the apostle Paul in Romans 9:20-24.

Nay but, O man who art thou that repliest against God? Shall the thing formed say to him that formed it, Why hast thou made me thus? Hath not the potter power over the clay, of the same lump to make one vessel unto honour, and another unto dishonour? What if God, willing to shew his wrath, and to make his power known, endured with much longsuffering the vessels of wrath fitted to destruction: And that he might make known the riches of his glory on the vessels of mercy, which he had before prepared unto glory, Even us, whom he hath called not of the Jews only, but also of the Gentiles (italics mine)?
Third, the sovereign creation view is supported by the context of II Peter 2 and its parallel in Jude 4-19 (see II Pet. 2:12; Jude 4). A fourth reason to support the sovereign creation view lies in the fact that it is illogical to say Christ died a substitutionary atonement for those who are ordained unto destruction (see II Peter 2:12; Jude 4; Rom. 9:22). Yet, God in His grace [I disagree] is longsuffering [only in the sense of delaying His wrath upon the reprobate, but this is NOT an exhibition of Grace] to those who are ordained to destruction (e.g., Judas). The definite atonement position alone is consistent with the doctrine of retribution.

[17] The identity of the elect and non-elect before the salvation of the former is known only to God. And well it should be, otherwise evangelists would not be obedient to God's ordained method of taking the gospel to every creature (see Matt. 28:19). But the responsibility to preach a universal gospel does not nullify the truth of God's eternal, immutable, and determinate counsel concerning election and reprobation.

The sovereign creation view thus interprets II Peter 2:1 to mean: “There shall be false teachers among you, who privily shall bring in damnable heresies, even denying the sovereign Lord who created [18] them and bring upon themselves swift destruction.”

If there were more textual support [why? we already have enough] for “create” (ktizō) in Deuteronomy 32:6 (see note 53, p. 61), the sovereign creation view could be more dogmatically acclaimed as the best interpretation of II Peter 2:1. It should be observed, however, that this view is quite close to the Christian charity view, [I disagree] especially when the Christian charity view understands “Lord” (despotes) to mean sovereign Lord and “bought” (agorazō) to mean “acquire” as the latter term relates to the acquiring of a covenant people both nationally and spiritually in the sense of Romans 9:5-6. The Christian charity view understood in this manner properly comes under the non-soteriological heading instead of the soteriological heading and appears, in this writer's judgment, to have considerable merit. Viewed in this manner, it is practically synonymous with the temporal deliverance view. Therefore, it is concluded that any one of these three interpretations could adequately convey Peter's thought in II Peter 2:1. The sovereign creation view is preferred, however, because of the theological and contextual manner in which “Lord” (despotes) and “bought” (agorazō) are used in Scripture. But the writer is not dogmatic in this preference. He is dogmatic, however, in stating that, the spiritual redemption view has no consistent theological or contextual support. And this is the point that this doctrinal study has attempted to establish. The reader will have to judge for himself if this has been accomplished.

Notes

13. That Peter is alluding to Deuteronomy 32:6 in II Peter 2:1 may be seen by observing the context of both passages. This is further supported by the fact that Peter alludes to Deuteronomy 32:5 in verse 13. The author of this pamphlet is
not the first to say that Peter alludes to Deuteronomy 32:6 in verse 1, for the same observation has been made by both consistent and inconsistent Calvinistic commentators and Bible teachers.

14. It is interesting that one of the better Greek manuscripts (Codex Alexandrinus) translates the Hebrew word in this verse for “established” by the Greek word *kitzō*, which means “to create.”


16. When a New Testament writer refers to the Old Testament, his use of one word or phrase to summarize the Old Testament context is not uncommon. In addition, those who are not familiar with the New Testament writers’ use of the Old Testament should keep in mind that an allusion is just as valid and authoritative as a direct quote, for all Scripture is inspired by God and the Holy Spirit certainly has the right to move the New Testament writers to refer to the Old Testament without quoting it exactly. For example, no orthodox believer would doubt the validity of Romans 1:17b, which refers to Habakkuk 2:4. Yet, Paul does not quote Habakkuk 2:4 word for word.

17. The writer has yet to find a modified Calvinist who biblically defends his belief in universal redemption from the standpoint of retribution, not even in Douty’s recent work. Cf. Norman F. Douty, *The Death of Christ* (Swengel, Pennsylvania: Reiner Publications, 1972), p. 120.

18. Let those who may automatically reject interpreting *agorazō* in II Peter 2:1, as emphasizing the creative power of the sovereign Lord, make an objective study of how Peter uses Deuteronomy 32:6 and determine why he alludes to it in this particular verse.

As an Equal Ultimist I do not subscribe to “The Christian Charity View”, “The Temporal Deliverance View”, or “The Spiritual Redemption View” as explained in the following link.

**Redemption in II Peter 2:1 by Dr. Gary D. Long**

Let’s run the parallels as they apply to God’s created **visible** and **invisible** corporate entities.

**National Israel**: Within National Israel there were Elect and Reprobate Israelites dwelling together. True Israel are only those who are of the elect.

**New Testament Community**: There are Elect and Reprobates dwelling together. True Israel, and the true Ekklesia [which are the same] are only those of the
Old Testament reprobate Jew false prophets are EQUIVALENT to the New Testament reprobate Jew false prophets. By spiritual application and example, the essence of these reprobates in principle can be extended to all reprobate false teachers regardless of their ethnicity.

2 Pe. 2:4 “For if God did not spare angels [aggelos-G32] when they sinned, but sent them to hell [tartaroō-G5020] putting them in chains of darkness [zophos-G2217] to be held for judgment;”

The Celestial Realm: Within the created corporate celestial realm there are reprobate angels dwelling among the elect angels. When the reprobate angels manifested their God created sin nature in rebellion, they were cast out of the heavenly realm and properly consigned to the realm God created for them.

“Hell/tartaroō is the name of the subterranean region, doleful and dark, regarded by the ancient Greeks as the abode of the wicked dead, where they suffer punishment for their evil deeds; it answers to Gehenna of the Jews” (Blue letter Bible lexicon.)

Just as Paul quoted pagan philosophers for his own purposes as previously discussed, Peter uses Platonic and Homeric imagery to convey the idea of a special place of confinement for reprobate celestial beings. His use of pagan philosophers in paralleling the reprobate angels with reprobate Jews in my opinion was a direct-leveled attack against the wicked Jew Messianic false teachers, because they did not heed the true prophets of God and followed after the falsehoods of Greek philosophers. So now Peter uses the “Greeks” to condemn them.

These reprobate angels did not fall from Grace, for they never were in Grace. They were never created in some sinless state of perfection. They only fell from their abode among the elect angels. This is a celestial example of how God separates the elect from the reprobate.

The Augustinian/Papal, Augustinian/Reformed, Evangelical, Orthodox, and most Pagan and Greek philosophical views promulgate that ALL angels were created sinless, then some fell from the Grace, love or the favor of God, hence were reprobated, which is a virulent heresy that should be exposed and condemned with all due vigilance on our part. This errant view is nothing other than a continuation of pagan mythology.

2 Pe. 2:5 “if he did not spare the ancient world when he brought the flood on its ungodly people, but protected Noah, a preacher of righteousness, and seven others;”
The Ancient World: The ancient world represents the corporate world at large, then and today. Within the corporate world, there are created elect men and created reprobate men. The ungodly refer to the reprobate, and the righteous refer to the elect.

The ancient world is a historical example and warning that illustrates how God, at the consummation of all temporal things, will destroy this current shadow world and separate the reprobate from among the elect.

2 Pe. 2:6-9: “if he condemned the cities of Sodom and Gomorrah by burning them to ashes, and made them an example of what is going to happen to the ungodly; 7 and if he rescued Lot, a righteous man, who was distressed by the depraved conduct of the lawless 8 (for that righteous man, living among them day after day, was tormented in his righteous soul by the lawless deeds he saw and heard) 9 if this is so, then the Lord knows how to rescue the godly from trials and to hold the unrighteous for punishment on the day of judgment.”

The Cities of Sodom and Gomorrah: Within the cities of Sodom and Gomorrah there were elect and reprobate men. These cities represent a more localized example of how God rescues the elect and punishes the reprobate. Whether the scope of God’s judgments are in the realms of celestial, earthly universal, or local, these example are set forth by Peter to show that God is no respecter of persons, origins, nations, etc., or of any realm they exist within.

In the context of Peter’s letter, he uses these examples to show that reprobate Jews both within Old Testament Israel, and the current reprobate false professing Messianic Jew teachers dwelling among the elect, have no special relationship with God or Jesus Christ at all. Peter equates their vileness and destruction right along with the rest of God’s created reprobate entities.
Peter, after establishing the above, will move to further expose and condemn these reprobate Jew devils. The reprobate Jews above all peoples of this earth are stiff-necked and bull-headed. They will never see that they are a God cursed people and a Christ cursed nation. And neither will christen-dumb.

2 Pe. 2:10-11 “This is especially true of those [Jews like the Sodomite] who follow the corrupt desire of the flesh and despise authority. Bold and arrogant, they are not afraid to heap abuse on celestial beings; 11 yet even angels, although they are stronger and more powerful, do not heap abuse on such beings when bringing judgment on them from the Lord.”

Cf: “But the men of Sodom were wicked and sinners before the LORD exceedingly” (Ge. 13:13).

Cf: “The two angels arrived at Sodom in the evening, and Lot was sitting in the gateway of the city. When he saw them, he got up to meet them and bowed down with his face to the ground. 2 ‘My lords,’ he said, ‘please turn aside to your servant’s house. You can wash your feet and spend the night and then go on your way early in the morning.’ (Ge. 19:1-2).

‘No,’ they answered, ‘we will spend the night in the square.’

3 But he insisted so strongly that they did go with him and entered his house. He prepared a meal for them, baking bread without yeast, and they ate. 4 Before they had gone to bed, all the men from every part of the city of Sodom, both young and old, surrounded the house. 5 They called to Lot, ‘Where are the men who came to you tonight? Bring them out to us so that we can [abuse] have sex with them’” (Ge. 19:1-5).

The point here is that reprobate mortal men showed no regard toward the superior race of celestial beings. Peter makes this attitude a parallel against the haughty false teachers.

2 Pe. 2:12-22 “But these [Jewish] people blaspheme in matters they do not understand. They are like unreasoning animals, creatures of instinct, born [created] only to be caught and destroyed [reprobated], and like animals they too will perish.

“13 They will be paid back with harm for the harm they have done. Their idea of pleasure is to carouse in broad daylight. They are blots and blemishes [cf; De. 32:5], reveling in their pleasures while they feast with you. 14 With eyes full of adultery, they never stop sinning; they seduce the unstable; they are experts in greed, an accursed brood! 15 They [the Jews] have left the straight way and wandered off to follow the way of Balaam son of Bezer, who loved the wages of wickedness.”
“16 But he was rebuked for his wrongdoing by a donkey, an animal without speech, who spoke with a human voice and restrained the prophet’s madness.

“17 These [reprobate Jew] people are springs without water and mists driven by a storm. Blackest darkness is reserved for them [Jews]. 18 For they mouth empty, boastful words and, by appealing to the lustful desires of the flesh, they entice people who are just escaping from those who live in error. 19 They promise them freedom, while they themselves are slaves of depravity, for ‘people are slaves to whatever has mastered them.’

“20 If they have escaped the corruption of the world by knowing our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ and are again entangled in it and are overcome, they are worse off at the end than they were at the beginning. 21 It would have been better for them not to have known the way of righteousness, than to have known it and then to turn their backs on the sacred command that was passed on to them. 22 Of them the proverbs are true: ‘A dog returns to its vomit,’ and, ‘A sow that is washed returns to her wallowing in the mud.’”

The problems Peter has been addressing are placed before us, his elect people. We must not take Peter’s words lightly for want of some false ecumenical fellowship. These disturbing facts about false teachers listed in 2 Peter and in Jude, its close parallel, are to be applied to all within the professed pseudo-Christian world who teach a false Gospel, especially Messianic Jews.

As previously shown, there have always been false prophets throughout Israel’s history, and likewise, there will most certainly be false teachers in our time as well.

Rather than expose and expel these heretics from their midst, pseudo-Christians of all stripes seem content to embrace them as fellow believers. Providing them in the process with prestige and a platform from which they can subvert the faith of others, especially the weak, unlearned, and vulnerable. Peter has exposed these false Jews of his day as brute beasts and other harsh statements. Read: (2 Pe. 2:13-14, 18-19).

False gospel teachers, Jews in context and through application Gentile false prophets, have little respect for those who are given true authority whether in Government or in the true Gospel ekklesia. (2 Pe. 2:10; Jude 8).

They were and are to this day complainers who create strife and division within the community of true Gospel believers (Jude 16).

They were and are today greedy, covetous, and self-serving (2 Pe. 2:14-15; Jude 12).
They exploit people for their own evil purposes and self-aggrandizement/gratification (2 Pe. 2:13-14; Jude 12, 16).

They were and are today immoral, having no shame for their sin, proudly flaunting their sins (2 Pe. 2:13-14; Jude 13).

These false Jew teachers, like their ancestors, followed the way of Balaam, enticing people to follow after their errant ways (2 Pe. 2:15,18).

Peter, our brother and Apostle, wants to clearly expose these devils for what they really are, so those who were and are Christ's elect can recognize them for what they really were, and what they are today.

False teachers don't identify themselves as false teachers. God has blinded them to their own wicked and depraved reality.

They are deceivers and hypocrites that crept in unnoticed (Jude 4).

They are wolves in sheep's clothing (Mt. 7:15).

These false teachers want to congregate with the elect of God, and participate in true Koinonia (Jude 12).

False teachers, attempting to appear as sincere followers of Christ are the very opposite!

They are ungodly reprobate persons (Jude 4).

They are worldly-minded and devoid of the Spirit (Jude 19).

They are spiritually ignorant, dead, and irrational animals (2 Pe. 2:12; Jude 10).

They are slaves to their own depravity and corruption (2 Pe. 2:19).

They are Jew children of a curse and a brood of vipers (2 Pe. 2:14).

They are twice dead (Jude 12).

They are apostate reprobates who have externally heard the truth, but have not embraced the truth, eventually turning away from it. They were never saved (2 Pe. 2:15, 21).

They are arrogant (Jude 16).

They are scoffers (2 Pe. 3:3; Jude 18).
They have no regard for authority, and exult themselves over celestial beings whether demonic or divine (2 Pe. 2:10-11; Jude 8-9).

These false teachers and shepherds are self-serving and self-centered, only caring for their own interests (Jude 12).

They boast about themselves, and flatter others for their own advantage (Jude 16).

They are like the Sodomites, sexually immoral, including all forms of sexual perversions (Jude 7-8).

They the Jews are experts in greed. This is not unwittingly on their part; they have refined their greed to an art form and a science (2 Pe. 2:14-16).

Due to the great lengths and descriptions Peter and Jude give us pertaining to the reprobates, much more must be discussed.

So far, every description given above applies to all those reprobates we have mentioned in the total body of this work thus far. Starting from those of Paul and Peter’s day, continued through the beastly church fathers, and continued to this very day. Christen-dumb/Pseudo-Christanity are all whore children from their whoring mother, apostate Jew Israel.

Spiritual whoring mothers produce spiritual whoring children. They are ALL reprobates who hold forever to a false Christ and false Gospel.
The intrinsic/inherent malady Peter and Jude are describing of these Jewish/Messianic spiritual imposters is that they are void of the Holy Spirit and thus dominated by their corrupt flesh.

They are motivated by impulse and instinct similar to animals (2 Pe. 2:12).

God has hardened their hearts so that they are slaves to sin. They know no shame. Their conscience is seared with a hot iron. Rather than practicing their fleshly desires in private, they take great pleasure in sinning openly in public and within the presence of the true saints (2 Pe. 2:13).

They sin perpetually and without remorse for their sinning (2 Pe. 2:14).

They are enslaved by fleshly corrupt desires, impulses, and their depravity (2 Pe. 2:19).

To clarify due to some popular misconceptions concerning the fleshly and carnal indulgences of these false teachers within the context of 2 Peter and Jude, quite often it is thought and taught the evils described by Peter and Jude are referring to Gentile pagans alone. Their assumption is that the Jews, you know, who are allegedly God’s only real and authentic Holy Chosen People would not practice the things described here, but these things are reserved for Gentile/Goyim alone. But as we have already shown from the start of the Jewish section of these
studies, the OT Scriptures carried through the four Gospels, through Acts, through Paul, and continued to Peter and Jude, the Scriptures and their inspired writers overwhelmingly speak out against Israel and the Jews primarily.

The Israelites frequently practiced sins of the flesh!

They immediately fell into sin after the exodus (Ex. 32:1-6).

Balaam was instrumental in the downfall of reprobate Israelites (Nu. 25:1-3).

Adultery and immorality were practiced not only by the Israelites but by their false prophets as well (Je. 23:10-14). It is most assuredly safe to say from the OT record that there were virtually no Gentile sins that at some point in time were not practiced by the Jews/Israelites. It is no surprise the reprobate people/Israelites are sometimes referred to as Sodom and Gomorrah (Is. 1:9-10; 3:8-9; Lam. 4:6; Eze. 16:44-59; Am. 4:11).

The reprobate Jews within Mosaic covenanted Israel, in their haughty self-righteousness then and today, think themselves to be above fleshly indulgence. However, Jesus our Lord would not allow them to think this way (Mt. 5:27-28).
These wicked Jewish religious leaders thought Jesus was speaking of someone other than them, but Jesus made Himself crystal clear (Mt. 23:25-28; Lu. 16:14-15).

Paul makes it clear also as to the Jewish problem (1 Co. 10:1-11).

Paul's epistles, as we have already looked into, give us further indication that the fleshly indulgences described in Peter and Jude were not merely a temptation promoted by Gentiles, or reserved to Gentiles alone who were alleged as a more susceptible breed of men, but rather a number of warnings in Paul's epistles concerning false teachers are clearly directed toward Jewish false teachers (1Ti. 1:3-7; Tit. 1:10-14).

Every modern day scripture twisting technique is an attempt to sanitize the Jews and their bogus nation of Israel. The Gentile world today has been led to believe that their own sovereign national interests, for the betterment of their own citizens, must at all costs be set aside and devoted primarily toward Israel and its maintenance. But why Israel? Who are these people that they should command the respect, attention, resources, finances, homage, and especially the blood of our own sons and daughters throughout most of the Western world?
And of course the pseudo-Christian world, their Pope, their politicians, along with the Messianic Jews and even Christ rejecting Jews will cry out, “they are God’s chosen people,” and “I will bless them that bless thee, and I will curse them that curse thee,” not understanding that this verse is fulfilled in Christ and His true elect Israel/Ekklesia. Not in the reprobate Jews or their bogus Christ cursed nation. We the elect bride of Christ are “the apple of God's eye.”

In 1 and 2 Peter and Jude the false teachings which Peter and Jude list are of Jewish origin. In 1 and 2 Peter, he mentions Old Testament prophets and their prophecies that he expects his Jewish readers to be familiar with (1 Pe. 1:10-12; 2 Pe.1:16-21).

There are numerous allusions to OT texts of Scripture in 1 and 2 Peter and Jude.

In the 3rd chapter of his second epistle, Peter’s warnings concerning false teachers have a Jewish background.

2 Pe. 3:3-4 “3 Above all, you must understand that in the last days scoffers will come, scoffing and following their own evil desires. 4 They will say, ‘Where is this “coming” he promised? Ever since our ancestors died, everything
gospel, goes on as it has since the beginning of creation.”

The expressions “our ancestors died”, and in other versions “the fathers fell asleep”, and “the beginning of creation” have a distinctly OT Jewish flavor to them. Why would we assume that the false teachings would not come from the lips of Jewish false teachers themselves, when other NT texts clearly warn Gentile believers of this danger and these Jewish people?

You see, these scoffing Jew devils were not satisfied by the way Christ presented His kingdom to them. They wanted a perfect earthly “Zionist” kingdom with a corrupt king like themselves to rule the world. The messianic Jew devils thought the same way, although with a bit better perception of Christ. But since the world and especially their precious Jerusalem/Israel did not materialize according to their warped pipe dreams, they impugned Christ, attempting to subvert the hope and faith of Christ’s elect in regards to His coming.

The Jews of OT times as previously discussed were often guilty of the very sins Peter our brother and apostle is condemning. The Judaisers in the NT were often promoters of fleshly indulgence. So we do not dare suggest the sins of which Peter warns us are sins exclusive and or reserved to the Goyim/Gentile pagan peoples, sins which reprobate Jews allege are typically Gentile,” and not typically Jewish”.

The errors and sins of which Peter speaks of are neither Jewish nor Gentile. These sins are common to man regardless of ethnicity or culture.

Paul condemned the sins of the Gentile heathen (Ro. 1:18-32), and likewise turned against the Jews and blamed them for the same sins (Ro. 2:1-29).

Peter, by exposing the evil of the Jews, sets them up as the arch-examples/ensamples of a reprobate people.

2 Pe. 2:17 New International Version: “These [false teaching] people are springs without water and mists driven by a storm. Blackest darkness is reserved for them.”
2 Pe. 2:17 Young’s Literal Translation: “These [false teaching people] are wells without water, and clouds by a tempest driven, to whom the thick gloom of the darkness to the age hath been kept.”

Like springs, when approached if they have become dry and parched, so are these false teachers who claimed to know the way of Christ but are void of the living water, the Holy Spirit.

Like the darkest blackest clouds that shield the light and warmth of the sun, these false teaching reprobates spew out their dark and black heresies, living in all manners of ungodliness, thus shielding the light of truth not only in their lives, but attempting to spread their darkness to others. God has reserved their end to the darkest pits of hell. They will be cast into outer darkness where there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth (Mt. 8:12; 22:13; 25:30).

2 Pe. 2:21-22 New International Version: “21 It would have been better for them [false Jew teachers] not to have known the way of righteousness [Moses-Christ], than to have known it and then to turn their backs on [deny] the sacred command that was passed on to them. 22 Of them the proverbs are true: ‘A dog returns to its vomit’ [Pr. 26:11], and ‘A sow that is washed returns to her wallowing in the mud.’”

2 Pe. 2:21-22 Young’s Literal Translation: “21 for it were better to them [Jew false teachers] not to have acknowledged the way of the righteousness [Moses-Christ], than having acknowledged [it], to turn back from [deny] the holy command delivered to them, 22 and happened to them hath that of the true similitude; ‘A dog did turn back upon his own vomit,’ and, ‘A sow having bathed herself -- to rolling in mire.’”

Jesus said of Judas that it would have been better for him not to be born, then to have turned from the truth he had known (Mt. 26:24). The words “way of righteousness” and “holy commandment” allude to both the Mosaic content and Christ content of knowledge these false teachers possessed. They have been made aware of what was right and holy but they in their unbelief deliberately chose to keep on doing what was wrong and defiling.

God given repentance and faith are inseparable. These false teachers had neither but were imposters.

Peter correlates these haughty false Jewish teachers to “dogs” and “pigs”, both are unclean animals. Peter had previously used the term animals to describe them.

Jesus said: “Do not give what is holy to dogs or throw your pearls before pigs; otherwise they will trample them under their feet and turn around and tear you to...”
When Paul spoke of dogs he was referring to Jewish false teachers (Ph. 3:2).

Peter reveals the ultimate truth about these teachers. They never were regenerated by the Holy Spirit. This parallels with 1 Corinthians 10:1-12, and Hebrews 6:6 and 10:26.

They will be given over to their predestined end that God hath chosen for them. Their nature remains unchanged.

The dog, reprobate Israelite/Jews in the context of Proverbs 26:11, returns to its own vomit. It sniffs, then licks, then eats the vomit again. These false Jewish teachers love their false ways. Not only attempting to justify themselves by the works of the law as given in Moses, but also holding to all the corrupt interpretations of Moses as given in their Talmud. Added to that all their corrupt pagan Babylonian, Persian, and Greek philosophies learned throughout their wicked history. Rather than discard all these falsehoods altogether in favor of Christ and the true Gospel, they “lap up” like the dog every disgusting putrid practice and teaching like their ancestors.

The pig, sow, or swine that has outwardly and superficially been washed of filth by means of a scrubbing cannot resist her nature to roll back in the mud where she finds her great comfort.

The Greek word “hys” translated “sow” is a feminine noun depicting reprobate Israel, the “pig” woman that was wedded to God [by law alone] in the Old Testament. Since the “sow” was an unclean animal and forbidden to the Jews, Israel became an unclean [pig] nation. And of course God divorced her forever.

The Jews practiced all kinds of washing and cleaning liturgical ceremonies (Mt. 15:2; Mk. 7:3-4). These included, hands, cups, pots, brazen vessels, tables etc., but Jesus said unto these Jews:

“Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye make clean the outside of the cup and of the platter, but within they are full of extortion and excess. Thou blind Pharisee, cleanse first that which is within the cup and platter, that the outside of them may be clean also” (Mt. 23:25-26).

Jews [Papists-Orthodox-Lutherans-Episcopal-Anglicans, etc.] are good at putting on an outward show of liturgical appearance, but inside they are filthy dirty pigs at heart parading in their false gospel.

The first proverb, “dog” is found in Proverbs 26:11; the second, “sow” is from the Syrian story of Ahikar. Peter again, like Paul, uses these pagan proverbs to condemn the Jews. Jews were so apostate and steeped in pagan mythology that
they could not hear their own true prophets of God. Peter and Paul “threw the book” at these Jews to show the world and us, Christ’s elect, just what mankind is up against with these cursed people.

Only a fool would use “bought” and “washed” to say these false teaching people were once saved and then fell away. Such fools are the evangelical, free-will, Arminian/Wesleyan heretics, and their bothers the “Common Grace” Calvinist/Amirault advocates who are lesser fools. They too are “dogs” that returned to the vomit, and “pigs” who have returned to the mud.

Since Peter our brother alluded to Proverbs, so will I in putting together a comparison chart.

The folly of the adulterous prostitute woman compared to Jews first and then to all false teachers.

Pr. 2:16-17 “16 Wisdom will save you also from [Israel] the adulterous woman, from the wayward woman with her seductive words, 17 who has left the partner [God] of her youth and ignored the [Mosaic] covenant [oath] she made before God.”

Pr. 7:5 “... the wayward woman with her seductive words.”

Pr. 7:21 “With persuasive words she led him astray; she seduced him with her smooth talk.”

* She’s a flatterer (Pr. 2:16; 7:5, 21; compare Jude 16).

* She is an adulteress, and an immoral being (Pr. 2:16; 6:25; 7:5; compare 2 Pe. 2:13-14).

* She forsakes the right path and is a covenant breaker (Pr. 2:17; compare 2 Pe. 2:15-16, 21).

* She is a smooth talker and seducer (Pr. 5:3; 6:24; compare 2 Pe. 2:3, 14, 18).

* She promises love and pleasure but delivers destruction (Pr. 7:16-27; 2:18; 5:5; 6:26; compare 2 Pe. 2:17ff).

* She uses people for her own gain (Pr. 6:26; compare 2 Pe. 2:3, 14; Jude 12).

* She preys upon the naive, the gullible and vulnerable (Pr. 7:7; compare 2 Pe. 2:14, 18).

* She is an unruly and rebellious woman (Pr. 7:11; compare 2 Pe. 2:10-11, 13-14, 18).
* She is brazen and shameless (Pr. 7:13; compare 2 Pe. 2:10, 13-14).

* She makes sin look attractive (Pr. 7:16-18; compare 2 Pe. 2:13; Jude 4, 12).

* She minimizes the consequences and dangers of sin (Pr. 7:18-20; compare 2 Pe. 3:1-4).

* She possesses no sense of guilt or shame for sin (Pr. 30:20; compare 2 Pe. 2:12-14; 1 Ti. 4:2).

Concluding this section on the Jews, there is no question about it: God the Father, the prophets of old, Jesus Christ, John the baptist, Paul, Peter, and Jude have blasted the Jews apart with the shotgun barrels of truth.

Let these Jewish and Christian Zionist devils scream “anti-Semite” all they want. I will reply; “If that be so, the whole council of God is anti-Semite.”
Initial comment

The Jews in their hardness and rebellion will always be a people and religion that falsely see themselves as “God's chosen people”. Despite their rejection of Christ, and even misrepresentation of Christ as in Messianic Judaism, they will never discard this “Jew” aura they continue to surround themselves with. They will never see that in Christ and the Gospel, there is no more Jew or Gentile distinction. In Christ, all are a new creature, all are one in Christ. The only true and valid people distinction, spiritually speaking within the Scriptures, from the
very beginning, is the *elect and reprobate*.

As an Equal Ultimist Supralapsarian Predestinarian who believes in the absolute Sovereignty of God in ALL things, I start from the end [consummation] hence Glorification of the elect Saints, and then view and understand the start of creation as God's means to bring about that end. Every grain of sand placed and moved on this earth, every speck of dust, every act of nature, every wink of an eye, every thought, every evil deed, every good deed etc. etc. is all ordained, determined and effectually/actively controlled by God to carry out that determined end.

“ADONAI, I know that the way of humans is not in their control, humans are not able to direct their steps as they walk” (Je. 10:23 Complete Jewish Bible).

Nothing in life comes into existence passively on God’s part. In regard to the Jews and Israel, all their bondage of old, their destruction, their defeats, their cruel suppression and finally their temple destruction in 70 AD were all part of God’s plan to punish these evil and wicked people.

From 70 AD to now, all their rebellion, suffering, pain, numerous false religious sects, and false messiahs are still within God’s plan to further harden these cursed people. The only way for a Jew, or anyone to escape God’s wrath, is to be in Christ the only Ark of safety.

God has always used wicked and more powerful nations to punish people, and even punish the Jews. So when pseudo-Christianity finally grew to a political power, even these pseudo-Christians were used by God to punish the Jews, and others. Islam is also used by God to punish. God uses all reprobates to war amongst themselves.

In a world full of false religions, God uses these religions/clerics and their political puppets like chess pieces. God raises them up, brings them down, and moves them all around to further His own ends. And in the end, God will say “checkmate”, I and my elect people have won!

So with this said, take a day or two and read every dated entry. Please don’t miss any of them. In the next segment we will take a closer look at the big picture.

http://www.jewishhistory.org.il/history.php

Most people who do not devote their time and efforts toward the study of Judaism and the problems that have arisen in the world resulting from the presence and influence of these people that were dispersed throughout the nations, can easily fall into the trap of seeing the “Jews” and “Judaism” as a
unified people with a unified religion, unified goals, and innocent victims of prejudice and bigotry. Of course this faulty and misleading understanding is what the Zionist Jews want the world to believe, but hardly is it the actual full truth.

Most so-called Christians have been led to believe that the early Mosaic Judaism of the Old Testament is very similar to the Judaism of today. Yet in the Jewish encyclopedia and other Jewish sources they tell us quite a different story.

To those of us who are truth seekers, there are many Jewish sources to investigate, and of course the Talmud itself. Here are three to start with.

* Encyclopedia Judaica

* The Universal Jewish Encyclopedia

* The Jewish Encyclopedia


“Judaism is too large and comprehensive a force in history to be defined by a single term or encompassed from one point of view.”


“Movement looking toward the segregation of the Jewish people upon a national basis and in a particular home of its own; specifically, the modern form of the movement that seeks for the Jews ‘a publicly and legally assured home in Palestine,’ as initiated by Theodor Herzl in 1896, and since then dominating Jewish history.”

Zionism is more of a racial apartheid attempt to segregate Jews from Gentiles and Arabs and not so much along the lines of religious belief. A Jew can be an atheist and still be a faithful Zionist. Zionists are the most virulent racists in the world on par with Arian Nazism and other racial cults in this world. Not all Jews are Zionists.

Even before Christ was born there were many divisions within Judaism. Jews who were deeply influenced by Greek culture were known as Hellenized Jews, and religious traditionalists called Chasideans opposed them. However, when the Selucid Greeks began to oppress the Jews as a whole, Jewish people united politically against them while still maintaining diverse theological differences.

The Essenes: [http://www.jewishencyclopedia.com/articles/5867-essenes](http://www.jewishencyclopedia.com/articles/5867-essenes)

These were devoted to strict discipline, believing in isolation from the world. They were ascetic and mystical, and it is believed that an Essene sect produced the Dead Sea Scrolls.
The Sadducees: These evolved from the Hellenistic influences on Judaism. Priests and aristocrats made up this movement. They were religiously conservative but socially liberal, adopting the ways of Greek society. They believed in a strict, narrow and unchanging interpretation of the written Torah, and did not believe in the Oral [Talmudic] Torah. At the center of their worship was the Temple with its sacrificial services.

The Pharisees: These believed that God gave the Jews both the Written [Moses] and Oral [Talmudic] Torah, which were equally binding and open to interpretation by the Rabbis. The Rabbis were people believed to have sufficient education to make such decisions. The Pharisees believed in devotion to the study of the Torah and education for all.

The Scribes: [http://www.jewishencyclopedia.com/articles/13356-scribes](http://www.jewishencyclopedia.com/articles/13356-scribes)

Scribes [soferim] were considered as “lay” priests. The Scribes and Pharisees were also considered the greatest legal authorities in Israel.

Sanhedrin: [http://www.jewishencyclopedia.com/articles/13179-sanhedrin](http://www.jewishencyclopedia.com/articles/13179-sanhedrin)

Not only within Israel was the written Law of Moses as given by God, but the Pharisees said there were two inspired revelations given by God. There was the written law of Moses received atop Mt. Sinai, and also the oral tradition acquired by seventy elders who came to the base of the mountain but were forbidden to proceed farther. The Pharisees said that these seventy elders or Sanhedrin received a much more extensive and more profound revelation than Moses; a revelation that was never written down yet took precedent over the written law. It was this oral [Talmudic] tradition that Jesus our Lord vehemently condemned.

Jesus considered the Pharisaic Sanhedrin the most dangerous leadership the Jews have ever had.


This group appeared after Judea was conquered and controlled by Rome [BCE] causing tensions to mount further between Rome and the Jews. The Zealots were more a nationalistic terrorist movement than a religious one. The Zealots are most famous for their defense of Masada, holding the mountain fortress against the Roman Tenth Legion for months and ultimately committing suicide rather than surrendering.

“The members of this party bore also the name Sicarii, from their custom of going about with daggers (‘sicæ’) hidden beneath their cloaks, with which they would stab anyone found committing a sacrilegious act or anything provoking anti-Jewish feeling.”

The Zealots can be considered the early “fathers” of Zionism along with smearing
anyone who was critical of Israel. Today, the Zionist children of the Zealots smear people with the label “anti-Semite” as a defense mechanism to intimidate and suppress objective criticism of the Zionist state of Israel and its current apartheid and ethnic cleansing policies.

After the 70 AD destruction of the temple the Sadducee party pretty much disappeared. The Pharisees emerged with even greater power over the Jewish people. With the destruction of the Temple and the Sadducee party all but disappearing this left the regulation of all Jewish affairs in the hands of the Pharisees. Henceforth, Jewish life was regulated primarily by the Pharisees. The whole history of Judaism was reconstructed from the Pharisaic point of view. Pharisaism shaped the character, life and thought of the Jew and Judaism.

Not all Jews are Zionists. Many Jews are against Zionism and Zionist Israel. We will develop more on this later.

In 135 AD Jews were expelled from Palestine. The Pharisees led most Palestinian Jews in a mass migration back to Babylon. A large portion of Jews were already in Babylon and had been since the time of Nebuchadnezzar six hundred years earlier. Yet around 140 AD, Babylon became the acknowledged land of refuge for world Jewry.

For another 1,000 years, Judaism flourished in Babylon under the leadership of the Pharisees. Great academies of the Rabbi’s were established and thousands of new Talmudic laws were added, formulated, and codified. There, the same Pharisaic cult whose fathers shouted, “Crucify Him” remained the undisputed rulers of Judaism. As discussed earlier, even the Messianic Ebionites found their way into Babylon. Their writings helped in the formation of Islam.

It was in Babylon that the Pharisees codified their oral traditions into the Babylonian Talmud, which is the written form of that oral tradition which Jesus our Lord so bitterly rebuked.

The Talmud and its writings reveal to us how deep was Israel's apostasy. When the Jews turned their backs against God from Old Testament times they produced the Talmud, a work that aptly has been called, “a monument to human folly”.

“Such are the words of Rabbi Tarphon, ‘The day is short—the labour vast;—but the labourers are slothful, though the reward is great, and the Master of the house presseth for despatch.’ Some of its sayings are extravagant—some are loathsome—and some are blasphemous. But mixed up as they are together, they form an extraordinary monument of ‘human industry, human wisdom, and human folly.’”
Previously we discussed Christ's condemning and harsh words that He spoke against the religious leaders of Israel: “Children of their father, the devil.” The Talmudic teachings confirm the truth of Christ's very own words that He spoke against these evil and wicked people. There are plenty of websites available to view excerpts from the Talmud. Listed below are only a few sites.

http://www.revisionisthistory.org/talmudtruth.html

http://rense.com/general86/talmd.htm

In Babylon sexual perversion of every kind had been a way of life for centuries upon centuries. The Pharisees were deeply influenced by such practices. In three of the major treatises of the Talmud are found extensive passages that give legal endorsement to seduce and marry three year old baby girls. In fact, many of the greatest Rabbis of the Talmud, including Simeon Ben Yohai, upheld this perverted privilege. Currently in [bogus] Eretz Israel, thousands of Jews yearly venerate the memory of this devil walking on two legs; Simeon Ben Yohai.

In one of dozens of Talmudic endorsements of child sex, Simeon Ben Yohai said, “a proselyte under the age of three years and a day is permitted to marry a priest” (Talmud Yabamoth 60b).

Agreeing with Ben Yohai, another great Rabbi said, “When a grown up man has intercourse with a little girl it is nothing, for when the girl is less than this it is as if one puts the finger into the eye” (Talmud Kethuboth 11b).

The footnote to this passage says, “as tears come to the eye again and again so does virginity come back to the little girl while under three years.”

In the same sections of the sick and satanic Talmud it also endorses intercourse with small boys.

The Pharisees, through their Talmud, gave the Jews an ethic that encouraged bigotry, segregation, isolation and perversion based upon corrupt religious and ethical grounds. These extreme, violent, perverted, and racial views invited, incited, and provoked persecution from the Gentile peoples. In the Talmud it is taught to kill and steal from the Goyim/Gentiles. Among the Gentiles, there was a real and honest perceived threat from the Jews. There were valid reasons the Gentile world both secular and religious condemned the Jews, and not only based upon prejudice and/or bigotry as the Jews contend.
A number of sects denying the existence of “Oral Torah” arose during the 9th century. These were known as Karaites [literally, “People of the Scripture”], and they were different from the Rabbanites or Rabbinical Talmudic Jews.

The Karaites interpreted the literal text of the scripture strictly, not believing in rabbinical Talmudic interpretation. They believed that rabbinical teachings are subject to the flaws of any document written by mere mortals. The Karaite movement at one time attracted as much as 40% of the Jewish people. Today they are a very small minority, and most Rabbinical Jews do not even know that they exist.

By the 11th century inhabitants of Babylon both pagan and Moslem, growing weary of the self-righteousness and dishonesty of the Pharisaic Talmudic Jews, expelled them to the West.

Migrating across North Africa and central Europe; a great majority of Jews who lived in Babylon for almost 1600 years, now began to find their destinies in the cities of the West.

There are different sub cultures of Jews throughout the world, with different sects and beliefs. But all deny the Christ and God revealed in the Scriptures.

http://www.jewfaq.org/ashkseph.htm
http://www.jewishencyclopedia.com/ar.../1951-ashkenaz
http://www.jewishencyclopedia.com/ar.../1952-ashkenaz
http://www.jewishencyclopedia.com/ar...3430-sephardim

Chassidism: http://www.chabad.org/search/keyword...Chassidism.htm

Chassidism was the first of the modern Jewish movements developed in the 1700’s in Eastern Europe. Its founder was Israel Ben Eliezer, known as the Baal Shem Tov. Chassidism emphasized personal experiences and mysticism as alternative ways of getting close to God, as distinct from the previous emphasis of Judaism on education as the appropriate path.

Even within Catholicism and Protestantism there are New Age mystical wanderings and practices along the line of Chassidic mysticism. Pentecostal and Charismatic movements are similar in seeking personal and mystical experiences. The tongues cults are a major example.
A person considered by the Chassidim to be more enlightened than other Jews is called a “Rebbe” or “Tzaddik”. The Rebbe is the spiritual leader of the Chassidic sect, and is consulted by his followers on all major life decisions. Chassidism is today a vital movement throughout the Jewish world.

Those who held to the pre-existing view of Judaism strongly opposed what they considered the radical movement of Chassidism. These opponents were called mitnagdim [“opponents”], and disputes between the two groups were often brutal. Today these groups are relatively unified by their joint opposition to the modern liberal movements.

Orthodox Judaism: [http://www.jewishvirtuallibrary.org/.../Orthodox.html](http://www.jewishvirtuallibrary.org/.../Orthodox.html)

Orthodox Judaism itself is varied, depending on the immigrant backgrounds and current constitutions of the many strong Orthodox synagogues. There are two Progressive synagogues as well, one of which has also begun a Conservative service and is incorporating the presence of Jewish renewal.

In addition to the synagogues, there are chavurot that represent Jews who choose to organize around more common interests in geographical areas. Of course, like everywhere in the Jewish world, there is the presence of Zealot Jews who identify themselves through nationalistic Zionism, culture and secular humanist values.

Of the roughly 13 million Jews in the world, approximately 5 million live in the United States, and comprise only 1.71% of America’s population. Close to 6 million Jews live in Israel.

[http://www.jewishvirtuallibrary.org/...sm/jewpop.html](http://www.jewishvirtuallibrary.org/...sm/jewpop.html)

The Reform, Conservative and Orthodox movements are the three major movements in the United States today. A fourth, the Reconstructionist, can also be included though this movement is substantially smaller than the others. The traditional movements are the Orthodox and the Conservative. The Reform and Reconstructionist movements are usually described as the liberal or modern movements.

All the Orthodox movements believe that God gave Moses the whole Torah on Mt. Sinai, and that the whole Torah includes both the Written Torah [the first five books of the Bible], and the Oral Torah [an oral Talmud tradition interpreting and explaining the Written Torah]. Both are binding on the conscience of the individual Jew and considered equally true revelations from God.

The pseudo-Christians did not invent the dogma of “oral tradition”, they learned
this from their mother, apostate pagan Israel.

The Orthodox movements all believe that the Torah is true, that it has come down to Jews intact and unchanged, and that it contains 613 mitzvot [commandments] binding upon Jews but not upon non-Jews. However, even though they hold similar beliefs, there are subtle differences between them that may be difficult for the non-Orthodox Jew to understand. Whatever the case, all forms of Jewish religious expression, including Messianic, are anti-Christ.

Reformed Judaism believes that the Bible was not written by God, but rather by separate human sources and redacted together. Though retaining much of the values and ethics of traditional Judaism, along with some of its practices and culture, Reform Jews do not believe in the observance of commandments as such. As the Reform movement is the most liberal, it attracts many non-observant, nominal and/or agnostic Jews. Whatever the case, all Jewish religious expression is anti-Christ.

Conservative Judaism generally accepts the binding nature of halakhah, but Conservative Jews believe that the law should change and adapt, remaining true to the values of Judaism while absorbing aspects of the predominant culture. Conservative Judaism is characterized by its flexibility. Whatever the case, all Jewish religious expression is anti-Christ.

A theoretical outgrowth of the Conservative Jewish Movement is Reconstructionism. Reconstructionists see Judaism as an evolving religious civilization. They do not believe that God chose the Jewish people or that a personified deity is active in history. However, Reconstructionism does lay a much greater stress on Jewish observance than Reform Judaism. One can choose to observe Halakhah not because it is a set of binding laws from God, but because it is a valuable cultural document.

Almost 6 million Jews live in Israel today. Though most Israelis do not formally identify themselves with any one particular movement, Orthodoxy is the only movement that is formally and legally recognized in Israel. Religious councils comprised only Orthodox Jews until very recently, and the Orthodox Rabbinate controls matters such as marriage, conversions and divorce.

The Zionists would have the world believe that Israel is a free and democratic society. But anyone with half a brain putting forth a little inquiry would see that is not true at all. Israel today is controlled by radical, Zionist Rabbinical, racist, God-hating thieves and murderers.

The hiloni [secular] group constitutes more than half of all Jewish Israelis. About 15-20 percent describe themselves as haredi [ultra-Orthodox] or dati [Orthodox], and the rest describe themselves as masorti [traditionally observant but not as dogmatic as the Orthodox].
These wicked Jews today comprise roughly 42.5% of the total population of Israel. The other 57.5% are Arabs [Palestinians] who are either Islamic or professed Christians. These others who lived in the land for almost 2000 years, became the victims of the most horrendous crimes against humanity equal to those of Stalin and Hitler, perpetuated against them by the Zionist [Zealot] Jews starting from 1948 to this current day.

So we can see Judaism as a whole is not in a oneness, nor do they remotely resemble the early faithful followers of Moses.

Theodore Herzl; ..."considered to have been the father of modern political Zionism and in effect the founder of the State of Israel. Herzl formed the World Zionist Organization and promoted Jewish migration to Palestine in an effort to form a Jewish state."

Before adding more historical data to the “Zionist Problem”, supplied below are links that show this Zionist problem from an unbiased and objective viewpoint.

The Zionist owned and controlled major medias [television and newspapers] throughout Western civilizations [including the USA] with their legion of “talking bobble-heads” will not dare show dissenting Jewish views against Zionism. You see; this would destroy their false narrative and image concerning the nation of Israel. The Zionist Jew media bosses will hand them the pink slip, thus losing their 6 to7 figure incomes. It is better for the "talking bobble-heads" to just shut up, play ball, and take the hush money. Exposing Zionism only foils their evil grip over the minds of politicians and governments that the Zionists have duped Gentile masses for the past few centuries.

Zionism is an evil enterprise that plagues the whole world thus affecting all of mankind including true believers in the Gospel of Christ. Zionism and ecumencial syncretistic Papism currently teamed together, are hell bent on destroying what is left of sane, rational, and peace loving civilization.

Zionism is to Judaism what Papism is to Christianity. They are both twin satanically inspired evils that have controlled the mindset, opinion, and governments of gullible and ignorant human masses; especially in the USA since the civil war; and most especially since 1913.
Let’s examine the evolution of Zionism from Jewish voices themselves. Please go to these links, then seek out all pertinent articles:

http://www.truetorahjews.org/zionism

http://www.nkusa.org/

How would an individual react if let’s say I, Mr. Balfour Britain, came over to your house and said:

“Hey look buddy, I am going to give your house over to some other people from another part of the world. These people will eventually evict all of you, and if you resist, we will call you terrorists, then we will give them all the necessary weapons to kill you if necessary.”

No one with a sane conscience would like that proposition would he or she? First of all, Mr. Britain did not own the house let alone have a right to give it to some foreign people. To further add insult to injury, the people defending their own personal property and land from the thieves who stole it, are painted as the villains and perpetrators, while the thieves are perceived as innocent victims. This is how sick and criminal our Western governments and society has become.

In this next link you will hear a Rabbi expose Zionism for what it really is.

http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=Em_PB...eature=related

This one is also an eye opener:

http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=ynWjY...eature=fvwrel

In the next link another Rabbi, Josef Antebi exposes and condemns Zionism. He also states that the Jews were expelled from Israel because of God’s punishments against them. This Rabbi knows more truth about Israel's condemnation than most of pseudo-Christianity.

http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=DIT9s...eature=related

Are the Zionists going to call these Jews anti-Semites? NO! The Zionists call them self-hating Jews. This is how warped and evil Zionism is; and the US and Great Britain support these evil crazed woman and children murdering thieves. Even the warped satanic Christian Zionists support these evil atrocities.

In the next two clips, you will hear from Miko Peled, the Jewish son of General Matti Peled, of Israel. Here is a man that still has a conscience. I pray for him all the time in the hope that Christ one day will rescue his soul.
The below clips are from a ten part series exposing the criminal culpability of Zionists and their political allies. Please view them in order.

http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=eCL6W...071C6E&index=1
http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=mo2HW...071C6E&index=2
http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=7UKGz...071C6E&index=3
http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=8P0Tb...071C6E&index=4
http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=_THWd...071C6E&index=5
http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=ChpOD...071C6E&index=6
http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=dzej-...071C6E&index=7
http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=cbORx...071C6E&index=8
http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=Z5irVWevwHc

As always, the links supplied are only for information pertaining to the “Zionist Problem”. I do not endorse any or some of their personal, religious, or political beliefs.

Because of the time needed to read and view all the links, please take a day or two to digest this information. Thank you.

If you have taken the time to read the articles and view the videos supplied, you will see that Zionism is primarily an atheistic, agnostic, cultic political movement that has no direct interest in protecting the Jews or even the various factions within Judaism. In fact, Zionists have exacerbated anti-Jewish animosity to further their own evil agenda.

When the Jews, among others, were being sent to their deaths under the Nazi Regime, the Zionists, according to Weissmandl, did not aid at all even when they could have.
"How much were Rabbi Weissmandl and his colleagues overcome with joy when they succeeded in getting the right people together! How great was their hope! But how much were they overwhelmed by sorrow when they tried to get things in motion, and how great was their frustration when they learned that the Zionists, together with the 'Joint', stopped every outside help from reaching them. This was not only when it was a question of saving the remnants of the Jews of Slovakia -- about 40,000 souls -- but also when the possibility of saving what was still left of the Jews of Poland and Hungary was in question; a matter then of millions of souls. Then, too, the Zionists deliberately prevented any help from being extended under various excuses that even a child could see through. This was their policy -- stupid and merciless -- but they pursued it relentlessly. In the end, they admitted openly that their policy was not to help fellow Jews, but to let them perish in the tens of thousands and in the millions.

“This is forever unforgettable and unforgivable. Zionist ‘ahavas Yisroel’ must be displayed conspicuously and beyond any doubt.”

More on Weissmandl:

http://www.fantompowa.net/Flame/weissmandel_lublin.htm

Let's explore the primary goal of Zionism and how its agenda and influence succeeded in the conversion and destruction of the USA from its original constitutional foundation and principles.

We, who are alive and were born in the US, were not born into the Constitutional Republic given to us by the blood of our forefathers. We were born into a neo-Socialist Egalitarian Oligarchical society, rapidly advancing toward a complete militaristic controlled Fascist nation.

When I was born and baptized into the Roman Catholic church as a baby, I was not born into scriptural apostolic Gospel Christianity, but rather was born into a Judaized form of pseudo-Christian paganism. Calling the Roman Catholic Church “Christian” does not make it so. Likewise an individual born and baby
sprinkled into a Protestant false gospel preaching sect is no better.

A "thing" is what it is by essence, which manifests in belief, then practice.

We can call or believe a dog is a cat, but that will not change the fact that a dog is still a dog. Likewise, we can call or believe our current USA is a Constitutional Republic, but when it barks, implements and practices Socialistic ideals it still is a Socialist country. The degree of application/practice is irrelevant to the discussion and does not change the actual essence.

Whether a big dog or a little dog, it still is a dog. Both Republican and Democratic parties practice and implement Socialist ideals. The difference only lies in how these Socialist programs are financed through taxing structures. In other words, "who will foot the bill". In the end, whether through a Democrat plan or a Republican plan, the individual wage earner always foots the bill, thus a redistribution of personal capital with the goal of financing socialist programs through ever expanding unconstitutional government bureaucracies. Since the government never foots the bill, it then becomes a balancing act between the corporate and the individual. The corporate always passes its tax burden, whether higher [Democrat] or lower [Republican], to the consumer in the selling price of its goods and/or services. But in the end the individual wage earner ALWAYS foots the bill.

Two of the greatest enemies of our "original" Constitutional Republic immediately prior to and after the American Civil War were, and still are today, the Roman Catholic Institution headed by the Papacy with its Jesuits and ecumenical allies, along with the Zionists. Both of these evil and satanic influences, along with their allies, share the same core ideology of autonomy and redistribution of private wealth/capital. They both see themselves as altruistic champions for human equality, fairness and social justice. However, this is but a facade of reality. Their goals are for the suppression of mankind through all and necessary means, which include warring, murder, torture, imprisonment, censorship and a host of other economic or psychological methods. Goals such as these can only be achieved by a complete military overthrow of the US government and its peoples, or by deceptive subversion from within its own legitimate governmental structures of power and authority. The latter was employed and has been successful thus far.

Let's dig a little more into the evolution of Zionism and how Zionists (like the Papists in history) have subverted other countries. But before doing this let us learn a little more of Jewish history.

As the Jews migrated across North Africa and central Europe, a great majority of
Jews who lived in Babylon for almost 1600 years, ran up against another very intolerant system called the Papacy that disliked the anti-social, anti-Christ writings and practices the Talmudic Jews practiced from their Babylonian Talmud.

In order for the Jews to survive in pseudo-Christian lands, it was necessary for these Jews to abandon their Babylonian pagan traditions. However, most Jews could not bring themselves to defy the authority of their Pharisaic Jew rulers while living in Gentile lands.

Moses Ben Maimonides

Moses Ben Maimonides, a physician and Jewish philosopher born in Cordoba, Almoravid Empire [Spain], understood that Jews who practiced Babylonian perversions could not remain alive in Papal controlled lands. Thus he attempted to harmonize Greek philosophy with the softer and less harsh elements of Babylonian Talmudic Judaic tradition. He hoped his rationale would enable Jews to abandon Talmudic anti-social customs. He was only partially successful and later was excommunicated from the Jewish community on a charge of making new Jewish laws. His influence nevertheless helped to soften the harshness of the Babylonian Talmudic teachings.

Gradually over the centuries the majority of Jews did abandon the extreme immoral sexual practices contained in the Babylonian Talmud.

When the Jews came to the West during the Middle Ages and attempted to accommodate the Talmud in a Papal society a tremendous conflict was created. However, previously in Babylon, Talmudic Judaism could be perfectly consistent with the teachings of the Pharisees because the Babylonians were immoral and perverted also. In Papal Gentile lands of the West it was then necessary for the Jews to pretend these perverted Babylonian teachings never existed for the sake of survival.

For the Jew living in Papal controlled countries it became impossible to fully perform what the Pharisees commanded. The religious Jew was caught in a great and deadly dilemma.
Another dilemma that faces current day Jews and Zionist Jews is one of ethnic identity. This concerns the question of who actually is a Jew. From a Scriptural and Gospel point of view this blood or ethnic squabble is totally irrelevant, because as Paul the apostle states, “a true Jew is one who has been circumcised inwardly, that of the heart and not of the flesh.” However the Jews make a big fuss about it, so we will touch upon it.

In the 8th century, Jewish missionaries ventured North from Babylon to the land of the Khazars between the Caspian and the Black Sea. Khazaria was a vast grassland (what is now the southern plains of Russia) inhabited by a race of merchants, artisans, and warriors of Hunnish Turkish stock. About 740 CE the King of the Khazars converted to Judaism and made it the state religion. Within a few centuries the people of Khazaria convinced themselves that they were not Gentiles after all, but the physical descendants of Abraham. Thus by the 10th century AD a nation of proselyte Jews thrived in what is now central Russia. This is also known as the lost thirteenth tribe cult.

http://198.62.75.1/www2/koestler/

http://www.jewishvirtuallibrary.org/...2_0_11089.html

The Jewish Encyclopedia:

“Khazars, a non-Semitic, Asiatic, Mongolian tribal nation who emigrated into Eastern Europe about the first century, who were converted as an entire nation to Judaism in the seventh century by the expanding Russian nation which absorbed the entire Khazar population, and who account for the presence in Eastern Europe of the great numbers of Yiddish-speaking Jews in Russia, Poland, Lithuania, Galatia, Besserabia and Rumania.”

The American Peoples Encyclopedia for 1954 at 15-292 records the following in reference to the Khazars:

“In the year 740 A.D. the Khazars were officially converted to Judaism. A century later they were crushed by the incoming Slavic-speaking people and were scattered over central Europe where they were known as Jews.”

During the Middle Ages the fierce Mongols from the East and Russians from the North drove the Khazars west out of their homeland, and most settled in Eastern Europe, especially Poland where they established communities. Judaism thus became divided into two basic groups, which remain today. The Ashkenazim, which are the Khazars of the East, and the Sephardi oriental which are Jews of Spain, Turkey, and lands bordering on the Mediterranean.

Today the Ashkenazim (Khazars) comprise around 80% or more of those who call themselves Jews. Two past premieres of the illegal Zionist created state of
Israel, were Shamon Perez, who was a Sephardi Jew from authentic Jewish stock, and Yitzak Shamir, who, like Menachem Begin, is Ashkenazim (Khazar) in origin.

In Poland these Ahskenazim Jews thrived and were more zealous Jews than their theological Jewish cousins, the Sephardi.

The Khazars were fascinated with the mystical aspect of Judaism called Kabbalah, which is the ancient Jewish form of Gnosticism that teaches God is unconsciousness, but everywhere revealed in different levels of refinement throughout the universe. This Kabbalah cult of Jews was far removed from anything remotely close to the Torah. Like the Eastern mystical religions however, these Polish Kabbalists believed that God in His purest form is utterly remote, unknowable, without opinions of right or wrong. Hence His being was filtered down through many gradations [Sefirot] until it reached Israel. Israel then, according to the Kabbalah, was the visible, rational emanation of God in this world. Below Israel was confusion and darkness represented by demons and the chaotic world of the Goyim/Gentiles. 

http://www.jewfaq.org/kabbalah.htm

http://www.jewishvirtuallibrary.org/.../kabbalah.html

What excited these Khazars (Ashkenazim) Jews was that the Kabbalah preached revolution. It teaches that Jews, the superior enlightened beings, were destined to rule the world. This is exactly what Zionism is all about, as we will further show.

In the “Zohar”, which is the written text of Kabbalist lore, you will find the arrogance and ambition of the ancient Pharisees very much alive.

http://jewishracism.blogspot.com/200...-below-in.html

http://www.jewishvirtuallibrary.org/...ism/Zohar.html

In a typical passage, Bereshith 47a, the racist and bigoted Zohar teaches:

“…living soul refers to Israel, who have holy living souls from above, and cattle and creeping things and beast of the earth, to the other peoples who are not ‘living souls.’”

Of course this refers to the Goy, who are nothing but animals according to the Talmud also. Only by the overthrow of the Gentile/Goy, the Zohar asserts, can Israel regain its position as God’s Shekinah glory on earth. The Zohar calls Gentiles Amalekites.
Zohar Bereshith 25b states:

“They caused the destruction of the temple [70AD], so when God reveals Himself they will be wiped off the earth. But withal redemption will not be complete until Amalek will be exterminated.”

Once Israel shakes off Gentile dominion and Christian influence, heaven will descend to earth. The Zohar says Israel will fulfill her predestined role, ruling the world under the leadership of her Messiah.

Dietrich Bonhoeffer

Another point I want to raise is this. When under the Nazi dictatorship of Der Fuhrer, the majority of Catholic and Lutheran Protestants goose-stepped right along with Der Fuhrer. This was not only against the Jews, per se, but against many non-Jews, including those of the Orthodox faith, who were against Hitler’s ideals. Did Dietrich Bonhoeffer, the German Lutheran theologian, goose-step right along with the rest of the mindless nut cases? No! He resisted the Nazi regime and was arrested in April 1943 by the Gestapo (homeland security) and then executed by hanging in April 1945 while imprisoned at a Nazi concentration camp just 23 days before the German surrender.

Was Bonhoeffer sympathetic towards the Jews and others based on their religious beliefs that he most definitely disagreed with? No! He was sympathetic toward their brutal treatment and human rights violations. Was he UN-patriotic? No! He was a true patriot of Germany.

There is no essential difference between the ideals and programs enacted by the Zionists in Eretz Israel and Nazism. I, like Bonhoeffer, oppose this criminality and the criminality of the USA and their peoples for their support of Zionist Israel. If this makes me to be considered UN-patriotic then so be it. I don’t care. I’d rather be a free thinker than goose-step right along with the evil Zionist and Papal lobbies who control the USA and most Western governments.

Both in Talmudic literature and also in the Zohar, the Jew is taught that his world leadership, dominion and rule over the Gentile dogs of this world was a God given right. This was based on two principles: Religion and Race enforced by the “state”. Very similar in thinking to the Papists, however the Papacy sought her world leadership, dominion and rule through Religious conversion enforced
by the “state” without regard for ethnicity.

Since these twin evil mentalities past and still present among us share a similar core ethical ideology in their beliefs, it is then natural to implement these beliefs in society. Earlier in these studies we showed the historical progression of pseudo-Christianity and the Constantinian marriage of church and state, with the “state” now working on behalf of pseudo-Christianity to violently convert the world to early Catholicism. It then behooves the Jews with the same evil mentality to implement their warped brand of religion and racism when the opportunity to do so presents itself. And now we have Zionist control of the USA.

Since the Zohar, Kabbalah, and the Talmud were not merely a theological system, but also taught the overthrow of the existing Gentile order, it was natural that before long Jews should begin to put these evil and racist ideals into practice.

With the age of Voltaire and the so-called “enlightenment” period of the 18th century, history records a host of Jewish (Khazar) Kabbalists migrating from Poland and penetrating the very capitals of Europe. Jewish “wonder workers” called “ba’al Shems” (Pentecostals and Charismatics are their pseudo-Christian mystic counterparts) infected Europe.


http://www.porges.net/Frankists.html

https://www.truthtellers.org/alerts/...fviolence.html

In Europe, preceding the years of the French Revolution, the foundations were laid and ripe for a “new order” in the world, with many chomping at the bit for supremacy.

Adam Weishaupt

Adam Weishaupt was a Gnostic occult dreamer born from Orthodox Jewish parents who grew up in Ingolstadt, Germany. He was born in 1748 and was raised as an Orthodox Jew. Upon entering his teen years, he fell away from the Jewish religion of his parents and instead attended a Roman Catholic Jesuit monastery converting to Roman Catholicism.
Weishaupt was intelligent, mastering many languages, which impressed the Jesuits who ran the schools. Resisting their offers to become a missionary, Adam instead finished his schooling and then became a professor at the University of Ingolstadt.

Weishaupt's brand of revolution was instrumental at establishing the “esoteric” order of the “Illuminati”, which was a cover for plots and intrigues that would begin the erosion of European monarchical governments and even the overthrow of ecclesiastical establishments. Because of Weishaupt’s strong anti-clerical and anti-royalist views, he fell into disfavor with the Papacy.

This period in history reflects the continuing rearrangement of the established Papal/Monarchical controlled orders the reformers started in the 16th century. But this rearranging was not primarily based upon theological or differing Protestant principles, but rather leaned toward Atheistic, Gnostic, and mystical aspects/dimensions of “enlightenment” for the betterment of society.

Adam’s passion for languages and his thirst for knowledge led him to the ancient Gnostic occult texts, and in particular the ancient Egyptian secrets that were rooted in the Nimrod cult. Adam became convinced that through the Gnostic occult, the human race could elevate to a greater awareness along the lines of Kabbalist spirituality but not necessarily with Jewish overtones. His belief led him to seek out others with the same passion and drive to use the Gnostic occult, starting a secret society with the ultimate motive to transform the human race.

They named the order the “Perfectibilisen”. Adam’s fascination with Egypt and the Pyramid of Giza led him to use the pyramid as the Illuminati symbol and organizational structure of the order.

There are many different views concerning the meaning of the Pyramid with the all Seeing Eye sitting atop of it. But whatever meaning one wants to establish is surely not a scriptural one, and definitely has its origins in the occult; and most definitely is present amongst us today.
To my understanding through research, the top of the pyramid showing the all seeing eye, represents the Kabbalist “enlightened” ones who rule the world in secrecy, hiding under the veneer of society and controlling within the cloak of governmental and ecclesiastical institutions of all kinds. This is more in the fashion of a syncretistic endeavor. And of course, the very bottom echelon is the ignorant deceived masses who carry all the weight and burden through their hard toils and labor. The higher one graduates up the pyramid scale (the gradations), the better off he will be in society. However, to be part of the ruling “EYE” elite class of men you must be initiated into the order of Gnostic “enlightenment”. The reason the Eye portion is not connected to the main body of the pyramid shows that these “illumined” ones receive their enlightenment directly from their occult god and act as the mediators between god and men in both religious and political affairs. This is similar to the clergy class of men within pseudo-Christianity and other clerics of other religions.

The different branches of occult free masonry are the lower in class as compared to the Illumined ones. But all are inter-related within the web of the occult. You will find unregenerate elitists and men from all different religious backgrounds and nations enjoined to these occult secret societies.

I have in the past and publicly on the radio stated, “If you want to find a free mason, or Shriner, just attend a local Presbyterian or Methodist church (the main ones) in your area. You will find plenty of these occultists as standing elders, pastors and members.”

The main tenets of early Bavarian Gnostic Occult Illuminism are:

* Complete and total secrecy
* Complete and total obedience
* Abolish all governments
* Abolish private property or private ownership
* Abolish all forms of nationalism
* Abolish all religions
* Abolish the institution of marriage
* Institute a system where the community educates the children

Also, in the 18th century another group emerged beginning with the German Jewish philosopher Moses Mendelssohn initiating a Jewish secularism, which focused on Jewish national identity.
Many Jews began to perceive their religion not simply as a means of personal salvation, but as a way to reform society at large, which is a similar ideology to pseudo-Christian reconstructionism.

Many Jewish activists used Old Testament Moses and the prophets as alleged examples of political revolutionaries and claimed Israel always has possessed the social objective of righting the wrongs of society, fighting injustice, and taking the part of the downtrodden. It then became the duty of every Jew, they believed, to come to the aid of the oppressed working masses called the “proletariat” in their historic struggle against Gentile Monarchical and Capitalistic bondage.

Many Jews, as a result of Mendelssohn’s influences, thus rallied and came out of the ghettos taking part in all the great revolutions of the 19th century, including the revolutions of 1829 and 1848. Thus it is not surprising that as the 20th century dawned you will find these radical Christ-hating Jews turning their attention and efforts toward the overthrow of the last Russian Orthodox monarchy still opposing Kabbalist/Zohar Jewish advancement, the Romanov dynasty of Russia.

It is a well-known and historically accurate fact that these Khazar/Ashkenazim Jews long hoped to overthrow the Russian Orthodox Tsar. Jews Moses Hess and Karl Mark contrived a philosophy that could make such an overthrow possible. It was also natural that international Jewish bankers of New York, London, and Hamburg should finance the overthrow. Typical Jewry.
Communism in Russia published in 1931, reveals how Jewish controlled German banks under the leadership of Max Warburg, the German Jew banker who was the architect of the illegal and unconstitutional Federal Reserve Board we currently have in the USA, conspired as early as 1914 to send large amounts of money to the communist revolutionary Jew Vladimir Lenin, Jew Leon Trotsky, and other revolutionary Jews, to finance their overthrow of the Orthodox Tsar.

As part of this attempt, Jacob Schiff, Jewish Banker and head of the Jewish banking house Kuhn, Loeb and Co., invested at least 20 million dollars (which in today’s inflated dollars would be close to 1 billion or more) toward the establishment of Bolshevism.

In its article on Socialism, the Jewish encyclopedia published in 1905 freely admits that Jews in Russia were ripe for revolution.

“While in Germany socialism has attracted individual Jews, in Russia it [socialism] has become a movement of the Jewish masse.”

The later encyclopedia, *Judaica*, says under the heading of Communism:

“The communist movement and ideology played an important part in Jewish life, particularly in the 1920’s and 1930’s, and during and after WWII.”

Within that same *Judaica* it presents an extensive list of the most powerful Jewish leaders of Bolshevism pictured below.
From left to right: Grigori Sokolnikov, Grigory Zinoviev, Moisei Solomonovich Uritsky, Lev Kamenev, Karl Marx, Nathan Birnbaum, Leon Trotsky.

The *Judaica* also tells us just how many Jews filled the Communist ranks. It says:

“…anti-semitism drove the bulk of Russian Jewish youth into the ranks of the Bolshevik regime.”

Before we continue further exposing the Jew/Zionist agenda, I want to comment on how the two Jesuit inspired views, "**Preterism**" and "**Futurism**" work to blind the minds of the ignorant as to the evil forces that are always a continuous ever-present reality.

I’m going to use brother Daniel and King Nebuchadnezzar with his *golden image* as my example.

If Daniel was brainwashed with a full Preterist view of evil present to his current day circumstances, he may have said:

“Oh heck, this golden image business already was a thing of the past and cannot be something today for me to worry about, so why not just bow to the image presently in front of me like the rest of them?”

Now if he was brainwashed with Futurism he may say:

“Oh heck, this golden image business is a thing of the future and cannot be something today for me to worry about, so why not just bow to the image presently in front of me like the rest of them?”

Does anyone understand the point I am trying to convey?
Christen-dumb does not want to deal with the anti-Christ evil forces that are present to them. So they, like King Saul, cower in the face of Goliath and some even join up with Goliath and support his causes. But not my brother David. David saw that Goliath was a "clear and present danger" enemy of God. So he smacked him between the eyes with the smooth stone thus destroying him.

The kingdom of anti-Christ has always been a present reality. For Paul the apostle, John the Apostle, Peter the Apostle, and the entire true elect of God through every successive age. Anti-Christ forces are not a thing of the past or a thing for the future, they are ever-present to us now. Especially in Papism, Zionism and the government's politicians they control.

The problem is that cowards do not want to deal with this fact so they bury their heads in the sand and deny it exists, calling those who expose this reality “anti-Semites” “anti-Catholics” or “conspiracy nuts”. They fear the Jews. They fear the Papists, and especially fear their own government who is controlled by these two anti-Christ entities.

These pulpit pimps and their followers do not want to engage Goliath or Nebuchadnezzar, so they bow to the Golden image and sing God Bless America while chanting “ra- ra hooray Israel”, or “Israel First” sending their hard earned money in the billions, nuclear bombs, weaponry, and disgustingly; the lives and blood of their own sons and daughters. All this they do in support of these wicked and evil people who are anti-Christ, and their Zionist nation that would kill Jesus Christ over again if were possible.
Chapter 43
The White Russian Patriots, Zionists, Bolsheviks, Jew Bankers, And More

When the “White Russian Patriots” attempted to regain their freedom from the Jewish led Red Army, controlled by the Bolshevik Jewish Communist regime, the “Judaica” says that compact masses were utilized by the Bolsheviks to suppress the counter-revolution.

White Russian: “The Tsar himself was often called the ‘Great White Tsar’, while he included among his official titles the style (literal translation): ‘The Sovereign of all Rus’: ‘the great’ ‘the little’ and the White’. This appellation, together with the solemn wording ‘White Tsardom’, was in use till the very end of the Russian Empire. Ultimately, this colour was transferred onto the name of the counter-revolutionary ‘White Army’ that fought against the Red Army” (Wikipedia).

Jews [Red] and native [White] Russians were engaged in the struggle for supremacy and control of Russia.

Unfortunately, the Communist Jewish ‘Red’ masses and those deceived non-Jewish folk who joined the ranks triumphed. The ruling board of the first peoples Commissariat consisted of Jews: Uritsky, Trotsky, Zinoviev, Sverdlov, and Kagonovich.

In 1918, intelligence services of the Western axis powers were overwhelmed with reports that Jewish inspired and lead Communism was an international conspiracy fomented by atheistic Jews. British, Dutch, American, and other intelligence reports confirmed that Jews filled the Bolshevik ranks and as much
as 75% of all Soviet Commissars were Jewish. In the “Illustrated Sunday Herald”, dated February 8th, 1920, Winston Churchill commented on what had become public knowledge in his day, but sadly today, through our Socialist public school system and Zionist controlled major media in America, our youth and peoples are shielded from the truth.

“There is no need to exaggerate the part played in the creation of Bolshevism and in the actual bringing about of the Russian Revolution, by these international and for the most part atheistical Jews, it is certainly a very great one; it probably outweighs all others. With the notable exception of Lenin, the majority of the leading figures are Jews. Moreover, the principal inspiration and driving power comes from the Jewish leaders. Thus Tchitcherin, a pure Russian, is eclipsed by his nominal subordinate Litvinoff, and the influence of Russians like Bukharin or Lunacharski cannot be compared with the power of Trotsky, or of Zinovieff, the Dictator of the Red Citadel (Petrograd) or of Krassin or Radek -- all Jews. In the Soviet institutions the predominance of Jews is even more astonishing. And the prominent, if not indeed the principal, part in the system of terrorism applied by the Extraordinary Commissions for Combating Counter-Revolution has been
taken by Jews, and in some notable cases by Jewesses. The same evil prominence was obtained by Jews in the brief period of terror during which Bela Kun ruled in Hungary. The same phenomenon has been presented in Germany (especially in Bavaria), so far as this madness has been allowed to prey upon the temporary prostration of the German people. Although in all these countries there are many non-Jews every whit as bad as the worst of the Jewish revolutionaries, the part played by the latter in proportion to their numbers in the population is astonishing” (Winston Churchill).

“Zionism versus Bolshevism”, Illustrated Sunday Herald (February 1920)”


Before we continue further to show the evil growth of Jewry and Zionism that has (past tense) destroyed the USA from within through their evil Socialist and Zionist agenda, let’s briefly look into the American Civil War era and Jewish involvement.

For those who love to study history, it is a well-known fact that Jews were also the masters of the “slave trades”. There is historical proof and books available that document the Sephardi Jews of Spain that along with the Portuguese Jesuits (some were Jewish converts: Jesuitism) worked together in this corrupt practice of human slavery. Now please don’t get me wrong here, not all Jews as a whole, or even Papists as a whole have participated in the slave trades. However, the most radical evil elements of the Jewish mind, rooted and faithful to the Talmud, Kabbalah, and Zohar, by Jewish birthright think they must dominate and bring into subjection the Gentile order of mankind. Same evil mentality as the Jesuits but based upon other premises.

In the links below this will lightly be touched upon. All I am trying to accomplish is to dispel the notion that the Jews are some innocent (God’s Chosen) people and poor victims of Anti-Semitism, as the Zionist owned and controlled media and Christian Zionists want us to naively believe in their efforts to sanitize the Jew and justify their illegal occupation of Zionist Eretz Israel, among other goals and aims of Jewry. Goals to which the mainstream of Jews and knowledgeable non-Jews throughout the world and the USA are opposed to, and goals which the ignorant false gospel Zionist Christians think is some sort of prophetic land right of the Jew.

As I have stated in previous segments, there are different levels of devotion to one’s religious faith and belief. Purely on an existential level, not all Catholics and Protestants participated in the blood battles in Northern Ireland. Not all Catholic and Orthodox peoples participated in the blood battles in the 20th century Slavic conflicts. Not all Muslim and Jew people in the Middle East shed blood, etc., and this goes for all of the religious element of societal peoples throughout the world. It is only the very radical elements within religious circles that are purposely provoked to engage in warfare and terrorism. The goals of the evil Zionist (neo-con) Jewish bankers (IMF the global one, among the many lower central Jewish
banking houses), along with their religious and political allies, is to first destabilize sovereign Gentile nations throughout the world through the creation of civil wars. Secondly, to finance these civil wars thus creating monetary debt. And thirdly, to establish their control through the installation of dictators or politicians that share goals in common for the suppression and enslavement of mankind. Kevin MacDonald touches upon some of these very things, but not within a theological context as I am doing. What I am proposing and showing from Jewish sources and others is the inbred evil of these people to destabilize Gentile society at large as taught in their Talmud, Kabbalah, and Zohar.

Please view the MacDonald's 6 part video listed on you tube:

http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=k9ScVv5PukA

Martin Luther and many other reformers were Jew wise and understood the evil mind of the Christ hating Jew, should not we also?

I'm going to be very honest with all my brothers and sisters in Christ. I do not wrap up Jesus Christ in the American flag, or any flag or nation of this shadow world. To me, it is a simple matter of the Kingdom of Christ and the kingdoms of anti-Christ. Jesus is not a Republican, Democrat, Fascist, Socialist, Marxist, Communist, or whatever “ists” there are in this corrupt world. I view the world, including the USA, in terms of two kinds of people. The elect, and the phantom reprobate; not Protestant, nor Catholic, nor Jew, Zionist, Islamic, Shintoist, Buddhist, etc. I am just as much a pilgrim and foreigner in this land of ours (USA) as any land around the world that Christ would have birthed me into. My pledge of allegiance is to Christ alone, and as His ambassador in this world I am committed and honored to protect the Gospel from ALL invaders who would distort the Gospel of His Kingdom, whether minimal or radical. My calling is to proclaim the Gospel alone as the only remedy for mankind's ills, and to speak out against and expose all wickedness within Governments and Religions that are offensive to Christ and His elect people. Also speaking out against wicked and immoral actions, atrocities, and aggressive blood shedding for the sole purpose of domination and exploitation committed by anyone in the world, including the USA, that are equally offensive to Christ and His people and are thus a cause to punish reprobate mankind and thus destroy anti-Christ. On the flip side, and on an existential level in this world, any scriptural, honorable, moral, humane and decent action on the part of society individually or collectively, I will accommodate.

http://books.google.com/books?id=-Ox...page&q&f=false

http://elderofziyon.blogspot.com/200...-and-jews.html

http://rense.com/general69/invo.htm
Getting back to the Communist Jews, for decades following the Russian Revolution the question became how much influence did the Jews still exert on the Communist Soviet experiment. Many of the original Jewish leaders perished in Stalinist purges in the late 30’s. Nikita Khrushchev gives us his views of just how many Jews were still in the Soviet government. Speaking to a delegation of French Socialists, Khrushchev admitted in 1956:

“*The government has found in some of its departments a heavy concentration of Jewish people, upwards of 50% of the staff*” (Nikita Khrushchev).

Because Communism historically has been top heavy with Jews and their demented ideological plan for mankind, the Soviet policy of so-called anti-Semitism, much protested by Jews in the West including the USA, in reality was a ploy/diversion/smokescreen to distract the world from Communism’s Jewish roots. Most Jews eventually were removed from high profile positions within the hierarchy because deceived Gentiles could now carry the torch for the advancement of the Jewish warped ideology of Communistic Socialism. Still the Jews remained highly favored when it came to immigration to the West.

Since WWII, more than a million Socialist Jews were allowed to leave the “*Iron Curtain*”, to infiltrate other lands, but a Gentile who attempted to escape received a minimum of 15 years in prison and was subjected to torture both physical and psychological.

Jews played an important role in the Soviet experiment as the Jewish encyclopedia in its article on Socialism touches upon:

http://ww w.jewishencyclopedia.com/ar...3822-socialism

The passion of many Jews to socialize the world was not confined to Russia. As peddlers of Socialism, Jews must be reckoned as the pioneers of the Socialist parties in America. One does not have to be a Jew to be a Socialist in America,
but only a proselyte to this Jewish and unconstitutional brand of Socialism. The effect is all the Jew is concerned with.

As a case in point, a flood of Socialist Jews stormed and entered the Democratic party within the FDR administration, helping to pioneer the “NEW DEAL” for America. But this Socialist expansion within our government did not start there, this was only a major escalation of Jewish Socialist ideals.

Earlier the Jews penetrated the Lincoln presidency. With attempted financial backing and coercion from the Jewish bankers and Jewish controlled Wall Street, these Jews attempted to finance [with high interest rates] the North against the South escalating tensions and thus leading to war. If there is one thing a Rothschild banking Jew cannot tolerate, is a currency they do not print or control, such as the currency of the Southern states, and the “Greenback” of Lincoln. To the Jew, this is an abomination.

http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=5hfEBupAeo4

http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=iDtBSil13fE

The last President who stood against the Jews and their banking cartels was John F. Kennedy. He paid a heavy price attempting to restore our nation to lawful and constitutional money. But the Jewish bankers at all costs put an end to it. And why not? The evil Talmudic Racist Jews put Christ to death, who is God in the flesh, so to put away Kennedy is just trivial for them. The Jews cannot and will not allow anyone in authority to survive who is against them. This is what I believe to be one of the main motives behind Kennedy’s assassination. You of course must decide on your own what you will believe.

See articles:
http://www.apfn.net/doc-100_bankruptcy31.htm

http://rense.com/general76/jfkvs.htm

Of course, with money flowing in there are always stipulations. Lincoln was the first to pollute our land with the Jewish inspired Socialist Income Tax. Some years later, after the war, the Supreme Court struck it down as unconstitutional and rightly so! However the Socialist Income Tax reared its ugly head back up again with the creation of the Jew inspired Federal Reserve Board Act, architected by Jew Max Warburg, one of the creatures from Jekyll Island.
James A. Garfield
“He who controls the money supply of a nation controls the nation.”

….President James A Garfield

Like President Kennedy, Garfield also was assassinated. Garfield vehemently opposed the creation of the “Greenback” and was a strict bi-metallist, meaning money based on the gold and silver standard. Not the phony “fiat money” the Jews are currently printing to ad-infinitum today.

Please see link:
http://www.jesus-is-savior.com/Evils...al_reserve.htm

If only Americans would wake up and learn from our forefathers the reasons they were against central banks; modeled after the European Rothschild Jew Zionist bankers, this nation may start to turn around. But these actions can only come from knowledgeable and fearless people.

The Jewish Communist Manifesto:
http://www.libertyzone.com/Communist...to-Planks.html

With the USA now at the mercy of the private monopoly Jewish Federal Reserve Board of bankers, Socialist Jewish activists could pressure and blackmail FDR-Washington DC to enact and implement the ever-expanding Socialist agenda in America. These ideals/programs, The New Deal, although sugar coated, packaged and sold to the ignorant American populace as some altruist, humane and benevolent endeavor on the part of DC, were in reality nothing more than a “narcotic” to get people and corporate entities hooked on.

Jewish Socialist ideals are an evil abomination for many reasons. I'll only mention a few:

* Redistribution of personal assets to finance the “dope” addiction

* If not enough personal assets are available for redistribution, the government then borrows money from the Jew FED at interest to finance the ever increasing “dope” addiction, thus increasing debt and compounding interest to the tune now of over 17 trillion:  http://www.brillig.com/debt_clock/

* The political corruption of the “dope” peddler, who for election purposes offers
more “dope” to the populace than his running opponent would to get elected or re-elected. Since the individual citizen is now addicted, he will vote for the politician who satisfies this addiction. This works not only for the individual, but has also been extended to corporations and banks in the form of bail out money. This has led to an ever-increasing dependency on the government to solve problems rather than the private sector and/or individual.

* Even the “dope” peddler becomes addicted to the narcotic of Socialism, because to even become a part of the political process, he himself must get his fix of huge amounts of “dope”, primarily from the Zionist bankers, powerful Jew lobby groups, and powerful Jew oligarchs to finance his expensive campaign for office and expensive Jew majority owned media coverage.

**Let me put this in real basic, easy to understand terms.**

If I possessed a printing press and could print my own dollar bill without charging myself interest, why would I need to borrow a dollar bill from someone else who also possesses a printing press and charges me interest (usury)?

We the people of this USA through OUR government and constitution are mandated to coin our own money as a nation without interest. So why borrow from another entity, Zionist Jews, at interest?

Not only does our current Socialist government (both parties) borrow with interest from their King Jacob [pun intended], but also must do the bidding of the lender. This private FED money is not supplied without stipulations.

This is also one of the main reasons for our Revolutionary War. The American Colonies of England (not sovereign states yet) were economically at the mercy of King George for their money supply. With this money came heavy taxation without any representation for their taxes. Even if and when they bartered as a form of exchange, the King still sent his gang (IRS) to confiscate wealth to support the British troops stationed on American soil. So to gain independence, the colonies created their own money called colonial script; thus cutting the umbilical cord from the English Jew Rothschild central banks who controlled England. The colonies became sovereign states no longer under the control of the King and created their own money supply.

[http://p2pfoundation.net/Colonial_Script](http://p2pfoundation.net/Colonial_Script)

See also, The Currency Act of 1764:

[http://ahp.gatech.edu/currency_act_1764.html](http://ahp.gatech.edu/currency_act_1764.html)

On December 23, 1913, America was deceived by the European Rothschild Central banks controlled by the Jews and gave up her economic independence
with the creation of the Federal Reserve Board, which is a central bank. A third central banking system that earlier in US history our forefathers said was evil!

This is one of the reasons since 1948 that we have the creation of the bogus nation of Eretz Israel, and now the USA must at all costs, with borrowed money at interest, and the blood of their own sons and daughters, defend Israel. If not, the Jew bankers (and their Gentile accomplices) will cut off the “dope” and the USA sinks into depression.

If we as a nation reverted back to printing or coining our own money, we would not need this Rothschild Zionist Jew money, then could tell these evil Zionist Jews it’s all over for you. Even Jesus called the Jews robbers, thieves, and children of the devil.

The kingdom of anti-Christ not only works on the spiritual plane with evil theology, it also manifests in corrupt practice. The FED is one example. The devil and his minions think if they can threaten economic ruin then they can control the mind through fear.

The devil has destroyed this nation and many others from within, not only from pseudo-Christian theology spearheaded by massive Roman Catholic immigration some hundred or so years ago, but also from the massive influx of evil Bolshevik Jews some hundred years ago. Added to this, we currently have the apostate Zionist Christians and pro Israel Protestants to boot to deal with.

Currently, Americans falsely believe their nation is free, moral and righteous. You know; the blind loyalist red white and blue God bless America crowd. They, fearing that foreigners would corrupt their precious society. But how can anyone foreign; individual or nation, in some futuristic scheme that does not exist yet, according to Futurists, or even presently, corrupt an already corrupt society and an already corrupt pseudo-Christianity. Corrupt politicians stay in power because corrupt people put them there.

What golden image or Goliath can a foreigner or foreign nation bring to this land that is not already here? Islamophobia for example, and recently, Putin the big bad evil Russian. The Zionist Jew Rothschild banking cartels demonize any or all countries they do not control.

The Zio-controlled media creates all these bogeymen for us to fear. Our own governments and churches themselves are the bogeymen that have been raping us and America for well over a hundred years.

Our Zio-fascist controlled government and American false churches are the other golden images and Goliaths that unregenerate mankind currently fear and bow to. And they are proud of that.
Both Protestants and Catholics are currently teaching syncretistic theology and oriental forms of mysticism. That is why Futurism and full Preterism are to be condemned. Because these evil systems of thought divert the present tense evil that exists within our midst and disarms the discerning mind. They are nothing but satanic diversionary tactics.

Let's further expand upon FDR's Socialist ideals for America.

Roosevelt's Socialist policies endeared him to the Jewish community which shared with him an overriding commitment to the welfare state.

It is significant to note that by letting left wing socialist Jews into his administration, FDR set in motion an evil principle that was soon to have grave consequences.

See link below of Socialist Communist Jews placed in positions of authority and power.

http://www.vanguardnewsnetwork.com/l...fdrandjews.htm

Also, these Jews were hard-core Communist Socialists. How evil are these Jew Goliath-Golden Images that most USA citizens worship today?

See link below: http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=RsRbO7cw__c

As part of FDR’s policies, he hired the German Communist, Klaus Fuchs, a scientist who helped develop the Atomic Bomb. Fuchs also headed a ring of eight highly influential Jewish spies who delivered the entirety of nuclear secrets to the Jewish controlled Communist Soviet Union in the early 1950's.

Klaus Fuchs

http://inventors.about.com/od/fstart...laus_Fuchs.htm

http://www.jewwatch.com/jew-criminal...ies-fuchs.html
Partial list of Jewish spies were: Julius and Ethel Rosenberg, David Greenglass, Harry Gold, Morton Sobell and others. Of the ten convicted for espionage no less than eight were Jewish.

Later, in 1957, it was discovered that the Jewish Soblen brothers delivered massive defense secrets to the Socialist Russians, acting upon the orders of the Jewish head of the Soviet secret police.


Another example of Jewish treachery was the more recent Jonathan Pollard spy case in which Jew Pollard and his wife delivered thousands of top-secret documents, not to Moscow, but to Tel-Av-iv Eretz ethnic cleansing apartheid Israel. Israeli Prime Minister Benjamin Netanyahu had voiced particularly strong support for this criminal Pollard. His case was later linked to that of Ben-ami Kadish who was another Jewish U.S. national who pleaded guilty to charges of passing classified information to Christ cursed Israel in the same period. He eventually renounced his United States citizenship and is now solely an Israeli citizen.

And the U.S. is allied with the criminal state of Zionist controlled Israel? Well, we must be, because the Jews print their phony fiat money out of thin air with no gold or silver backing, and then lend it to us with interest (usury). That’s how the Zionist Jews treat their GOYIM so-called friends.

And what about the Zionist Israel Jew attack on the American US Navy intelligence ship USS Liberty on June 8, 1967 in which 34 Americans were killed???

See link:

http://www.gtr5.com/

Oh my!, if that were a Palestinian or Syrian attack, would the US do something about it? Not only was this a blatant and deliberate attack on America, but also our Jewish puppets in DC did nothing! In fact, the Jew puppet anti-American socialist Lyndon Johnson, alleged author of the Socialist “Great Society”, covered it up through the Jewish run media to keep Americans ignorant. Johnson’s Communist Great Society plunged America into further debt. Debt and interest is all the Zionist Jews are concerned with. Not the blood of our own citizens. Our politicians have promised for the past 60 years to get this nation out of debt! They have cried wolf for too long now. Are we as a people, and especially as Christ’s true chosen people, going to continue to believe the lies of the devil?

Senator John McCain’s father; Admiral John S. McCain, Jr., Commander-in-Chief, Naval Forces Europe, was instrumental in this blatant coverup.

http://dissidentvoice.org/July2004/Hughes0712.htm

Criminal
The Jews; God’s chosen people?? Like hell they are.
Chapter 44
More Jewish Socialism

Historically most Jews have favored the Socialist agendas of their blood lusting European ancestors, the extreme Communists.

In the late 1940’s intensive investigation by the US Justice Department uncovered a disproportionate number of Jews in the American Communist party. In 1949, eleven members of the American politburo of the Communist party were convicted. Six were Jews.

The defendants. Back row (left to right): Stachel, Potash, Winter, Davis, Gates, Green. Front row: Thompson, Winston, Dennis, Hall, Williamson. Not shown: Foster (he was not tried due to illness).

In 1951 another politburo was indicted. Of the twenty-one arrested, fourteen were Jews. Also in 1951, fifteen high-ranking West coast Communists were indicted. Six of the fifteen were Jewish.

During the Vietnam conflict, while our American boys died by the tens of thousands, all to the liking of Socialist Lyndon Johnson, Jews dominated the Socialist agenda for the USA.
The Jews created another pincer attack on Goyim USA during the radical 60’s era by establishing another socialist movement to further destabilize and fracture Western Gentile culture. The Jewish led liberal activist groups stormed the Gentile colleges in the USA, along with the Jewish Communist ideological professors who infiltrated the college ranks including Law schools. Many today are members of the “BAR” and have become judicial political socialist activists to destroy the very moral fabric of the USA. Legalized and tax funded abortions are just one example of Socialist Jewry in America.

The “New Left” Socialist Movement:

http://www.jewishvirtuallibrary.org/...5_0_14778.html

The goal of these Jewish radicals and their deceived Gentile followers was to create class, ethnic, and economic warfare to destabilize the USA. Once these platforms were established they could further escalate and intensify this class struggle to achieve their warped goals. However, the early Jewish “New Left” socialist movement, as they gained members, was losing control of the movement so they started to fracture. The evil plan “backfired” on the Zionists, because the “New Left” youth were against the newly formed Zion-Fascist State of Israel and their atrocities committed against mankind. Hence, a thorough scolding by their Zionist ethnocentric leaders and creators came about to bring them back into the tribe.

“In the final analysis, the New Left offered Jewish radicals a powerful legacy of both ethnic and religious identity. What began as a universalist movement for participatory democracy and inter-racial cooperation ended with an impressive campaign for progressive Zionism, stronger Jewish education, and greater focus on Jewish ethnic and religious continuity” (Jewish Virtual Library).

You see, even the Zionists make mistakes on the battlefield. But it’s all better now. The baby Socialist radicals are nursing on Zion’s breast once again.

Socialist Jews also dominate the ACLU, a Jewish Socialist front, which in their hatred of Jesus Christ unceasingly oppose anything remotely reflecting Christian ideals and values. Some examples of opposition are voluntary prayer in the schools, effective criminal prosecution, the Pledge of Allegiance, and more. The ACLU is the legal arm of Zion-Socialism.

The Jew ACLU and the Jew ADL had been the subject of congressional scrutiny. As early as 1931, a special Congressional investigating committee described the role of these groups as being covers for Communist/Zionist plots to subvert, infiltrate, and control the USA.
Elizabeth Dillings Stokes was an American anti-communist and later so-called antisemitic social activist who understood and revealed that the Jews were spearheading socialist communist agendas in the USA.

In 1940 she published her third book *The Octopus*, which dealt with these subjects. See first link below. A good read.

http://www.thechristianidentityforum.net/downloads/Octopus.pdf

http://www.radicalpress.com/?p=1095

http://mynnameisjoecontina.wordpress....mmunist-party/

The House of Representatives Congressional Investigating Committee Report #2290 Entitled, "INVESTIGATION OF COMMUNIST PROPAGANDA", states:

“It [the ACLU] claims to stand for free speech, free press, and free assembly; but it is quite apparent that the main function of the ACLU is to attempt to protect the Communists in their advocacy of force and violence to overthrow the government.”

In a 1977 survey of ACLU membership:

* 15,000 members
* 27.3 % were Jewish leaders
* 21.4 % were Jewish members

Let’s look at some faces of our current day ACLU. See below link:

http://thezog.wordpress.com/who-cont...berties-union/
The Feminist movement in America was another invention of the Socialist Jews to destabilize and pervert Gentile Christian values and civilization at large with its agenda of free abortions and lesbian rights, including lesbian legal marriages.

Its leadership was top heavy with Socialist Christ hating Jew radicals. The three most influential feminists were:

Betty Friedan - Jew
Gloria Steinem - Jew
Bella Abzug - Jew

These Zionist Zealot Jews infect every land that they have touched their feet upon. They were so wicked in Old Testament days that God continuously punished these evil people. They manifested their greatest evil by killing Jesus Christ the Holy One of Israel! However, Christ finally put an end to their wicked nation for good. But in their continuous rebellion against God/Christ these evil people insisted that Jesus Christ was wrong and thus have always schemed and plotted to regain the land that Jesus Christ forbade them. Because they are children of the Devil, they are masters of deception and deceived the Gentiles in aiding and abetting them to regain the land that Christ cursed and forbade them.

What is really disgusting, is that so-called professed Christians support Israel and politicians who are pro Israel. God has blinded them. How true it is when Jesus said: “The blind lead the blind”

But they have not deceived me, one of Christ’s elect. I fully agree with my Lord. They do not belong in that land. Thus to support a group or any country that aids and abets Israel is thus to rebel against Christ Himself, thus being damned right along with Israel. However, this rebellion is the will of God. This is what Christ is doing today in the USA. He is punishing this nation with corrupt Communist Fascist Socialist leaders who plunge us into Jew proxy wars, monetary debt, AIDS, homosexuality, gay marriage, abortion on demand, massive
unemployment, the Patriot Act, the communist NDAA act, NAFTA, GATT, etc. And it will not get better my friends.

Jew Norman Lear of “People For The American Way” is another example of liberal anti-Christ views to destabilize moral Gentile Christian culture.

Lear, as a television producer, has done more to “push the envelope” of anti-Christian and anti-patriotic television. With TV sitcoms such as “Soap”, Norman Lear has thrust profanity, adultery, and even homosexuality into the living rooms of Americans as never before. Of course we do not have to view this filth, but the fact is that the Jews have always been on a mission to destroy Gentile culture and especially a Christian orientated culture.

As typical with media Jews such as Howard Stern and Jerry Springer, they promulgate pornography and gentile debasement on their programs. Only sick and deluded Americans watch this filth.

Why does this Jewish provoked and controlled radicalism prosper?

Because unregenerate mankind desires to eat the forbidden fruit that is placed before them like their original parents Adam and Eve.
Secondly; because the Jewish owned media promotes it! Who mainly owns and controls the media? The Jews!

Early Pioneers:

NBC, both radio and television, was founded by David Sarnoff (of Ashkenazi Jew heritage) in 1926.

CBS was founded by William S Paley (of Ashkenazi Jew heritage).

ABC was founded by Leonard Goldenson (of Ashkenazi Jew heritage).

But what about today?

Read as this Jew brags about how proud he is that Jews are inherently smarter than others and that is why they control the media and our government. What most ignorant people try to deny, because they fear the Jews, the Jews themselves proudly admit. See link:

http://blogs.timesofisrael.com/jews-...rol-the-media/

And more:

http://www.simpleremember.com/arti...dia-hollywood/

https://truthtellers.org/alerts/jews...mbigmedia.html

In this next link, you will see how Jews are trained to infiltrate Wikipedia to edit anything that they perceive is against Jews or Israel. One Jew girl says, “We [the Jews] want to prove to the world we are just and right.”

http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=ikQZoR-CqTE

Are the Jews “just and right”? Not according to Jesus Christ! I can’t wait to see this girl stand before Christ when He returns and tell Him the Jews are “just and right.”

These Christ cursed people are trained to be racist, ethnocentric, and Christ haters. It's inbred in their very nature. To them they are always right, and the Gentiles are always wrong. We are Amalakites in their minds. These evil teachings come directly from their Talmud, Kabbalah, and Zohar. They have built a psychological perimeter of “claymore mines” to protect themselves. If one dares to objectively be critical of the Jews or their Christ cursed nation, or remotely in the tiniest sense mention anything they deem as hate speech, we get blown up by the “mine” and called anti-semites.
The Jew is pathologically taught from birth this “us [Jews] and them [Gentiles]” mentality.

“In the U.S. Jews have played a major role in the development of television and radio as they have in other entertainment industries. They have been well represented in all executive and technical aspects of the industry, as well as among performers” (Encyclopedia Judaica).

To access information from the Encyclopedia Judaica, go to below links.

http://www.jewishencyclopedia.com/

http://go.galegroup.com/ps/infomark.do?action=interpret&eisbn=9780028660974&prodId=GVRL&userGroupName=imcpl1111&type=aboutBook&version=1.0&authCount=1&u=imcpl1111

Also in the Judaica on its article on Motion Pictures the Judaica tells us: “Thus the majority of large Hollywood Studios were founded and controlled by Jews.”

I remember talking not long ago with an evangelical pseudo-Christian, and telling her how the Jews control the media. Of course she was of the Hagee-ite mentality and told me I was an anti-Semite. She did not even once attempt to seek truth, but was brainwashed to respond this way. It did not matter to her if I said the Jews admit this FACT!

In its article on publishing, the Judaica shows us the vast Jewish control and ownership of the media in the US and throughout the world.

The Jewish owned and controlled media moguls hire Gentile liberal biased “bobble heads” as the faces Americans see on the news for the most part. Also they employ so-called conservative “bobble heads” as long as they are pro-Israel.

In the 1983 Lichter-Rothman poll it was found that:

97% of media leaders surveyed favored abortion on demand
86% favored homosexual teachers
57% stated adultery was not wrong
75% were politically socialists
44% were agnostic or atheists

Clearly the Jewish liberal bias of the Jewish owned and controlled media is indisputable and irrefutable.
An Amillennial Understanding of the Kingdom of God

Nicholas A. Laurienzo

Chapter 45
Modern Zionism

Judaism and Zionism are not one and the same entities. Zionism (with their Gentile accomplices in the US) is the current center and nucleus of all the evil aggression in this world. Zionism is a front and cover hiding behind the religion of Judaism and the government in the US. Zionists couldn’t care less about the Jewish people as a whole, as previously shown in the links and videos supplied from Jews themselves.

Zionism is strictly a political monetary cult containing many individuals, even non-Jews, whose goals are to create hostility and destabilization throughout the world. Zionism is membered by elitist occultists who strive for economic and financial gain alone. Zionists could not care less about humanity and suffering humans experience through the manufactured CREATION of warfare. It’s all about money, control of the earth’s natural resources, control of economic enterprises, political correctness in both civil and religious arenas, and the establishment of puppet governments, which they can control throughout the world to suppress their peoples.

These evil Zionists have even dethroned the Papacy. The Papacy does not possess the power over kings and governments as in the past. That’s why even the once powerful Papacy licks Zionist’s boots and tells them they don’t need Christ for salvation. The new rulers are the blood thirsty, greedy Zionists who hide themselves behind the veneer of government. The evil Zionists preach freedom and altruistic socialistic humanitarian motives to gain your sympathy and support. They are good actors and pitchmen, but evil to the core. Our politicians (both parties) are the new priesthood of Zionism. The majority of people will listen to and believe these lying political devils.

Not only do the Zionists misrepresent Judaism as a whole, but also our Zionist politicians misrepresent the truth of real Constitutional Americanism. The world once viewed America as a beacon of light for mankind. However, the world now views America as Zionist controlled warmongering imperialists. This is what Zionist control has done to our land. This is what Papism has done in the past.

See this video of Joe Biden and what he vaguely and falsely defines as Zionism. Then he gives that phony smirk at the end and proudly proclaims he is a Zionist. As if he represents the mainstream of Jewish causes. Again, you do not need to be a Jew to join the club of devils.

http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=o0ZIJdN05QE
Now contrast what Biden, the cult Rothschild Zionist said, against these next two videos, please.

http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=P_ZiVRedU-4

http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=smTjelCzXZg

If you have viewed the last two videos you get an entirely different perspective of the problem. Don’t you? Ask yourself this: If the major medias and journalists were truly interested in truth, why don’t they let Americans listen to others in the center of the conflict with a different perspective speak on their programs? In other words, present all perspectives of the problem and let Americans decide for themselves what is truth. But the Zionists want to act as Popes and clergymen and decide for us what we should believe. Then they demonize a certain block of people that are against Zionism (as they should be) and beat the drums of war, thus sending our American men and women to shed their blood for these proxy wars. The *military industrial complex* is a HUGE business enterprise. HUGE!

Unregenerate Americans are tossed to and fro with every wind of doctrine both spiritual and political by listening to the major Zionist owned and controlled propaganda medias; as if they are going to tell the whole story in a proper and unbiased context of truth.

The peace loving Jews and Muslims, although they differ in their false gospel beliefs, know more truth about the causes of the current conflicts, than ignorant, pulpit brainwashed, pseudo-Christians in America today.

As another case in point, listen to Helen Thomas, a brave journalist, who put Joy Behar in her place. Joy Behar has no clue as to the Zionist problem. That’s why she has her own program. Joy just tows the party line.

http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=Xy_cU...eature=related

Helen like myself and millions of other people around the world know that the Zionists in Israel are not true Semites. Those Zionists are nothing more than Socialistic, atheistic, murdering, Ashkenazim Jews like their ancestors in Russia, Poland, Lithuania, and other parts of Europe. The real Semites are the Palestinians and Jews who remained in that land for the past 2,000 years and were brutally evicted from their own land.

We as God’s elect people should not only be champions for the truth of the Gospel, but be smart enough to see the truths in other areas of life also. This is especially true if we have sons or daughters in the US military. Truth is truth in all venues of life.
Eschatology not only analyzes past history, but also learns from that past to discern the present situations of conflict.

It’s easy to expose the past, because the evil men and evil political systems they controlled cannot effect harm to us in the present. But men cower in exposing present evil men and political systems because they don’t want to suffer the consequences of retribution and reprisal that they may befall.

We as Christ’s elect people, of all peoples on this earth, should be the best truth bearers in the world. Should we not?

Zionism is the New Religion in our land!

“When we (Jews) rise, there arises also our terrible power of the purse”

How much has the devil taken over our government? I could personally type the name of each Jewish Zionist and Gentile Zionist in our government, but that would take too long for sure! But in the below links you can get a pretty good idea of such control.

They the Zionist Jews have spread like locusts throughout this land.

Remember now, if you have seen the population list of Jews in the links I have supplied, you will see that the Jews are less than 2% of our population. Not all Jews of that 2% are pro-Israel Zionists. However, the pro-Israel Zionists, along with their Gentile Zionist accomplices and plethora of lobbies have taken over the land. AIPAC is a big one.

In this next video you will see our devil puppets in Washington D.C. bow to their devil Master.

http://sabbah.biz/mt/archives/2011/0...mocracy-video/

Since we can access the Encyclopedia Judaica and other Jewish sources, I have learned how overwhelming the control these anti-Christ people have over this
nation. We have been subverted by these devils without them even "firing a shot". These Zionist Jews brag and laugh at stupid Americans and mock and blaspheme our very Lord, King, and Savior Jesus Christ openly and on the media, and blind, dumb, ignorant, pulpit pimps say absolutely nothing about it. In fact, they all support these anti-Christ devils.

Our politicians cannot "fart" without approval from the Zionists. The Zionists were mass murderers in Russia, and their Communist socialist children infiltrated our land and brought socialist control. Both major parties are at the mercy of the Zionists, and are addicted to corrupt Jew FED money/dope.

http://www.jewishvirtuallibrary.org/...obamajews.html

http://www.jewishvirtuallibrary.org/.../obamatoc.html

Israel controls our Domestic and Foreign policies. This is like living in 12th to 15th century Europe when the Papacy controlled the religion and politics of the nations through her evil tyranny.

Today if anyone speaks against the "New Papacy of Zionism" or a Jew, it's "anathema". We have been psychologically induced to believe that being anti-Israel is somehow being anti-God, or anti-American. The thought police have done their job and gullible Americans have swallowed the lies hook, line and sinker. But it still boils down to fear of the Jews (Jn. 7:13).

http://www.councilforthenationalinte...ll-us-policies

http://sabbah.biz/mt/archives/tag/americans/

http://www.informationclearinghouse....ticle32805.htm

http://www.haaretz.com/news/features...burden-1.14110

With the age of the Internet, there is no excuse to be non-informed. Our Zionist politicians already have legislation attempting to control the flow of information accessed on the Internet. This is a massive effort on their part to censor free speech.

http://news.cnet.com/8301-1023_3-574...ernet-control/

When the majority of non-Zionist Jews themselves, not only in America but also in Israel, speak out against Zionist brutality and Zionist control, this cannot be dismissed as something coming only from white racist or radical religious groups. Facts are facts and I have supplied a boatload.
By supplying Jewish sources, Jewish people, Jewish encyclopedias, you tube videos, I have exposed the inherent corruption of our media and government. But most importantly, at the start of this Jew section, I have used the VERY WORDS OF GOD HIMSELF, both OT and NT, to expose these anti-Christ devils.

See links for more proof. This is only a tiny sliver of what is available:

http://sabbah.biz/mt/archives/2012/10/24/jewish-oligarchy-running-ruining-america/


http://www.subvertednation.net/jew-lies-in-government/


http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=qzcu1ny7o4g

I am not a lone wolf in this struggle

Illustrated Sunday Herald February 8, 1920, page 5

Mr. Churchill’s authorship of this article has been authenticated by one of the world’s leading Churchill bibliographers, Richard Heinzkill, of the University of Eugene, Oregon.

“SOME people like Jews and some do not; but no thoughtful man can doubt the fact that they are beyond all question the most formidable and the most remarkable race which has ever appeared in the world.

And it may well be that this same astounding race may at the present time be in the actual process of producing another system of morals and philosophy, as malevolent as Christianity was benevolent, which, if not arrested would shatter irretrievably all that Christianity has rendered possible. It would almost seem as if the gospel of Christ and the gospel of Antichrist were destined to originate among the same people; and that this mystic and mysterious race had been
chosen for the supreme manifestations, both of the divine and the diabolical” (Winston Churchill).

“Therefore a Christian should be content and not argue with the Jews. But if you have to or want to talk with them, do not say any more than this: ‘Listen, Jew, are you aware that Jerusalem and your sovereignty, together with your temple and priesthood, have been destroyed for over 1,460 years?’ For this year, which we Christians write as the year 1542 since the birth of Christ, is exactly 1,468 years, going on fifteen hundred years, since Vespasian and Titus destroyed Jerusalem and expelled the Jews from the city. Let the Jews bite on this nut and dispute this question as long as they wish.

For such ruthless wrath of God is sufficient evidence that they assuredly have erred and gone astray. Even a child can comprehend this. For one dare not regard God as so cruel that he would punish his own people so long, so terribly, so unmercifully, and in addition keep silent, comforting them neither with words nor with deeds, and fixing no time limit and no end to it. Who would have faith, hope, or love toward such a God? Therefore this work of wrath is proof that the Jews, surely rejected by God, are no longer his people, and neither is he any longer their God. This is in accord with Hosea 1:9, ‘Call his name Not my people, for you are not my people and I am not your God.’ Yes, unfortunately, this is their lot, truly a terrible one. They may interpret this as they will; we see the facts before our eyes, and these do not deceive us” (Martin Luther).

“The Jews were behind all the persecutions of the Christians. They wandered through the country everywhere hating and undermining the Christian faith” (Justin Martyr, 116 A.D.).

“The Jews formed the breeding ground of all anti-Christian actions” (Tertullian, 160 – 230 A.D.).

“Henceforth no Jew, no matter under what name, will be allowed to remain here without my written permission. I know of no other troublesome pest within the state than this race, which impoverished the people by their fraud, usury and money-lending and commits all deeds which an honorable man despises. Subsequently they have to be removed and excluded from here as much as possible” (Maria Theresa, Queen of Hungary and Bohemia, 1771 – 1789).

Diderot, Denis, 18th century French scholar. His famous ENCYCLOPEDIE, the bible of the pre-revolutionary French “enlightenment,” has often been complained of by Jewish writers as “anti-Semitic”. Some of Diderot’s other writings are likewise unfriendly: “And you, angry and brutish people, vile and vulgar men, slaves worthy of the yoke [Talmudism] which you bear ... Go, take back your books and remove yourselves from me. (LA MOISADE) [The Talmud] taught the Jews to steal the goods of Christians, to regard them as savage beasts, to push them over the precipice ... to kill them with impunity and to utter every morning
the most horrible imprecations against them” (JUIFS).

“No obstacle discourages them; they persevere throughout the world, throughout the centuries, the unity of their race. The Talmud has given them a powerful organization which modern progress has been unable to change. Deep, ineradicable hatred of everything that is not Jewish stimulates them in war which they wage against Christian Society, which is too divided to be able to fight with the necessary energy” (F. Trocase in Jewish Austria).

“The Jews form a state, and, obeying their own laws, they evade those of their host country. The Jews always consider an oath regarding a Christian not binding. During the Campaign of 1812 the Jews were spies, they were paid by both sides, they betrayed both sides” (Count Helmuth Von Moltke, Prussian general).

“[Jews]... hate the name of Christ and have a secret and innate rancor against the people among whom they live” (Francis Bacon, 16th century British writer, politician; in his The New Atlantis).

“Therefore know, my dear Christians, that next to the Devil, you have no more bitter, more poisonous, more vehement an enemy than a real Jew who earnestly desires to be a Jew. There may be some among them who believe what the cow or the goose believes. But all of them are surrounded with their blood and circumcision” (Martin Luther).

“They [the Jews] work more effectively against us, than the enemy’s armies. They are a hundred times more dangerous to our liberties and the great cause we are engaged in... It is much to be lamented that each state, long ago, has not hunted them down as pest to society and the greatest enemies we have to the happiness of America” (“Maxims of George Washington”, by A. A. Appleton & Co.).

“The Jews who have arrived would nearly all like to remain here, but learning that they (with their customary usury and deceitful trading with the Christians) were very repugnant to the inferior magistrates, as also to the people having the most affection for you; the Deaconry also fearing that owing to their present indigence they might become a charge in the coming winter, we have, for the benefit of this weak newly developing place and land in general, deemed it useful to require them in a friendly way to depart; praying also most seriously in this connection, for ourselves also for the general community of your worships, that the deceitful race - such hateful enemies and blasphemers of the name of Christ - not be allowed further to infect and trouble this new colony” (Letter to the Amsterdam Chamber of the Dutch West India Company, from New Amsterdam, September 22, 1654, Peter Styvesant, 17th century Dutch governor in America).
“Dispersed as the Jews are, they still form one nation, foreign to the land they live in” ....... Thomas Jefferson (D. Boorstin, THE AMERICANS; Thomas Jefferson, 18th century American statesman).

“There is no need to be delicate on this Jewish question. You must face them in this country. The Jew should be satisfied here. I was here forty-seven years ago; your doors were thrown open and you were then free. Now he has got you absolutely by the throat - that is their reward” (New York speech, October 30, 1937; Henry H Beamesh, 20th century British publisher).

“They are the great moneylenders and loan contractors of the world... The consequence is that the nations of the world are groaning under heavy systems of taxation and national debt. They have ever been the greatest enemies of freedom. (Speech in the House of Lords, July 12,1858; Lord Harrington 19th century British statesman, who opposed admission of Jewish immigrants to England).

“Jews can destroy by means of finance. Jews are International. Control of credits in this country is not in the hands of the English, but of Jews. It has become the biggest danger the British Empire ever had to face” (Walter Crick, British Manufacturer, in the NORTHAMPTON DAILY ECHO, March 19, 1925).

“WORLD FAMOUS MEN of the past accused the Jews of founding Communism. This charge is well founded. The Communist philosophy was drawn up by Karl Marx who descended from a long line of Rabbis. His ideology of anti-Christian and Socialist thought is outlined in the Jewish ‘TALMUD’ which is the ‘bible’ of the Jews. Of the four political groups which overthrew the Christian Czar of Russia two were 100% Jewish. They were the Mensheviks and The Jewish Bund. The other two were the Socialist Revolutionary Party and the Bolsheviks. Both were headed by Jews but had some Gentile members. Today we now know that Lenin was Jewish and all of the leaders of his first government were Jews. They were Trotsky, Zinoviev, Kamenev and Sverdlow. The wealthiest Jewish banker in the world at that time, Jacob Schiff of Kuhn, Loeb investment bank of New York City, gave Trotsky and Lenin $20 million to overthrow the Czar and establish the Soviet tyranny” (according to the “NEW YORK JOURNAL-AMERICAN” of February 3, 1949).

“Marx is a Jew and is surrounded by a crowd of little, more or less intelligent, scheming, agile, speculating Jews, just as Jews are everywhere, commercial and banking agents, writers, politicians, correspondents for newspapers of all shades; in short, literary brokers, just as they are financial brokers, with one foot in the bank and the other in the socialist movement, and their arses sitting upon the German press. They have grabbed hold of all newspapers, and you can imagine what a nauseating literature is the outcome of it.
“Now this entire Jewish world, which constitutes an exploiting sect, a people of leeches, a voracious parasite, Marx feels an instinctive inclination and a great respect for the Rothschilds. This may seem strange. What could there be in common between communism and high finance? Ho ho! The communism of Marx seeks a strong state centralization, and where this exists there must inevitably exist a state central bank, and where this exists, there the parasitic Jewish nation, which speculates upon the labor of the people, will always find the means for its existence...

“In reality, this would be for the proletariat a barrack regime, under which the workingmen and the working closely and intimately connected with one another, regardless not only of frontiers but of political differences as well - this Jewish world is today largely at the disposal of Marx or Rothschild. I am sure that, on the one hand, the Rothschilds appreciate the merits of Marx, and that on the other hand, women, converted into a uniform mass, would rise, fall asleep, work and live at the beat of the drum; the privilege of ruling would be in the hands of the skilled and the learned, with a wide scope left for profitable crooked deals carried on by the Jews, who would be attracted by the enormous extension of the international speculations of the national banks...” (PolÇmique contres les Juifs, BAKUNYN, MIKHYL, 19th century Russian revolutionary).

As one can clearly see from the annals of history, from God’s very own lips, and down through the ages, from men of all generations to this present day, the Jews are the most corrupt breed of people on this planet. There is a clear silver lining that connects all of these statements. The Jew is a master of greed, deception, fraud, and every utter perversion as taught in their Babylonian Talmud, Kabbalah, and Zohar.

Some, ignorant as they may be, have over the years tried to dissuade my course against exposing the criminality of the JEW Federal Reserve Board and the Zionist Jews themselves that have ruined this great land of ours and to this day have finally achieved its devilish goal of complete Socialist control of our government and nation. However, they have failed to alter my course; and by God’s Grace will continue to fail in their efforts.

We are NOW the United Slaves States of Zionist Israel. If only our politicians would remove their “US Flag” lapel pins and replace them with the pin of “David’s occult Star”, they would show more honesty as to this reality.
History screams volumes against these evil Christ killers. Oh, but I guess these men of the past, myself, and God Himself are all to be considered anti-Semites and conspiracy nuts. Please give me a break!

This ends our section on the beastly growth of apostasy and false prophets during the millennium to the present day.

My brethren, there is no need to fear the anti-Christ forces of evil in this world presently, whether they are Pseudo-Christian, Zionist, Judaic, Islamic, or even the cursed country of Israel and its evil allies.

Our Lord has everything under His control. He has given these evil men and governments the illusion of power, might, and force to eventually destroy themselves; and this they will do!

Although the evil Zionists and their allies strive for a universal “New World Order”, this I believe will not be achieved. The world at large with their countries and governments are rapidly re-aligning themselves.

Israel is no doubt the “key”. The countries of this world are either going to be with Israel or against Israel. This is the present “Litmus Test”.

Israel of old; sinful mortal men, started this dog-fight against God Almighty in the Old Testament which culminated in crucifying Jesus Christ. This was an open act of aggression and hostility against God Almighty! Israel was the first to apostatize against God. She was the first, and she shall be the last whom God finally sets His vengeance upon for she is the “Mother of Harlots” and all that is vile and abominable in this world. Her Babylonian Talmud, Kabbalah and Zohar show her to be “Babylon The Great”, and the “Synagogue of Satan”. Islam and pseudo-Christianity, represented by the Papacy and her ecumenical allies, are Israel's vile and wretched spiritual daughters who have also polluted this earth.

Devils and reprobates will never ever unilaterally unite peacefully amongst themselves. They are a house divided against themselves which will not stand. We as Christ’s elect people know this for sure. As long as this earth remains, the mighty hand of God will always protect us His elect chosen people in Christ.

Ps. 23: “Jehovah is my shepherd; I shall not want. 2 He maketh me to lie down in green pastures; He leadeth me beside still waters. 3 He restoreth my soul: He guideth me in the paths of righteousness for his name's sake. 4 Yea, thou I walk through the valley of the shadow of death, I will fear no evil; for thou art with me; Thy rod and thy staff, they comfort me. 5 Thou preparest a table before me in the presence of mine enemies: Thou hast anointed my head with oil; My cup runneth over. 6 Surely goodness and lovingkindness shall follow me all the days of my life; And I shall dwell in the house of Jehovah for ever.” “... Lo, I am with you always, even unto the end of the world. Amen” (Mt. 28:20).
Chapter 46
The Mark And Name Of The Beast

At the start of Revelation chapter 13, we saw the formation of two distinct beasts that derived their God given authority from the “Dragon” Satan. One political and the other religious in nature whom reprobate mankind must worship. Reprobates of this world cannot, and will never see, nor understand the true Gospel, the true Christ and His Kingdom, for God has blinded them.

“… the whole earth wondered after the beast;” Re. 13:3 (ASV)

God, being Sovereign in all the affairs of the Dragon (Satan) and his political and religious beasts, has caused reprobate men to establish many different forms of governments and ecclesiastical institutions, including pseudo-Christian ones, that work in tandem for the sole sake of rebellion against God almighty and His Christ.

These beasts are given authority by God through Satan their master to speak great blasphemies against God, His name, and His elect souls who are the tabernacle of God on earth and in heaven.

Re. 13:8 "And all that dwell on the earth shall worship him [Satan], every one whose name hath not been written from the foundation of the world in the book of life of the Lamb that hath been slain."

There are no exceptions to the above verse, there is no “common grace” as wicked men teach, there is no favor of any sort on God's part towards reprobate humanity. ALL reprobate men shall worship Satan and his beasts. Only those elect souls whose names are written in the book of life shall be given eternal life, regeneration, the Holy Spirit, wisdom, eyes to see and ears to hear the truth of Christ and the Gospel, and be made aware of the enemies of Christ and His Kingdom.

We have taken an historical tour of past ages up to this very day to show the growth of apostasy and rebellion against God/Jesus Christ and His Gospel. From wicked reprobate Christ killing, Christ rejecting, children of the devil Jews/Israel, through the “fathers” of pseudo-Christian religion, to the false gospel messengers of the past and our day, and Islam, the main two daughters of whoring Israel. We also have seen the evil effects of this evil union of religion and state: war, hatred, blood shedding, inquisition, torture, wickedness, and all manner of ungodliness. False Christs/Gospels plague this world. This Satanic lust and thirst for power,
wealth, and control over the souls of mankind is unquenchable.

Corrupt governments hide beneath the cloak of religion to deceive mankind as to their true evil motives. And likewise, religion rides the back of government to achieve her wicked ends also. Reprobate mankind has no clue to the evil that confronts them, for God hath blinded them.

Re. 13:12 “And he exerciseth all the authority of the first beast in his sight. And he maketh the earth and them dwell therein to worship the first beast, whose death-stroke was healed.”

The religious beast in accord with the political beast has been given full course and authority to cause reprobate men to worship and trust in the machinery of governments for their sustenance and safety instead of Christ as the only ultimate source of ALL blessings.

The religious beast has a definite interwoven relation to the first beast. He exercises his authority in the sight, presence, and behalf of, as a willing servant of the first beast. Therefore, the purpose of this religious beast lies in the service of the first beast (governmental). This service becomes apparent, for the second beast causes and deceives the inhabitants of the world to wonder after the first beast, admiring and worshiping him.

The first beast cannot independently exist, and cannot exercise his authority, and would not be worshiped without the aiding and abetting of the second beast. Again, Satan drives both beasts. The second beast exists and works for the goal of establishing full power and might to the first beast.

The religious beast, rather than publicly condemning the evil activities of the political beast, not only encourages evil activities, but designs even more evil activities for the first beast to achieve for mutual interests.

Re. 13:13 “And he doeth great signs, that he should even make fire to come down out of heaven upon the earth in the sight of men.”

God has given the religious beast through Satan its head and false ministers, great powers of deception to subdue reprobate mankind.

Satan, with his religious and political controlled systems, attempts to imitate God and Jesus Christ.

As fire from heaven denotes God’s judgments (Ge. 19:24; 2 K. 1:10, 12, 14; 1 Chr. 21:26; 2 Chr. 7:1; Jb. 1:16), the pseudo religious beast acts as a mediator between God and man to falsely and deceptively speak for God as, for example, the binding and loosing of God’s judgments on earth (political) and upon mankind’s souls (spiritual). Also, coercing the machinery of government to bring
ruin, warfare, bloodshed, misery and death upon the ignorant and gullible masses. History past and present proves this!

Re. 13:14 “And he [the religious beast] deceiveth them [reprobates] that dwell on the earth by reason of the signs which it was given him to do in the sight of the [political] beast; saying to them [reprobates] that dwell on the earth, that they should make an image to the beast who hath the stroke of the sword and lived.”

Because reprobate mankind both Jew and Gentile (goyim) rejects the cross of Jesus Christ, as Israel and Rome exhibited in 33 AD, they have ultimately rejected Christ's Kingdom and rule.

“But they cried out, Away with him, away with him, crucify him. Pilate saith unto them, Shall I crucify your King? The chief priests answered, We have no king but Caesar” (Jn. 19:15).

Reprobate men, starting with Israel and throughout the centuries to this current day, at the behest of their clerical leaders, are encouraged to construct the most powerful nations on this earth as a tool to replace and dethrone the Sovereign creator God. These powerful nations are indicative of the Golden Image of Nebuchadnezzar's day. Consequently Rome, who symbolize every foul stench of rebellion against God, Jesus Christ our King, and elect souls, sets up clerical leaders to deceive men away from Christ the King, only to lead men astray by trusting in government, politicians and themselves of course, who are none other than sinful, mortal, and rebellious men.

Re. 13:15 “And it was given unto him to give breath to it, even to the image to the beast, that the image of the beast should both speak, and cause that as many as should not worship the image of the beast should be killed.”

The evil part that religion plays in regard to government has been shown many times in this overall study. The spiritual precedence of this wickedness post-Christ was when Israel continued to coerce Imperial Rome and most notably Nero to launch an all out assault/persecution on Christ's people. Thus, apostate religious Israel set a precedence for the lamb-like pseudo-Christian (Judaized Christianity) beast to continue in Israel's footsteps to use the machinery of government to persecute the saints of God and mankind in general who will not acquiesce.

Encouraging totalitarian and despotic governments to act on behalf of religious clerics is symbolically described as giving this beastly governmental image the power to speak on behalf of God. In other words, governments of mere mortal men allied with religious clerics set the rules of what is to be considered acceptable belief, speech, and practice in Satan's beastly society without regard to God's truth.
Censorship, thought-police tactics, what they define and consider as hate speech, anti-government speech and control over the consciences of men are but examples of some exercises of the speaking governmental beast.

Throughout history as previously shown, there are peaks and valleys of persecution against true elect saints, and throughout different parts of this world. However the ultimate goal of the governmental beast allied with the religious beast is to establish total submission of the soul and conscience, either through direct force, shunning, profiling, blacklisting, imprisonment, or death.

These evil goals are achieved through fear of government, clerics, Jews, and currently "worldwide terrorism". These are fears that reprobate men will always retain, but in no way reflects the attitudes of God's regenerate elect. Why? This is because we the elect fear no mortal men, nor their evil governments and ecclesiastical systems. We trust and reverence Jesus Christ alone, our true King and ruler. Our strength comes from God the Father, Son, and Holy Spirit.

"And they overcame him by the blood of the Lamb, and by the word of their testimony; and they loved not their lives unto the death."

What is the historical realization of the second beast, the false lamb-like prophet beast?

The beast as a whole does not represent a single person or a single individual. In fact, doing so limits the abilities of our minds to discern the universal spiritual dimensional implications of evil manifestations. The first beast (governmental) does not simply refer to an individual king, emperor or governor, although many in past history and today could easily fit the bill, but also refers to the kingdom or world-power under the influence of that corrupt beastly government.

The religious beast does not represent a single individual, but rather all the power of false philosophy, false science, and false Christian religion combined; the total apostate syncretistic philosophies of ALL religions absorbed into the ecumenical and syncretistic pseudo-Christian religious mind.

Reprobates shall all share similar ideas about rebellious things. The false prophet's religion shall embrace all heretical things. Through ecumenism and syncretism, all creeds, all denominations, and all sects have been blended and united into one evil spiritual nature, rebelling against the true Gospel of Jesus Christ, hoping that there shall be no more strife and ecclesiastical contention. Even the vermin Jews of today and other false religions have been dismissed from their need of the Gospel in an attempt to unify all men politically and religiously.

This evil union of the two beasts promulgate that Jesus Christ is not the only way, but just one of many paths that lead to the “higher power”.

636
The religious beast today, in unison with the political beast, possesses a rebellious universal creed, attempting to lay down the precepts and principles for every sphere of life. They govern the principles for our home life through bureaucratic socialism. They are warring and killing throughout the world to achieve totalitarian principles for the life of society and for the life of all nations. They enforce the rules for religious life, telling all men how they must worship and what they must worship. The 501c3 governmental laws are but one example of governmental beastly control in our wicked and cursed USA.

Reprobates have already arrived at a new system of thought and religion, their new creed, universal in scope, with their new god. Their new god is the beast, a great world power, which all reprobates will admire, adore, worship and for whom all shall erect this ungodly image, in order that they may worship the same. However we, Christ's elect, like Daniel, Shadrach, and Abednego will not bow to this “Image of the beast”. That's for sure and by God's Grace!

Why is it absolutely essential to understand the full and complete implications of Christ's deity?

Why is it absolutely essential to understand the full and complete implications of Gospel Justification?

Why is it absolutely essential to understand the full and complete implications of symmetrical Election and Reprobation?

Why is it absolutely essential to understand the full and complete implications of God's complete and total Sovereignty over all the affairs of the created order?

Without the knowledge and understanding of the above, everything that concerns eschatology past, present, and future will be chopped up and compartmentalized into childlike and overly sensational futuristic imaginary stories and myths that divert, cloud, and confound the mind as to the complete reality of Satan's present kingdom and his anti-Christ/God reprobate children that not only have existed from the dawn of creation and will continue to exist till the consummation, but more specifically have been revealed to us, Christ's elect through the clear revelation of two distinct antithetical kingdoms post Calvary. The Kingdom of Jesus Christ, with Jesus being the head and King of His elect people/ekklesia, and the kingdom of Anti-Christ, with Satan being the head and ruler over his reprobate damned souls who both politically and ecclesiastically have united creating “the image of the beast” to bring havoc upon mankind and war against the truth of Christ.

“For we wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this world, against spiritual wickedness in high places” (Ep. 6:12).
The ever-present reality of Satan's kingdom was just as much alive in Paul and John's day as it is in our day. We saints, belonging to the King and His Kingdom, find our conflict against spiritual enemies of the Gospel no matter what political (beast) and ecclesiastical (beast) system they adhere to.

We that have been elected/chosen and hence born into the Kingdom of Christ/God/Heaven need not concern ourselves with micro-chip implants, biometrics, bar-codes, technological ID systems, social security cards/numbers, tattoos on our hands or foreheads and such nonsense. These things have absolutely nothing to do with whom God has already determined (marked out/sealed) from before the creation of the world that should be His and those who are not His.

Some so-called ministers have stated that possessing a social security card and number is equivalent to possessing the mark of the beast. What utter nonsense!

There are other valid reasons to be concerned with such things as micro-chip implants, but these reasons have nothing to do with the “Mark of the beast” and the eternal destiny of a soul.

How do we saints war against Satan/Dragon and his beasts? What is our battle gear?

Ep. 6:13 “Wherefore take up the whole armor of God, that ye may be able to withstand in the evil day, and, having done all, to stand.

Do we saints drive over to the local ecclesiastical supermarket and buy this literal physical armor to wear during our warfare against Satan's beasts? No! This is symbolic language used in an epistle. So why should some think that the “Mark of the beast” is physical/literal rather than symbolic depicting spiritual realities when read in an apocalyptic letter?

Ep. 6:14-18 “14 Stand therefore, having girded your loins with truth, and hav-
ing put on the breastplate of righteousness, [Justification] 15 and having shod your feet with the preparation of the gospel of peace; 16 withal taking up the shield of faith [alone], wherewith ye shall be able to quench all the fiery darts of the evil one. 17 And take the helmet of salvation, and the sword of the Spirit, which is the word of God: 18 with all prayer and supplication praying at all seasons in the Spirit, and watching thereunto in all perseverance and supplication for all the saints,"

Understanding the spiritual meaning and implications behind the symbolism of words gives us a broader spiritual picture and not just an overly literalistic limited understanding.

“15 And it was given unto him [Satan's religious false prophet beast] to give breath [pseudo-life] to it [Satan's political beast], even to the image to the beast, that the image of the beast should both speak, and cause that as many as should not worship the image of the beast should be killed.”

“Give Breath”

We know and understand that only God can bring life to a soul (Ge. 2:7). However Satan and his reprobate religious clergy children are depicted symbolically as having been given deceptive powers to conceive and create life. In the above verse this "image of the beast" (symbolic) is an audacious creation, union, and compilation of two evil essences merged into one image that is political and religious in its evil nature of philosophical, ideological, religious, and political views.

The image of the beast now empowered with the evil pseudo life force of pseudo-religious philosophy speaks on behalf of both wicked beastly entities.

To not bow, worship, and believe in this evil corrupt image spelled death. Fear and intimidation are weapons used by these two beasts and their "image".

Is only physical death in view here?

I personally do not think so. Although many of our brothers and sisters in Christ suffered physical death at the hands of the beastly "image" in the past and even today in some parts of this world, hatred and retribution from the hearts of reprobates (including false Christians) against Christ’s people is essentially the same as “killing”. Why, even if one looks upon another woman to lust after her without actual physical intercourse, Jesus said one “hath committed adultery with her already in his heart” (Mt. 5:28). Hatred towards Christ’s saints who uphold the true Gospel of His Kingdom is equivalent to killing them.

Re. 13:16 “16 And he [the image] causeth all, the small and the great, and the rich and the poor, and the free and the bond, that there be given them a mark on their right hand, or upon their forehead; 17 and that no man should be able
to buy or to sell, save he that hath the mark, even the name of the beast or the number of his name.

“18 [ASV] Here is wisdom. He that hath understanding, let him count the number of the beast; for it is the number of a man: and his number is Six hundred and sixty and six.

“18 [KNOX] Here is room for discernment; let the reader, if he has the skill, cast up the sum of the figures in the beast’s name, after our human fashion, and the number will be six hundred and sixty-six.”

The “MARK” of the beast is mentioned eight times in the book of Revelation:

Re. 13:16-18 “And he causeth all, both small and great, rich and poor, free and bond, to receive a MARK in their right hand, or in their foreheads; and that no man might buy or sell, save he that had the MARK, or the name of the beast, or the number of his name. Here is wisdom. Let him that hath understanding count the number of the beast: for it is the number of a man; and his number is Six hundred three-score and six.”

Re. 14:9-10 "9 And the third angel followed them, saying with a loud voice, If any man worship the beast and his image, and receive his MARK in his forehead, or in his hand 10 they, too, will drink the wine of God’s fury, which has been poured full strength into the cup of his wrath. They will be tormented with burning sulfur in the presence of the holy angels and of the Lamb."

Re. 14:11 “And the smoke of their torment ascendeth up for ever and ever: and they have no rest day nor night, who worship the beast and his image, and whosoever receiveth the MARK of his name.”

Re. 15:2 “And I saw as it were a sea of glass mingled with fire: and them that had gotten the victory over the beast, and over his image, and over his MARK, and over the number of his name, stand on the sea of glass, having the harps of God.”

Re. 16:2 “And the first went, and poured out his vial upon the earth; and there fell a noisome and grievous sore upon the men which had the MARK of the beast, and upon them which worshipped his image.”

Re. 19:20 “And the beast was taken, and with him the false prophet that wrought miracles before him, with which he deceived them that had received the MARK of the beast, and them that worshipped his image. These both were cast alive into a lake of fire burning with brimstone.”
Re. 20:4 “And I saw thrones, and they sat upon them, and judgment was given unto them: and I saw the souls of them that were beheaded for the witness of Jesus, and for the word of God, and which had not worshipped the beast, neither his image, neither had received his MARK upon their foreheads, or in their hands; and they lived and reigned with Christ a thousand years.”

From these verses we understand that there are three characteristics that the beast causes the people to receive.

*The Mark
*The Name
*The Number

All three are illustrative (symbolic) of these people being brought into league or association with him. These people are caused to receive the MARK through deception and belief in a false Gospel/Justification, which in turn leads them astray to believe many other falsehoods, hence submitting their souls to Satan and his beastly image.

Notice how the mark is personally associated or representative of the beasts, the image, and the anti-Christ dragon/Satan beneath it all.

Re. 14:9 “his mark”
Re. 14:11 “mark of his name”
Re. 16:2 “the mark of the beast”

Apparently the MARK is symbolic, associated or representative of the beast and his name. There are none that could buy or sell [more on this upcoming] except those who had received the mark, name or number of the beast. The symbolic imagery of them receiving these things is to signify their association with the beast/devil. The MARK is to signify Satan’s ownership of them. The NAME is to signify they are part of his family. And the NUMBER is to signify their reprobate manhood and lot or part with the beast. Those people who receive these signs spiritually have openly united themselves with the “Great Apostasy” and are now deceived into worshiping the image or likeness of the beastly image that was conceived during the lives of the Apostles and continues to the consummation.

Let’s ask ourselves a pertinent question:

Can an elect soul ever receive the mark, number, and name of the beast?

I say, NO! NO! NO!

If it were possible for an elect person to receive the mark, then according to
Scripture, the elect would receive harsh punishment and damnation. However, we who are sealed in Christ know it is impossible for us to be under any damnation at all.

Re. 14:10-11 “10 They will drink the wine of God’s fury...full strength into the cup of his wrath. 11 They will be tormented with burning sulfur in the presence of the holy angels and of the Lamb. And the smoke of their torment ascendeth up for ever and ever: and they have no rest day nor night,”

Re. 16:2 “… and there fell a noisome and grievous sore upon the men which had the MARK of the beast, and upon them which worshipped his image.”

However, since the elect of Christ can never be part of the damned, we will, by God’s effectual Grace, overcome the beast and his image as our elect brothers and sisters in Christ of past ages have done. That’s for sure!

We the elect of God are sealed and marked with the Holy Spirit of God.

Re. 7:3 “Saying, Hurt not the earth, neither the sea, nor the trees, till we have sealed the servants of our God in their foreheads.”

Re. 14:1 “Then I looked, and there before me was the Lamb, standing on Mount Zion, and with him 144,000 who had His name [Jesus Christ the Lamb] and his Father’s name written on their foreheads.”

Every time I shave in the morning I do not see a literal name or seal written on my forehead. Nor do I need some barcode or ID card to officially associate myself with Christ’s Kingdom and His ownership of me. But I do understand and wholeheartedly believe with FULL ASSURANCE that Christ and the Father hath written and sealed in my mind/heart the Gospel of my salvation/justification. See also 2 Corinthians 1:22, and Ephesians 1:13 and 4:30.

For John the Apostle, employing symbolic and figurative language to communicate spiritual realities in “Revelation”, was nothing new. Nor was it some mysterious esoteric “code” for men to unlock. John’s usage of the word “MARK” finds its origins in the Old Testament and was a rather customary linguistic way for humans to communicate. As stated previously, the MARK of the beast in context symbolically signifies ownership and relation to Satan’s beast and his kingdom.

To “MARK” something can also denote the idea of protection.

Ge. 4:15 “And the Lord said to him, Therefore whoever slays Cain, vengeance shall be taken on him sevenfold. And the Lord set a mark upon Cain, lest any finding him should kill him.”

The (symbolic) “marking” of Cain was God's way of denoting protection in this
context. God did not literally tattoo Cain’s forehead.

Ezekiel Chapter 9 speaks of a “mark” of God on the foreheads of the righteous. This parallels the “mark” (also called “seal”) of God seen in the book of Revelation verses 7:3 and 9:4.

Eze. 9:4-6 “4 And the LORD said unto him, Go through the midst of the city, through the midst of Jerusalem, and set a mark upon the foreheads of the men that sigh and that cry for all the abominations that be done in the midst thereof. 5 And to the others he said in mine hearing, Go ye after him through the city, and smite: let not your eye spare, neither have ye pity: 6 Slay utterly old and young, both maids, and little children, and women: but come not near any man upon whom is the mark; and begin at my sanctuary. Then they began at the ancient men which were before the house.”

Satan being the antithesis of Jesus Christ and not in absolute power, was given reprobate human souls to do his bidding on earth. These damned souls carry his Mark, Name, and Number.

Man is not some “free-will” neutral being with two opposing forces sitting on his shoulders; Christ on the right shoulder and Satan on the left, both begging and pleading for loyalty, hoping they can convince man to exercise his alleged “free” choice.

The “Mark” on the forehead signifies ownership and control over the minds of the reprobate. The “Mark” on the right hand signifies favor and action on the part of Satan’s minions.

This is Satan’s way of being antithetical to Christ’s kingdom, thus imitating Christ/God.

God’s “right hand” of action:

“Thy right hand, O LORD, is become glorious in power: thy right hand, O LORD, hath dashed in pieces the enemy” (Ex. 15:6).

God’s withdrawal of favor/protection:

“In fierce anger he has cut off every horn of Israel. He has withdrawn his right hand at the approach of the enemy. He has burned in Jacob like a flaming fire that consumes everything around it” (Lam 2:3).

Reprobates do Satan’s bidding as if it were by his own right hand. They are in servitude to him, under his authority, and they do his will. They must! They were created as vessels of dishonor.
The forehead is where the mind is, and is illustrative of man’s thinking. Giving us spiritual images of elect believers with the name of God written in their foreheads, it is revealed their minds are sealed in Christ Jesus so that their thoughts and faith in the Gospel become one with His. Believers all share one mind in faith alone in the Gospel alone as they are all sealed and secured of the Spirit in Christ. As opposed to Satan’s reprobate minions who are also sealed/marked, and have one mind of rebellion against the Gospel and Christ’s kingdom.

What does the “NAME” of the beast signify?

The idea of many authors and writers of eschatology is that “The name of the beast” refers to a singular particular name that a singular particular man is given. Or, some have arrived at the name of a country, or name of a particular office that identifies the beast. Plus, this enigmatic name is concealed in some form of code numbers to be unlocked. They rack their brains using different forms of “Gematria” using different languages (Hebrew, Greek, Latin, etc.) and assign different numbers to correspond with different letters to identify this singular man, country, or office.

Some tell us that because of persecution, John the Apostle identified this single demonic individual but was cautious to not explicitly write his name down and encoded the name. Hence throughout the centuries through the use of “Gematria”, men have arrived at names such as:

Nero, Domitian, Lateinos, or Latin, Vicarius filii dei, Hitler, Stalin, George Bush, Gorbachev, Barrack Obama, Henry Kissinger, certain Popes, certain Islamic leaders, certain Jews, certain Hindu leaders, etc., and the list goes on for miles depending on what ax you want to grind.

We do not need to use “Gematria” to understand that ALL Christ/Gospel rejecters (not one single man) are part of the kingdom of Satan and his beasts, thus sharing his mark, name, and number.

The Scriptures many times use symbolic language, metaphoric language, and figures of speech. However, understanding what the name and number of the beast signifies is altogether different than using Gematria to unlock a code name. John the Apostle was not a Gnostic Kabbalist.

Gematria codes are not scriptural, validated or used anywhere.

Before continuing to explain what the name and number of the beast signifies, let’s look briefly at the origins of Gematria.

Gematria is an ancient gnostic occult numerical system that is used by Kabbalists and has now been widely accepted throughout beastly pseudo-Christianity, especially in Charismatic, Pentecostal, Evangelical sects, and the “Hebrew
roots movement” cults. The Jews in their apostasy learned this practice centuries before Christ.

Below are a few of the many links on the subject:

http://web.eecs.utk.edu/~mclennan/BA/SNHIG.html

http://www.seekgod.ca/bradscott3.htm

http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Gematria

http://www.masoncode.com/

http://www.myjewishlearning.com/beliefs/Issues/Magic_and_the_Supernatural/Practices_and_Beliefs/Incantations/Names_and_Numbers/gematria.shtml

The name of the beast signifies the family association that those who receive it have to their evil king. Those receiving the name of the beast are associated with the spirit of antichrist (Satan) who rules over them. His name signifies the spiritual character of the beast, which people/mankind that are deceived are part of. In the same way, the name of Christ signifies that we, as His children, receive the characteristics of Christ, and are of His family.

A name in scripture is often a word or title denoting certain aspects, traits, or family relationship.

Some names demonstrate genealogical, typological or a systematic relationship. A name is a word or title by which a person or thing is known that distinguishes him or it from another.

In this case, the children of the beast are distinguished from the children of the Lamb just as the kingdom of Satan is distinguished from the Kingdom of God/Christ. The name of the beast illustrates its character grouping, which is reprobation and carnality.

Since Satan and Dragon, which are but names of this evil one, are the source of both beasts political, religious [false prophets], and the Image, we can find in scripture many different words that are descriptive characteristics that represent Satan and his kingdom. Since reprobate men appropriate the Mark, Name and Number of the beast they exhibit familial traits of wickedness and rebellion against Christ and His people.

Let's look at some NAME examples:

Re. 9:11 “They had as king over them the angel of the Abyss, whose name in Hebrew is Abaddon, and in Greek, Apollyon.”
Abaddon = the destroyer, to make perish
Apollyon = a destroyer, total destruction

This refers to Satan the messenger king of devils. Remember, names are words by which a person or thing is known that distinguishes them from another, or that characterizes a certain group. Satan is characterized as a destroyer. Hence, mortal men who are MARKED, also are NAMED and act accordingly. Reprobate men are destroyers. Not only is their life destroyed due to lack of regeneration, but they seek out to destroy others.

Lu. 2:21 “And when eight days were fulfilled for circumcising him, his name was called JESUS, which was so called by the angel before he was conceived in the womb.”

Jesus = Savior, Deliverer, help of Jehovah

As Satan and his marked and named minions seek out to destroy, Christ seeks to save His elect through our proclamation of the Gospel. In turn, His elect share Christ's character in proclaiming the Gospel.

Such names in the scripture carried significant meanings that portray certain aspects and characteristics of a person, place, thing, or a purpose.

Such as:

Eve = living, en living, mother of all that live

Seth = put; who puts; fixed

See link: http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/List_of...tarting_with_A

“And Adam knew his wife again; and she bare a son, and called his name Seth: For God, said she, hath appointed me another seed instead of Abel, whom Cain slew” (Ge. 4:25).

Because God is sovereign in the affairs of men, Seth was conceived to continue the genealogical line of Jesus Christ. Seth was put in Abel's stead and fixed the problem that Cain created (Lu. 3:38).

Satan and his minions can tinker all they want into the affairs of this world. But all their mischief has been determined and ordained beforehand to bring about God's purposes.

There are names that also illustrate what the Lord is:
“And I saw heaven opened, and behold a white horse; and he that sat upon him was called Faithful and True, and in righteousness he doth judge and make war” (Re. 19:11).

“And he hath on his vesture and on his thigh a name written, KING OF KINGS, AND LORD OF LORDS” (Re. 19:16).

Has Christ literally, physically, carved in his thigh the wording “King of Kings and Lord of Lords”?

The wording signifies “this” is what the Lord is. He is Faithful, He is true, He is King of Kings, and Lord of Lords. The same Greek word translated name (onoma) that appears above, is also used in Revelation 13:17-18 where it is obvious that the name denotes a characteristic of what the beast is and his marked and named followers are.

Herman Hoeksema understands this concept also:

“Let us then notice, in the first place, that the mark of the beast, the number of his name, the number of the beast, and the name of the beast all denote identically the same thing. The beast has a name. And the name in Scripture always denotes character and being. The name of this beast has been impressed upon his followers, so that also they may be distinguished as his subjects. And that name is the same as is expressed in the number Six hundred sixty-six” (Behold He Cometh, Chapter 33).
An Amillennial Understanding of the Kingdom of God

Nicholas A. Laurienzo

Chapter 47
The Number Of The Beast

What does the NUMBER of the Beast signify?

“His number is six hundred threescore and six” (Re. 13:18).

The beast that brought extreme false prophecy and apostasy to the world is the lamb-like beast who unites both political and ecclesiastical entities into one image. It is this image that men must worship.

The MARK, NAME, and NUMBER are of one evil essence antithetical to the Godhead. If one has taken the Mark, he has also taken the name and number; the complete evil essence. There is no choosing between them. Likewise, when an elect soul is born of God, the Father, the Son, and Holy Spirit dwell within the believer.

Bearing in mind the things we’ve already discussed, we can conclude from what we have gleaned from the Scripture so far that those who are marked, named and numbered of the beast:

* Are reprobate humanity
* Received his Name characteristics
* Are under the rule of their king, Satan
* Are those who are the Buyers and Sellers (more on this upcoming)
* Are those with the same mind or way of thinking as the beast

“Here is wisdom. Let him that hath understanding count the number of the beast: for it is the number of a man; and his number is Six hundred threescore and six.”

God tells us that “wisdom and understanding” is needed rather than mathematical “Gematria” skills that are required to discover what the number of the beast signifies.

“A man”, or “man”?

G444 [Strong] – Man = anthrōpos

From 42 translations I have looked at, 33 indicate “a man” and 9 indicate “man” or mankind in general.
How do you count one number? The answer I believe is in plain sight. God tells us “exactly” what the number is. He states, “… it is the Number MAN!”

From the Greek interlinear:

anthrOpou  
G444  
N, Gen Sg, m  
OF - human

Not “A Man”. Because indeed it is a number, this number denotes a symbolic signification.

Observe that some “translations” may read, “the number of ‘A’ Man,” but be assured the “a” is not in any manuscripts, or copies of the original. We should understand that there are no indefinite articles in the Greek language. English yes, but Greek no.

The word is anarthrous or [anth’-ro-pos], and is a genitive case, which specifically defines or means “Human”.

The Greek interlinear reads of Revelation 13:18:

here - the - wisdom - is – the - having - the - mind - let pebble [calculate/count] - 
the - number - of the - wild beast - number - for - of human - it is – and – the – 
number – of - chxs/six hundred three score and six.

Let’s look at word constructions from the Greek Interlinear. Go to page 5 verse 13:18 in the PDF from the below link:

If you have a PDF reader, this link should open with most browsers .


If you cannot open the above link, then use below link and click “online interlinear” Greek interlinear” PDF. Then just go to revelation chapter 13 page 5

http://www.scripture4all.org/

Let’s compare Romans 2:9. It is the exact same declarative phrase as found in Revelation 13:18.

“Tribulation and anguish, upon every soul of man that doeth evil, of the Jew first, and also of the Gentile.”
You should notice that in Romans 2:9, it does not say “every soul of A man” but rather “of man.”

It is quite clear in all the below scripture examples that use the same Greek word and construction. There is absolutely no warrant for Revelation 13:18 to read: “A man”. It should read “of man”.

1 Co. 2:9 “But as it is written, Eye hath not seen, nor ear heard, neither have entered into the heart of man, [G444] the things which God hath prepared for them that love him.”

Mt. 9:6 “But that ye may know that the Son of man [G444] hath power on earth to forgive sins, (then saith he to the sick of the palsy,) Arise, take up thy bed, and go unto thine house.”

Re. 1:13 “And in the midst of the seven candlesticks, one like unto the Son Of Man...”[G444]

There are many such examples in the NT to show that there is no “a” in the Greek.

Check it out for yourselves. See Link for interlinear texts:

http://www.scripture4all.org/Online...reek_Index.htm

The “a” in Revelation 13:18 was put there erroneously and without warrant to the symbolic context and nature of the passage in most translations. In reality, that little "a" has made millions of dollars for all sorts of religious men, frauds, and shysters, who use “GEMATRIA” to unlock the code name of a singular man, office, or country.

Because some "clergymen" perhaps formed the misguided idea that there actually is an “a” in that verse, consequently, many think that this verse refers to a particular man, rather than simply man, or mankind, which is the way it was actually "inspired of God" to be written.

The number of the beast is the number "of man." And for those of us who understand God’s sovereignty in Election and Reprobation, this human number represents all reprobate souls who refuse to believe in the true Gospel, hence have rejected Christ.
There is no need to take my word for it, simply check it out yourself. Compare the original Greek in the above interlinear links, or perhaps consult any "real" expert in the Greek languages. I'm but a novice.

What the Holy Spirit actually wrote is, “it is the Number Of Man” (Re. 13:18).

18 [GW] In this situation wisdom is needed. Let the person who has insight figure out the number of the beast, because it is a human number. The beast’s number is 666.

18 [KNOX] Here is room for discernment: let the reader, if he has the skill, cast up the sum of the figures in the beast’s name, after our human fashion, and the number will be six hundred and sixty-six.

18 [LEB] Here is wisdom: the one who has understanding, let him calculate the number of the beast, for it is man’s number, and his number is six hundred sixty-six.

18 [MSG] Solve a riddle: Put your heads together and figure out the meaning of the number of the Beast. It’s a human number: 666.

18 [NET] This calls for wisdom: Let the one who has insight calculate the beast’s number, for it is man’s number, and his number is 666.

18 [NIRV] Here is a problem that you have to be wise to figure out. If you can, figure out what the beast’s number means. It is man’s number. His number is 666.

18 [NIV1984] This calls for wisdom. If anyone has insight, let him calculate the number of the beast, for it is man’s number. His number is 666.

18 [RSV] This calls for wisdom: let him who has understanding reckon the number of the beast, for it is a human number, its number is six hundred and sixty-six.

18 [RSVCE] This calls for wisdom: let him who has understanding reckon the number of the beast, for it is a human number, its number is six hundred and sixty-six.

What meaning and symbolism does "six hundred three score and six" signify?

We already discussed the “NUMBER” represents reprobate “mankind”. But how, in what way does a number represent mankind?

The Old Testament gives us this understanding in various ways. We will look at
this from two valid scriptural perspectives.
* “Reprobation” as a percentage of man
* Imagery from the creation of this imperfect “shadow world”

How do we count “six hundred-sixty-six”? There really is only one way I believe, which is using the "Scriptures" as our examples and count it the way other numbers are counted in scripture.

We count it spiritually, wearing the lens of the Gospel. Since this evil number is obviously not upon all of mankind but only the part of the whole that are marked/damned and deceived by Satan in the worship of the image, we count it as part of the whole. We count it as a fraction of “mankind”.

In context, counting reprobate mankind as a fraction is scripturally justified, because it is referring to a part of the whole of mankind.

Those elect souls who refuse to worship the beast, are numbered with God. They constitute one part. And those reprobates who worship the beast and receive his mark, are numbered with him and constitute another part. So the number six hundred, sixty, and six is “counted” as a fraction or as part of the whole. It breaks down to two thirds.

This correlates perfectly with God’s word because in the scriptures (comparing scripture with scripture) God uses the division of 1/3 to symbolize the truly Saved who are brought through the fire and refined of God, and 2/3 as those who are to be cut off from God. Those marked of the beast are those designated/predetermined to forsake God, promulgating their false Christ and Gospel, being deceived of the beast. All Papists, Christion Zionists, ecumenists, syncretists, and the whole of pseudo-Christian false-gospel expression existed in Paul and John’s day, then grew rapidly through the so-called “fathers” to what they are today, and always will be.

Let’s look at an illustration of this spiritual division.

Zec. 13:7-9 “7 Awake, O sword, against my shepherd, and against the man that is my fellow, saith Jehovah of hosts: smite the shepherd, and the sheep shall be scattered; and I will turn my hand upon the little ones. 8 And it shall come to pass, that in all the land, saith Jehovah, two parts [2/3 = 666] therein shall be cut off and die; but the third shall be left therein. 9 And I will bring the third part [1/3] into the fire, and will refine them as silver is refined, and will try them as gold is tried. They shall call on my name, and I will hear them: I will say, It is my people; and they shall say, Jehovah is my God.”

Through Christ and His work on Calvary, the elect 1/3 (symbolical) have been refined as silver and tried as gold solely by Christ’s imputed righteousness. The reprobate 2/3 [666] of mankind is cut off from the tree of life, and therefore dies.
The Apostle John was a man of the Old Testament and through Holy Spirit inspiration interpreted and alluded to the Old testament for his writings and understanding. The apostle John did not consult the Scofield reference bible for his understanding of Revelation 13:8 and neither should we!

No Gnostic Kabbalist Gematria or mathematical skills are required to understand the meaning of six hundred, sixty, and six. The only thing needed is to understand Gospel implications and ALL the implications of Election and Reprobation. That's all! God gives us the answers.

Another verse in the Old Testament where six hundred, sixty, and six is used is in Ezra. Is there any significance?

Ezr. 2:13 "The children of Adonikam, six hundred sixty and six."

Ezr. 2:1 "Now these are the children of the province, that went up out of the captivity of those that had been carried away, whom Nebuchadnezzar the king of Babylon had carried away unto Babylon, and that returned unto Jerusalem and Judah, every one unto his city;"

Although you will find in Ezra chapter 2 many other names with different numbers corresponding to their offspring, the point I want to make is the contrast between the name Adonikam and the number six hundred sixty and six.

Adoniyqam, H140 = my lord arose, the Lord is raised

The name Adonikam [adoniyqam] means Lord of rising, my Lord arose, or the Lord is raised, taken from two root words [adon] meaning Lord or Master, and [quwm] meaning to rise.

Two points to consider:

* In a salvific sense it shows a picture of Christ our risen Lord and Master who redeems His people from bondage [Babylon].

* But nonetheless, the spiritual picture and number of six hundred threescore and six signifies those who were in servitude. Babylon is a "type" of bondage to Satan and his beastly "image".

However, those false gospel preaching, law loving, Messianic Jews, Gentile pseudo-Christian, Christ rejecting rebels in Revelation 13:18 will not find redemption, for they are damned with the MARK, NAME, AND NUMBER of the beast.

Let's look at the meaning of six hundred threescore and six from a creation point of view.
Ge. 2:1-3  "1 And the heavens and the earth were finished, and all the host of them. 2 And on the seventh day God finished his work which he had made; and he rested on the seventh day from all his work which he had made. 3 And God blessed the seventh day, and hallowed it; because that in it he rested from all his work which God had created and made."

It doesn't take much to see this number (600 + 60 + 6), has the number 6 predominant, which signifies "work", and multiplied by 10 and 100, which signifies fullness. There is no rest in 6. God labored 6 days and rested on the 7th.

666 illustrates the number of reprobate men whose work in salvation is after their own depraved spirit and self-righteousness, rather than resting [ 7 ] in the work of Christ's imputed righteousness alone!

The ultimate futility of mans' work or walk in this world serving Satan's beasts and his image, can be seen in Israel attempting to get into the Kingdom of God by their own works, by the law.

And what is more damnable (if this can be) is the haughty Jew, James, or perhaps his followers when they wrote:

Ja. 2:21, 24  "Was not Abraham our father justified by works, in that he offered up Isaac his son upon the altar? ... 24 Ye see that by works a man is justified, and not only by faith [or by faith alone]."

As a result, like these numbered of the beast, they were cut off like branches from the Olive tree. They failed to realize that it is only by the work of Christ and Christ's imputed righteousness alone, through faith alone, that anyone will see the Kingdom of God. It is by His merit alone and by being conformed to His image that we are children of God.

A likeness or image in the spirit of antichrist and his false gospel will not suffice. Likewise, many who are professed Christians are also cut off having received the mark of the beast in their minds and hands.

The self-righteous "works" of their heart is to worship this image or likeness of Satan, and the mark on their hand is to illustrate this in all their stupid forms of worship, liturgies, sacraments, altars, incense, magic water, tongues gibberish, phony healing, stained glass windows, steeples that reach to nowhere but hell, initial and final justification heresy, common grace, full preterism, premillennialism, etc., and everything previously discussed in the false prophets section of this treatise.

Six is the number of the reprobate creature in all its fullness. The fullness of creation has come to realization in six days. But the day of rest is only found on the seventh day.
Verses from Hebrews:

He. 4:1 “Let us therefore fear, lest, a promise being left us of entering into his rest, any of you should seem to come short of it.”

He. 4:3-4 “3 For we which have believed do enter into rest, as he said, As I have sworn in my wrath, if they shall enter into my rest: although the works were finished from the foundation of the world. 4 For he spake in a certain place of the seventh day on this wise, And God did rest the seventh day from all his works.”

He. 4:9-10 “9 There remaineth therefore a rest to the people of God. 10 For he that is entered into his rest, he also hath ceased from his own works, as God did from his.”

On the seventh day elect faithful men bring glory to all of God's work and to Him by resting through faith alone in the Gospel alone, not in works lest any man should boast. The world with all its fullness, with all its powers, with all its governments, with all its ecclesiastical systems who are without Christ and the Gospel, are under the influence of sin and Satan's kingdom of darkness.

Ten times denotes the world and all its fullness, without Christ, ever growing in rebellion according to the measure of God's plan. And ten times ten times six denotes the growth and development to the pinnacle (highest degree), coming to its fullest fruition at the consummation.

"And another angel came out from the altar, which had power over fire; and cried with a loud cry to him that had the sharp sickle, saying, Thrust in thy sharp sickle, and gather the clusters of the vine of the earth; for her grapes are fully ripe" (Re. 14:18).

God has created this world in order that this world should show forth the mighty hand of God through two distinct peoples, Elect and Reprobate. The elect should glorify Him and be consecrated to Him, and the reprobate should also glorify Him in their destruction, rebellion and refusal to glorify Him.

Reprobate men have developed the kingdom and image of the beast in this shadow world without Christ and the true Gospel. And that kingdom we have is in this anti-Christian image/beast. These beasts represent the highest pinnacle of the rebellious sovereignty of man apart from Christ in rejection of the 7th day Gospel rest. It is the climax of the Man of Sin. Not “A” man, but all reprobate men in rebellion against Christ and the Gospel.

666 is the kingdom of reprobate man, creature, carnal, beastly, without Christ, without the Gospel, without the “7”. Therefore his number is six hundred three-score and six: “anthrōpos”.

655
An Amillennial Understanding of the Kingdom of God

Chapter 48
Buying and Selling

What is the meaning, or what does "buying and selling" signify?

Re. 13:17 "so that no one can buy or sell unless he has the mark, that is, the name of the beast or the number of its name."

The first thing that comes to mind is "commerce" or "transactions". Since those marked, named and numbered of the beast are the only ones authorized to "buy and sell" in Satan’s kingdom, we then must ask ourselves, what are they buying and selling? And do we the elect purveyors of the True Gospel want any part of what they are "buying and selling"? That answer is NO!

Jesus taught in parables and used metaphoric language to communicate spiritual (transactions) realities that pertain to His Kingdom and the Gospel. So also is this buying and selling cast in metaphorical figures of speech.

Let’s look at some examples of spiritual commerce and or transactions.

Mt. 13:44-46 “The kingdom of heaven is like treasure hidden in a field, which a man found and covered up; then in his joy he goes and sells all that he has and buys that field. 45 Again, the kingdom of heaven is like a merchant in search of fine pearls, 46 who, on finding one pearl of great value, went and sold all that he had and bought it."

In these Kingdom parables, our Lord uses the language of buying and selling. The treasure in the field of this earth is His elect souls, which comprise His Kingdom. The fine pearl of great value is also the Kingdom of elect souls.

Jesus Christ emptied Himself of His glory and took upon Himself our sin and punishment in the role of a suffering servant and made the greatest transaction ever in the history of mankind. He became our substitute. Christ bought our salvation with His perfect merits. But this also came at a great price to Him. He suffered the wrath and punishment of God on our behalf.

How did this buying and selling on Christ’s part benefit His elect souls? We read:

Is. 55:1 “Ho, every one who thirsts, come to the waters; and he who has no money, come, buy and eat! Come, buy wine and milk without money and without price.”
Oh how marvelous! We elect souls who are bankrupt and depraved can never merit (buy) our way into the Kingdom of God. We could never have eaten the true bread and manna of life Himself, Jesus Christ our Lord. We could never have enjoyed the **new wine** and **pure milk** of His word. However, through Christ’s **purchase** of elect souls, we can now without money and without price enjoy the free gift by Grace alone through faith alone. How marvelous!

From the start of the “**Great Apostasy**” during the lives of the apostles, evil men have always attempted to corner the market within Christianity using their false gospel to earn money, deceive, lord over men, and gather souls around themselves to aid and abet their treachery. We have already discussed this in earlier segments of this treatise. They were called false apostles, false prophets, false teachers and such. These could not have been able to practice their evil trade/commerce in the congregations except they were marked of the beast. Revelation is a book of symbolism, metaphoric and parabolic language and to take this **buying and selling** literally as some sort of boycott or prohibition within our current or future economic world, would be just as much a mistake as taking the beast and his image who gives the mark in a wooden, literal sense.

Re. 3:17-19 “17 For you say, *I am rich, I have prospered, and I need nothing; not knowing that you are wretched, pitiable, poor, blind, and naked.* 18 Therefore I counsel you to **buy** from me gold refined by fire, that you may be rich, and **white garments** to clothe you and to keep the shame of your nakedness from being seen, and **salve** to anoint your eyes, that you may see. 19 Those whom I love, I reprove and chasten; so be zealous and repent.”

The problem with the above congregation is no different than today. They think because they have great numbers, finances, and the things of this world, that somehow they see this as God’s blessing upon them. But our Lord told them they did not have the Gospel. They did not have the gold refined by fire (Christ/Gospel) that indeed would truly make them rich in spirit. They did not have the white garment of Christ’s imputed righteousness to cloth themselves (their nakedness). They did not have the Holy Spirit that would have caused them to see. They were no different than false gospel mega-churches today such as Joel Osteen’s whorehouse, or John MacArthur’s false gospel whorehouse, or Benny Hinn’s multimillion dollar fake healing occult house of devils, the Papacy and her ecumenical whore daughters, etc. And now all of this apostasy is entering the final stages of world apostasy called syncretism. However the Lord counseled them to **BUY**. Buy what? The Gospel **without money**, the Gospel they did not teach or possess.

In Revelation 13, John was already identifying the **great apostasy** of his day. These Satanic marked merchants in the congregations were **buyers and sellers** of false gospels. We read that those elect of then and us today who will not worship the ‘**image**’ of the beast are all killed. We are not wanted in their assemblies. They won’t hear us. They will hate and despise us as Christ our Lord
said they would. They will slander us. They will use all weapons at their disposal to dissuade men from listening to the Gospel we preach and teach.

These elect (and us today) were and always will be those who will not be ultimately deceived of false prophecy and who will not receive the mark of Satan’s name to buy and sell their false gospels in the realm of true faith and thus the true house of God/Christ. So it’s important that we understand that the symbolism here is that no one can buy and sell a false gospel “except” those who receive the mark of the beast.

What terrible and horrible information this is! Effectively, why do you think the true apostles and true gospel believers of our Lord were “killed”? And to make matters worse, this apostasy grew like a cancer on the earth from the teachings of the so-called “church fathers”. The reformation could not even stop the tidal wave of apostasy. For they that held some glorious truths could not even get rid of all this cancer within their own sects, thus this cancer of apostasy destroyed their sects also as we see today. And it will get worse (for them, that is)!

These false prophets promulgating (selling) their false Gospel cause many congregations to be deceived into becoming slaves of Satan. They go forth destroying the field. The enemy sows tares among the wheat, and there comes an apostasia, or a falling away from the faith by the corporate visible church, and this by God’s predestined plan.

This falling away, these who receive this mark of the beast, of necessity must be those who are of the external Church created by the “fathers”. They are those who claim to believe in God (Luke 8:13), but who in time of trial and testing will fall away to reveal their reprobation. This spirit of antichrist causes a forsaking of God by the people of the corporate or external Church, who have no real root (Christ/Gospel) in themselves that they would endure the trials of heresy.

1 Ti 4:1 “Now the Spirit speaketh expressly, that in the latter times some shall depart from the faith, giving heed to seducing spirits, and doctrines of devils.”

Every false gospel sect in ALL of professed pseudo-Christianity is filled to the brim with seducing spirits.
Buying and Selling of false-gospels also can be seen where churches use “real money” as a basis for meriting justification, as in the evil law of “tithing”, or buying your way out of purgatory through indulgences. Also the positive faith dogma of “sowing and reaping” taught by criminals and shysters.

Even the Jews are not exempt, who in the temple were selling sacrificial animals (and tainted at that) for profit. Christ overturned their evil money-tables and called them a den of thieves and robbers. Typical Jewry, even today as previously discussed.

I have witnessed plenty in my lifetime.

I have seen and been in the Roman Catholic Church many years ago during a “Solemn High Mass” event when upwards of 50 robed priestly devils would parade around the isles burning incense, chanting, sprinkling water on the pew-warmers, carrying a large crucifix for people to “kiss”, and all sorts of occult mysticism. Selling their false gospel for people to buy.

I have been in full blown “Four Square” Pentecostal/charismatic churches during a service where the whole congregation was jumping, screaming, babbling in some gibberish, getting knocked down, quivering and shaking. They too are selling their false gospel for people to buy at a high cost. Not my wife and I, though. The Lord has shown us the evil of seducing spirits. Our departure was swift!
I have been in “Evangelical ecumenical churches” where “free will” and false gospels were rampant. These too are buyers and sellers of a false Gospel.

I have been in “Protestant” churches (yes, reformed) where they taught many of the heresies of their mother Rome, and taught heresies of “common grace”, “conditional time justification”, and “assurance by good works”. These too buy and sell their false gospel.

I also have visited many more sects of visible corporate churches and congregations.

I have spoken with priests, pastors, deacons and such, attempting to show them the truths of our precious Gospel only to no avail. They cannot hear, they have hated and despised the true gospel.

They are buyers and sellers of falsehoods. They indeed have taken the Mark of the Beast and thus strive for all men to bow to the “image”.

My eyes have witnessed enough. I am convinced of the Lord. Let them all be “anathema”.

There are massive amounts of Scripture to illustrate “buying and selling” in a Gospel/Spiritual sense. If you need me to show more, please ask. But I think this should suffice.
An Amillennial Understanding of the Kingdom of God

Nicholas A. Laurienzo

Chapter 49
The Meaning Of Anti-Christ

What does it mean to be an Anti-Christ? Who is the man “anthrōpos” of sin?

Ep. 6:12 “For we wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this world, against spiritual wickedness in high places.”

In the previous chapter we discussed that the number of the beast represented reprobate MAN and not just one singular reprobate man. Also, pseudo-Christs along with all false religions are Marked, Named, and Numbered of Satan’s beasts and his image, which in turn ALWAYS manifests in preaching and teaching a false Gospel, and therefore a false Christ.

Many people who are Premillennial Futurists think anti-Christ is the future coming of Satan incarnate, and is a single human individual that will be ruled and indwelt by him. Full Preterists think that this singular anti-Christ was a singular man of the past. Premillennial Futurists believe that anti-Christ will be a singular and ALL powerful world ruler, an evil ring leader ruling over a one world government and a one world religion. I don’t believe any of these ideas express the full truth.

My contentions lie in their attempt to solely define anti-Christ as to one singular human individual thus minimizing or negating the universal essence of ALL reprobate men who indeed are anti-Christ. To my understanding, the matter of anti-Christ is not one of singular uniqueness portrayed in some future or past individual diabolical man, but rather one of degree in all anti-Christ reprobate men.

Hollywood, in the past 30 to 40 years or so, along with pseudo-Christian thinkers of the “left behind” mentality produce films that portray some futuristic diabolical man that is called the anti-Christ. As many of these films portray, to defeat this evil person a host of clergymen (Catholic and Protestant included), agnostics, atheists, or regular men (depending on the film) align their efforts to defeat this evil being. Thus a false paradigm is conveyed to their audiences. You have an alleged good fighting against evil. But is this true? These films portray false gospel men, clergy, and priests fighting against the anti-Christ, as if somehow these false gospel men are not part of the anti-Christ forces of evil themselves, and are now viewed as the “good guys”.

I believe the meaning of anti-Christ is misunderstood within most parts of professed Christendom. And this no doubt is aggravated and intensified through Je-
suitical Premillennial Dispensationalism.

These modern day theologians (Premillennial prophets) place very little emphasis on both the actual word *anti* and the passages in scriptural context where it is found.

How can one define anti-Christ without carefully considering both the word itself, and all of the pertinent verses where it is actually found?

We must let the scriptures themselves define and interpret the words and texts. We must reason through what the scriptures themselves actually declare concerning the matter.

What does *anti* mean?

*anti* - G473 1) over against, opposite to, before; 2) for, instead of, in place of (something) a) instead of, b) for, c) for that, because.

Today, within the realm of most Christian religion, *anti* is generally understood to mean, “to oppose”, or to be “against” something or someone. However, the Greek word *anti* in scripture mainly denotes something that is “in place or instead of” another thing. Of course *anti* rightly could be understood to mean in “opposition or against” something or someone because by implication a substitute can (depending on the context) be in opposition to that which is true. *Anti* in scripture is most often used in the context of substitute, in place, or instead of.

Pseudo-Christian sects that promulgate a false Gospel, hence a false Christ, attempt to get themselves “off the hook”, so to speak, by saying “we are not anti-Christ, for we do not deny the Trinity”, using 1 John 2:22 as their trump card. As if this verse (that is not fully understood on their part) is the only qualifier that distinguishes and exempts them from being anti-Christs. We will discuss more on this upcoming.

Anti-Christ pseudo-Christian theology is a counterfeit set **against** and a **substitute** for the true Christ and the true Gospel. For example, if we have a false Gospel standing in the place of the true Gospel, it is a lie, it is anti-Christ.

This is how, by extension, this Greek word “*anti*” means opposition. However, *anti*’s root meaning is something *in place or instead of, or as a substitute.*

*Anti*, as applied to Christ, fully defines a substitute Christ, a substitute Gospel. Therefore *anti* is also a synonym for a **false Christ** or **pseudo Christ**.

Those reprobates possessing the spirit of anti-Christ as in John’s, Peter’s and Paul’s day are the **lawless ones** who have come in the spirit of Satan/adversary and worship their false Christ/Messiah through promulgating their false Gospel in
place or instead of the true Gospel, hence the true Christ. By definition this is anti-Christ, opposition to Christ. There is no false or substitute Gospel/Christ that can be for Christ. It is always against Christ, being a substitute.

False Christs/Gospels and anti-Christs are terms that are synonymous, representing the spirit of Satan/adversary in men that causes them to worship a pseudo Gospel/Christ.

Let's briefly examine this Greek word “anti” more carefully in scripture to see how the Holy Spirit uses it.

Mt. 2:22 “But when he heard that Archelaus was reigning in Judea [in place of - anti] his father Herod, he was afraid to go there. Having been warned in a dream, he withdrew to the district of Galilee.”

Archelaus was reigning instead of, or in the place of his father Herod. He reigned in place of his father Herod, not in opposition to or against his father Herod.

Mt. 17:27 “But so that we may not cause offense, go to the lake and throw out your line. Take the first fish you catch; open its mouth and you will find a four-drachma coin. Take it and give it to them [for - anti] my tax and yours.”

Jesus directed Peter to pay the tax personally for both of them, instead of Christ paying it directly.

Mt. 20:28 “Even as the Son of man came not to be ministered unto, but to minister, and to give His life a ransom [for - anti] many.”

The Greek word that is translated “for” [anti], has the meaning of instead of - in place of. If we attempt to apply anti as meaning opposed or against in the verse above, it would make absolutely no sense and blaspheme the very Gospel of Jesus Christ. Christ did not give His life “opposed to” or anti-many, but He gave His life as a substitute for many. Jesus Christ gave His life in place of many. He is the scapegoat for us elect souls.

Seeing how the scriptures use anti we get a much better understanding of this word. The spirit of anti-Christ is the spirit of a substitute Christ, a substitute Gospel, hence a false Christ.

Lk. 1:20 “And now you will be silent and not able to speak until the day this happens, [because - anti] you did not believe my words, which will come true at their appointed time.”

Because = anti, in this case means instead of. See Greek interlinear.

Instead of Zechariah initially believing the good news spoken from the Angel
Gabriel, he did not, and thus became a mute temporarily.

Lk. 11:11 “If a son shall ask bread of any of you that is a father, will he give him a stone? Or if he ask a fish, will he [for - anti] a fish give him a serpent?”

The word translated “for” is anti. If we try to substitute the contemporary understanding of the word “anti” as meaning against, it would make no sense. Some translators rightly translate the word for, meaning “instead of” a fish will he give him a serpent. The word anti in this context denotes a substitution, one for another. The NIV-1984 reads this way:

“Which of you fathers, if your son asks for a fish, will give him a snake instead?”

He. 12:16 “Lest there be any fornicator, or profane person, as Esau, who [for -anti] one morsel of meat sold his birthright.”

We see the word anti translated for, meaning, “in place of” one morsel of meat he sold his birthright. Esau substituted his birthright for one morsel of meat.

There are more scriptures that show these points. Thus far we can conclude that anti denotes:

* In the place of
* Instead of
* Substitution

Taking into consideration the whole of scripture, we find that anti-Christ is another way of saying false/substitute Christ, false/substitute Gospel, or a person or church group who seeks to take “the place of” Christ by attempting to merit his own salvation through good works or by the collective efforts, works and sacraments of the clergy churches. These fools are those who are religious, and are not true believers.

This is why we see the term anti-Christ in the context of those primarily of the pseudo-Christian church world who develop their own laws and means of Grace. They are in rebellion against Jesus Christ because they do not serve King Jesus Christ but rather serve their own substituted false religion for Christ. They become the man of sin ruling as if they were the Lord.

Instead of Christ being the only mediator between God and man (1 Ti. 2:5), they have created a monstrosity called THE CHURCH, ruled by men, as their means of salvation.

By God’s design and preordained plan, He sent these fools strong delusion in that they should believe a lie, getting what they ultimately deserve, because the spirit of anti-Christ is Satan working within these reprobate men so that they
serve him and their phony churches/gospels as the false Christ.

God calls all that have this evil self-righteous spirit anti-Christ. Reprobates come in the power of Satan/adversary deceiving people by usurping the authority of Christ alone, individually and collectively. They come deceiving by claiming that they bring the gospel of peace saying "... thus saith the Lord, when the Lord has not said" (Eze. 22:28). There are many substitutes or anti-Christ in the realm of pseudo-Christianity, and in all religions at large.

We have seen how the word *anti* was used denoting:

* In the place of
* Instead of
* Substitution

We will now take a look at specific verses that use the word *Antichrist*. There are only four verses in the scriptures that expressly use the word *antichrist*. These are:

* 1 John 2:18
* 1 John 2:22
* 1 John 4:3
* 2 John 1:7

*antichristos* - G500

This word is a compound of two words from ἀντί (G473) and Χριστός (G5547) *anti* – *Christos*.

1 Jn. 2:18 “Little children, it is the last hour [or time]; and as you have heard that Antichrist cometh, even now there are become many Antichrists: whereby we know that it is the last hour/time.”

The usage of last hour or last time depicts the inter-advental period, the last days denotes this point of reference as an already, present tense reality to John’s day because the elect were already forewarned by Jesus that false Christs and false prophets would arise (Mt. 24:24). And indeed they had already come promulgating their false gospels in Paul, Peter, and John’s day.

John the apostle dismisses the theory of *antichrist* being a one, single, solitary man that should arrive in some way off distant unknown future as taught by the heretical premillennialists. Or even as some singular man that already fit the bill, as in full preterism.

At this juncture all we’re trying to establish is that Antichrist is not one unique individual, but an adversarial spirit who works in the children of disobedience. Bear
in mind however, as previously stated, this understanding of antichrist or “the man of sin” does not negate the degree, manner, growth and full potential of apostasy that will further develop towards the climax of human history. It is only by God’s sovereign restraining purposes that the full degree/measure of apostasy has been held in check.

The truth of the matter is that anti-Christ is exactly what the name implies: Anyone who comes as anti, planting a false substitute for Christ and His Gospel. This deals primarily with those who profess Jesus Christ, or claim to be His followers.

Reprobate religions that reject Jesus Christ are patently obvious. But Satan’s master deception comes from within the world of pseudo-Christianity. The anti or substitute Christs are something more specifically noted by the apostles for us to be concerned with. They profess that they are the followers, but deny Christ by their false gospels, which in turn leads to an array of false works and actions on their part, both in the ecclesiastical and political realm. The terms false Christs and antichrists are synonymous in essence because they illustrate the same adversarial spirit of a substitute Christ.

There are two spirits that are the controlling factors, one of Christ and for his elect wheat/sheep alone, and the other of antichrist and for his tare/goats alone. Hence the spirit of antichrist cannot be a single solitary unique man, or a supernatural evil man.

A spirit is a spirit and not bound by time. Only the spirit Satan/Adversary working within reprobate men shows him to be in the world past, in John’s day, in our present day, and in the future climax of this shadow world.

The spirit of Satan/Adversary was there in the past, very actively working in reprobate men, and as heard, this adversarial spirit would come with full and unbridled iniquity in men abounding in the future (2 Th. 2:7).

The idea of a singular, unique, supernatural antichrist man is shown to be insufficient when examined in the light of the “whole” of scripture. Antichrist works throughout time and within reprobate men (vessels of dishonor) whom God has given to him to do his bidding. For he is that spirit Satan/Adversary and they of his are the children of the devil.

1Jn. 2:19 “They went out from us, but they did not really belong to us. For if they had belonged to us, they would have remained with us; but their going showed that none of them belonged to us.”

John qualifies these children of the devil as antichrists. They, in their rebellion and with their substitute Gospel/Christ, never were numbered among the elect.

1Jn. 2:22 [KNOX] “To whom do we give the lie, if not to him who tells us that Je-
sus is not the Christ? Such a man is Antichrist, disowning as he does both the Father and the Son.”

The Knox translation, in my opinion, comes closest to the Greek interlinear in this passage.

There are two parts to this verse. The first part is a qualifier and the second part is the results, effects or consequences of denying Jesus as the Messiah.

Part one: God says anyone who denies Jesus is the Messiah is Antichrist.

Christos - G5547 = Anointed, Messiah

What does believing that Christ is the Anointed One or Messiah mean? Is it only Jesus’ deity or does it encompass His deity and His purpose/work/office, mediator-ship, Gospel, etc.?

To say as some, that the only necessary attribute concerning Christ is His deity, thus diminishing or relegating His work (His Gospel) to the realm of matters of different and confounded interpretation open for legitimate debate, is the most paradoxical blundering on the part of devils.

The deity of Christ, which relates to the Blessed Trinity, can only be understood through the revelation of scriptures. But the full comprehension of that Trinity is incomprehensible and cannot be fully understood by our finite mind because that which pertains to God’s full essence can only be understood by the infinite. Only that which God has revealed, which is enough, can be attested/assented to and embraced as true without doubt. However, the Gospel work of Christ and all its implications have been fully clarified in scripture because that work of Christ belongs to us His elect. It is something for man, therefore revealed to our understanding, embraced, and becomes our full assurance.

The stupidity arises when men (theologians, clergy, and pew-warmers) tell us they can fully embrace the incomprehensible (to get them off the hook of being labeled antichrists), and in the next breath deny we can fully know the comprehensible, i.e. the Gospel.

You cannot divorce the Person from the Person’s work, no more than you can divorce the unitary will and work of the Holy Trinity, as many an apostate paradoxical theologian has done.

If one denies the comprehensible true Gospel of Imputed Righteousness/Justification, and the necessary implications of that Gospel, thus substituting a false Gospel, he has denied Christ and “is a liar”, an antichrist.

Tit. 1:16 “They [pseudo-Christian antichrists] profess that they know God [the
trinity]; but in works they deny him, being abominable, and disobedient, and unto every good work reprobate."

Mt. 7:22-23 “22 Many [antichrists] will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, did we not prophesy by thy name, and by thy name cast out demons, and by thy name do many mighty works? 23 And then will I profess unto them, I never knew you: depart from me, ye that work iniquity.”

Part two: “… disowning as he does both the Father and the Son.”

Any denial or misrepresentation of both the person (deity) and His work/Gospel, is in essence a denial of the Father.

Jesus repeatedly stated to the vermin Jews of His day that denying Him was equivalent to denying the/His Father. So to deny or misrepresent the Gospel is a denial of the Father also. A false Christ, false Gospel, are misrepresentations of not only Jesus Christ Himself, but misrepresents the intentions and purpose of the Father who sent Him. “I and my Father are one” (Jn. 10:30).

Some other points we should consider relating to 1John 2:22 are these: Can we believe that no one except one single solitary man in history (full preterist or futurist) has ever denied Jesus/Father and His true Gospel, thus qualifying him to be the one and only antichrist? Can we believe in one supernatural man who gives his minions authority to stamp 666 on people’s foreheads, or implants some bar-coded computer chips under their skin, and other such nonsense? That would be ridiculous of course.

One man just doesn’t fit the bill according to scripture. God’s Word has again defined antichrist not as one man, but anyone or all who deny the Father and the Son.

In order to deny Christ and His Gospel, and hence the Father also, any (reprobrate) would have to have the spirit of Satan/Adversary, the spirit of disobedience. “Houtos esti antichristos,” literally means “he is antichrist!” Antichrist are they (all reprobates) who are liars and deny that Jesus is the Christ/Messiah. When man denies, distorts, mangles, or perverts God’s Gospel Word, does he not also deny Christ, the Word of God made flesh?

1Jn. 4:1-4 “1 Beloved, believe not every spirit, but try the spirits whether they are of God: because many false prophets are gone out into the world. 2 Hereby know ye the Spirit of God: Every spirit that confesseth that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh is of God: 3 And every spirit that confesseth not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh is not of God: and this is that spirit of antichrist, whereof ye have heard that it should come; and even now already is it in the world. 4 Ye are of God, little children, and have overcome them: because greater is he that is in you, than he that is in the world.”
As shown before, there are two contrasting spirits: The spirit of Satan/Adversary, and the Spirit of God.

John speaks of false prophets, plural, not singular, and associates them with being part and parcel led by the spirit of Antichrist, contrasted against the Spirit of God who guides His elect people.

Since we already have discussed what it means to believe that Jesus Christ came in the flesh, let’s hone in on the word confesseth.

*homologeō* - G3670 = to agree with, assent, to concede, not to deny, declare, to confess

This word is the compound of the two words: ὁμοῦ (G3674) and λόγος (G3056) homou-logos

There are no paradoxical connotations to this word. No misguided theories of some sort of Head-Heart dichotomy inferred in this word.

*homou* - G3674 = This word denotes “togetherness”, unison, unity.

*logos* - G3056 = This word denotes all that is incorporated with the mind, reasoning process, and carried forth/manifested in speech or expression. Hit the link above G3056.

In context, since John is discussing opposing spirits, this confession on man’s part (either way) does not come independently from his own alleged free-will or some alleged free and uncontrolled activity of the mind. But rather, the Spirit of God Himself united together with the elect’s spirit act as one by assenting to truth. So, this word confesseth is not some mere verbal “lip-service” paid to some creed, dogma, or doctrine of the Trinity, while at the same time these devils deny or distort the Gospel.

Even on the surface, we understand that this cannot simply mean literally or verbally confessing Christ. The scriptures make this self evident, showing that all types of false gospels and false prophets verbally confess Christ, but in their deception they are united with the spirit of antichrist.

Once again, John stated that the spirit of antichrist is not coming in the future as they have heard, but he says again as in 1John 2:18, that the spirit of Antichrist was even then “already in the world.”

So again, to define antichrist; means that he is not one singular solitary man, but a spirit that was in the world even then, working in the reprobate children of disobedience.
That spirit could only be Satan/Adversary, though he was bound by the cross of Christ, was ordained to run about as a roaring lion, though under the restraint of Christ among reprobate men to deceive and further be deceived.

Antichrist is a spirit, not a singular man. Reprobate men (plural) possess the spirit of antichrist.

The “Man of Sin” is restrained (2 Th. 2:7) or held back that this full and unbridled iniquity on reprobate MAN’S part in this world wouldn't fully abound. The full manifestation of Satan’s spirit is reserved in chains to be fully loosed towards the climax of human history, bringing total and complete apostasy within pseudo-Christendom, and misery and suffering to the world at large. In other words, “all hell will break loose.”

2 Th. 2:6-11 "6 And now ye know what withholdeth that he might be revealed in his time. 7 For the mystery of iniquity doth already work: only he who now letteth will let, until he be taken out of the way. 8 And then shall that Wicked be revealed, whom the Lord shall consume with the spirit of his mouth, and shall destroy with the brightness of his coming: 9 Even him, whose coming is after the working of Satan with all power and signs and lying wonders, 10 And with all deceivableness of unrighteousness in them that perish; because they received not the love of the truth, that they might be saved. 11 And for this cause God shall send them strong delusion, that they should believe a lie."

Like John, Paul does not deny the fact that the spirit of antichrist was already present and working in the world, however Paul’s main thrust is to show the escalation of this evil spirit working in MAN. Paul’s emphasis was to show what mankind under the unbridled influence of Satan will look like, act, and manifest. This MAN OF SIN is the same as those that are MARKED, NAMED, and NUMBERED of the beast. For they ALL are reprobates who are one in spirit with Satan the Dragon/destroyer.

As we the elect individually are part of the “One Body of Christ”, the reprobates individually are part of the “One MAN of SIN”.

The last verse that pens the antichrist is:

2 Jn. 1:7 “For many deceivers are entered into the world, who confess not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh. This is a deceiver and an antichrist.”

Again we see that John shows that many deceivers are considered antichrists. John is very repetitive in his writings. The importance of confessing that Christ came in the flesh shows allegiance to God the Father, God the Son, and God the Holy Spirit.
2 Jn. 1:9 “Whosoever transgresseth, and abideth not in the doctrine of Christ, hath not God. He that abideth in the doctrine of Christ, he hath both the Father and the Son.”

We understand that throughout the scriptures we could emphasize and teach a doctrine on the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit individually showing their uniqueness as persons of the Holy Trinity, however when John uses the phrasing “the doctrine of Christ” there is more in view than that of His deity alone. Can we honestly limit His deity as the only thing that comprises the Doctrine of Christ? All things that pertain to Jesus Christ are part and parcel of the one Doctrine of Christ.

Both Deity deniers and Gospel deniers transgress the Doctrine of Christ, and thus deny the creator God.

The man of sin is the lawless man, a man who refuses to believe in the true Gospel, a man that refuses to believe in an absolute Sovereign God who is in control over every aspect of His creation including MEN.

Why are so many people deceived by the idea of a singular “one man” antichrist. I guess this faulty thinking eases their conscience in that they could see themselves exempt from being antichrists themselves, and perhaps could blame it all on one evil man.

We will now look at Satan the Arch Adversary, anti-Christ spirit who works to deceive mankind at his point of entrance into this shadow world.

Before we do this, I feel it is very important to understand Satan and his role, initially manifested as the deceiving Serpent in the Garden, for this does not only show his manipulative and lying characteristics, plus more, but also takes on a great soteriological implication, as we will show shortly, related to Jesus Christ who is the antithesis of this evil arch-spirit.

As shown in previous segments, there are many NAMES and WORDS that describe an individual whether a spirit being, human being, or both as in Jesus Christ the God-Man alone. These names and words signify certain aspects or intrinsic characteristics of that being.

What I find particularly fascinating, is how from the beginning of elect man on this earth and throughout history, more names and or metaphoric/symbolic language was added by the Holy Spirit inspired writers as God revealed to them a deeper understanding of the spiritual conflict within their own lives to describe and/or denote the antithesis between Jehovah/Jesus Christ and Satan.

First, let’s look at some names, metaphors, and symbolisms that describe, signify, denote, and relate to Jesus Christ our Lord.
Jesus Christ

[Shiloh = Peace Bringer], Star Out of Jacob, Scepter, Prophet, Redeemer, Son of God, Holy One, King, King of the Jews, King of Israel, High Priest, Stone, Rose of Sharon, Lily of the Valley, Emmanuel, Wonderful, Councillor, Mighty God, Everlasting, Prince of Peace, Branch, [Jehovah = Almighty, Alpha and Omega, Emmanuel], Ancient of Days, Messiah, Judge, Desire of all Nations, Sun of Righteousness, [Jesus = Jesus Christ, Lord Jesus Christ, Christ Jesus, Lord Jesus, Jesus of Nazareth, Jesus Christ our Lord, Jesus Christ our Saviour], Christ, Son of David, Son of Abraham, Son of The Highest, Son of The Blessed, Governor, Son of Man, Bridegroom, Master, Dayspring, Saviour, Word, Creator, Light, Lamb of God, Only Begotten Son, Bread of Life, Life, I AM, Door, Good Shepherd, Resurrection, Resurrection of Life, Way, Truth, Life, Vine, Prince, Just One, Lord, Lord of Lords, One Lord, Deliverer, Passover, Rock, Second Adam, Husband, Beloved, Our Peace, Chief Corner Stone, Elect, Precious, Head of the Ecclesia, Mediator, Man, God, Captain of our Salvation, Apostle, Author and Finisher, Great Shepherd, Bishop, Chief Shepherd, Daystar, Eternal Life, Advocate, First Begotten of the Dead, Alpha and Omega, Almighty, First and Last, Amen, Faithful and True Witness, Lion of the Tribe of Judah, Root of David, Lord of Lords, Faithful and True, Beginning and End, Bright and Morning Star, Holy, Harmless, Undefiled, Separate From Sinners, Higher than the Heavens, Stone of Stumbling, Stone Cut Out Without Hands, Foundation Stone, Wisdom, Righteousness, JEHOVAH OUR RIGHTEOUSNESS, Faithful Servant, Light of The World, Lamb without Spot or Blemish, Lamb Slain, Master and Lord, Prince of the Kings of the earth, Lord of the Sabbath, Rock of our Salvation, Lord of Hosts.

The above list, although not exhaustive, shows different words and names that depict Jesus Christ our Lord. Let’s now look at Christ’s antithesis. Not every scripture verse will be listed.

Satan

Satan = Adversary or Accuser: (1 Chr. 21:1; Jb 1:6; Jn.13:27; Ac. 5:3; 26:18; Ro. 16:20)

Abaddon: (Re. 9:11). Abaddon in Hebrew is identified as Apollyon in Greek, meaning a Destroyer.

Beelzebub: Perhaps comes from a Philistine deity known as the Lord of the flies but also signifies "lord of the house", another name for Satan, the prince of evil spirits (Mt. 12:24; Mk. 3:22; Lk. 11:15, and more not shown).

In Luke 11:18, Jesus ties Satan together with Beelzebub as the same chief prince of evil spirits.
“If Satan also be divided against himself, how shall his kingdom stand? because ye say that I cast out devils through Beelzebub.”

**Belial**: Which mainly denotes good for nothing, unprofitable, and worthless from the compound of בַּלִּיָּו (H1097) and יַעֲלֵל (H3276). These Hebrew words have also been translated as wicked, ungodly men, an evil, and naughty.

2 Co. 6:15 "What harmony [or fellowship] is there between Christ and Belial [none at all]? Or what does a [true Gospel] believer have in common with an [false Gospel] unbeliever [none at all]?"

It is not for the elect of God to embrace ecumenical unity with false gospel folks within pseudo-Christendom. Or even syncretistic unity within ALL the religions of this evil shadow world. This will be discussed more in our next chapter entitled, “Come Out of Her My People”.

The scriptures also use a wide variety of titles for Satan.

**The accuser of our brothers** (Re. 12:10)

**The spirit of Antichrist** (1Jn. 4:3)

**The Adversary**: (1 Pe. 5:8)

**The angel of the bottomless pit** (Re. 9:11)

**The devil** (Mt. 4:1; Lk. 4:2, 6; Re. 20:2)

**The enemy** (Mt. 13:39)

**The evil spirit** (1 S. 16:14)

**The lying spirit** (1 K. 22:22)

To show that God is absolutely sovereign over the lives and affairs of men, let’s look a little more into 1 Kings 22:21-22:

“21 And there came forth a spirit, [who else?] and stood before the Lord, and said, I will persuade him [of course you will]. 22 And the Lord said unto him, Wherewith? And he said, I will go forth, and I will be a lying spirit in the mouth of all his prophets. [Same lying spirit within today’s false gospel preachers] And he [God] said, Thou shalt persuade him, and prevail also: go forth, and do so.”

The same as with Job’s troubles, God sends the liar, deceiver, and destroyer to bring about His purposes. Satan and his minions are mere tools in the hand of
the Almighty. Just like He sent Satan the Serpent to deceive Adam and Eve. Since Adam and Eve were not created inherently sinless, they possessed proclivity, and were peccable, thus naturally they ate the fruit.

The liar and the father of lies (Jn. 8:44)

The thief (Jn. 10:10)

A murderer (Jn. 8:44)

The great red dragon (Re. 12:3)

The old serpent (Re. 12:9; 29:2) John directly ties the Red Dragon with the Serpent as being one.

The serpent (Ge. 3:4, 14; 2 Co. 11:3) John and Paul allude to the Serpent Satan in the Garden.

Leviathan (Is. 27:1)

Is 27:1 "In that day the Lord with his sore and great and strong sword shall punish leviathan the piercing serpent, even leviathan that crooked serpent; and he shall slay the dragon that is in the sea."

The power of darkness (Col. 1:13)

The prince of this world (Jn. 12:31; 14:30; 16:11)

The prince of demons (Mt. 12:24)

The prince of the power of the air (Ep. 2:2)

The ruler of the darkness of this world (Ep. 6:12)

The spirit that works in the children of disobedience (Ep. 2:2)

Roaring Lion (1 Pe. 5:8)

Angel of Light: (2 Co. 11:14)

Of course Satan tries to imitate Christ the true light. He is a poor substitute, but good enough to deceive the reprobates. Just look at how many false gospels and false Christs there are within pseudo-Christianity today.

The tempter (Mt. 4:3; 1 Th. 3:5)
The god of this world (2 Co. 4:4)

The wicked one (Mt. 13:19, 38) The Tares/Goats/Reprobates are the children of the devil, the wicked one, etc.

The scriptures possess a large collection of names or titles referring to Satan, but it favors the name Satan when referring to him. The name Satan occurs 56 times in the scriptures. This also holds true for Christ our Lord. The scriptures refer to Jesus 981 times, and Christ 559 times. In our next segment we will focus our attention on Satan the Serpent, his early activity, and the soteriological implications.
In this chapter we will address the soteriological implications and other symbolisms that denote, signify, and are related to the Serpent in the Garden of Eden, and why the Serpent is the first manifestation of this evil spirit Satan within the created world.

It is correct to say that the book of Genesis does not mention the name/word Satan, but it does not have to. That same book of Genesis does not specifically mention or qualify Jesus Christ in Genesis 1:26 as part of the “us” either, nor is the word Jesus mentioned anywhere in the Old Testament.

Ge. 1:26 “And God said, Let us make man in our image, after our likeness: and let them have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over the cattle, and over all the earth, and over every creeping thing that creepeth upon the earth.”

Also, Deuteronomy 6:4 states:

“Hear, O Israel: The LORD our God is one LORD.”

Jesus alluded specifically to the above verse in Mark 12:29:
“And Jesus answered him, The first of all the commandments is, Hear, O Israel; The Lord our God is one Lord.”

Within the context of Mark 12, Jesus was teaching and using many different examples and parables to define Himself as God the Messiah, which leads to verses 35-37.

Mk. 12:35-37 “35 While Jesus was teaching in the temple courts, he asked, ‘Why do the teachers of the law say that the Messiah is the son of David? 36 David himself, speaking by the Holy Spirit, declared: “The Lord said to my Lord: Sit at my right hand until I put your enemies under your feet.” 37 David himself calls him Lord. How then can he be his son?’”

The point I am raising is this, the scriptures most often define and/or explain themselves in other books or letters from the same or different inspired authors and not necessarily from within the original letter that first mentions the serpent.

Having said that, we can ascertain from the inspired writers of scripture that Jesus Christ is one of the persons contained within the “us”-Trinity mentioned in Genesis 1:26. Also, we will show that controlling spirit Satan speaking through the serpent from other passages of Scripture likewise.

The idea that a serpent can speak is not far fetched when we also see in scripture a donkey can speak. Since no other humans were on the earth but Adam and Eve at that early period of time before they bore children, there were no clergymen around to deceive and tempt Adam and Eve as they do today. However, God used the serpent to tempt them. This tempting serpent and all his minions represent ALL false religious fools and clergy folk who preach a false ecumenical and syncretistic gospel.

Ge. 3:4 “And the serpent said unto the woman, Ye shall not surely die.”

For God to authorize the deception of these two human individuals to fulfill His purposes, it is only fitting that the serpent was endowed to speak lying words. Jesus said the devil was the father of lies.

Jn. 8:44 “Ye are of your father the devil, and the lusts of your father ye will do. He was a murderer from the beginning, and abode not in the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he speaketh a lie, he speaketh of his own: for he is a liar, and the father of it.”

Satan, the lying serpent, also tempted Jesus Christ:

Mt. 4:1 “Then was Jesus led up of the Spirit into the wilderness to be tempted of the devil.”
Mk. 1:13 “And he was there in the wilderness forty days, tempted of Satan; and was with the wild beasts; and the angels ministered unto him.”

The devil and Satan are the same spirit as shown above.

Except for a few instances mentioned in the scriptures, the majority of demonic activities written in scriptures refer to Satan and by the many different names given to him.

Satan is specifically called a serpent, not once but three times in the book of Revelation, verses 12:9, 12:15, and 20:2. These verses, when combined with Paul’s words in 2 Corinthians 11:3, identifies the serpent in Genesis 3 with Satan unmistakably.

Re. 12:9 “So the great dragon was cast out, that serpent of old, called the Devil and Satan, who deceives the whole world; he was cast to the earth, and his angels were cast out with him.”

2 Co. 11:3 “But I fear, lest by any means, as the serpent beguiled Eve through his subtilty, so your minds should be corrupted from the simplicity that is in Christ.”

Paul the Apostle alludes above to Genesis 3, stating that Satan is “that serpent of old,” in the garden, which is the great deceiver.

Revelation 20:2-3 also calls Satan a serpent and speaks of his punishment again. This time he will be bound and thrown into the bottomless pit for 1,000 years (inter-advental period), so that he will not be able to deceive the nations of elect people.

Satan’s work of deception began in the Garden of Eden and has continued worldwide ever since then. Only the elect can escape Satan’s deceptions by knowing Christ alone and the full implications of the Gospel alone.

In Genesis 3:14-15 we read of God’s curse upon the serpent and the promise of a Savior from the seed of the woman.

Ge. 3:14-15 “14 So the LORD God said to the serpent: ‘Because you have done this, you are cursed more than all cattle, and more than every beast of the field; on your belly you shall go, and you shall eat dust all the days of your life. 15 And I will put enmity between you and the woman, and between your seed and her Seed; He shall bruise your head, and you shall bruise His heel.’”

This verse, is absolutely vital and critical in relation to the soteriological implications of the Gospel. Our Gospel, which is the saving, the redeeming, the substitutionary work of Jesus Christ alone with it’s implications, that are the final and
The elect woman's seed is Jesus Christ who will **bruise the head** of Satan.

*Shuwp* = *Buise* H7779: Meaning to crush, gape upon, desire, seize, strike out.

If the serpent in the Garden was some lesser demon spirit (as some suggest) and not the top dog himself, this verse would then imply Christ crushing a lesser demon spirit and this lesser demon's spiritual seed at the cross. This would be, if possible, a horrible inference and consequence if the serpent was not speaking as Satan himself. Or the serpent was not Satan himself as some suggest.

The seed of the woman is the future male child, Jesus Christ, the Word made flesh, who destroyed not only Satan the Serpent at the cross, but all the serpent's spiritual seed which are **All** reprobates.

Satan the serpent did bruise Jesus on the heel, by God’s determinate council moving wicked men to crucify Him at the behest of the evil Jews. However, this was only a temporary and necessary wound, for Christ our Lord arose from the dead. The same act by which Satan the lying serpent thought he had defeated Jesus Christ, was the very act by which Jesus destroyed the power that Satan had over **death**. Christ's resurrection was the proof and seal of that victory over that old serpent, the devil and Satan.

See: Romans 5:14, 17, 21; 6:3-9; 8:2; and Revelation 1:18.

Christ has the keys over hell and death merited by Him on the cross when he bruised the serpent’s head. As Christ is the **head** of His body, Satan the serpent, the **head** of reprobates must be bruised also.

Re. 20:10 “And the **devil, who deceived them**, was thrown into the lake of burning sulfur, where the **beast and the false prophet** had been thrown. **They will be tormented day and night for ever and ever.**”

The next important soteriological implication of the Gospel, and why the serpent must be Satan, is read in John 3:14:

“And as Moses **lifted up the serpent in the wilderness, even so must the Son of man be lifted up.**”

What is the soteriological connection between the Serpent and Jesus Christ?

Nu. 21:8-9 “8 And Jehovah said unto Moses, Make thee a **fiery serpent**, and set it upon a standard: and it shall come to pass, that **every one that is bitten**, when he seeth it, shall live. 9 And Moses made a **serpent of brass**, and set it upon the standard: and it came to pass, that if a serpent had bitten any man,
John the Apostle understood the soteriological implications of the Cross of Jesus Christ. The evil serpent who deceived Adam and Eve brought death into the world. For Jesus our Lord to conquer death, He must assume fallen elect man and become a curse for us. Christ was made sin for us (not inherently) thus Christ was the one prefigured and pictured as the serpent on Moses' standard. When one who was bitten; as all the elect conceived in iniquity are, looked upon the pole, he lived. When an elect soul is given eyes to see, and looks upon the cross of Jesus Christ through faith alone for his healing, he lives.

Satan the serpent stings with his bite.

Paul said in 1 Corinthians 15:55-56:

“55 O death, where is thy victory? O death, where is thy sting? 56 The sting of death is sin; and the power of sin is the law.”

Ge. 3:14 “And Jehovah God said unto the serpent, Because thou hast done this, cursed art thou above all cattle, and above every beast of the field; upon thy belly shalt thou go, and dust shalt thou eat all the days of thy life.”

Can we assume that a lesser demonic spirit playing the role as the serpent, is cursed above Satan as some suggest? Absolutely not!

What does eating dust portray metaphorically?

Man was formed from the dust of the earth (Ge. 2:7). The picture here is that Satan consumes reprobate mankind spiritually. But Satan the serpent cannot touch God's elect who have been sealed in Christ.

If we were to understand this verse in a physical literal sense and not a spiritual
sense, it would be false. Snakes and serpents are carnivorous creatures and do not literally eat sand. However, Satan and his demon servants chew up and swallow reprobate mankind every moment on earth by their promulgating of false gospels. Where do you think false gospels come from?

Let's look at another episode pertaining to serpents.

Ex. 4:1-5 "1 And Moses answered and said, But, behold, they will not believe me, nor hearken unto my voice; for they will say, Jehovah hath not appeared unto thee. 2 And Jehovah said unto him, What is that in thy hand? And he said, A rod. 3 And he said, Cast it on the ground. And he cast it on the ground, and it became a serpent; and Moses fled from before it. 4 And Jehovah said unto Moses, Put forth thy hand, and take it by the tail: (and he put forth his hand, and laid hold of it, and it became a rod in his hand) 5 That they may believe that Jehovah, the God of their fathers, the God of Abraham, the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob, hath appeared unto thee."

Initially Moses was afraid of the serpent. But let's look later on.

Ex. 7:10-12 "10 And Moses and Aaron went in unto Pharaoh, and they did so, as Jehovah had commanded: and Aaron cast down his rod before Pharaoh and before his servants, and it became a serpent. 11Then Pharaoh also called for the wise men and the sorcerers: and they also, the magicians of Egypt, did in like manner with their enchantments. 12 For they cast down every man his rod, and they became serpents: but Aaron's rod swallowed up their rods."

Jesus Christ who is our rod and staff is greater than all. This was pictured when Aaron's serpent (a picture of Christ) swallowed up the sorcerers' rods. Although all demons can rightly be called serpents metaphorically because they are of Satan's seed, the soteriological implications of the Gospel and John's own words portray the Serpent in the Garden as Satan. Indeed, Jesus Christ crushed Satan's head at the cross. Amen.
Re.18:4 “And I heard another voice from heaven, saying, Come out of her, my people, that ye be not partakers of her sins, and that ye receive not of her plagues.”

2 Co. 6:17 “Wherefore come out from among them, and be ye separate, saith the Lord, and touch not the unclean thing; and I will receive you.”

Is. 52:11 “Depart ye, depart ye, go ye out from thence, touch no unclean thing; go ye out of the midst of her; be ye clean, that bear the vessels of the Lord.”

In this chapter, we will discuss the importance of separating ourselves (Christ’s elect people, the true Israel of God called the ekklesia), from this ungodly world of spiritual whores.

Many sects within pseudo-Christianity establish ground rules for separation. Technically speaking this is a scriptural concept. Also, many sects possessing an ecumenical and syncretistic mind see no need to establish specific ground rules for separation. To these folks, they believe all religions are viable paths for reaching up to god and thus growing spiritually or attaining some sort of salvation.
Those who do establish ground rules (which are necessary, no doubt), may have sincere motives (and some not so sincere) to protect their identity as a sect or denomination within pseudo-Christianity, however their ground rules for separation can be illegitimate. Let's examine only a few.

**Sabbitarianism:**

7th Day Adventists, 7th Day Baptists, 7th Day Evangelist Church, Church of God 7th Day, United Church of God, and some others of the Saturday Sabbath mentality, see this as a vital dogma that distinguishes them from all others. According to one of them for sure, if one does not embrace the Saturday Sabbath, they will be damned and have taken the Mark of the Beast.

Then you have the Sunday Sabbitarians, who insist that Sunday alone is the **only** honored day of worship, holding to different legal actions which can or cannot be performed on Sunday. Some have gone so far as to say “Grocery Shopping”, buying gasoline to run your automobile, or even viewing sports events on television is an evil and sinful action performed on “God's Holy Sunday Sabbath”.

Both Saturday and Sunday Sabbitarians will separate from others over these false dogmas.

**King James Only:**

These folks insist that only “ONE” translation of the scriptures is inspired by God. All others are not, thus they will most definitely separate over this. If one is not a “King James Toting Bible Believing Fundamental Christian”, or perhaps a “Scofield King James only Advocate” according to them, many are deceived and/or damned for citing other translations.

**Sacraments:**

Within the reformed community, those who embrace the dogmas pertaining to the sacraments believe all those outside of a church that has this **means of Grace**, performed by an **officially** ordained clergyman, holding the “**Office of the Keys**”, will be cut off from the “**means**”, and thus be withheld the necessary Graces that lead to salvation, and thus be damned.

They will separate over this. Even within reformed circles that embrace the concept of Sacraments such as: Calvinists, Lutherans, Anglicans, and Episcopalians, they will divide amongst themselves over the finer points or efficacy of Sacramental theology.
Tongues and Gifts of the Holy Spirit:

Within the many branches and sub-sects of Pentecostal and Charismatic pseudo-spiritual mysticism, they will separate as a whole with those that do not subscribe to their breed of spirituality. However, even within Pentecostal and Charismatic circles they separate from one another over the finer details of their peculiar “manifestations” of the Holy Ghost. To some of these peculiar folks, if one has not been granted the gift of “Snake Handling” he is a less gifted Christian. “Hey man, have you got the Baptism (or fire) yet?” Wow! “Let me hear that heavenly language, for this is the initial sign of the Baptism of the Holy Ghost brother!”

Some sects go as far as to say and teach their ignorant followers that taking medicine is a sign of a lack of faith or belief in Jesus Christ. If one has faith that Christ is a healer, why take medicine? Many persons in these Satanic cults have perished because they refused the necessary medicine or medical treatment needed to save their own lives. But these actions are all well and good according to their “pastors” who could not give a hoot whether their pew-warriors die or not.

Mandatory Tithing:

This by far is one of the most cynical and deceptive forms of extortion that is practiced within pseudo-Christianity. This practice is the most lucrative means to sustain themselves financially and has evolved insofar that those who are of their church can “will” their entire estate or partial estate holdings upon death to “The Church” for added rewards in heaven.

Many denominations and even sub-sects practice this and even go so far as to teach that if one does not “tithe” he is robbing God, thus disobedient and in some cases damned. They will separate from others who oppose this practice.

I personally know many individuals who were in some of these cults. When they refused to give 10% of their “Gross Pay” toward the ministry they were warned. If they persisted, they were eventually thrown out, or excommunicated (if official members) from the church.

Dispensational Premillennialism:

This is a biggie! According to these alleged anointed prophets of God, who are the alleged masters of “rightly dividing the word of truth”, all who disagree with them are to be shunned and separated from. However even within Dispensational Premillennial sects, they argue and separate themselves from one another. One example is the case of differing opinions over pre-tribulation, mid-
tribulation, and post-tribulation understandings of the “rapture”.

At an eatery one day, I witnessed two men at a nearby table loudly arguing over pre-tribulation and mid-tribulation rapture theories. It was annoying to say the least, and the manager finally had to tell them to “tone it down a bit”. However, these dispensationalists will gnaw at one anothers throats over their differences.

To be sure though, if you meet up with one of these individuals, and tell them you are an “amillenialist”, be prepared for some harsh adverse reactions. Amillennialists are definitely outcasts in their brainwashed minds and should be avoided at all costs according to them.

There have been many splits and schisms within the so-called Calvinist or Lutheran groups. There have been many splits and schisms within the Arminian groups. Even within Roman Catholicism you have the many different orders (Jesuit, Dominican, Franciscan, etc.) of clergymen who do not see eye to eye amongst themselves. This also holds true for Orthodoxy.

Since the writers of inspired scripture do indeed teach for true believers to separate, we then must establish the parameters. Once accomplished, we then can understand why it is necessary to “Come Out from Her”, or “Come out From Them”, or “Depart Ye”.

I, as an individual within the Body of Jesus Christ, can only speak or write from my understanding of what the scriptures teach on this matter. Every elect child of Christ must also come to grips from their own Spirit/Scripture led/influenced conscience as to what they see fit for themselves. Many will and have agreed together, and many may not.

For myself, I will list the most important things that I strongly feel are foundational in developing some parameters we, as Christ's elect, can never venture outside of for the sake of some so-called ecumenical “Christian Unity”.

Earlier in these studies we identified ecumenism with the devilish likes of:

The World Council of Churches
The National Council of Churches
Evangelical Societies
Evangelicals and Catholics Together
Lutherans and Catholics Together
ECT 1 and ECT 2

A few not mentioned earlier are:

Diakrisis Institute
International Conference of Confessing Fellowships
The Lausanne Movement or Covenant

More pseudo-Christian movements can be seen on this link:

http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Ecumenism

What all these pseudo-Christian groups have in common is that they see no particular need to further separate amongst themselves over doctrinal issues they may differ with. They can share in a unity based on the shallowest common denominators.

The Sovereignty of God, free will, justification, the nature of the Gospel in general, Scriptural inspiration, creation, evolution, or both, homosexual clergy-folk, women pastors or elders, etc., are matters they are not overly concerned with and can even ignore for the sake of unity. According to today's paradoxical religious mind, all spiritual things can be equally true even if they are taught in scripture as being diametrically opposed to one another.

According to these pseudo-christians, It's OK to believe in evolution, and OK to believe in creation.

What they are concerned with however, is how they all together can influence society and government to bring about social change. Altruistic efforts on their part are seen as the highest manifestation of the ethical “Christian good”, even if that alleged Christian good denies or distorts the Trinity, the Gospel of our salvation, and even the identity of God Himself as revealed in scripture. The Marxist gospel, social engineering, and reconstructionism are what matter the most to these devils.

How dare we even consider Mother Theresa as something other than a real Saint of God, when she suffered, worked, and merited all the necessary grace points to earn a sainthood status and thus salvation (after her stay in purgatory, of course)? It does not matter if she was entrenched with Hindu occult mysticism joined together with her warped mystical beliefs of Roman Catholicism, and denial of the Gospel of Jesus Christ. Who cares, according to these ecumenical syncretists?

What does Paul say to us?

2 Co. 6:14-18 “14 Be not unequally yoked with unbelievers: for what fellowship have righteousness and iniquity? or what communion hath light with darkness? 15 And what concord hath Christ with Belial? or what portion hath a believer with an unbeliever? 16 And what agreement hath a temple of God with idols? for we are a temple of the living God; even as God said, I will dwell in them, and walk in them; and I will be their God, and they shall be my people. 17 Wherefore Come ye out from among them, and be ye separate,
saith the Lord, And touch no unclean thing; And I will receive you, 18 And will be to you a Father, And ye shall be to me sons and daughters, saith the Lord Almighty."

Paul equates unbelievers with iniquity, darkness, Belial, idols and as unclean things.

We the elect believers are the temple of God, and have absolutely no business uniting, fellowshipping, or worshiping Christ with these unregenerate people.

I strongly believe the primary concerns or parameters that should be our litmus test for separating from others who profess (lip-service) Jesus Christ are:

1. The Absolute Sovereignty of God (Unitary will of Father, Son, and Holy Spirit) in all things.
2. The Deity of Jesus Christ. Jesus is the great “I AM” and the ONLY mediator between God and Elect Man.
3. The Work/Gospel of Jesus Christ. Imputed Righteousness alone, through Grace/Faith alone, only for the elect alone.

All of the sub-implications of our understanding are arrived at when we understand the three above.

If we understand #1, we must deny the Augustinian compatibilist “free will” of man and some alleged permissive will of the Father. So there goes 95% of professed Christianity out the window.

If we understand #2, we must reject ecumenical fellowship with Trinity deniers, whether or not they teach truths in other areas.

If we understand #3 to it's full degree, then 99% of professed Christendom flies right out the window, for most either deny imputation or distort it. Most have denied “faith alone” or have distorted its meaning. This leads to their doctrines of final justification and assurance through works.

Most of whatever remnants there are within reformed theology (Calvinistic or Lutheran) are teaching hybrid variants of Tridentine (Council of Trent) soteriology. This we have shown through J. I. Packer, MacArthur, and Piper to name a few.

In effect, our Lord has made it very easy for those who know and embrace the Gospel to know whom we should fellowship with or not fellowship with. The new perspective on Paul crowd, works based assurance crowd, common grace crowd, etc., have denied the Gospel. Thus they are in the category of unbelievers. As Paul says, they are iniquity, darkness, Belial, idols, and as unclean things. Is this harsh? You bet it is. Is it truth? You bet it is!
It's rather simple for me. Who needs them? They do not add anything to me. For myself, if one denies or distorts the truths of the Gospel,

I want no spiritual fellowship with that person.

Do we who are married love our wives or husbands enough to not commit adultery? We who are the bride of Jesus Christ, do we love Jesus Christ and His Gospel enough to not commit spiritual adultery by fellowshipping with pseudo-Christians of all stripes, even if they are called Calvinists or Arminians? Many proclaimed Calvinists preach and teach a false Gospel, hence a false Christ. The Sprouls (father and son) are false also. Is this being harsh? If you think so, than your love for Jesus Christ and His Gospel are suspect.

Jesus said:

“He that loveth father or mother more than me is not worthy of me: and he that loveth son or daughter more than me is not worthy of me” (Mt. 10:37).

Nothing should get in the way of our love for Jesus Christ and His Gospel. Not even family members, although we love them in a certain familial way. Religious people are very obvious to spot. They always love to protect or lend credence to their false prophets. They love their false prophets more than they love Jesus Christ.

Augustinians, both Protestant and Catholic, will defend Augustine till their dying breath. What an awful plight!

The scriptures teach many topics that relate to falsehoods. And it is these falsehoods and the people who promulgate these falsehoods that we should abstain from.

We have been taught in scripture from different inspired men of God about:

*False Christs
*False Doctrine
*False Gods
*False Professors
*False Prophets
*False Religion
*False Shepherds
*False Teachers
*False Witnesses
*False Worship

So if we fully understand, love and embrace:
1. The Absolute Sovereignty of God (Father, Son, and Holy Spirit)
2. The Deity of Jesus Christ
3. The Work/Gospel of Jesus Christ

It then becomes clear to us who our enemies are. For myself, understanding the above three categories are vital for true brotherly fellowship. Of course understanding this assumes one believes in the complete inspiration of the Holy Scriptures also.

Ex.23:33 “Do not let them live in your land or they will cause you to sin against me, because the worship of their gods will certainly be a snare to you.”

Ex. 34:15 “Be careful not to make a treaty with those who live in the land; for when they prostitute themselves to their gods and sacrifice to them, they will invite you and you will eat their sacrifices.”

The importance of separation from false Gospel purveyors cannot be overstated. We as elect believers who constitute the True and Real Israel of God (True Jews) must pay close attention to the reasons stated above.

Many professed Christians in this world have no clue what constitutes the true Gospel of our Lord Jesus Christ. For these individuals, ecumenical unity fits the bill for them. They have no problem with this shallow unity. However, for us who know and assent to the Gospel of our Salvation, we cannot let them live in our land, meaning we cannot let them occupy space in our mind and our fellowships. Their false Gospel (worship of their gods) can be a stumbling block for us.

Remember earlier in this study we discussed our brother Peter and how he was stumbled by James the false Gospel deceiver.

Should we eat the sacrifices (false Gospels, false Christs) of devils? Have you been invited to a church by some neighbors, friends, or acquaintances to worship at their church? I know my wife and I have. When we asked them about their understanding of the Gospel, and listened to their response, we said NO THANKS!

These folks prostitute themselves at every worship service by practicing their mystical liturgies, phony singing (or chanting) and worship in general. If they do not possess the true Gospel, they have no Christ other than a false one, and they worship their phony god.

Ps. 1:1 “Blessed is the one [elect] who does not walk in step with the wicked or stand in the way that sinners take or sit in the company of mockers.”

This is not rocket science here. God makes it very clear to us His people. I fully understand the necessity and need of true Gospel fellowship. But it is Gospel fel-
lowship that is needed, not fellowship in general. Can there ever be a true bond or unity with folks who despise the true Gospel? Can there ever be a true yoking, a bonding, between false-gospel believers? I thank Christ every day for my wife, who loves Christ and the true Gospel, and all the time of fellowship and Bible study we share together in the Lord. Also to have been blessed with some like-minded Gospel believers on the Predestinarian Network who will not budge “one inch” towards compromising the Gospel and the Sovereignty of God.

We should never walk into church buildings or homes for worshipping purposes of those professed Christians who hate our Sovereign God and His Sovereign Christ/Gospel. The only exception I personally can see, would be if they were willing to learn the truth and forsake their evil gospel. Other than that, I have no need of them for spiritual purposes.

Pr. 1:15 “My son, walk not thou in the way with them; Refrain thy foot from their path.”

Pr. 4:14 “Enter not into the path of the wicked, And walk not in the way of evil men.”

Pr. 23:6 “Eat thou not the bread [false gospel] of him that hath an evil eye, Neither desire thou his dainties.”

God speaks the same concept in the Old as in the New. Nothing has changed. Separating from evil false Gospel purveyors is crucial to our witness against them.

Jn 15:19 “If ye were of the world, the world would love its own: but because ye are not of the world, but I chose you out of the world, therefore the world hateth you.”

There is no getting around the words of our Lord Jesus Christ. The problem pseudo-Christians have is one of selfish emotional pride. No one wants to be hated, not even myself. But when it comes to Christ and the Gospel, there are no compromises to be made. NO concessions.

I could not care less if the whole world hated me for the sake of Christ, or if I lost all my friends, all my family, all my money (very little), my entire livelihood, and everything in this worldly life. The One who owns and loves me, Jesus Christ, will sustain me in all my afflictions.

Human kind wants to be accepted, feel loved, feel wanted, feel needed, etc. This is natural. They will do whatever it takes to achieve this end. However, wicked men hated Jesus Christ our Lord, and will hate His people, too. It’s not that they hate us as individuals, but they hate us for what we believe. They hate the Christ that we boldly proclaim. This is the heritage of the Saints (Is. 54:17).
Ro. 16:17 “Now I beseech you, brethren, mark them that are causing the divisions and occasions of stumbling, contrary to the doctrine which ye learned: and turn away from them.”

Folks who have been members of false-gospel Churches all their life find this very difficult. How can they, after receiving the knowledge of the true Gospel, turn away from the very religious people they have known all their church career life? It was easy for my wife and I, but some others may have a problem. None-theless, Christ will guide them and give them boldness at the appointed time to not only turn away from these fools, but to speak out boldly against them. That’s what love for Christ will accomplish.

1 Co. 5:9 “I wrote unto you in my epistle to have no company with fornicators.”

1 Co. 5:11 “… but as it is, I wrote unto you not to keep company, if any man that is named a brother be a fornicator, or covetous, or an idolater, or a reviler, or a drunkard, or an extortioner; with such a one no, not to eat.”

Pseudo-Christians will not perform the hard steps necessary to aid the cause of Christ. In fact, they close their eyes to what is necessary to maintain purity within their fellowship. You will find in most pseudo-Christian organizations the most vile and wicked people in the world. And in fact, you will find clergy folk who are pe-dophiles, homosexuals, lesbians, and all the things Paul states above viewed as fine upstanding members within these hell holes. But for us who are numbered among Christ’s elect, the task becomes easy. We are the Body of Christ, not the body of the wicked. Even if one called a brother gets caught up in some of the above, massaging his ego will not help. Drastic measures must be taken in the hope of restoration. "With such a one no, not to eat.” But most churches will not take the hard course of action. Why? They need that guy’s money, and they need the numbers on their membership roles.

Ep. 5:6-7 “6 Let no man deceive you with empty words: for because of these things cometh the wrath of God upon the sons of disobedience [reprobates]. 7 Be not ye therefore partakers with them.”

Ep. 5:11 “… and have no fellowship with the unfruitful works of darkness, but rather even reprove them.”

Not only are men of God to withdraw from fellowship with those who promulgate a false Christ and a false Gospel, which Paul calls the unfruitful works of darkness, but we are called to reprove/rebuke them.

It is not a joyful task for me to expose the likes of the MacArthurs, Pipers, Sprouls, Packers, Newmans, Gerstners, etc., of this world. But true men of God are compelled to do so. If it can be shown (which it has) they are preaching a false gospel, then we are under obligation to expose them. Who cares about the
blowback we may receive? We do this to honor Christ and in the hope that current and future elect souls will not be stumbled by these false egotistical men who have enjoyed radio and television time to deceive the religious.

2 Th.3:6 “Now we command you, brethren, in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, that ye withdraw yourselves from every brother that walketh disorderly, and not after the tradition which they received of us.”

Command, not suggestion. For all brethren, not only Pastors, Deacons and Elders. We are commanded to withdraw ourselves from all who walk disorderly. This does not mean leg walking, but their overall belief system. The bride of Jesus Christ is so precious to our Lord that it should never be spotted with the dirt of ecumenism, syncretism, or false-gospel purveyors.

2 Ti. 3:1-5 “But know this, that in the last days [inter-advental period] grievous times shall come. 2 For men shall be lovers of self, lovers of money, boastful, haughty, railers, disobedient to parents, unthankful, unholy, 3 without natural affection, implacable, slanderers, without self-control, fierce, no lovers of good, 4 traitors, headstrong, puffed up, lovers of pleasure rather than lovers of God; 5 holding a form of godliness [pseudo-Chrisitianity], but having denied the power therefore. From these also turn away.”

Jesus, Paul, John, and Peter did not paint some broad ecumenical path for the “ekklesia” to reside within, but rather were consistent with God’s very own words of separation from false religion.

We do not need to look outside the church world to find men and women who Paul is addressing, for he is addressing the very institution of Messianic false Christianity. And it is “From these also turn away.”

Show me a man who claims to love Jesus Christ and the true Gospel, and feels absolutely comfortable without Holy Spirit conviction pew-warming in false-gospel churches, and I will show you a man who has been deceived. And for his sake, I hope it is only a temporary deception.

We as Christ’s elect bride must live in this world. We work, have jobs, associate with people, family and friends in our everyday course of existence. This we cannot escape. But our most important task when it comes to spiritual matters related to Christ and the Gospel must be to avoid false unity pertaining to this religious world.

We should never impose our beliefs on others. When the appointed time is right, God will move on a person to ask, or open a door for conversation. If they listen, great. If they come to faith, even better. But if they reject, back off and shake the dust off your feet. Some plant, some water, but it is God who gives the increase (1 Co. 3:6-7).
In this chapter we will discuss the second coming of our Lord Jesus Christ at the end of this current millennial age, and how the inspired writers of scripture employed the three words \textit{Parousia, Epiphaneia, and Apokalypsis} to denote that one coming.

Premillennialists and their children the Dispensationalists see the return of Christ broken up in different stages. Moreover, the majority of Dispensationalists see two Premillenial comings. The first stage is a secret coming \textit{“for the saints”} which they call the \textit{Parousia or Rapture}, and the second stage, \textit{“with the saints”} after a 7 year tribulation period which they call \textit{His Appearing}. Then, after that of course, you have a \textit{Jewish golden age} on earth called the millennium, lasting for a thousand literal years.

Are these \textbf{distinctions} taught in scripture? Did Jesus, John, Paul and Peter teach us such an understanding? Can we see any data, assertion, reference, hint, or inference that would suggest we believe such a thing?

For example, where can it be shown, inferred, or hinted in scripture that Mary, the mother of Jesus, ascended bodily into heaven as the Papists contend? It cannot! So for us, Christ's elect, we must have something recorded in scripture at \textbf{minimum}, even if only a small clue, to at least investigate/contemplate such an idea. Then we must look at that small clue, if there is one, and see if understanding such ascension does not conflict with other teachings in scripture that would prohibit such a \textbf{bold claim}. 

An Amillennial Understanding of the Kingdom of God

Nicholas A. Laurienzo

Chapter 52
Parousia, Epiphaneia, Apokalypsis
The same holds true for all distinctions and/or teachings some may promulgate. The scriptures, writers, and authors do not make or teach a distinction between “The Kingdom of God” and “The Kingdom of Heaven”. These phrases are used interchangeably to speak of the same concept (see Matthew 13:31-32, and compare with Mark 4:30-32, and Luke 13:18-19).

In conclusion, there is no scriptural warrant to make a stage or time distinction between Christ's “coming for His saints” and Christ “coming with His saints”.

Let's examine the words.

**Parousia**: G3952

This word appears in the KJV 24 times (including the 2 mentions in James): 22 times it is rendered as “coming” and 2 times it is rendered as “presence”.

**Epiphaneia**: G2015

This word appears in the KJV 6 times: 5 times it is rendered “appearing” and 1 time “brightness”.

**Apokalypsis**: G602

This word appears in the KJV 18 times: 12 times it is rendered “revelation”, 2 times “revealed”, 1 time “lighten”, 1 time “manifestation”, 1 time “coming”, and 1 time “appearing”.

How these words were employed, and the context pertaining to these words, will show there are no distinctions made by Christ and the Apostles that the dispensationalists claim are there referring to separate stages of His coming. One, two, or all of these words are used in the epistles of Paul, Peter, and John, and also in Matthew 24. The question is, do they refer to the same event, or two stages of that event as to the time of occurrence as alleged by the dispensationalists.

**Let's look at Paul's usage of these three words:**

“Coming” [parousia] is used by Paul 8 times referring to the coming of Christ. Let's examine a few.

1 Th. 4:15 “For this we say unto you by the word of the Lord, that we which are alive and remain unto the coming [parousia] of the Lord shall not prevent them which are asleep.”

Paul speaks of a catching up of living believers, which is described today with the word rapture to denote this event.
2 Th 2:1 “Now we beseech you, brethren, by the coming [parousia] of our Lord Jesus Christ, and by our gathering together unto him.”

The above two verses, according to the Premillennial dispensationalists, show this rapture as a “coming for the Saints”. To them, this coming is a different event in time, and not the appearing of Christ with His Saints at His second coming as alleged by them.

1 Th. 3:13 “To the end he may establish your hearts unblameable in holiness before God, even our Father, at the coming [parousia] of our Lord Jesus Christ with all his saints.”

On the other hand, in 1 Thessalonians 3:13 above, Paul speaks of the coming [parousia] of our Lord “with all His saints.”

If “saints” means or includes the “ekklesia” as dispensationalists would agree (and so do I), then this verse speaks quite plainly of the appearing of our Lord. But Paul never once in any of his epistles infers that a distinction is to be made between coming for and coming with. If there is a distinction, shouldn’t Paul explain this to us, or even raise the issue himself since he was given this mystery? Why is there silence on behalf of Paul for so important an event that takes place in two different stages according to the dispensationalists?

2 Th. 2:8 “And then shall that Wicked be revealed, whom the Lord shall consume with the spirit of his mouth, and shall destroy with the brightness [epiphaneia] of his coming [parousia].”

In the above verse Paul clearly refers to the appearing of Jesus Christ, since it speaks of the slaying of the “Man of Sin”. The expression Paul uses to describe this event is epiphaneia of His parousia. Consequently, we must recognize that Paul uses coming both of “rapture” and of the “appearance” of our Lord as one event, also combining the two expressions above to describe what is apparent to Paul as one and the same event.

1 Co. 15:23-24 “23 But every man in his own order: Christ the firstfruits; afterward they that are Christ’s at his coming [parousia] 24 Then cometh the end, when he shall have delivered up the kingdom to God, even the Father; when he shall have put down all rule and all authority and power.”

The context of this passage concerns the bodily resurrection of the sleeping elect.

1 Co. 15:4 “And that he was buried, and that he rose again the third day according to the scriptures:”

1 Co. 15:12-14 “12 Now if Christ be preached that he rose from the dead, how

695
say some among you that there is no resurrection of the dead? 13 But if there be no resurrection of the dead, then is Christ not risen: 14 And if Christ be not risen, then is our preaching vain, and your faith is also vain.”

Paul shows that Christ was the first to have been risen from the dead unto a glorified body, and equates that resurrection with the bodily resurrection of the elect at His *parousia*. Then comes the end when Christ shall have delivered the kingdom to God the Father. Paul does not hint at or infer two stages of Christ’s coming or even a thousand year period after that coming.

If what the dispensationalists claim is true regarding a literal 1,000 year period after the second alleged stage of the *parousia* (with the saints), then where is a bodily resurrection for those who supposedly accept Christ during the alleged “millennium”? Paul stated that the kingdom of resurrected saints was delivered up to the Father, and then came the end. End of what? Where in scripture does it teach another “Kingdom of God/Heaven” on earth existing after Christ’s coming? And if this is true, where is another bodily resurrection hinted at, or what can the nature of that resurrection be? The horrible implications of premillennial dispensationalism are numerous.

“Revelation” [*apokalypsis*] is used 13 times by Paul. In 1 Corinthians 1:7-8 it is used as “rapture”.

1 Co. 1:7-8 “7 So that ye come behind in no gift; waiting for the coming [*apokalypsis*] of our Lord Jesus Christ: 8 Who shall also confirm you unto the end [end of what?], that ye may be blameless in the day of our Lord Jesus Christ.”

If we notice Paul’s expressions “unto the end” and “blameless in the day of our Lord Jesus Christ”, they are similar to an expression Paul used in 1 Thessalonians 3:13 that spoke of Christ coming with the saints. However, Paul, rather than using the word *parousia* for coming, uses *apokalypsis*. Another point of consideration is that Paul uses the phrase “day of our Lord Jesus Christ” in conjunction with Christ’s coming. If Christ’s coming was in two different stages, why would Paul leave it up to guesswork on our part to figure this out? The overall context does not help us to see a two stage coming.

2 Th. 1:7 “And to you who are troubled rest with us, when the Lord Jesus shall be revealed [*apokalypsis*] from heaven with his mighty angels.”

Again Paul uses the word *apokalypsis* to show Christ's return with His mighty angels. But as shown previously, Paul mentions this same event in 1 Thessalonians 3:13 using the terminology with *all his saints*. No conflicts. Paul expresses Christ as coming with both elect celestial angels and elect saints.

Paul use the words *parousia*, *apokalypsis*, and *epiphaneia* interchangeably to describe the one same event.
"Appearing" [epiphaneia] is a Greek word used exclusively by Paul.

1 Ti. 6:14 “That thou keep this commandment without spot, unrebukeable, until the appearing [epiphaneia] of our Lord Jesus Christ.”

2 Ti. 4:1 “I charge [thee] therefore before God, and the Lord Jesus Christ, who shall judge the quick and the dead at his appearing [epiphaneia] and his kingdom.”

2 Ti 4:8 “Henceforth there is laid up for me a crown of righteousness, which the Lord, the righteous judge, shall give me at that day: and not to me only, but unto all them also that love his appearing [epiphaneia].”

Tit. 2:13 “Looking for that blessed hope, and the glorious appearing [epiphaneia] of the great God and our Saviour Jesus Christ;”

The above verses by Paul indicate the blessed hope of Christ’s coming. There are allusions to the judgment of the quick and the dead, the glory of Christ’s appearing and His Kingdom. However, Paul does not make or infer any of the distinctions the dispensationalists contend for. Paul uses all three different Greek words to depict the same cosmic event in his second coming teachings.

By Peter

Peter uses only the words parousia (coming) and apokalypsis (revelation). Coming refers to a physical appearing. Peter apparently uses revelation in the context of rapture. So to Peter, both parousia (coming) and apokalypsis (revelation) are used to show a definite physical appearance of our Lord at His second coming.

2 Pe 1:16 “For we have not followed cunningly devised fables, when we made known unto you the power and coming [parousia] of our Lord Jesus Christ, but were eyewitnesse of his majesty.”

Here the word parousia is used by Peter to denote the first advent of our Lord, showing parousia was a coming of Christ that was visible. A parousia that they eye witnessed. I want to mention this visibility aspect to dispel the full preterist notion that Christ supposedly already returned in 70 AD, and again the Dispensationalist notion that somehow Christ will return secretly and unseen as some thief in the night to the world at large, at some alleged first stage of His second coming.

2 Pe. 3:1-6 “1 This second epistle, beloved, I now write unto you; in both which I stir up your pure minds by way of remembrance: 2 That ye may be mindful of the words which were spoken before by the holy prophets, and of the commandment of us the apostles of the Lord and Saviour: 3 Knowing this first, that there shall
come in the last days [inter-advental period] scoffers, walking after their own lusts, 4 And saying, Where is the promise of his coming [parousia]? for since the fathers fell asleep, all things continue as they were from the beginning of the creation. 5 For this they willingly are ignorant of, that by the word of God the heavens were of old, and the earth standing out of the water and in the water 6 Whereby the world that then was, being overflowed with water, perished."

The coming in verse four is referring to the second coming of our Lord Jesus Christ. However, Peter is going to add a cosmic/cataclysmic dimension to this coming that Premillennialists, Dispensationalists, and full Preterists want to ignore.

Peter alludes to the flood of Noah’s days as a type or historical precedence depicting God’s destruction of mankind upon this earth that will take place at His second coming - parousia.

The Noaic flood, as discussed in earlier chapters, was no mere localized flood but encompassed the whole earth. Only eight elect souls were saved in the ARK, which typifies Christ.

2 Pe. 3:7 “But the heavens and the earth, which are now, by the same word are kept in store, reserved unto fire against the day of judgment and perdition of ungodly men.”

Peter shows in both cases, in the flood and the second coming of Jesus Christ, that God is sovereign and it is by His word alone that all things are reserved for the appointed time. In this case, the destruction of the world at Christ's second coming-parousia.

2 Pe. 3:8-13 “8 But, beloved, be not ignorant of this one thing, that one day is with the Lord as a thousand years, and a thousand years as one day. 9 The Lord is not slack concerning his promise, as some men count slackness; but is long-suffering to us-ward, not willing that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance. 10 But the day of the Lord will come as a thief in the night; in the which the heavens shall pass away with a great noise, and the elements shall melt with fervent heat, the earth also and the works that are therein
shall be burned up. 11 Seeing then that all these things shall be dissolved, what manner of persons ought ye to be in all holy conversation and godliness, 12 Looking for and hasting unto the coming [parousia] of the day of God, wherein the heavens being on fire shall be dissolved, and the elements shall melt with fervent heat? 13 Nevertheless we, according to his promise, look for new heavens and a new earth, wherein dwelleth righteousness.”

I don't know of any other way an Apostle can use words to make something absolutely clear than Peter's assessment of Christ's return. According to Peter, at Christ's second parousia-coming, we have:

* The heavens and the earth that were reserved unto fire now being destroyed.
* We have all the elect coming to repentance.
* The day of the Lord depicted as a thief in the night.
* In that day of the Lord [parousia] “the heavens shall pass away with a great noise”, “the elements shall melt with fervent heat”, “the earth also and the works that are therein shall be burned up”, “the heavens being on fire shall be dissolved”.
* We, according to his promise, look for new heavens and a new earth, wherein dwelleth righteousness.

According to Peter, we the elect are looking forward to the new heavens and a new earth. Not some secret rapture theory to avoid some 7-year Jew tribulation period, along with a literal 1,000 year millennium on earth, headquartered in Jew Israel, with some rebuilt temple.

According to Peter, a great cosmic and cataclysmic change will take place at Christ's parousia.

Peter, like Paul, uses the phrase thief in the night, to depict the day of the Lord! (See: 1 Th. 5:2).

You will not find in Peter, nor in Paul, any help to support the fairy tales promulgated by the false gospel premillennial dispensationalists, and the full Preterists.

1 Pe. 1:7 “That the trial of your faith, being much more precious than of gold that perisheth, though it be tried with fire, might be found unto praise and honour and glory at the appearing [apokalypsis] of Jesus Christ.”

1 Pe. 1:13 “Wherefore gird up the loins of your mind, be sober, and hope to the end for the grace that is to be brought unto you at the revelation [apokalypsis] of Jesus Christ;”

1 Pe. 4:13 “But rejoice, inasmuch as ye are partakers of Christ's sufferings; that, when his glory shall be revealed [apokalypsis] ye may be glad also with exceeding joy.”
Peter also employs the word *apokalypsis* to describe Christ’s return. So as we can conclude thus far, Paul uses three words and Peter uses two words to describe this momentous event. And these three words no doubt, and in their context, DO NOT suggest some invisible or secret coming. When Christ our King and Lord returns to this cursed earth, all eyes will see Him (Re. 1:7).

Re. 1:7 “Behold, he cometh with clouds; and every eye shall see him, and they also which pierced him: and all kindreds of the earth shall wail because of him. Even so, Amen.”

*to the end* – 1 Th. 3:13

*then cometh the end* – 1 Co. 15:24

*unto the end* - 1Co. 1:8

*hope to the end* – 1 Pe. 1:13

Both in Peter and Paul, their usage of the above phrases concerning the end, and within context of the visible return of Jesus Christ to this world have no hidden or esoteric meanings.

If a writer, speaker, or author wishes to make a distinction about which “end” he is referring to, he would do so to avoid confusion. But in Paul and Peter thus far, they make absolutely no specific distinctions as to the “end” they are referring to, but rather speak of the “end” in relation to Christ’s second advent and the destruction of this current realm, the “man of sin”, etc. So it is quite natural to read the “end” as the end of the world.

It cannot be inferred from the inspired authors that the “end” they are referring to, is perhaps an end of the Gentile mystery church era, or the end of an alleged 7 year tribulation period, or the end of a literal 1,000 year millennium period and other such nonsense as proposed by some.

**By John**

John uses coming - parousia in 1 John 2:28, apparently of the rapture. In Revelation 1:1 John uses revelation - *apokalypsis* to denote the overall revelation of Jesus Christ as manifested and revealed from within the Old Testament, and how this revelation takes on an eschatological significance.

1 Jn. 2:28 “And now, little children, abide in him; that, when he shall appear [phaneroō], we may have confidence, and not be ashamed before him at his coming [parousia].”

Re. 1:1 “The Revelation [apokalypsis] of Jesus Christ, which God gave unto him,
to shew unto his servants things which must shortly come to pass; and he sent and signified [it] by his angel unto his servant John.

In 1 John 2:28, John not only uses “parousia” in relation to Christ's second advent, but uses the word “phaneroō - appear” in context to buttress the idea of a visible coming of our Lord.

In Matthew 24:

In Matthew chapter 24, the coming (parousia) of the Son of Man is referred to four times, vss. 3, 27, 37, and 39. These entries, according to dispensationalists, amillennialists, and postmillennialists, all refer to the “appearing” of our Lord. Only the Full Preterists see this parousia as Christ coming in judgment on Jerusalem only.

Mt. 24:3 “And as he sat upon the mount of Olives, the disciples came unto him privately, saying, Tell us, when shall these things be? and what shall be the sign of thy coming [parousia], and of the end of the world?”

Mt. 24:27 “For as the lightning cometh out of the east, and shineth even unto the west; so shall also the coming [parousia] of the Son of man be.”

Mt. 24:37 “But as the days of Noe were, so shall also the coming [parousia] of the Son of man be.”

Mt. 24:39 “And knew not until the flood came, and took them all away; so shall also the coming [parousia] of the Son of man be.”

Only in Matthew's version of the Olivet discourse is the word “parousia - coming” used. Mark and Luke do not use these words.

Let's look at the immediate context.

Mt. 24:1-3 “1 And Jesus went out, and departed from the temple: and his disciples came to him for to shew him the buildings of the temple. 2 And Jesus said unto them, See ye not all these things? verily I say unto you, There shall not be left here one stone upon another, that shall not be thrown down. 3 And as he sat upon the mount of Olives, the disciples came unto him privately, saying, Tell us, when shall these things be? and what shall be the sign of thy coming [parousia], and of the end of the world?”

Mk. 13:1-4 “1 And as he went out of the temple, one of his disciples saith unto him, Master, see what manner of stones and what buildings are here! 2 And Jesus answering said unto him, Seest thou these great buildings? there shall not be left one stone upon another, that shall not be thrown down. 3 And as he sat upon the Mount of Olives over against the temple, Peter and James and
John and Andrew asked him privately, 4 Tell us, when shall these things be? and what shall be the sign when all these things shall be fulfilled?"

Lk. 21: 5-7 “5 And as some spake of the temple, how it was adorned with goodly stones and gifts, he said, 6 As for these things which ye behold, the days will come, in the which there shall not be left one stone upon another, that shall not be thrown down. 7 And they asked him, saying, Master, but when shall these things be? and what sign will there be when these things shall come to pass?”

The questions that arose were in regards to the destruction of the literal physical Temple in Jerusalem.

Three questions appear to be posed to our Lord in Matthew's passage, whereas only two appear in the Mark and Luke parallels.

Matthew:

When shall these things be?
What shall be the sign of thy coming-parousia?
And of the end of the world?

Mark:

When shall these things be?
What shall be the sign when all these things shall be fulfilled?

Luke:

When shall these things be?
What sign will there be when these things shall come to pass?

Though coming (parousia) and end of the world are not specifically phrased in Mark and Luke, this by no means rules out “parousia” may have been inferred on their part in the phrase “what shall be the sign when all these things shall be fulfilled?”, and/or “what sign will there be when these things shall come to pass?”

The immediate concern for the disciples most naturally would be the destruction of the temple in Jerusalem, which signaled the end of the Jewish age. It is within this context of understanding that the disciples may have wrongly understood the parousia of Christ as meaning and strictly limited to His coming at the end of the Jewish age. Christ answered those immediate concerns with signs and warnings pointing to the temple destruction. However, it is also my understanding that our Lord, by addressing their immediate concerns, in addition added the full scope of what is meant by His second coming [parousia]. This would not only address the questions as asked in Matthew, but also in which Christ can incorporate the
whole of the “ekklesia”, comprised of both Jew and Gentile, which the disciples at that time of hearing did not fully grasp, especially being it was before Pentecost.

This understanding is that Jesus in the Olivet Discourse interweaves predictions regarding two distinct events: The destruction of Jerusalem in A.D. 70 and the second bodily coming [parousia] of Christ at the end of human history.

By intertwining two events, our Lord introduces some similar characteristics of the destruction of Israel as an example or type of the impending doom of the whole of creation at His second coming.

The full preterists interpret Matthew 24, **parousia** and *end of the world [age]*, as strictly wording that is restricted and fulfilled in National Israel 70 AD. On the other hand, mainstream futurists take most of Matthew 24 as wholly future. This is to say that most of Jesus’ prophecies have yet to be accomplished in the “tribulation” period, which precedes the physical 1,000 year millennium and has no direct relevance to the temple destruction of 70 AD.

Rather than getting into a lengthy discourse on Matthew 24, I will only address a few ideas that particularly stand out to me in dispelling both futurist and preterist fantasies.

Since Peter was present at the Olivet discourse, let’s submit his Holy Spirit inspired understanding of Christ’s words.

**JESUS** said, “37 But as the **days of Noah were**, so shall also the **coming [parousia]** of the Son of man be. 38 For as in the days that were before the flood they were eating and drinking, marrying and giving in marriage, until the day that **Noe entered into the ark**, 39 And knew not until the flood came, and took them all away; so shall also the **coming [parousia]** of the Son of man be.”

Jesus alluded to the Noaic flood as a sign of His **parousia**. This flood was not only universal, but also destroyed every single non-elect soul. This flood was not some allegorical mental understanding which depicts only the spiritual realm, but a real bona-fide historical catastrophe that affected the whole physical earth. So for Jesus to use the **Flood** as an example/sign of His Parousia, He must without a doubt be referring to a worldwide cataclysmic event. If Jesus were only referring to the destruction of Jerusalem, why would our Lord use such a worldwide catastrophe to depict the destruction of Jerusalem, a tiny city in this vast world? Noah was not a Jew, but he was an elect person just the same as us Gentile elect who will be safe in the ARK of Christ at His **parousia**. Jesus, by using the flood as an example of His parousia, infers far more people than just Jews alone. Another point to mention, Jesus also compared His coming (parousia) as something the wicked would not be expecting. “**And knew not until the flood came**”. If Jesus were using the Noaic flood as a sign/example of the Jerusalem destruction only, it still would not fit.
The Roman armies for weeks were building up around Jerusalem before the siege. An event of that great proportion can hardly go unnoticed.

In The Wars of the Jews, Book 6, Josephus notes that, on the eighth day of the Roman month Lous (Jewish month Ab), the ramps were finished and Titus ordered the battering rams brought up and made ready for an assault on the Temple. With the battering rams in place, the Roman siege of Jerusalem, which began at Passover that year, would come to an end. As soon as the walls were breached on the 9th of Ab in 70 A.D., a Roman military force of about 30,000 troops under the command of Titus marched into Jerusalem and began a systematic slaughter of the Jews, and the destruction of the Temple and Jerusalem exactly as Jesus foretold 40 years earlier.

As mentioned earlier, Peter, who was present at the Olivet discourse, eventually (years later and after Pentecost) understood what Jesus meant when in 2 Peter 3:1-13. Peter also alluded to the Noaic flood, as Christ did, as an example of Christ's parousia and the end of the world. He was not seeing this event as the end of the Jewish age (70AD), Peter also stated we hope for the New Heaven and Earth. See previous segment.

According to Full Preterism, we must currently be in this new heaven and earth. According to Futurists, when Christ comes (after the second stage, of course), we enter into the millennium and not the New Heaven and Earth. But neither Jesus, nor Paul, nor Peter, nor John remotely hints at these futile understandings. Peter most definitely puts the New Heaven and Earth as the next event after Christ’s coming [parousia].

Peter, like Paul, also uses the term “thief in the night” in reference to the “Day of the Lord” denoting an utter lack of awareness on the part of reprobate humanity to discern the Lord second coming. These I see as further allusions to Christ’s words on Olivet (see Mt. 24:42-44; Lu. 12:39; compare with Re. 3:3; 16:15).

The parallels both Jesus Christ and Peter allude to in the Noaic flood, clearly depict a universal and complete destruction of this cursed world at Christ’s Parousia, Epiphaneia, and Apokalypsis. However Peter goes much further in describing the details of this destruction.

Mt. 24:30-31 “30 At that time the sign of the Son of Man will appear in the sky, and all the nations of the earth will mourn. They will see the Son of Man coming on the clouds of the sky, with power and great glory. 31 And he will send his angels with a loud trumpet call, and they will gather his elect from the four winds, from one end of the heavens to the other.”

The above statement from our Lord is another answer given in response to the questions “what shall be the sign of thy coming [parousia] and of the end of the world?”
Does this sound like an event that is strictly limited and has been fulfilled in 70 AD? Are there only Jewish elect and not Gentile elect? Have all the nations on earth mourned?

Is this also something that will take place at Christ's secret first stage of His parousia? Or even His second stage parousia to set up His 1,000-year literal kingdom on earth according to dispensationalists?

The language and symbolisms just do not support either the full preterist view or the pre-mil futurist view.

When Christ sends His angels with a loud trumpet call, Paul says this will happen:

1 Co. 15:52 “... in a flash, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trumpet. For the trumpet will sound, the dead will be raised imperishable, and we will be changed.”

Paul also said in regards to Christ's statement “coming on the clouds”:

1 Th. 4:17 “Then we which are alive and remain shall be caught up together with them in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the air: and so shall we ever be with the Lord.”

And John said:

Re. 1:17 “Behold, he cometh with clouds; and every eye shall see him, and they also which pierced him: and all kindreds of the earth shall wail because of him. Even so, Amen.”

These inspired statements from Paul and John are 100% compatible to Jesus' own words in Matthew 24:30-31.

In the parables of Christ that teach His return, separating of sheep and goats, wheat and tares, the resurrection, etc., you will not find any wording or specific phrasing that points to the distinctions that dispensationalists contend for. Nor can you make a valid case for full Preterism either. These two Jesuit promulgated heresies have damaged many a soul, all for God's good purposes to deceive mankind.

If only men would interpret eschatology in the light of the Gospel and Gospel implications (including election and reprobation), we would not have Premillennial futurism and Full Preteristic heresies.
Chapter 53
Some Closing Thoughts

At the start of this work, it was my goal to present an Amillennial understanding of eschatology. This presentation of Amillennialism is not the first along these lines, and will not be the last by myself and or other writers for sure, though I felt it quite necessary to join in right along with other Amillennial authors who for years and centuries have seen the need to combat the horrible influences of “Full Preterism”, Premillennialism, and the more aggressive wing of “Dispensationalists”, who by far have captured the larger audiences.

Postmillennial golden age theorists of the liberal days have lost much ground in their efforts. Not that they championed the truth of the Apostolic witness of such things, but religious people like to get caught up in “fads” that are popular, as postmillennialism was in their day.

Unlike other books on the subject of Amillennialism, I felt it was important to add certain dimensions into this work that others either miss altogether or only lightly touch upon. Therefore I incorporated into this work the doctrine of election and reprobation showing how vital this doctrine is when understanding eschatology. Also, incorporating the application of the Gospel, the imputed righteousness of Jesus Christ, faith alone, and assurance when dealing with false-gospel purveyors within the Millennium.

Although Amillenialists may share the basic outline of history, i.e. “Inauguration and Consummation”, with no literal 1,000 year period, there are differences among us as to the “who’s, what’s and when’s” of some occurrences within the inter-advental period. Whereas I see the great Christian apostasy commencing and fought against by the lives and witness of the apostles; then that same apostasy carried forth through the “church fathers”, other amillenialists see this growth of the visible and viable apostate Christian church as a “good thing”, although this was a horrible thing as I wrote about.

As an Amillennialist, it is my belief that the major thrust of the Old Testament was to typify the coming Messiah, Jesus Christ, and to prophesy of His Kingdom of Righteousness. All things were written for the express purpose of magnifying Jesus Christ. Likewise, the principal theme in the New Testament is the accomplishment and fulfillment of all things spoken of in the Old Testament in, through, and by Jesus Christ alone. “It is finished.” We the elect of all ages (both Gentile and Jew), patiently wait out our existence on earth for the glory that awaits us at His coming, and that glorious establishment of the New Heaven and Earth where righteousness dwells to its fullest.
The Kingdom of the Messiah was prophesied of old and the establishment of His promised kingdom was witnessed through the salvation of His elect people. Jesus said in Luke 22:69:

“But from now on the Son of Man shall be seated at the right hand of the power of God.”

We the elect currently have a Sovereign King who sits on His throne ruling over every aspect of His creation. His “ekklesia”, the true and real Israel, reigns with Him, resting in the Gospel alone and possess a complete Justification in Him.

This world is growing increasingly worse day by day. We know this because the institution labeled “Christianity” has grown worse.

Mt. 5:13 “Ye are the salt of the earth: but if the salt have lost his savour, where-with shall it be salted? it is thenceforth good for nothing, but to be cast out, and to be trodden under foot of men.”

Many of those who claim to be Christian (salt) are good for nothing, and will be cast out because they are reprobate imposters. They are useless to themselves, their pew-warmer friends, and the world at large.

False gospels plague this land of ours, and as a result America has become like “Sodom”, filled with sodomites and Christ/Gospel haters, both in religious and political realms.

America, like the rest of the world, is a cesspool of humanity. America today is a military giant in debt up to its ears (oops, the crown of its head), but is a spiritual pygmy and barely breathing.

Pornography is so easily accessible in America via the Internet, cable, satellite TV, and provides a 24-hour feast of depravity for the human soul, thanks to the vile Christ cursed reprobate Jews and their reprobate Gentile accomplices.


http://jewishfaces.com/porn.html

Foul profanity against Jesus Christ is now considered comedy and entertainment.

http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=Z9XUXQGpxqY

Murder a baby? No problem, for it is easier to murder (abort) your own child than to obtain certain prescription medicines.
Adulterous affairs are glamorized on Jew owned and controlled TV soap operas, sit-coms, and in popular magazines.

Concocted crooked business deals are encouraged as long as you don't get caught. And if you do get caught, having the right amount of money, you can buy your way out of a conviction.

Mankind's inner being is filled with garbage and craves drugs, sex, and alcohol just to get through the day. Then on Sunday these depraved souls attend a church or religious services only to feel self-righteous.

Churches and ministers are of little or no help. Very few preach or believe in the scriptures, and the Christ of Scripture. When most pastors and pew-warmers today are confronted with the real Jesus Christ and the true Gospel of our Lord, they become angry and agitated. Jesus has become their bitter enemy, not a friend of today's charlatans in the pulpit.

Judaizers in America's pulpits profess more love for "Sodom and Egypt" which is Eretz Israel and all the nations they have infected, than they do for Jesus Christ and His Ekklesia!

America's social Jewish Marxist welfarism and liberalism have destroyed our communities and filled them full of drugs, crimes, and sexual perversity.

America is filled to the brim with all the material niceties of life, but we are among the world's biggest losers in measures of moral values and spiritual riches.

Mt. 16:26 “For what is a man profited, if he shall gain the whole world, and lose his own soul? or what shall a man give in exchange for his soul?”

America is a nation that lost its moral compass way over a century ago, and is mostly populated by a spiritually dead people and a pseudo-Christian church devoid of God's Spirit.

Cursed America is a nation that exceeds all others in its zeal and devotion to Israel. Since 1948, America has showered Israel and its racist, fascist, apartheid Jewish Zionist corporations with trillions of dollars in money and aid. Money America does not have and must borrow from these same crooked Jews at interest. America has armed the nation of Israel with F-16's, helicopter gunships, and nuclear bombs, to torment and brutalize Israel's captive Arab population, and further propagate Zionist worldwide goals. Blind pseudo-christian America has vainly done this all in the name of Christ, actually believing America would be blessed by the Almighty for giving aid and comfort to Israel and the Jews, a people and nation who literally despise Jesus, who continually blaspheme His name and mock His Word, and make war on His remnant and all who are against Jews.
Have blessings come to our Land? NO! Instead, multiple curses have been bestowed on America. We have, since 1948, increasingly become an immoral, Christ-less, unholy, sex-crazed, murderous, profane, immoral, degraded society, and the end is not in sight. It will get worse as the MAN OF SIN continues to reach full bloom.

Why is God so harshly judging the people of America and sending wrath into our midst? This country and its Zionist controlled leadership has waged an internal/spiritual war of hatred against the true Christian Gospel. Simultaneously, our citizenry and its leaders (political and religious) never cease in providing aid and comfort to ungodly Israel and to unrepentant Talmudic and Zionist Jews who are avowed enemies of Jesus Christ. This is not politics. This is a spiritual war against Christ and the Gospel.

2 Chronicles 19:2

“But Jehu the son of Hanani the seer went out to meet him and said to King Jehoshaphat, Should you help the wicked and love those who hate the Lord? Because of this, wrath has gone out against you from the Lord.”

It is quite simple people of America. Jesus Christ cursed Israel and divorced her. Should America and the world help the wicked and love those who hate the Lord? If your answer is yes, God says: “Because of this, wrath has gone out against you from the Lord.”

We the elect pilgrims on this earth are indeed a minority. Our nation of America is an enemy of Jesus Christ.

To the American people, Christ, His Gospel, and His Word are inconveniences at best. Inwardly, the majority of this nation’s 320+ million people despise the Christ of scripture and want Him out of their lives. The only Jesus Christ they will embrace is some false substitute.

The people and clergy-folk of this nation are proud and haughty with no need for an external divine authority. Yes, Americans seek to dethrone the true Jesus Christ and put themselves on the throne of world dominion; thinking they are bettering the world for humanity. This sickness is not only championed in America, but throughout all the world of reprobate mankind.

America is an accursed nation indeed, a very dark place reveling in Zionist Jew and Papal mischief, full of decay and envy.

I pray that God will continue to raise up His remnant elect people, instilling a fire within their bosom. An elect regenerate people who will not bow down to Baal, who will proclaim the unvarnished truth of the Gospel of Jesus to a dying nation.
and people. Who else on earth other than Christ’s elect are fitted to remind this wicked people and their pseudo-Christian religion of God’s judgment, and of His mercy toward those elect who will repent and turn from wickedness. Yes, let the redeemed of the Lord say so.

This, my friends and brethren is an Amillennial understanding of the Kingdom of God.

The End

Acknowledgments

First and foremost I thank Jesus Christ my Lord, King and Savior for ALL He has done for me. I thank Him for my calling, the knowledge, and wisdom He has granted me to serve Him through this writing. I thank Him for the Gospel that justified a wretch like me, and all His elect seed that the Father has given to Him.

Secondly, I want to thank my wife for all her prayer support over the course of time of this writing. For her love and devotion to Christ our Lord, and for the many discussions and studies we share together.

I want to personally thank Brandan Kraft, owner of the Predestinarian.Net website for allowing me to present this material on his forum. Again, thanks brother Brandan.

Also I want to especially thank brother Greg Winegar for the many phone conversations we have enjoyed together since the start of this project in August of 2011.

Greg, you have been an inspiration to me. I only wish you and Pam lived closer to us so we could fellowship in the Gospel face to face.

Finally, to the many who have prayed and encouraged me over the course of time: Thank you all!

In Christ,

Nicholas A Laurienzo
James
(The Letter)
Exposed
by
Nicholas A Laurienzo

“And if by grace, then is it no more of works: otherwise grace is no more grace. But if it be of works, then is it no more of grace: otherwise work is no more work”.
Romans 11.6

Part One

Introduction

Brothers and sisters in Christ,...... It is with sincere desire to present this article. I will attempt to show how the Grace of an imputed justification is antithetical to ALL human efforts and works. There can never be a synthesis of an imputed justification and human performance as a means for justification. Any addition to Grace, that is; a synthesis of Law and Gospel (Grace) would render Paul’s doctrine of Justification null and void. Many religious churchman have and currently are teaching the synthesis; making faith and works one cohesive unit hence rendering good works (the fruit of faith) a ground, basis, and proof of justification. If good works can be seen (by God and men) as a bonafide proof of Justification, then we must ask two basic questions.

1. What is the numerical quantity of good works that would prove an individual to be Justified?

2. What degree of substantive quality must these good works possess?

In this article I will present evidence that should be sufficient to indict James the brother of our Lord Jesus Christ for the crime of Judaizing the Pauline doctrine of Justification by faith alone, without the works of law.
James the brother of Jesus is the antithesis of Paul concerning justification and never fully comprehended the Pauline doctrine of *Justification*. I do not believe he was even a Christ ordained apostle as most suggest. I believe James falls into the category of “anathema” according to Paul in Galatians 1:8. James was a false apostle and no true apostle of the Gospel of Christ.

Whether or not the book of James has been considered a *Pseudonymous work* is irrelevant for the sake of this article. We will only examine the content of the letter to examine its overall teachings in relation to the doctrine of Justification.

In James 1:1 the letter opens with an address to the *twelve tribes of the dispersion (diaspora)*. This opening statement tells us the audience the letter was intended to reach. I do not agree that the *twelve tribes* should be interpreted allegorically or metaphorically. There is no warrant for such an interpretation in this letter. This letter is neither parabolic or prophetic compared to such others as *Revelation, the Prophets, the parables of Jesus, etc.*

The Jewishness of the letter no doubt would be understood by the Jerusalem Church (Jewish Messianic Christians), for they also struggled in the transition from Moses (Law) to Christ (Gospel). The Messianic Jewish Christian animosity towards Paul's Gentile Christianity is obvious according to the scriptures and other early non-canonical and historical writings as we shall explore after we look briefly into a portrait of James.

**A Brief Portrait Of James**

For the sake of brevity please read the scriptures listed. My comments added after the noted scriptures.

*Mark 6:1-4*; Jesus makes reference that He is without honor among His own family and kin.

*John 7:1-13*; Vs.5; Jesus' brothers did not believe in Him. Vs.7; His brothers were not hated. Christ was hated. Vs.13; His brothers feared the Jews and were silent. We know Jesus did not fear the Jews.

*Acts 12:17*; Notice how Peter after his imprisonment makes sure to differentiate James from the brethren. This would at least indicate that James had some importance over the other brethren. To Peter, it was important to make this distinction.

*Acts 15:1*; The “*certain men*” Who came down from Judea were of the circumcision party.

*Galatians 2:12*; “*Certain men from James*” were of the circumcision party.
Act 15:18-21; James’ statements in these verses are incriminating. James’ response was not at all similar to Peter’s response. James avoided the language of circumcision but still placed four yokes of bondage on the Gentiles. Abstain from pollution’s of idols, from fornication, from things strangled, and from blood. These four commands were from the LAW of Moses. In verse 21, James supports his statement by appealing to MOSES! No mention of Christ! No mention of the Gospel! Contrast James statements to Peter’s statements in Acts 15:7-11. Peter makes reference to Christ and the Gospel.

Acts 21:20-25; When Paul went to Jerusalem the brethren received Paul gladly. However Paul did not fare well with James. Paul was glorifying God for Gentile conversions. James and the Elders said to Paul that thousands of Jews were converted also to Christ and “are all zealous of the law”. James knew by that time Paul was against Moses as a way of Justification. See how the James gang tries to trap Paul in vs.21 then in vs. 22 they challenge him with an ultimatum; “what is it therefore? In verse 23 They exercise authority. Vs. 24 They ask Paul to recant by telling him to shave his head as a sign of submission to the LAW. Beloved Paul was to crafty for them, and seized every opportunity he could get to preach the Gospel. Paul became “all things to all men”

Acts 21: 26-30; Paul’s seven days of preaching the Faith Alone Gospel was enough for these Messianic Jewish Christians. They wanted him KILLED! Where was JAMES? Why did not James stand up in defense of Paul if they both taught the same doctrine of Justification as most churchman allege?

Read all of Acts 22. My question is this. Why was Paul so hated in Jerusalem? Why was James and his followers still allowed to enter into the temple and synagogues unharmed? Perhaps it was because James the usurper was the head of the Jerusalem Messianic Christian church. His false gospel of Justification by good works was tolerable among the Pharisees for the time being.

Gal.2; Paul’s statement in vs. 4, makes reference to false brethren who were determined to bring Paul and the Gentile Christians into submission to the LAW. Verses 6-7 can be a reference to James and his followers in this context. Verses 11-14 state that the James gang caused Peter and Barnabas to stumble. Peter feared James. But why? Paul defends the Gentile Christians with vs.16. This statement of Paul is in direct opposition to James 2:24. Paul concludes chapter 2 with vs.21. “I cast not away the grace of God. For if justice be by the law, then Christ died in vain.”
Part Two

In this section, we will examine the Anti-Paulinism of the letter James. Let’s look at James’ statements.

James 2:14 “What doth it profit, my brethren, though a man say he hath faith, and not have works? Can faith save him?

2:17 “Even so faith, if it hath not works, is dead, being alone.
2:20 “But wilt thou know, O vain man, that faith without works is dead.
2:21 “Was not Abraham our father justified by works, when he had offered Isaac his son upon the alter?

James is dead wrong on his interpretation of Abraham. In Genesis 15:1-6, God promised Abram seed from his bowels. When Abram believed this promise alone from God in vs 6, it was accounted to him for righteousness/justice. Abram was Justified long before Isaac was even born. James twisted the scripture to mean that Abraham was justified when he offered up Isaac. This should be enough evidence that the writer of James clearly intended to misrepresent the facts. Also, James uses the argument of Abraham to misrepresent Paul’s interpretation of Abraham as we will see in part three from Paul’s conclusions.

James 2:22 “Seest thou how faith wrought with his works, and by works was faith made perfect?

The Genesis account does not support James’ conclusion. Abram’s faith was already perfect before Isaac was even born!! That is why it was accounted to Abram for righteousness/Justification. FAITH ALONE IN THE PROMISE OF GOD ALONE JUSTIFIED ABRAM!!

Let us think. If a person needs faith in God to receive justification, which James and Paul do not deny; then according to James this faith must also have good works to make this faith perfect. The key word in this argument is perfect.

James is not discussing the validity of faith, but rather the necessity of good works to procure Justification. You see; according to James, faith alone in Jesus Christ alone cannot Justify the sinner. How many good works does a sinner need? One, two, three, or perhaps a lifetime full of good works to perfect his faith and consequently perfect his justification according to James.

James 2:23 “And the scripture was fulfilled which saith, Abraham believed God, and it was imputed unto him for righteousness: and he was called the Friend of God.

James uses the same biblical passage; Genesis 15:6, attempting to prove the opposite premise that Paul was trying to convey. James added “and he was called the Friend of God”, which was not in the Genesis account but in other
Old Testament passages. However, to a Jew who could trace his lineage and blood line to Abraham this statement was of extreme importance.

II Chronicles 20:7  “Art not thou our God, who didst drive out the inhabitants of this land before thy people Israel, and gavest it to the seed of Abraham thy friend for ever?”

Isaiah 41:8 “But thou, Israel, art my servant, Jacob whom I have chosen, the seed of Abraham my friend”.

The writer of James full well knew that physical decedents of Abraham; (whom the letter was addressed) Jews in context, not Ishmaelites or Esauites, would take this statement personal thus exploiting the Jew pride of being of the lineage of Abraham. I believe the writer put friend of God there to further instill animosity towards Paul and the Gentile Christians.

Paul the Apostle stated in Romans 2:28,29 “For he is not a Jew, which is one outwardly; neither is that circumcision, which is outward in the flesh: But he is a Jew, which is one inwardly; and circumcision is that of the heart, in the spirit, and not in the letter; whose praise is not of men, but of God”.

Paul refutes any such notion that a person could be considered a True Jew on account of him being a physical, circumcised descendant of Abraham. James and his followers (certain men) hated that statement from Paul. However, James employed the term “friend of God” to buttress his false Jew doctrine of a Justification by works.

James was sowing discord between Messianic Jewish Christians and Gentile Christians by attempting to tell all his Jewish followers (twelve tribes) that if they wanted to be considered friends of God they must, unlike Paul and his followers, obey the works of the law and goods works in general to perfect their faith and thus be justified. Only in this way James’ inferred Messianic Jews can be considered legitimate friends of God.

James 2:24  “Ye see then how that by works a man is justified, and not by faith only”.

What more needs to be said? James’ statement is in clear and unequivocal opposition to Paul’s statements and doctrine of Justification. Further proving that the writer of James would not and could not accept Paul’s doctrine of Justification through Faith Alone. I might add; faith is a gift from God. This gift (faith) looks only in one direction and has only one object in view; that is Jesus Christ’s perfect substitutionary atonement on their behalf. Faith alone looks to Christ’s substitutionary atonement ALONE as the only proof, ground, and basis of our Justification. When a sinner looks inward and or depends on their own good works as a proof, ground, or basis of their Justification, they will fare no better
than Peter did when he took his eyes of Christ and started to sink. See: Matthew
14:22-31 vs30 "But when he saw the wind boisterous, he was afraid; and
beginning to sink, he cried, saying, Lord save me."

James 2:26 “For as the body without the spirit is dead, so faith without works is
dead also”.

Let's analyze the above statement.

Can we agree that the monergistic effectual work of the Holy Spirit in
regeneration and the gift of the Holy Spirit which effectually causes faith is
DEAD? The answer would be no. James and Paul know this also. However,
James is not attempting to teach that good works are non-meritorious fruits that
proceed from faith solely, but rather, James is attempting to use these good
works as the meritorious ground of perfecting Justification. James cannot accept
that Jesus Christ's imputed righteousness that is reckoned to believer through
faith alone is sufficient as Paul taught. James makes clear that good works are a
necessary meritorious ground for perfecting justification.

Paul states in Titus 3:5,6; “Not by works of righteousness which we have done,
but according to his mercy he saved us, by the washing of regeneration and the
renewing of the Holy Ghost; Which he shed on us abundantly through Jesus
Christ our Saviour.”

These verses from Paul shatter James' false notions of synergism. Faith alone in
and of itself is always vibrant and alive because faith is the sole gift and
efficacious power of God alone. To call Justifying faith dead is a repugnant
statement and an affront to the very life giver Himself who is God alone!!
Part Three

The Apostle Paul on Justification by Faith Alone

“For I am not ashamed of the gospel of Christ: for it is the power of God unto salvation to every one that believeth, to the Jew first, and also to the Greek. For therein is the righteousness of God revealed from faith to faith: as it is written, The just shall live by faith.” Romans 1:16,17

Unmistakably there is a sharp contrast between Paul and James. Including the book of James and other mentions of James the Lord’s brother in scripture, James offers NO support or advancement of the Gospel. One would be hard pressed to find even a morsel. James is only falsely concerned with legal, moral and ethical conduct to procure and perfect Justification. Now with Paul that is a whole different story as we shall see.

Romans 2:11-16 vs13 “For not the hearers of the law are just before God, but the doers of the law shall be justified”

I want to start with the above verse for one primary reason. Many who support James use this verse to argue that James and Paul are similar in their understanding when discussing the relationship between Faith and Works as a means and or proof of Justification. On the surface of this statement one may conclude that Paul and James are in agreement. However, if this statement were to agree with James’ understanding of Justification, Paul would be contradicting himself in the following chapters of Romans and also in the book of Galatians. If we exegete this passage in it’s context we will see no contradictions on behalf of Paul.

Romans chapter 2 opens with a stern rebuke against those (primarily Jews—”O man”) who judge one another while they themselves do the same things. Paul proceeds in this chapter to show that Jew and Gentile are alike.

Vs 11 “For there is no respect of persons with God.” vs12 “For as many as have sinned without law (Gentiles) shall also perish without law: and as many as have sinned in the law (Jews) shall be judged by the law.”

Both are guilty of sin. Jew and Gentile alike.

Vs 13 “For not the hearers of the law are just before God, but the doers of the law shall be justified”.

Now this is a true statement in this context. The point that Paul was making, is that Jews were good hearers of the Law. Every Sabbath the Jews would enter
the synagogue and hear the Law as it was read from Moses. The Jews thought and still think today that they are superior to all the nations around them. But just hearing the law is not good enough for Paul. The Law demands perfect obedience. Not only by obeying the letter of the Law (outward observances), but also obeying the intent and spirit of the law from the heart (pure sinless motives and desires). This type of perfect obedience according to Paul would then render a man Justified. Only one man in history is and was able to perform this type of perfect obedience. That is the God/Man Jesus Christ! So Paul was correct when he stated “the doers of the law shall be justified”. Jesus Christ was the only perfect doer of the Law.

Matthew 5:27,28  “Ye have heard that it was said by them of old time, Thou shalt not commit adultery: But I say unto you, That whosoever looketh on a woman to lust after her hath committed adultery with her already in his heart.”

The Jews lost site of the true function of the Law. The Law magnifies the righteousness of God and shows mankind how depraved and incapable we all are in attempting to satisfy the requirements of the law. The Law necessitates a Redeemer from it’s curse. Contrast James who thinks personal obedience to the Law and the performance of good works could justify a man.

Vs 16  “In the day when God shall judge the secrets of men by Jesus Christ according to my Gospel”

Paul’s main thrust in chapter two, is to show that God is the only perfect and infallible judge. This judgment is based on the Gospel Alone! Only God knows the hearts of men. This is why any form of works displayed on behalf of the believer will NEVER be a proof of Justification before God and men. We sinners can NEVER see into the heart of others. Performance of good works can NEVER be a measuring stick of ones justification.

Vs 25  “For (Jewish) circumcision verily profiteth if thou keep the law: but if thou be a breaker of the law, thy circumcision is made un-circumcision”

Vs 26  “Therefore if the un-circumcision (Gentiles) keep the righteousness of the law, (faith alone in Christ’s righteousness) shall not his un-circumcision be counted for circumcision?”

Paul’s major enemies were Christian Messianic Judaizers. Those of James. Jews.

Vs 27  “And shall not un-circumcision which is by nature (all men are born un-circumcised) if it fulfil the law, (faith alone in the Gospel) judge thee, who by the letter and circumcision (Jews) dost transgress the law?”
Vs 28 “For he is not a Jew, which is one outwardly; neither is that circumcision, which is outward in the flesh: vs 29 “but he is a Jew, which is one inwardly; and circumcision is that of the heart, in the spirit, and not in the letter; whose praise is not of men, but of God”

Only the Master Physician Jesus Christ can perform this kind of heart surgery. All of God’s elect are true Jews. And all of the non-elect are not true Jews. No amount of works that we are able to perform will ever justify and satisfy us before God. Even if we attempted to offered up our own son on an altar like Abram. We do not need the praise or approval of men as a proof of our Justification. Unlike James who needs some sort of proof and ground of Justification in man. Faith Alone is not enough with James. James says, “I’ll show you my faith by my works.” What a prideful and arrogant statement. As if his works are perfect before God and men to Justify himself as he clearly teaches.

If we read Romans and Galatians with the historical understanding that Paul was answering the attacks against him by Messianic Jew Judaizers of the Gospel we will understand the book of James clearly and rightly within the historical mood and setting of that day.

Read Romans 3:7-12

Paul in these verses was stating that the truth of God (Faith alone in the Gospel) was considered by some to be a lie; in that it totally nullified Law keeping (Moses). The Judaizers made slanderous allegations against Paul that nullifying Moses as a way of Justification was an evil thing. Paul says that he proved both Jews (who had the Law) and Gentiles (who did not have the Law) to be under sin.

There is none righteous. There is none that understands. There is none that seeketh after God. All are gone out of the way. All are unprofitable. None does good.

Romans 3:20 “Therefore by the deeds of the law there shall no flesh (Jew and Gentile) be justified in His sight: for by the law is the knowledge of sin.

This is the function of the Law. All attempts in adherence to the Law as a means or proof of Justification is futile. The schoolmaster is done away with. It brought us to Christ. It is finished! There are those Reformed folks who say the law points us to Christ as a way of salvation. Then once saved Christ points us back to the law as a way of life. That is nonsense! As if the law could add anything to our faith and justification in Christ. Observance to law keeping as a way of perfecting justification would then make Christ’s imputed righteousness of no effect.

Vs 21 “But now the righteousness of God (Jesus Christ) without the law (Christ pre-existed the written code) is manifested, being witnessed by the law and the
prophets.”

The law and prophets witness, testify, and derive their righteousness from the Eternal One, Christ. Not the other way around. There is no law that makes Christ Righteous. He is Righteous by His very being and essence. There is no obedience to a written code that makes the elect righteous either.

Christ in us, and us in Him through faith alone is our only hope, righteousness, and justification. NO WORKS!

Vs 22 “Even the righteousness of God which is by faith of (or in ) Jesus Christ unto all (Jew and Gentile) and upon all them that believe: (faith alone) for there is no difference:”

Vs 23 “ For all (Jew and Gentile) have sinned, and come short of the glory of God”

Vs 24 “ Being justified freely by His grace through the redemption that is in Christ Jesus”

Vs 25 “ Whom God hath set forth to be a propitiation through faith in his blood, to declare His righteousness for the remission of sins that are past through the forbearance of God.”

Vs 26 “To declare, I say, at this time His righteousness: that He might be just, and the justifier of him which believeth (faith alone) in Jesus”.

There is no hint of a synthesis of faith and works in these versus to procujustification. To Paul, it was strictly Faith Alone in Christ Alone.

Vs 27 “ Where is the boasting then? It is excluded. By what law? Of works? Nay: but by the law of faith.” (Faith alone)

No boasting with Paul!

Vs 28 “Therefore we conclude that a man (Jew and Gentile) is justified by faith without the deeds of the law.

No works! No deeds! No proving before men! No sacrificing Isaac upon an altar. Justification is by Faith Alone in Christ’s imputed righteousness alone.

Vs 30 “Seeing it is one God, which shall justify the circumcision by faith, and the un-circumcision through faith. ..... Faith Alone

Vs. 31 “ Do we then make void the law through faith? God forbid; yea we
Paul answers his critics who slandered and misrepresented him. Paul was not voiding the law, but rather stating that faith alone in Christ’s imputed righteousness alone is the equivalent and fulfillment of all law keeping because Christ honored the law by His perfect adherence. It is as if we the elect who believe in Christ have actually performed and satisfied all the requirements of the law. Imputed righteousness declares to us that we are just and righteous in the sight of God. We are not guilty before God. We have fulfilled the law of God in Christ through faith alone.

Some that are of the James, Augustinian, and Aquinas persuasion will say that verse 31 means that with the assist of enabling Grace we can now establish and perform the good works of the law as a ground or proof of justification. This is wrong. The written code could not penetrate the sinful human condition and bring eternal life and justification in the old covenant and neither in the new covenant. As all men (regenerate or not) fail to obey it’s precepts perfectly. What the law needed was a fulfiller and Christ is the answer and fulfillment of the law. **The Gospel of Christ establishes the law WRITTEN IN THE HEART AND NOT ON TABLETS OF STONE OR PARCHMENTS.**

Regeneration which effectually causes faith alone in Christ alone, IS THE PERFECT ESTABLISHMENT OF THE LAW. Not law voidance.

Romans 4:1  “What shall we say then that Abraham our father, as pertaining to the flesh, hath found?”

Vs 2  “For if Abraham were Justified by works, he hath whereof to glory; but not before God.

Now there are some in the Protestant camp, and those especially Roman Catholic apologists who contend that this verse does not deny justification by works, but rather denies boasting before God. The key word is “IF”. Paul arguing his points is quite comfortable with taking his opponents premise; as in this case {one can be made righteous by works} and running it to it’s logical conclusion. If one can be made righteous by works he could boast. But that “IF” is impossible with men!

Vs 3  “For what saith the scripture? Abraham believed God, and it was counted unto him for righteousness.”

What more can be said? Faith Alone! James is not content with this statement. James needs the works of Abraham and also teaches the need of his **pure religion** to complete and perfect Justification. To James; it is {FAITH & WORKS}
= Justification . Not Faith Alone as Paul teaches.

This is what the letter of James is teaching no matter how much some brainwashed and paid theologian tries to wiggle and twist the obvious meaning of James to conform with Paul.

James 2:20 “But wilt thou know, O vain man, that faith without works is dead?

Faith never depends on works for it’s life; for faith is always living. Faith is a gift of the Holy Spirit. Faith can never dead.

James 2:21 “Was not Abraham our father justified by works, when he had offered up Isaac his son upon the altar?” No!

If James is right; then Paul said in Ro.4:2 Abraham would have something to boast about before men would he not? But James is dead wrong.

Ephesians 2:8,9 “For by grace are ye saved through faith; and that not of yourselves: it is the gift of God: Not of works, lest any man should boast”

Paul is crystal clear by teaching Justification is not of works.

James 2:24 “Ye see then how that by works a man is justified, and not by faith only?”

This statement by James directly contradicts Paul’s doctrine of Faith Alone!

Romans 4:4 “Now to him that worketh is the reward not reckoned of grace, but of debt.”

Vs 5 “But to him that worketh not but believeth (faith alone) on him that justifieth the ungodly, his faith is counted for righteousness.

Read following verses in Romans 4. I will add comments.

Vs 6 God imputes righteousness without works. James disagrees.

Vs 7 By faith alone, without works, sins and iniquities are covered and forgiven. James disagrees.

Vs 8 Non-imputation of sin toward the elect through faith alone. James disagrees.

Vs 9 The blessing of Justification toward Jew and Gentile alike through Faith Alone without all good works. James disagrees.
Vs 10 -11-12 Righteousness [Justification] was reckoned to Abraham prior to any works. Prior to the offering of Isaac through Faith Alone. James most definitely disagrees.

Vs.13 -16 Righteousness and justification through faith alone. James disagrees.

Verses 17-21 Here in this passage is Paul’s inspired meaning of the essence of faith. He uses the Abraham account as an example. Paul shows that Abraham did not look to any substance within himself nor circumstances surrounding his life. Abraham did not consider his own dead child producing abilities nor Sara’s dead womb. “He staggered not at the promise of God through unbelief” “but was strong in faith, giving glory to God” Abraham was fully persuaded that what God had promised He was also able to perform.

Vs 22 “And therefore it was imputed to him for righteousness”
Vs.23 “Now it was not written for his sake alone, that it was imputed to him: Vs.24 “But for us also, to whom it shall be imputed, , if we believe on him that raised Jesus our Lord from the dead;”
Vs 25 “Who was delivered for our offenses, and was raised again for our justification.

This is Paul's explanation of the Abraham event. No mention of works, no mention of offering up Isaac to perfect his faith by works. There is no hint of a dead, incomplete, or imperfect faith here. To Abraham and Paul it is Faith Alone in the promise of God alone. Faith alone! In Christ substitutionary alone! NO WORKS AT ALL as a means or proof of perfecting faith hence perfecting Justification.

Romans 5:1 “Therefore being justified by faith, we have peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ”

Faith alone in Christ alone is all sufficient for assurance, hope, peace, and confidence. No amount of works that James' suggests you need to accomplish to perfect your faith and justification, also that you and I are able to perform can ever add to faith. Resting our hopes in anything other than faith in the person of Christ alone is futile. Looking at any form of works we perform as a proof or justification in your life or others life is also futile. James surely does not agree with Paul.

Romans 10:1-4 “Brethren, my hearts desire and prayer to God for Israel is, that they might be saved. For I bear them record that they have a zeal of God, but not according to knowledge. For they being ignorant of God’s righteousness, (Christ), and going about to establish their own righteousness, have not submitted themselves unto the righteousness (Christ) of God. For Christ is the end of the law (as a means) for righteousness to everyone that believeth.”
Justification is a verdict of righteousness. But not ours! It is only Christ who is the righteous one.

This righteousness of Jesus Christ is imputed to the elect and understood through faith alone. James cannot and will not agree with this understanding. James requires some kind of works to complete and make faith perfect. James is not discussing fruits and consequences of a true and living faith. James says that faith alone is insufficient and that works are meritoriously necessary for perfecting justification.

So far after reading these sections how do you think the Apostle Paul would respond to the below statements? I believe Paul would thus respond.

James 2:14 “What doth it, my brethren, though a man say he hath faith, and have not works? Can faith save him?”

Yes James. No amount of works we do are ever perfect in the sight of God and men. We are saved by Grace alone, through faith alone, in the person and work of Jesus Christ Alone.

James 2:17 “Even so faith, if it hath not works, is dead, being alone”

James you do not understand the essence of Faith. “Faith is the substance of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen. Hebrews 11:1. James you are blind and zealous Jew. You need a proof you can see. However, the gift of faith that the Holy Spirit has given me and my Gentile children is a living substance and provides a living hope. Faith alone in Christ alone is all the evidence I need, and you should need as a matter of fact. Jesus said “Blessed are they that have not seen, and yet believe”. Why James do you insist on seeing works? You cannot see into the hearts of men. Your judgment will be at best faulty.

James 2:18 “Yea, a man may say, thou hast faith, and I have works: Shew me thy faith without thy works, and I will shew thee my faith by my works.”

OK James, what works are you going to show me? You are an arrogant, prideful, and self righteous Jew man like your Pharisaical brothers. Even if you showed to me that you fed every starving Jew and Gentile in the world, gave all your money to the poor; because you hate the rich folks so much; your works are still filthy rags in God’s sight. Only Christ’s righteousness will suffice.

James 2:20 “But wilt thou know, O vain man, that faith without works is dead?”

James, why are you calling me a vain man. You are obsessed with works like your beloved Jew Pharisees who had Christ murdered. Don’t you know that I killed the followers of Christ and had them put in jail and beaten. Let me tell you something James you arrogant Jew. “We are the circumcision who worship God in the Spirit, and rejoice in Christ Jesus, and have no confidence in the flesh.”
Though I might also have confidence in the flesh. If any other man ( including you James ) thinketh that he hath whereof he might trust in the flesh, I more: Circumcised the eighth day, of the stock of Israel, of the tribe of Benjamin, an Hebrew of the Hebrews; as touching the law, a pharisee; concerning zeal, persecuting the church; touching the righteousness which is of the law, blameless. But what things were gain to me, those I counted loss for Christ. Yea doubtless, and I count all things but loss for the excellency of the knowledge of Christ Jesus my Lord: for whom I have suffered the loss of all things, and do count them but DUNG, that I may win Christ. And be found in him, not having my own righteousness, which is of the law, but that which is through the faith of (or in) Christ. The righteousness which is of God by faith.

You see James, ALL your works and especially flesh cutting are DUNG just like mine.

James 2:21 “Was not Abraham our father justified by works, when he had offered Isaac his son upon the alter?

No he was not James. I don’t know how many times to tell you. He believed the promise of God and was justified way before Isaac was even conceived. Why have you so twisted and misrepresented the Genesis account of Abraham? Was it to justify your works false gospel? That is a horrible thing to do James. You are also “anathema”

James 2:22 “ Seest thou how faith wrought with his works, and by works was faith made perfect.”

Hold on a minute James! Are you telling me that God justified Abraham with an imperfect  and insufficient faith before he offered up Isaac? Do you really think your good works can make your faith in Christ perfect enough to justify yourself?

James 2:23 “ And the scripture was fulfilled which saith, Abraham believed God, and it was imputed to him for righteousness: and he was called the Friend of God.”

James your application of this verse is devious. It is true Abraham believed God. But you are using this statement to mean believing is more that just faith alone. You mean it to be works also as a means to procure Justification. You preach a false gospel James. You preach a faith + works = Gospel Justification.

James 2:24 “Ye see then how by works a man is justified, and not by faith only.

Well James, it is clear to me that you must be placed under anathema for teaching Justification by works. Remember I wrote that if it be of grace it is no longer of works. And if it be of works it is no longer of grace. James,... works and grace are antithetical to one another. Why do you insist on synthesizing them?
Because Paul has written so much on this topic of justification, I wanted to cover the main points without glossing over them. I know some may think this is lengthy but it is necessary to try and break through all the years of indoctrination and persuasion from clergymen who have held the letter of James to be high canon and inserted into the collection of books we call the Holy Bible.

Acts 13:38,39  “Be it known unto you therefore, men and brethren, that through this man ( Christ ) is preached unto you the forgiveness of sins: And by Him ( Christ ) all (Jew & Gentile alike ) that believe are justified from all things, from which ye could not be justified by the law of Moses.”

Please read the whole of Acts 13. Throughout Paul’s missionary journeys, if there were ever a people that were against Paul’s message of the Gospel they would be mainly:

(1) Talmudic Jews.

(2) Messianic Jews and Judaized Gentile Christians.

(3) Pagan and Hellenistic Gentiles.

Of course all those sects that are against the message of Grace alone could be listed. However, I wanted to summarize Paul’s enemies from that historical time period into those three categories.

The Pharisaical religious machine was in full operation when Christ entered history and still is today as a matter of fact. There were Synagogues throughout Gentile lands. In fact, this religious machine was powerful enough to persuade Pontius Pilate the Roman Governor to decide against Christ. Even though Pilate had acquitted Jesus four times.

Matthew 23:15  “Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! For ye compass sea and land to make one proselyte, and when he is made, ye make him twofold more the child of hell than yourselves.”

Strong and truthful language from our Lord Jesus. Paul and Barnabas encountered the same hatred and venom not only from Pharisaical Jews, but from Messianic Jew Christian Judaizers also. The Pauline message of Justification through Faith Alone in the person and work of Christ Alone is the foundation that the ekklesia stands upon. In denial of this doctrine the ekklesia falls.

Romans 8:33  “Who shall lay any thing to the charge of God’s elect? It is God that Justifieth.”
The heart of Paul’s message in relation to Justification is the very fact that Justification is the Sovereign work of God alone. From pre-creation eternal Election, our human existence in and throughout history, and finally our Glorified state in the new Heaven and Earth, it is all the work of God in and through His son Jesus Christ and revealed to us by the Holy Spirit in regeneration. According to Paul, no element of human efforts or merits can ever play a part in Justification. Unlike James a Messianic Jew Christian Judaizer who links human action and cooperation as a vital meritorious and necessary procurement for Justification.

1 Corinthians 6:11  “And such were some of you: but ye are washed, but ye are sanctified, but ye are justified in the name of the Lord Jesus, and by the Spirit of our God.”

We the elect of God are seen and treated by God the Father through Christ as sinless sanctified and justified. We are of the status of “WERE”, although sin still is present within our being. This is what the Christ event has done for us. ALL of our sins have been expiated by Jesus Christ. We are considered holy and righteous IN CHRIST and found not guilty.

In our regenerate state we experience all manner of temptations; commission of sin, either by action or thought. The Holy Spirit lusts against our flesh and our flesh lusts against the Holy Spirit. We war daily with our members. “O wretched man that I am! Who shall deliver me from the body of this death?.” “I thank God, through Jesus Christ our Lord. So then with the mind I myself serve the law (faith alone in the Gospel of Christ, is the fulfillment of ALL law) of God: but with the flesh the law of sin.” Romans 8:24,25.

The soteriology of Paul places the burden of righteousness/justification solely on the merits of Christ. This Justification is imputed alone to the elect. This righteousness is wholly alien and extrinsic to man. It is never inherent or intrinsic to mans nature. Man by nature and birth is depraved. Even the works an elect regenerate child of God may perform would still be tainted by sin thus disqualifying them from being a proof, ground, or basis of Justification. James and his followers; the Roman Catholic Church, most Reformed folks, Evangelicals, Arminians, Pentecostals and the like, still look to works as playing either a major role (ground or basis) or a minor role (proof) in procuring the verdict of justification. Paul excludes both roles! SINFUL MAN OFFERS NOTHING TO JUSTIFICATION IN ANY WAY SHAPE OR FORM.

Titus 3:5-7  “Not by works of righteousness which we have done, but according to his mercy he saved us, by the washing of regeneration, and the renewing of the Holy Ghost. Which he shed on us abundantly through Jesus Christ our Saviour; That being justified by his grace, we should be made heirs according to the hope of eternal life.”
This Messianic Jew letter of James has the audacity to teach that Abraham was Justified by works and not faith alone! A clear denial of Paul.

Please read the whole letter to the Galatians. The whole thrust of Paul is to expose and refute the Messianic Jew Christian Judaizers.

Paul in Galatians 1:6-9 places an anathema on all those who would pervert the Gospel of Justification. Paul also in verses 11 and 12 certifies that his Gospel was not learned from men but rather Jesus Christ Himself.

Galatians 2:16  “Knowing that a man is not Justified by the works of the law, but by the faith of (in) Jesus Christ, even we have believed in Jesus Christ, that we might be justified by the faith of Christ, and not by the works of the law; for by the works of the law shall no flesh be justified.”

Again the whole polemic of Paul is to refute James and his followers. For they were the ones who were against Paul’s Gospel of Justification.

Vs 17,18  Paul’s critics accused him and his followers of being sinners in stating that they were justified by faith alone in Christ alone without all works. Then Paul says if that he rebuilds (Moses) the things he destroyed, he would then be a transgressor of the Gospel. There is NO synthesis of Grace and works in Paul’s writings.

Vs.21  “I do not frustrate the Grace of God: for if righteousness (justification) come by the law, then Christ is dead in vain.”

Again as I shared earlier. To Paul, the whole of the Law encompassed not only ceremonial and cultic principals peculiar to Israelites, but also all moral and ethical conduct required from the heart. Man is totally incapable of satisfying the law! Thank God for Christ our Saviour who redeemed us from it’s curse.

In Chapter three of Galatians vs1, Paul’s stern rebuke is challenging. Foolish Galatians who has bewitched you? Well we know it was James and his followers spewing out their false gospel of a works justification.

Galatians 3:6  “Even as Abraham believed God, and it was accounted to him for righteousness .

Faith Alone no works!

Vs 7  “Know ye therefore that they which are of faith, the same are the children of Abraham”

I can just see James the Jew and his Messianic followers along with the other Jew Christ rejecters; whom heard or read this statement. Gentiles by faith alone
are Children of Abraham? Can you see why Paul’s Gospel was so hated in Israel? And today within Judaized pseudo-Christianity?

Verses 8,9  God justifies the heathen through faith alone. We the elect are blessed with Abraham. The scriptures foretold of the Gospel.
Vs 10  All those who preach a proof or justification by works are still under the curse.

Vs.11  “But that no man is justified by the law in the sight of God, it is evident: for the just shall live by faith.”

Shall we add to this and say we are justified in the sight of men by the law and good works? Nonsense!! Men are not God. Justification is God’s business alone. We need no further proof of justification. Faith alone in Christ’s imputed righteousness alone is the answer of a good conscience.

Vs.12  “And the Law is not of faith: but the man that doeth them shall live in them.”

Paul again reiterates the uselessness of the law as a way to procure justification. According to Paul, it is through faith alone in the imputed merits of Christ alone.

Versus 13-14  Christ redeemed us from the curse of the law that the blessings of Abraham will come on the Gentiles through faith alone in Christ alone!

In Chapter five of Galatians, Paul continues to strengthen his argument in defense of Justification by Faith Alone. Paul knows his Gospel and knows the enemies of the Gospel. He asks them; who did hinder you that you should not obey the truth? Paul says that these Messianic Jew Judaizers were not from God. Then says these teachings are leaven. Jesus also warned us of the leaven of the Pharisees and now we are warned of leaven of the Messianic Jews.

Galatians 5:11 “And I, Brethren, if I yet preach circumcision, why do I yet suffer persecution? Then is the offense of the cross ceased.”

Paul is stating to his audience that the offense of the cross would cease if he preached a justification by works; in this case flesh cutting circumcision. Also, his persecution would also cease. You see; teaching the true Gospel of Faith Alone brings the wrath of all religions onto the elect; especially false Christian ones.

Hebrews 10:38,39  “Now the Just shall live by faith: but if any man draw back, my soul shall have no pleasure in him. But we are not of them who draw back unto perdition; but of them that believe to the saving of the soul”

So far reading all that has been written by Paul pertaining to Faith and Justification, what are we to understand from this scripture? Any looking to works
as a way or proof of justification is futile. It is considered a drawing back or drawing away from faith alone. But here is the marvelous news. We the regenerate elect are not of them that trust in good works as a proof or means of justification thus going back unto perdition. We believe in Christ alone through faith alone as our only justification.

Before we move on to Part Four, let us briefly consider James’ understanding of Pure Religion.

Pure Religion

James 1:27 “Pure religion and undefiled before our God and Father is this, to visit the fatherless and widows in their affliction, and to keep oneself unspotted from the world.”

For us to understand the statement; “Pure religion” written in the letter of James, we must ask ourselves:

1.) What was the intent of the Author?
2.) Who was the book addressed too?
3.) What was the overall goal of the book of James?
4.) What was the historical setting of this book?

I do not believe for a moment that Christ’s regenerate elect think it is alright to abuse the fatherless, widows, and to not strive to keep himself unspotted from the world. However, I believe the intent of the author was to mount a Direct Polemic against the Apostle Paul’s doctrine of Justification by Faith Alone without Pure Religious human obedience grounded in the works of the law.

There are theologians who try to harmonize Paul with James stating:

Paul’s emphasis was primarily interested in Justification before God, while James’ emphasis was more focused upon a Justification before men.

In other words, they understand Paul’s emphasis was salvific while James’ emphasis was merely a proof of salvation before men. They conclude that both Paul and James were teaching the same doctrine of Justification through faith alone from two different perspectives. I for one do not agree with their ludicrous assessment at all.

Who in the heck needs to be Justified before men. As if a believer needs the endorsement and Kosher stamp of approval from other men.

There was only one man that could be considered Just before men; and His name was Jesus Christ. However, Christ’s good works was no proof at all to
them who cried out “crucify Him”

Now let’s think for a moment. Who in their right mind would ever think that RELIGION, or in the case of James, “Pure Messianic Religion” can JUSTIFY US before God and man?

What is religion?

Religion is an attempt and exercise by human beings to appease God or a pantheon of man made gods by utilizing and obeying some moral, cultic, or ethical precepts. I believe James and his Messianic followers believed they could do just that. Furthermore, James and his Messianic followers went beyond ethical, cultic, and moral behavior by introducing this Pure Religion as a basis and ground of justifying themselves before God. James 2.24 “Ye see then how that by works a man is justified, and not by faith only”. This statement in the direct context of “Pure Religion” in the letter named James is in direct opposition to Paul’s teaching of Justification.

Let’s read Mt.19.16-26 “And behold, one came and said unto him, Good Master, what good thing shall I do, that I may have eternal life? And he said unto him, Why callest thou me good? There is none good but one, that is, God: but if thou will enter into life, keep the commandments. He saith unto him, Which? Jesus said, Thou shalt do no murder, Thou shalt not commit adultery, Thou shalt not steal, Thou shalt not bear false witness, Honour thy father and thy mother: and, Thou shalt love thy neighbor as thyself. The young man saith unto him, All these things have I kept from my youth up: what lack I yet? Jesus said unto him, If thou wilt be perfect, go and sell that thou hast, and give to the poor, and thou shalt have treasure in heaven: and come and follow me But when the young man heard that saying, he went away sorrowful: for he had great possessions. Then said Jesus unto his disciples, Verily I say unto you, That a rich man shall hardly enter into the kingdom of heaven. And again I say unto you, It is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle, than for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of God. When his disciples heard it, they were exceedingly amazed saying, Who then can be saved? But Jesus beheld them, and said unto them, With men this is impossible; but with God all things are possible.

Reference Mk 10.17-27

In verse 24, Jesus stated those who trust in riches, would find it difficult to enter into the kingdom of heaven. Not primarily those who possess riches. When the final day arrives there will be elect justified folks who enter Heaven irregardless whether they were rich or poor economically.

Reference Lu.18.18-27

It seems obvious to me that James was against the rich and in favor of the poor.
However, Jesus Christ makes it clear and certain that with men rich or poor, any attempt to satisfy the requirements of the law as a means of Justification was impossible. This is why the only possibility of sinners to become Justified rests solely with God’s effectual Grace through Christ alone by way of Imputation alone.

If James polemic was only to refute antinomianism as some contend, why would he even consider to use the language of “Pure Religion” as a ground or basis of Justification. James 2.24 “Ye see then how that by works [in James’ pure religious context] a man is justified, and not by faith only”.

James in reality is promulgating neonomianism. James is teaching that Justification can only be procured through a sanctified life of good works.

Let us look at some Old Testament passages James’ alluded too.

Exd 22:22 “Ye shall not afflict any widow, or fatherless child.”

Deu 10:18 “He doth execute the judgment of the fatherless and widow, and loveth the stranger, in giving him food and raiment.”

Deu 24:17 "Thou shalt not pervert the judgment of the stranger, [nor] of the fatherless; nor take a widow's raiment to pledge:"
Deu 24:19 “When thou cuttest down thine harvest in thy field, and hast forgot a sheaf in the field, thou shalt not go again to fetch it: it shall be for the stranger, for the fatherless, and for the widow: that the LORD thy God may bless thee in all the work of thine hands.”

Deu 27:19 “Cursed [be] he that perverteth the judgment of the stranger, fatherless, and widow. And all the people shall say, Amen.”

Psa 94:6 “They slay the widow and the stranger, and murder the fatherless.”

Psa 146:9 “The LORD preserveth the strangers; he relieth the fatherless and widow: but the way of the wicked he turneth upside down.”

Isa 1:17 “Learn to do well; seek judgment, relieve the oppressed, judge the fatherless, plead for the widow.”

Jer 7:6 “[If] ye oppress not the stranger, the fatherless, and the widow, and shed not innocent blood in this place, neither walk after other gods to your hurt:”

Jer 22:3 “Thus saith the LORD; Execute ye judgment and righteousness, and deliver the spoiled out of the hand of the oppressor: and do no wrong, do no violence to the stranger, the fatherless, nor the widow, neither shed innocent
blood in this place.”

Zec 7:10 “And oppress not the widow, nor the fatherless, the stranger, nor the poor; and let none of you imagine evil against his brother in your heart.”

I fully agree that these Old Testament scriptures support James. James clearly alludes to these in his polemic against Paul. However, James is using these Old Testament law passages to buttress his support for a Justification grounded in human obedience and law keeping. James is synthesizing Justification and Sanctification.

No true elect Christian, even Paul, would suggest that God or we should not care for His people. This is where many who support James go awry. The whole thrust of James is to teach a Justification by faith and works; or another way of stating this; A Justification grounded in faithful works and Pure Messianic Religion.
Part Four

Historical Evidence & Observations Pertaining to James The Just

In this final chapter we will consider James from an historical perspective. Quotes will be supplied from various authors that were written perhaps 2-4 centuries after the death of James.

My intention is to place information before this audience as we would also in a court of Law during trial proceedings. Whether or not this information is 100% accurate is not the issue. If the historical writings are somewhat accurate then it further supports our claims against James. If they are somewhat or not at all accurate then we have nothing in Scripture to vindicate James either. James loses either way. The burden of proof will be on the reader to find scriptural evidence or historical evidence as pertaining to James the Lord’s half brother that would vindicate James. Show me from the Scripture and or historical writings where James was a champion of the Pauline Gospel. Good luck!

My comments will follow the cited passages.

Thomas 12. “The disciples said to Jesus, "We know that Thou wilt leave us. Who is it that will become great over us?" Jesus said unto them, "Whithersoever ye are come, ye will go to James the Righteous. It is for the righteous' sake that heaven and earth were created."

Taken from heretical Gospel of Thomas we get a glimpse at the aura that surrounded James and his Jewish Messianic followers. James clearly ascended to being the head of the Jerusalem Church. When Christ went into the temple in Jerusalem; overturning the money tables, the religious leaders wanted Christ stoned to death. Paul, Peter, John and the true followers of Christ were also hated and their lives were always in jeopardy until their death. Has James the righteous become great over us? Not me.

Gospel of the Hebrews 9:1-4 “The Lord, after he had given the linen cloth to the priest's slave, went to James and appeared to him. (Now James had sworn not to eat bread from the time that he drank from the Lord’s cup until he would see him raised from among those who sleep.) Shortly after this the Lord said, 'Bring a table and some bread.' And immediately it is added: He took the bread, blessed it, broke it, and gave it to James the Just and said to him, 'My brother, eat your bread, for the Son of Adam has been raised from among those who sleep.'

In this heretical book written around that time period we read more falsehoods. It
is my opinion that these heretical books were written as propaganda to further lend credence to the Messianic Jew James. We know from scripture that the Jew James and his Messianic followers were already against the Pauline message of the True Gospel; which is Justification through faith alone without all works.

Eusebius (quoting Hegesippus, an early second century Jewish Christian writer), Ecclesiastical History, 2.23

"Control of the Church passed to the apostles, together with the Lord's brother James, whom everyone ... has called the Righteous..."

Why was James called the Just or Righteous one? God says "There is none righteous, no, not one”.

No one man controls the Church, not even the devilish Popes of Rome. Jesus Christ is the head of His Church and He leads His Elect by the effectual working of the Holy Spirit and truth.

Quoting Hegesippus, Eusebius also states that James “the Righteous" “was holy from his birth'”...

Hegasippus also described James as a “Nazarite"

"He drank no wine...ate no animal food; no razor came near his head; he did not smear himself with oil, and took no baths. He alone was permitted to enter the Holy Place [the Holy of Holies in the temple], for his garments were not of wool but of linen [i.e., priestly robes]. He used to enter the Sanctuary alone, and was often found on his knees beseeching forgiveness for the people, so that his knees grew hard like a camels...because of unsurpassable righteousness, he was called the Righteous and...'Bulwark of the people'..."  Eusebius, The History of the Church 2,23

What a pious man James was. Wow! He must of stunk real bad not taking baths like the monastic orders of men who followed after James' blueprint.

James still followed the Mosaic Law and other human traditions. Hardly a believer in the Gospel. Would you not agree?

Jesus our Lord said “If they hate me they will also hate you” “If they persecute me, they will also persecute you”. Nothing James has done in the above quote would appease or impress God.

James says; “Show me your faith without your works, and I will show you my faith by my works”. All of James righteousness is still filthy rags (DUNG). Literally and Spiritually. We can never isolate James' above statement from the historical context and activity of James himself. Should we stop bathing? Should we stop eating meat? Should we not cut our hair etc.?
You can now see why Roman Catholics, Orthodox, other monastic clergymen, some laity, along with all other false religious cults practice salvific suffering. Flagellation, Starving, Bloodletting, Cloistered monastic life, etc. etc. These ignorant souls think they can merit God’s justification like James, or in the case of Protest-ANTS; prove to men they will be finally justified.

In third world countries where the poor and ignorant are exploited by the Roman Church and her religious whore daughters; these folk nail themselves on crosses and walk the cobblestone streets on their knees till they bleed on Good Friday. Satanic will worship at it’s finest hour.

Rome and her whore daughters along with that great mother of Harlots Israel, love the book of James. This book allows them to justify their works religion.

From the death of the last true Apostles of our Lord Jesus Christ there have been numerous writings from men claiming to be Christian and also non-Christian historical writings. We will only seek information from those early periods up to and including the fourth century. Below is a writing from Hegesippus. I have highlighted phrases and sentences to pay particular attention too.

Concerning the martyrdom of James, the brother of the Lord, from Book V

[James, the Lord’s brother, succeeds to the government of the Church, in conjunction with the apostles. He has been universally called the Just, from the days of the Lord down to the present time. For many bore the name of James; but this one was holy from his mother’s womb. He drank no wine or other intoxicating liquor, nor did he eat flesh; no razor came upon his head; he did not anoint himself with oil, nor make use of the bath. He alone was permitted to enter the holy place; for he did not wear any woollen garment, but fine linen only. He alone, I say, was wont to go into the temple: and he used to be found kneeling on his knees, begging forgiveness for the people so that the skin of his knees became horny like that of a camel’s, by reason of his constantly bending the knee in adoration to God, and begging forgiveness for the people. Therefore, in consequence of his pre-eminent justice. He was called the Just, and Oblias, which signifies in Greek, Defense of the People, and Justice, in accordance with what the prophets declare concerning him.]

One would think that when a person becomes saved by Grace alone, through faith alone, in Christ alone, that person would rest in the finished work of Christ. But not with James.
Historical writers show through James’ activity that he did not believe the Gospel.

When Christ on the cross said “It is Finished” the curtain in the Temple was torn open. This signified that entrance to the presence of God the father was through Jesus Christ alone. The Temple in Jerusalem had no further function. In fact; Christ cursed the temple and called it a den of thieves and robbers. But this arrogant self righteous Messianic Jew named James, and his followers; thought he was as great and holy as Jesus Christ. Nepotism? Perhaps that is why James was thought of so highly. No way could that Jerusalem temple be called a holy place. Jesus is our Holy Temple. Those in Christ belong to this Holy Temple. And please show me which biblical prophets; chapter and verse, that spoke and declared concerning James. Good Luck!

[Now some persons belonging to the seven sects existing among the people, which have been before described by me in the Notes, asked him: “What is the door of Jesus?” And he replied that He was the Saviour. In consequence of this answer, some believed that Jesus is the Christ. But the sects before mentioned did not believe, either in resurrection or in the coming of One to requite every man according to his works; but those who did believe, believed because of James. So, when many even of the ruling class believed, there was a commotion among the Jews, and scribes, and Pharisees, who said: “A little more, and we shall have all the people looking for Jesus as the Christ”. They came, therefore, in a body to James, and said: “We entreat thee, restrain the people: for they are gone astray in their opinions about Jesus, as if he were the Christ.

We entreat thee to persuade all who have come hither for the day of the passover concerning Jesus. For we all listen to thy persuasion; since we, as well as all the people, bear thee testimony that thou art just and showest partiality to none. Do thou therefore persuade the people not to entertain erroneous opinions concerning Jesus: for all the people, and we also, listen to thy persuasion. Take thy stand then, upon the summit of the temple, that from that elevated spot thou mayest be clearly seen, and thy words may be plainly audible to all the people. For in order to attend the passover all the tribes have congregated hither, and some of the Gentiles also”

The aforesaid scribes and Pharisees accordingly set James on the summit of the temple, and cried aloud to him, and said: “O just one, whom we are all bound to obey, forasmuch as the people is in error, and follows Jesus the crucified, do thou tell us what is the door of Jesus, the crucified” And he answered with a loud voice: “What ask ye me concerning Jesus the Son of man? He Himself sitteth in heaven, at the right hand of the Great Power, and shall come on the clouds of heaven”]

What we can gather so far from Hegesippus, is that James was clearly the one whom the religious rulers had to deal with because of the power and
influence James possessed within the Jerusalem church. The Pharisees did not at all think they were bound to obey James but rather made a statement to that effect only in a provocative and facetious way. Because James and his messianic followers elevated him in name and stature to some sort of “Just One”, the religious leaders used that phrase against him in a derogatory way. That is what happens when mere men are elevated beyond their scope. No one is truly Just but Christ Alone!

I am not faulting James for his devotion and zeal. No doubt, James was very zealous for Christ; believing in Christ’s resurrection and His Deity. However, when it came to the work and Gospel of Jesus Christ, James falls way short of the mark.

[And, when many were fully convinced by these words, and offered praise for the testimony of James, and said, “Hosanna to the son of David,” then again the said Pharisees and scribes said to one another, “We have not done well in procuring this testimony to Jesus. But let us go up and throw him down that they may be afraid and not believe him.” And they cried aloud, and said: “Oh! oh! The justman himself is in error.” Thus they fulfilled the Scripture written in Isaiah: “Let us do away with the justman, because he is troublesome to us: therefore shall they eat the fruit of their doings.” So they went up and threw down the just man, and said to one another: “Let us stone James the Just.” And they began to stone him; for he was not killed by the fall: but he turned and kneeled down and said: “I beseech Thee Lord God our Father, forgive them; for they know not what they do”

And, while they were thus stoning him to death, one of the priests, the sons of Rechab, the son of Rechabim, to whom testimony is borne by Jeremiah the prophet, began to cry aloud saying: “Cease, what do ye? The justman is praying for us.” But one among them, one of the fullers, took the staff with which he was accustomed to wring out the garments he dyed, and hurled it at the head of the just man.

And so he suffered martyrdom; and they buried him on the spot, and the pillar erected to his memory still remains, close by the temple. This man was a true witness to both Jews and Greeks that Jesus is the Christ. And shortly after Vespasian besieged Judea taking them captive.]

I have highlighted above something very troubling; how Hegesippus the Jewish convert to Messianic Christianity interpreted Isaiah above. He took a passage from Isaiah 3:10 and not only misinterpreted it, but applied his misinterpretation to James as a fulfillment. How awful. This passage in Isaiah refers to judgments against Judah and Jerusalem in the full context of Isaiah chapter 3; and has absolutely nothing to do with James who is called the Just; literally, allegorically, metaphorically, or historically. It appears that Hegesippus has some Jew kin bias in favor of James.
attempting to elevate James.

James is the fulfillment of prophesy? No way. The Messianic Judaized form of Christianity that James and his followers espoused denies the Gospel of Imputed Righteousness.

Paul the apostle said in Romans 10:3 “For they being ignorant of God's righteousness, and going about to establish their own righteousness, have not submitted themselves unto the righteousness of God.”

James never submitted to the imputed righteousness of Jesus Christ, but rather boldly claimed Justification was by personal faithful works. If James would have listened to Paul he could have taken a bath and enjoyed a great steak and glass of good wine.

We will read another death account from Josephus the Jewish historian.

Antiquities book XX

AND now Caesar, upon hearing the death of Festus, sent Albinus into Judea, as procurator. But the king deprived Joseph of the high priesthood, and bestowed the succession to that dignity on the son of Ananus, who was also himself called Ananus. Now the report goes that this eldest Ananus proved a most fortunate man; for he had five sons who had all performed the office of a high priest to God, and who had himself enjoyed that dignity a long time formerly, which had never happened to any other of our high priests. But this younger Ananus, who, as we have told you already, took the high priesthood, was a bold man in his temper, and very insolent; he was also of the sect of the Sadducees, who are very rigid in judging offenders, above all the rest of the Jews, as we have already observed; when, therefore, Ananus was of this disposition, he thought he had now a proper opportunity [to exercise his authority]. Festus was now dead, and Albinus was but upon the road; so he assembled the sanhedrim of judges, and brought before them the brother of Jesus, who was called Christ, whose name was James, and some others, [or, some of his companions]; and when he had formed an accusation against them as breakers of the law, he delivered them to be stoned: but as for those who seemed the most equitable of the citizens, and such as were the mostuneasy at the breach of the laws, they disliked what was done; they also sent to the king [Agrippa], desiring him to send to Ananus that he should act so no more, for that what he had already done was not to be justified; nay, some of them went also to meet Albinus, as he was upon his journey from Alexandria, and informed him that it was not lawful for Ananus to assemble a sanhedrim without his consent. Whereupon Albinus complied with what they said, and wrote in anger to Ananus, and threatened that he would bring him to punishment for what he had done; on which king Agrippa took the high priesthood from him, when he had ruled but three months, and
made Jesus, the son of Damneus, high priest.]

The account of Josephus seems to be strictly from a political point of view; as should well be from a man who was Jewish and not writing from a Christian believer perspective. The charge of breaking the law is a bit vague though. What law? Could it be because James spoke in the name of Jesus? How had James survived that long then? As mentioned earlier in this writing, I strongly feel that James’ form of Messianic Judaized Christianity was tolerable to mainstream Judaism of that day; because Moses (law) was not rejected as a basis or proof for Messianic Justification. James and his followers could survive in that climate. James' Judaized form of Messianic Christianity was viewed as just another sect within Judaism along with a myriad of others that were prevalent in that day. James still clung to weak and beggarly elements peculiar to Judaism. As long as the OFFENCE OF THE GOSPEL was stripped away by James, all that would remain would be a Jewish religious and political power struggle. I believe this is what James got caught up with. A struggle for Messianic Jewish supremacy. James and the Messianic Judaized Christian advocates who were growing in numbers and competing with the Pharisaical religious machine was too much for him and finally overcame him.

If James would have taught Jews the Pauline Gospel, he would have been dead on arrival. James would never teach that a Jew does not need circumcision or the elements peculiar to Moses.

Now some may say that James was a martyr for the Gospel. But as I contend, James did not have or teach the Gospel of Justification through faith alone. No more than Roman Catholic crusaders, who did not have the Gospel, and killed by Moslems could be considered Christian martyrs either.

For those who are interested in further study on the subject of James the Lord’s half brother there are plenty of web sites that will aid in your quest. Below is a link to early writings.

http://www.earlychristianwritings.com/

There is so much that has been written in early history, that if one would just search and read, they will see a different side of James that their church traditions and leadership has hid from them. Most will not even dare to question the letter of James; that would be sacrilegious to them.
Conclusion And Summary

There are many writings from non-Christian and historical perspectives, however, if we are to understand the very early sentiments whether oral or written from the 1st to the 4th centuries concerning James and the Jerusalem Messianic Christian Church, we have to keep the Biblical mentions of James within their proper historical context.

The Roman Catholic (Western), Greek Orthodox (Eastern), and the Protestants (schismatics of the Western Church) love to appeal to the *early fathers* for their early identity and foundation. Especially Roman Catholicism, the Orthodox sects, and the reformed Protestants.

I for one, do not see in the Soteriology of these so-called “*fathers*” a continuation of the Pauline message of Imputed Justification by Grace Alone through Faith Alone without all works. In my opinion, I believe that even during the life of the true Apostles of Christ, there were enemies of the true Gospel posing as Christians.

These enemies were exposed as false teachers, false apostles, false prophets, false brethren, etc. etc. The one teaching they share unanimously is the teaching of “Good Works” as a ground, basis, or proof of one’s Justification. James the Lord’s half brother was indeed one of these “false ones”; and the early *fathers* were not much better either. Without the Gospel there is NO true Christianity.

False ideas such as:

1. Faith being imperfect without works
2. Good Works are necessary for procuring Justification.
3. The meritorious nature of good works.
4. Good works earn believers special rewards in heaven.
5. Good works increase one’s Justification.
6. Good works are proofs that men are Justified and so forth

These false ideas are rooted and based due to ignorance of the Gospel of Jesus Christ.

Sinful humanity has always desired to get credit for something he has done. From Adam and his fig leaves to our contemporary religious scene, good works and existential theology in all forms plague mankind. It really does not matter
if one is a Muslim, Buddhist, Talmudic Jew, Messianic Jew, Zionist Christian, Protestant, Evangelical, Pentecostal, Charismatic, Shintoist, or just plain Christian. If procuring Justification is linked to just one minute element of human cooperation in any way shape or form, IT IS A FALSE GOSPEL and under the anathema of Paul the apostle.

The heretical Clergy via the non-biblical clergy/laity system, have bound the consciences of men throughout centuries with all manners and false notions of a good works based salvation, cultic liturgical practices, and Churchy manifestations.

Such as:

1. Church membership roles
2. 10% Tithing
3. Sabbath keeping
4. 10 commandment keeping.
5. Water Baptisms
6. Circumcision
7. Sacraments
8. Priests and ministers that could forgive sins.
9. Sanctuaries
10. Bells
11. Stained glass widows
12. Holy water
13. Clerical robes
14. Monastic life
15. Humanly ordained ministers
16. Seminary factories who produce paid clones to be *installed like parts* as pastors.
(17) Holy Days

(18) Holy Seasons.

(19) Holy Lands.

The list could go on and on. All of these actions, thoughts, and works are symptoms of a false Gospel.

ECT1 and ECT2 are further symptoms a corrupted Gospel.

I never even considered questioning the Letter of James in my early days of conversion. I, like most of us, have been conditioned to think that this letter is high canon because it was placed in my “official bible”. I even considered when I was a Roman Catholic that the apocryphal books were High canon because that is what the church taught me to believe without question.

Jesus Christ led me to research this matter on my own. It was God’s Grace alone that opened my eyes. That is the beauty of not being an “official” member of a certain denomination or group. I was free to examine without rebuff from the clergy and pew-warmer; trusting the Lord to guide me into truth. If I were a member of a church group and questioned the letter of James, the higher ups would have put me out of their fellowship. I have before, many years ago been put out of a church group for disagreeing with them. They believed Roman Catholics were their brothers, and I believed Roman Catholics were lost unregenerate souls.

Below is a brief list of some helpful historical sources that will provide more information pertaining to James. The list is not exhaustive, but a good starting point. There are more passages within these writings that are not listed that would also shed further light on James.

Ascents of James (from the Pseudo-Clementine Recognitions 1. 33-71 & 4:35 and more
Epiphanius on Nazoreans, James, and Successors
Gospel of the Hebrews (quoted by Jerome.. On Famous Men 2
Gospel of Thomas 12
Eusebius (quoting Hegesippus) Ecclesiastical history 2.23. 4-7
Eusebius Ecclesiastical history 3.11 & 4.22.4
Eusebius (quoting Hegesippus) Ecclesiastical history 3. 19.20
Eusebius (quoting Hegesippus) Ecclesiastical history 3. 32..
Flavius Josephus. Antiquities 20. 200-201...20:9:1
In Nag Hammadi Library: Apocryphon of James..First Apocalypse of James...Second Apocalypse of James...Gospel of the Egyptians.
Eusebius Eccl. Hist. 7:19
Ethiopic Didascalia ch XLIII
Protoevangelium of James

More on the identity, aura, tradition and history that surrounds James from a wide variety of early writings.

**References to James**

The child Jesus while living at home, heals James from a deadly viper bite.

James was called the "brother of God."

The title “Son of Man” was ascribed to James at the last supper.

James was to be the first in a line of Christian Caliphates.

James received his position of head of the church from Jesus Himself.

James was made the Just Bishop of Jerusalem after the Lord’s ascension.

James receives his office directly from the Apostles.

James held his rank from the beginning of the corporate life of the Jerusalem community.

James is called the “chief of Bishops” and “Archbishop”

Peter calls James “the Lord and Bishop of the Holy Church”.

Clement addresses James as “the Lord and bishop of bishops, who rules Jerusalem, the holy church of the Hebrews and Churches everywhere excellently founded by the provinces of God, with elders and deacons, and the rest of the brethren”

James as administrative head of the church 1. Receives reports. 2. Engaged in disputations. 3. Assigned Peter to specific tasks.

James, as “chief of bishops” is portrayed as the Christian counterpart to “Caiaphas........the chief of priests.”

Peter insists that no teacher or prophet is to be believed unless he has been certified by James.
Peter gives all his writing to James for safekeeping.

James is the first in a long line of apostolic succession. The primacy of James has been rejected in the West from the time of Irenaeus onward however was continued in the East. During the second century the title of “High Priest” was used frequently within the church. To many early christians, James, as the first among the bishops stood at the head of an order of Christian priests.

In *Recognitions*, there are parallels between Jewish and Christian ordination. “Let there be elders and deacons, like the Levites; and subdeacons, like those who carried the vessels of the court of the sanctuary of the Lord; and an overseer, who shall likewise be the guide of all the people, like Aaron, the head and chief of all the priests and Levites in the city.” This Christian priestly ordination is trace to the Church of James.

There was a group within Christendom who viewed the death of James in connection with the destruction of Jerusalem.

Epiphanius and Eusebius both concur that James entered into the sanctuary of the Temple and that he actually went into the “Holy of Holies” James also wore the high priestly petalon on his forehead.

I firmly believe that early tradition was deliberately molded and shaped to favor one or more groups within early Christianity. Is it any wonder that we see in the writings of Augustine a blend of pagan and corrupt Jewish thought. The clergy, the sacrifice of the Mass, justification by meritorious good works, the priesthood, has their origins from the activity of James and his followers historically. Augustine carried the torch for James. Augustine never ever taught the Pauline doctrine of Justification by an imputed righteousness. NEVER!

Dumb and blind Protestants such as R. C. Sproul and his minions exalt Augustine and Aquinas as champions of the church and champions of the Gospel. How awful and shameful a plight. Real Judases aren’t they?

From the writers Hegesippus, Eusebius, Epiphanius, and the Ps Clementines, we see a strong nationalistic, pietist, and cultic views of James. In the Clementines more emphasis was toward church structure and ethical matters. Most of what has been written about James portrays James with an interest in Jewish piety and legalism.

This is why the whole thrust of the book named James in the Bible is primarily concerned with good works as a basis for justification.

Some will say that even if James lived that kind of Life, James never required it for Salvation. POPPYCOCK!! James clearly attempts to overthrow Paul’s
message of Justification through faith alone without all works!

Also in the Ps Clementines, issues of church authority are alluded too: The Jerusalem church was seen as the pure church, although others were recognized; appeals to James and the Jerusalem church were necessary for correction in doctrine. Also, James is seen as the sole head, above the apostles of the church, just like the Pope of Rome. Only as Gentile Christianity accepted the control from Jerusalem, they could remain pure so they say.

In all fairness I will admit that from the early writings, James has been considered to believe in the Resurrection of Jesus, practice the Lord’s supper and practice of water baptism. Also Eusebius said that James confessed that “Jesus our Savior and the Lord is the son of God”. However, Roman Catholics, Arminians, Evangelicals and a myriad of Protestant sects also pay lip service to these tenants of Christianity. But the fact still remains. WHERE IS THE GOSPEL OF JUSTIFICATION BY GRACE ALONE THROUGH FAITH ALONE, WITHOUT ALL WORKS? This is the core argument against James.

The mere agreement or disagreement with the letter of James would not to me at least be a cause for dis-unity. However, the Gospel of Christ Alone must be Pristine and without any form of good works as a basis or proof for Justification. We can enjoy fellowship in Christ as brothers only in that way. If the letter of James is used to espouse some idea of good works as a proof or ground of justification, then I will be at odds with you and our fellowship broken.

The End.